

THE
INDIAN ANTIQUARY,
A JOURNAL OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH

IN
ARCHÆOLOGY, EPIGRAPHY, ETHNOLOGY, GEOGRAPHY, HISTORY, FOLKLORE, LANGUAGES,
LITERATURE, NUMISMATICS, PHILOSOPHY, RELIGION, &c., &c.

EDITED BY

SIR RICHARD CARNAC TEMPLE, BART., C.I.E.,
FORMERLY LIEUT.-COLONEL, INDIAN ARMY.

VOL. XXXVI.—1907.

BOMBAY:

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED AT THE BRITISH INDIA PRESS, BYCULLA.

LONDON: KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & Co.

LONDON: BERNARD QUARITCH.

BOMBAY: BRITISH INDIA PRESS.

NEW YORK: WESTERMANN & Co.

CHICAGO: S. D. PEET, Esq., Ph.D.

LEIPZIG: OTTO HARRASSOWITZ.

PARIS: E. LEROUX.

BERLIN: A. ASHER & Co.

VIENNA: A. HOLDER & Co.

CONTENTS.

The Names of Contributors are arranged alphabetically.

| | PAGE | | PAGE |
|--|---------------|--|--------------------|
| A. BAUH: — | | T. S. KUPPUSWAMI SASTRI: — | |
| THE INSCRIPTION ON THE PIPRAHWA VASE (translated from the French) | 117 | THE AGE OF THE TAMIL JIVAKACHINTAMAN. ... | 285 |
| THE LATE PROF. C. BÜHLEE, C.I.E., LL.D.: — | | P. W. SCHMIDT, S.V.D.: — | |
| ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMA-GUPTA OR PARIMALA (translated* from the German) | 149 | Buch des Rāgāwāñ, der Königsgeschichte. Die Geschichte der Mon-Könige in Hinterindien nach einem Palmblatt-Manuskript aus dem Mon übersetzt, mit einer Einführung und Noten versehen. Vienna: 1906 | 180 |
| MAY S. BURGESS: — | | Die Mon-Khmer-Völker ein Bindeglied zwischen Völkern Zentralasiens und Austronesiens. Brunswick: 1906 | 216 |
| ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMA-GUPTA OR PARIMALA (translated from the German of Dr. Th. Zachariae) | 149 | MIAN DURGA SINGH: — | |
| REV. A. H. FRANCKE: — | | A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES, from the Native point of view (communicated by H. A. Rose) | 264, 289, 370 |
| ARCHAEOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET ... | 85, 148 | VINCENT A. SMITH, M.A., F.C.S. (RETD.): — | |
| GEORGE A. GRIERSON: — | | THE COPPER AGE AND PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS OF INDIA—Supplement ... | 53 |
| Buch des Rāgāwāñ, der Königsgeschichte. Die Geschichte der Mon-Könige in Hinterindien nach einem Palmblatt-Manuskript aus dem Mon übersetzt, mit einer Einführung und Noten versehen. Vienna: 1906 | 180 | G. TAMSON, M.A., PH. D.: — | |
| Professor Bartholomae's Zum altiranischen Wörterbuch Nacharbeiten und Vorarbeiten ... | 180 | THE INSCRIPTION ON THE PIPRAHWA VASE (translated from the French of M. A. Barth) ... | 117 |
| Die Mon-Khmer-Völker ein Bindeglied zwischen Völkern Zentralasiens und Austronesiens. Brunswick: 1906 | 216 | SIR R. C. TEMPLE, BART., C.I.E.: — | |
| WILLIAM IRVINE: — | | THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL) IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE, 1654—1670 ... | 98, 125, 173 |
| ABDUL SHAH, ABIALI, AND THE INDIAN WAZIR, IMAD-UL-MULK (1756-7) ... | 10, 10, 55 | A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES, applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobar ... | 181, 217, 317, 353 |
| G. R. SUBRAMIAH PANTULU: — | | Survival of Old Anglo-Indian Commercial Terms, 252 | |
| RUKMINI KALYANAM ... | 373 | REV. G. WHITEHEAD: — | |
| W. H. R. RIVERS: — | | NOTES ON THE CHINS OF BURMA ... | 204 |
| The Todas ... | 83 | REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D. D.: — | |
| H. A. ROSE: — | | THE CHUREAS ... | 19, 71, 106, 135 |
| THE KHOKARS AND THE GAKKARS IN PANJAB HISTORY ... | 1 | DR. TH. ZACHARIAE: — | |
| HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS ... | 33, 253 | ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMA-GUPTA OR PARIMALA (translated from the German) ... | 149 |
| A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES, from the Native point of view, by MIAN DURGA SINGH (communicated) ... | 264, 289, 370 | MISCELLANEA AND CORRESPONDENCE: | |
| NOTES ON ANCIENT ADMINISTRATIVE TERMS AND TITLES IN THE PANJAB ... | 348 | Lachchhan Rajaon Ke; or, The Signs of Royalty in Rajas, by H. A. Rose ... | 32 |
| Is the Cult of Mian Bibi Phallie? by H. A. Rose ... | 32 | Survival of Old Anglo-Indian Commercial Terms, by Sir R. C. Temple ... | 252 |
| Further Traces of Totemism in the Panjab, by H. A. Rose ... | 51 | The French Archaeological Société d'Angkor ... | 284 |
| | | The Seasons of Girdhar Sadhu ... | 315 |

BOOK-NOTICES.

| PAGE | PAGE |
|--|--|
| The Todas, by W. H. R. Rivers, Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. With illustrations. London: Macmillan & Co., 1906, pp. xviii, 755, 40 Tables and Map 83 | Professor Bartholomae's Zum altiranischen Wörterbuch Nacharbeiten und Vorarbeiten, by G. A. G. 180 |
| Buch des Rājāwālā, der Königsgeschichte. Die Geschichte der Mon-Könige in Hinterindien nach einem Pahnblatt-Manuskript aus dem Mon überetzt, mit einer Einführung und Noten versehen, von P. W. Schmidt, S. V. D. Vienna: 1906 (reprinted from the <i>Sitzungsberichte der Kaiser Akademie der Wissenschaften</i>), by George A. Grierson 180 | Die Mon-Khmer-Völker ein Bindeglied zwischen Völkern Zentralasiens und Austronesiens, von P. W. Schmidt, S. V. D. Brunswick: 1906 (reprinted from the <i>Archiv für Anthropologie</i> , Neue Folge, Band V, Heft 1 u. 2), by George A. Grierson. 216 |
| | Achyutaśyāhyudayam of Sri Rājanātha, with a commentary by Pandit R. V. Krishnamachariar (Abhimava Bhāṣa, Bana). Part I, Cantos 1—6. Srirangam: Sri Vani Vilas Press, 1907, 156 pages, 352 |

ILLUSTRATIONS.

| | |
|--|---|
| Cult of Mian Bibi 32 | Ancient Figures in Western Tibet 97 |
| The Copper Age and Prehistoric Bronze Implements of India—Plates VI and VII 53 | Archaeology in Western Tibet, Plates I and II ... 148 |
| Remains at Alchi and Basgo 89 | Map of the Andaman Islands 217 |
| | Map of the Nicobar Islands 317 |

APPENDIX.

INDEX OF PRAKRT WORDS, BY DON M. DE SILVA WICKREMASINGHE ... pp. 121—132

THE INDIAN ANTIQUARY,

A JOURNAL OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH.

VOLUME XXXVI. — 1907.

THE KHOKHARS AND THE GAKKHARS IN PANJAB HISTORY.

BY H. A. ROSE, I.C.S.

Introduction.

In an article entitled *A History of the Gakkhars*, contributed to the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal* in 1871, by Mr. J. G. Delmerick, the Khôkhars of the Muhammadan historians were taken to be the Gakkhars, a tribe which is settled in the Râwalpindî District of the Pañjâb. The late Major Raverty, however, expressed a strong opinion that the writer of the article had confused the Gakkhars with the Khôkhars, a totally distinct tribe, and a full examination of all the evidence at present readily accessible has convinced the present writer of the correctness of Major Raverty's position. The Khôkhars were settled in the Pañjâb centuries before the Gakkhars, and were early spread all over the central districts of the Province before the Gakkhars acquired their seats in the Salt Range, to which they are and always have been confined. If this thesis be correct, it follows that Farishta's description of the customs of polyandry and female infanticide, as practised by the tribe, apply not to the Gakkhars at all, but to the essentially Pañjâb tribe, the Khôkhars.

• I. — THE HISTORY OF THE KHÓKHARS.

A. — An Account of the Traditional History of the Khôkhars, by a Khôkhar of Khokharain, in the Hoshiarpur District, Pañjab.

Beorâsâhsâ,¹ who succeeded Jâmshid, King of Persia, was called Dahâk or the 'Ten Calamities.' On his shoulders were two snake-like tumours, whence he was nick-named Mârân or Aydahâ by the Persians, and called Dahâk (or Zuhâk)² Mârân, while his descendants were designated Tâk³-bansi, Nâg-bansi or Takshak. About 1500 B. C. Kâma, the ironsmith, aided Faridûn, a descendant of Jâmshid, to subdue Dahâk, who was cast into the well of Koh Damavind, and Faridûn became King of Persia. One of Dahâk's descendants, named Bustam Râjâ, suraamed Kokrâ, was governor of the Pañjâb and had his capital at Kokrânâ, on a hill in the Chinhath Doâb, but it is now called Koh Kirânâ.⁴ At the same time Mihrâb, also a descendant of Zuhâk, held Kâbul as a feudatory of Faridûn.

After acquiring the Persian throne, Faridûn marched against Dahâk's descendants. Bustam fled and sought refuge in the Hill of Ghor, west of Qandahâr, where his people ruled for generations, being called Ghori or Ghoria and all being pagans.

¹ Afrâsîb.

² Zuhâk is merely the Arabicised form of Dahâk.

³ Tâk for Dahâk.

⁴ A singularly unsuccessful attempt to identify the isolated Kirânâ Hill, that in the Jhang District, with Kokrânâ by assuming that the syllable *ko-* was mistaken for the Persian *koh*, mountain, and dropped in the course of time — an utterly impossible suggestion.

Some years later Bustâm was murdered⁴ and some powerful Râjâ took possession of the Sindh-Sâgar Doâb, where Alexander found Takshail (Taxiles), founder of Takshala (Taxila), now Dheri Shâhân in the Attock District. But before the Macedonian invasion Kaid, Baj, King of Mârwâr, overran the Pañjâb in the reign of Darius Hystaspes, soon after Bustâm's murder. His capital was Bherâ on the Jhelam District and he also founded a fort at Jammû, which he entrusted to Virk⁵ Khôkhar, one of his kinsmen. Virk, with his own tribesmen, conquered the northern hills, and then, in league with the hill-men of Kohât and the Sulaimân Hills, drove Kaid Râj out of the Pañjâb. The Khôkhars, under such chiefs as Jot, Sâlbâhan, Tâl, Bâl, Sirkap, Sirsuk, Vikram, Hodi Sândâ, Askap, Khôkhar (*sic*), Bâdal and Kob, thence-forward held the Pañjâb.

A long period after this, Bahrâm, Râjâ of Ghor, left Shorâb, which lay 100 miles from Qandahâr,⁶ and, regaining the Kokrânu territory, his hereditary province, he founded Sharâb to the east of the Kokrâna Hill. Another Râjâ of Ghor, named Zamîn Dâwar, founded yet another city 3 *kos* to the east of Shorâb and called it Dâwar, and this was laid waste by the Tartars, but the mound still exists. To the west of it lies the new town of Dâwar, which is still in possession of the tribe. Shorâb was destroyed by Sultân Mahmûd, and its ruins stand at the foot of the present Shorâbwâli Pahâri Hill.

Goriâ, the Kokrâna Râjâ of Sharâb, was succeeded by his two sons Bâdal⁷ and Bharth⁸ and 11 others who were sons of handmaids. Bâdal succeeded to the upland tracts of Chiniot and Kokrâna,⁹ while Bharth took those east of the Chenâb. The latter, who dwelt in Bharth, a city named after himself, which lay 6 *kos* west of Nankâna village, came, stone in hand, to aid his brother Bâdal Khân in battle; but learning that he had already fallen, he placed the stone on the ground and marched to avenge his loss. He was, however, worsted in the conflict, and Bharth, his city, destroyed. But the stone still lies on the hill. South of Chiniot Bâdal founded Mâri Tappâ, on a hill still so called. In the middle of the Chenâb he commenced a stone-fort and a masonry bridge which he never completed, but a wall of the fort, called the Bâdalgarh, still remains. With Dârâ, his beloved kinsman, Râjâ Bâdal Khân (*sic*) was assassinated on his way to Mâri Tappâ, some 3 *kos* from Chiniot, and here his tomb, called Bâdal Dârâ, still stands to the west of the village of Amîrpur.

Barth's territory had extended as far as Gujrât, and he left 8 sons of whom 4 left issue. These were Sandâ, Hassan, Hussain, and Malmûd. Sandâ built a city, Sândar, between the Râvi and the Dek streams, the ruins of which are still called Sândar-kâ-tibba in the (Pindi) Bhattiân tract. He ruled so justly that his dominion is still called the Sândar or Sandal Bâr.¹⁰ He left 4 sons, Mandâr, Ratn Pâl, Bâlâ, and Jâl. From Ratn Pâl sprang the Rihâns,¹¹ a sept

⁴ This is to account for the existence of the Virk, a powerful Jat tribe, still numerous in Gujranwâla. It also seems to connect them with the Khôkhars.

⁵ Eight or ten miles west of Qandahâr lies the village of Khokharân. The *habits* of the bards record a Râjâ named Kokrá, of Garh Kokrânu, now called Kadyâna.

⁶ Bâdal would appear to be a Hindu name; cf. Rai Bâdal of Chittor; but lower down we find him called Bâdal Khân, the latter a Muhammadan title. It is curious to find Hindu and Muhammadan names mixed up in this history without apparent sense of incongruity. Thus below we have Ratn Pâl, undoubtedly a Hindu, descended from Sandâ, whose three brothers all bore Muhammadan names, even if Sandâ was himself a Hindu. Among the Meos of Gurgaon the position at the present time is precisely the same, and the present head of the Muhammadan Kharrals in the Lyallpur District is called Jagdeo.

⁷ The name Bharth occurs elsewhere.

⁸ It is unsafe to identify places like Kokrâna with the Khôkhars. Near Rohtak are the mounds called Khokrá Kot, under which lie ancient cities, but the word Khokrá has no connection with the Khôkhar tribe. (See Rohtak District Gazetteer, 1883-4, p. 16.)

⁹ But a local legend, recorded by Mr. E. D. Maclagan, says this Bâr is so named after one Sandal, a Chuhrâ, who used to commit great depredations. Another Chuhrâ used to live in the Guj rock, i. e., the *râjk* with the 'cavern,' and eat men. The people sometimes called the Bâr, Tattar, i. e., 'the Desert.'

¹⁰ Probably the Rihâns, a tribe still found in Jhang District: see the Jhang Gazetteer, 1883-4, p. 61, where they are described as rulers in old days of the Kâlowâl tract, which once formed a part of the Siâl kingdom; (but they are not said to be a branch of the Khôkhars).

which has two branches, the **Nissowânas**¹² and the **Bhikhâs**,¹³ found in Shâhpur and Jhang. Kâlowâl was the headquarters of this sept. Sultan Mandâr's descendants are now found in Bannu, where they trace their origin to Kais Abdur-Râslîd, and are thus called **Mandar Afghâns**. Mandâr himself prospered, kept in with the ruler of Kâbul and conquered the Kohistân-i-Namak and the Koh-i-Naudanâ. Of his twelve sons, three were legitimate, and of these three Rai Singin remained in the Kohistân-i-Namak and married his daughter to Sultan Jalâl'u'd-Dîn Khwârizmî, who made his son general of his own forces, with the title of Qutlugh-Khâni. The second son Ichhar founded Ichhâ near Lahore, and the third was Mâchhi Khân, who became Râjâ of Chiniot, which was named from Chandan, his sister, who built a palace on the hill as a hunting lodge for her father. Mâri Tappâ was not then populated, but Andheri was flourishing, and north of it lay the *dhaular*,¹⁴ or abode of Râni Chandan, which was called Chandniot, now Chiniot. When Andheri was deserted, Mâchhi Khân¹⁵ shifted his residence to the eastern bank of the river. Rai Singin had four sons: Sarpâl, Hast,¹⁶ Vir and Dâdan. Some of Sarpâl's sons went to Afgâhnistân and now trace their descent to Shâh Husain Ghori. Chuchak or Achu was sixth and Malik Shaikh seventh in descent, from Sarpâl, and the latter founded Shaikha, a fort, and Dhankar, a village in the hill of Bhâwân, north of Manglân, he and his father holding the hill-country and the tracts west of Gujrât. Malik Shaikhâ was appointed governor of Lahore by the king of Delhi, and Nusrat, his younger brother, opposed Timûr's invasion, with only 2,000 men, on the Biâs.

• **Malik Jasrat**, son of Shaikhâ, is a historical personage. In 1442 A. D. he was murdered by his queen, a daughter of Bhîm Deo, Râjâ of Jammû, because her father had been put to death by the Malik. His descendants are found in Mâri and Shakârpur in Gujrât, at Malikwâl in Shâhpur, at Jasrat near Chiniot, and in Dhankar near Khângâh Dogrân.

The Tartars spared the territories of Sarpâl's descendants. After 1200 A. D.¹⁷ they had burnt all the Khôkhar settlements on the Biâs and Sutlej. Râjâ Vir Khân fled towards Multân, but returned and founded Kângra, 9 kos from Chiniot, east of the Chenâb, but soon moved towards the Biâs with Kâlu, his kinsman, who founded Kâluwâhan, now Kâhnuwâan,¹⁸ in Gurdâspur, on the right bank of the river. For himself Vir chose a tract 32 *kos* south of Kâhnuwâan, and there he founded Vairowâl in Tarn Târan, naming it after his son Vairo. Bhâro, another tribesman, founded Bhârowâl in the same tahsil. Kulchandar, another Khôkhar, founded Mirowâl, Mardâna, Auliapur, &c., in Siâlkot. Râjâ Vir Khân also founded a new Kângra midway between Kâhnuwâan and Vairowâl. His territory was 40 *kos* in length, and the town extended 5 miles along the bank of the Biâs. At its north and south gates stood two forts or *onâris*,¹⁹ now occupied by Bhattî Râjputs²⁰ and Panuan Jats. On the ruins of this town now stands the small village of Kângra,²¹ just opposite to Tahâl or Khokharain on the west

¹² The Nissowânas are also still to be found in Jhang — in the northern corner of Chiniot Tahsil : *Jhang Gazetteer*, p. 66.

¹³ The Bhikhâs I cannot trace.

¹⁴ *Dhaular*, in Pañjâbî = palace (*lit.*, 'white house'?)

¹⁵ This Machchhe Khân appears to be alluded to in the following ballad, which records the deeds of the Chaddâ tribe of the Sandal Bâr:—

Modâ de Chiniot leô ne.

(After their victory over the Kharrals the Chaddâ with a push of the shoulder (*i. e.*, with a certain amount of trouble) took Chiniot.)

They used more force.

They killed Malik Machchhe Khân.

They harried and destroyed him.

¹⁶ Hast : a Malik Hast is mentioned in Bâbar's *Memoirs* (Elliott's *History of India*, Vol. IV, pp. 236-237,) but no particulars regarding him appear to be given. Râerty mentions him and Sangar Khân as chiefs of the Janjâas and Jâds. — *Notes on Afgâhnistân*, p. 355.

¹⁷ c. 600 A. H.

¹⁸ Which place the Khôkharas are said to have held in Akbar's time.

¹⁹ Mâri in Pañjâbî means a lofty house of masonry, or a small room erected on the roof of a house.

²⁰ Of the Buchâ gât, whence the present village is called Mâri Buchiân.

²¹ Kângra is close to Sri Hargobindpur.

bank of the Biás, in Hoshiarpur. In the village is the tomb of **Ladahā Khán, Khōkhar**, called the *pir ghāzi*, at which offerings are still made. This *ghāzi*'s head is said to be buried at Mandi Rohr, a village in Kapúrthalā, 3 miles south of Tahli, to which place it was carried by the stream when he was killed. Ladahā Khán left seven sons, (i) Jago, whose descendants founded Dinamál, Akálgadhā and Kotlī Sāra Khán in Amritsar, close to Bhārowál and Vairowál ; (ii) Rup Rai, whose sons founded Dānd in Rāyā tahsil, Siālkot ; (iii) Bego, who founded Begowál and 16 villages, now in Kapúrthalā ; (iv) Dasihan, the author's ancestor, who founded Khokharain²² as his residence and 12 other villages : Jhān, who founded Balo Chak, naming it after his son Balo, with 9 more villages. As these three brothers owned in all 40 villages the tract was called the **Chālia Khokharān**. Bhogrā migrated to Murādābād.

B.—The Khōkhars of the Muhammadan Historians of India.²³

In 399 A. H. (1009 A. D.) the Gakkhars, by whom in all probability are meant the **Khōkhars**, then infidels, joined the Hindus who had collected under the leadership of **Anandpāl** to resist the sixth invasion of India by **Mahmud**. Their number is said to have amounted to 80,000 men, who, with heads and feet bare, and armed with spears and other weapons, penetrated the Muhammadan lines on two sides, and in a few minutes cut down three or four hundred Muhammadans.²⁴

The earliest distinct mention of the Kōkars occurs in the *Tdjū'l-Mu'āṣir*, a history written in A. H. 602 (1205 A. D.),²⁵ which describes the revolt of the tribe or confederacy under the chiefs Bakan and Sarki, which occurred upon a false report of the death of the Sultān **Muhammad of Ghor** having been put about by Aibak Bāk, who seized Multān.²⁶ The Kōkars raised the country between the Sōdra (Chenāb) and the Jhīlam and defeated the Muhammadan governor of Sangwān, who held a fief within the borders of Multān, but they were defeated by Qutbūd-Din Ibak, and one of the sons of Kokar Rai escaped to a fort in the hill of Jūd, which was captured on the following day by the Sultān.²⁷

The next mention of the Khōkhars occurs in the *Tabaqāt-i-Nāṣirī*, written about 658 A. H. (1259 A. D.).²⁸ It relates that **Muizzu'd-Din** in 581 A. H. (1185 A. D.) ravaged the territory of Lahore, and on his return homeward restored Siālkot, in which fortress he left a garrison, but as soon as his back was turned, Malik Khusrau, the last of the Ghaznevides, assembled the forces of Hindustan and a levy of the Khōkhār tribes and laid siege to Siālkot. This account is confirmed and amplified by *A History of the Rājās of Jammun*, which says :—“The tribe of Khōkhār, who dwelt round about Manglan at the foot of the hills and were subject to the Jammū dynasty, having received encouragement from the Lahore ruler (Malik Khusrau), and sure of his support, refused any longer to pay tax and tribute to Jammū and threw off its yoke.” In return the Khōkhars then assisted Malik Khusrau in his attempt on Siālkot, whose garrison was befriended by the Jammū forces.²⁹

The next notice of the Khōkhars in the *Tabaqāt-i-Nāṣirī* is an important one, and confirms the account of the *Tdjū'l-Mu'āṣir*. It describes the confusion which arose in the Sultān's dominions on account of the rumour of his death, and states that the Khōkhars (and other tribes of the hills of Lahore and Jūd) broke out in rebellion in 602 H. and were defeated with great slaughter.³⁰ In this rebellion the Khōkhars appear to have been in alliance with the Rae Sal, the ruler of the Salt Range, or Koh-i-Jūd, but it is not certain that Rae Sal himself was a Khōkhār.

²² Also called Tāhlī, because one of its quarters was so called from a tāhlī or shisham tree.

²³ The following account is extracted from Elliot's *History of India*, cited as *E. H. I.*; from the *Tabaqāt-i-Nāṣirī*, Raverty's Translation, cited as *T. N.*; and from the latter writer's *Notes on Afghanistan*.

²⁴ *E. H. I.*, II. p. 447.

²⁵ *Ib.* p. 209.

²⁶ *Ib.* p. 233.

²⁷ *Ib.* p. 235.

²⁸ *Ib.* p. 264.

²⁹ *T. N.* p. 451; cf. 504.

In 620 H. (1223 A. D.) the Sultan Jalalu'd-Din, driven from Ghazni by the Chingiz Khan, who pursued him to the Indus, sought a refuge in the Panjab. He occupied Balala and Nikala³¹ near Lahore, and, being too weak to advance on Delhi, sent a part of his army against the hills of Jûd. This force defeated the Khôkhars chief, and the Sultan obtained his daughter in marriage, whereupon the Khôkhars Rai³² joined him with a considerable body of his tribe.

The Khôkhars had a longstanding feud with Kubâcha, governor of Sind (which then included the whole valley of the Indus below the Salt Range), and the Sultan's troops, under the guidance of the son of the Khôkhars chief, by a forced march, fell suddenly upon Kubâcha's camp near Uch and totally defeated him.

The Khôkhars, however, do not appear to have been confined to the country between the Jhilam and the Chenâb, but to have also held a considerable tract *East* of the Biâs (and the good horses to be obtained in their *talwâris* or settlements are often mentioned), for in 638 A. H. (1240 A. D.) we find them enlisted in the forces of the Sultan (Queen) Razîyyat and her consort Malik Ikhtiyâru'd-Din, Altânia, but they abandoned her after her defeat at Kaithal.³³

After the sack of Lahore by the Mughals in 1241-42 A. D., "the Khôkhars and other Hindu Gabrs" seized it.³⁴ And in 1246-47 A. D. the future Sultan Ghiyâsu'd-Din Balban was sent against the Khôkhars into the Jûd Hills and Jhilam.³⁵ The Khôkhars were apparently subjects of Jaspâl, Sihra.³⁶

About this time Sher Khan reduced the Jats, Khôkhars, Bhâttis, Minis (Minas), and Mandâhars under his sway,³⁷ apparently in or near his fief of Sunâm.

In 647 A. H. (1250 A. D.) the upper part of the Panjab appears to have been in the hands of the Mughals and Khôkhars,³⁸ but nothing more appears to be heard of them until the reign of Muhammad Tughlaq Shâh, when they again began to be troublesome, and in 1342-43 A. D. they revolted under their chief, Chandar. The governor of the Panjab, Malik Tâtâr Khân, had to march against them, and though he was able to subdue them for a time, they caused great disorders under the last Tughlaq kings of Dehlî.³⁹

We now come to the *Târikh-i-Mubârak-Shâhî*, an imperfect manuscript, the history in which has had to be completed from the *Tubaqât-i-Akbarî*, which copied from it. According to this history, the Khôkhars chief Shaikhâ⁴⁰ seized Lahore in 796 A. H. (1394 A. D.), and Prince Humâyûn afterwards Sikandar Shâh I., was to have been sent against him,⁴¹ but his father, Muhammad Shâh III., dying suddenly, he was too occupied in securing the throne to set out on the expedition. Sikandar Shâh, however, only reigned some six weeks, and on his death Sultan Mahmûd Shâh II. succeeded him, but it was not for some months that Sârang Khân could be nominated by him to the fief of Dibâlpur and entrusted with the war against Shaikhâ. Sârang Khân took possession of Dibâlpur in June, and in September he advanced on Lahore with the forces of Multân, and, accompanied by the Bhâtti and Main (Mina) chiefs,⁴² crossed the Sutlej at Tihâra and the Biâs at Dubâli. On hearing of Sârang Khân's advance, Shaikhâ Khôkhars invaded the territory of Dibâlpur and laid siege to Ajûdhan, but hearing that Sârang Khân had passed Hindupat and was investing Lahore, he returned hastily to that city and encountered Sârang Khân at Sâmuthalla, 12 *kos* from it. There he was defeated by Sârang

³¹ Bankâla or Mankâla — E. H. I., II. p. 553; cf. 563.

³² Called Kokâr Sankâ, who had embraced Islam in the time of Muhammad Ghori — ib. p. 563; T. N. p. 294.

³³ T. N. pp. 647-8, notes.

³⁴ Ib. p. 656 n.

³⁵ Ib. p. 678; E. H. I., II. 347.

³⁶ T. N. p. 815.

³⁷ Ib. p. 795.

³⁸ Ib. p. 822.

³⁹ Ravery's Notes, p. 367. Farishta turns Chandar into Haidar. — Brigg's Trans. I. p. 425.

⁴⁰ Shaikhâ was the general name by which the chiefs of the tribes styled themselves, because "being Hindus by descent, they had become converts to Islam." Hence Juarath is often styled Jasrath Shaikhâ. — Ravery's Notes, p. 367.

⁴¹ E. H. I., IV. p. 272.

⁴² Ib. p. 29. Dibâlpur is the ancient Deobâlpur and the modern Dipâlpur. Ajûdhan is the modern Pâkpattan.

Khân and fled to the hills of Jûd, while the victor took possession of Lahore. Four years later occurred the grim interlude of Timûr's invasion. Shaikhâ, says the historian, out of enmity to Sârang Khân, early joined Timûr and acted as his guide, in return for which he received mercy and honour,⁴³ but before Timûr left India he made Shaikhâ prisoner, and with him all his wives and children.

According to the histories of Timûr, however, the Khôkhars played a much more important part in the resistance offered to the invading armies of Timûr than the *Târikh-i-Mubârak-Shâhi* is inclined to admit. In October 1398 A. D., Timûr halted at Jâl on the Biâs, opposite Shâhpur. Here he learnt that Nusrat of the tribe of Khôkhâr was established in a fortress on the bank of a lake. He attacked Nusrat, and completely routed him, taking immense booty in cattle and burning Nusrat's residence. Nusrat himself was slain. Some of his followers escaped across the Biâs, which Timûr crossed, marching from Shâh Nawâz to Janjân, a few days later.⁴⁴ We next read of **Malik Shaikhâ** or Shaikh Kûkar, 'commander of the infidels,' who was defeated and slain by Timûr in the valley of Kûpila or Hardwâr.⁴⁵ The *Zafarnâma*, however, differs from this account. It mentions Alâ'u'd-Dîn as a deputy of Shaikh Kûkarî, who was sent as an envoy to Kûpila,⁴⁶ and describes the advance of a Malik Shaikhâ as being misreported as the advance of Shaikh Kûkarî, one of Timûr's faithful adherents, a mistake which enabled Malik Shaikhâ to attack Timûr unawares, though he was promptly repulsed and killed. Then we hear of Timûr's arrival at Jammû on his homeward march. In its neighbourhood he captured seven strongholds, belonging to the infidels, whose people had formerly paid the *jizya* or poll-tax to the Sultân of Hindûstân, but had for a long time past cast off their allegiance. One of these forts belonged to Malik Shaikh Kûkar, but, according to the *Zafarnâma*, the owner of this stronghold was Shaikhâ, a relation of Malik Shaikh Kûkar⁴⁷ (or Shaikhâ Kûkarî), which possibly makes the matter clear: — Nusrat, the Khôkhâr, had been killed on the Biâs, after which his brother, Shaikhâ, submitted to Timûr, and was employed by him during his advance on Delhî.⁴⁸ The Malik Shaikhâ killed at Kûpila was not a Khôkhâr at all, but in Timûr's *Autobiography* he has become confused with Malik Shaikhâ the Khôkhâr. Lastly, Malik Shaikhâ had a relative, probably a Khôkhâr, who held a little fort near Jammû.⁴⁹

After his arrest by Timûr, Shaikhâ disappears from history; but in 823 A. H. (1420 A. D.), or some twenty-two years later, **Jasrath (the son of) Shaikhâ** makes his entrance on the scene. In that year the king of Kashmîr marched into Sindh, and was attacked by Jasrath, who defeated him, took him prisoner, and captured all his *materiel*. Elated by this success, Jasrath, an independent rustic, began to have visions about Delhi. Hearing that Khîzr Khân (whom Timûr had left in charge of Multân as his feudatory, and who had become Sultân of Delhi in all but name) was dead, he crossed the Biâs and Sutlej, defeated the Mina leaders, and ravaged the country from Ludhiâna to Arâbar (Rupar).⁵⁰ Thence he proceeded to Jalandhar, and encamped on the Biâs, while Zirak Khân, the *amîr* of Samâna, retired into the fort. After

⁴³ E. H. I., IV. p. 35.

⁴⁴ E. H. I., III. pp. 415-6.

⁴⁵ Ib. pp. 455-6; cf. p. 510

⁴⁶ Ib. p. 505.

⁴⁷ According to the *Mâfâzât-i-Timûrî*, Malik Shaikhâ Khôkhâr was the brother of Nusrat Khôkhâr, formerly governor of Lahore on the part of Sultan Mahmûd of Delhî. After Nusrat's defeat Shaikhâ Khôkhâr had submitted to Timûr, and had accompanied him on his march to the Jamma, his influence being sufficient for him to obtain protection for his subjects from pillage by Timûr's army. Shaikhâ, however, obtained Timûr's leave to return to Lahore, where he soon incurred the suspicion of being lukewarm in Timûr's cause, and Timûr sent orders to arrest Shaikhâ and levy a ransom from Lahore. E. H. I., III. p. 473. This account is confirmed by the *Zafarnâma*, which calls Nusrat Kûkarî brother of Shaikhâ Kûkarî — ib. p. 485. Raverty states that some authorities say that Shaikhâ died a natural death, while others allege that he was put to death, Jasrath being imprisoned in Samârqand. Some years later Jasrath was released and returned home. There he put to death Shâhî, his brother, and, seizing Jalandhar and Kulânaur, began to aspire the sovereignty of Hind. — Notes, p. 368.

⁴⁸ E. H. I., III. p. 520.

⁴⁹ Ib. p. 467.

⁵⁰ E. H. I., IV. p. 54. Raverty adds that he attacked Sirhind, but it was defended by Sultan Shâh Lodi and he failed to take it in 1421. — Notes, p. 368.

some negotiations it was agreed that the fort was to be evacuated and given up to Tûghân, the Turk-bacha (Jasrath's ally, who had taken refuge in his territories), while Jasrath was to pay tribute and return home. But as soon as Jasrath got Zîrak Khân into his camp, he detained him as a prisoner and carried him, securely guarded, to Ludhiâna, whence he marched to Sirhind. That fortress, however, defied all his attempts, and the Sultan Mubarak Shah, advancing, compelled him to raise the siege and retreat on Ludhiâna, whence, having released Zîrak Khân, he crossed the Sutlej. The Sultan's forces then advanced as far as Ludhiâna, but were unable to cross the Sutlej, as Jasrath had secured all the boats. When the rains ceased, the Sultan withdrew to Kabûlpur,⁵¹ and Jasrath made a similar movement, whereupon the Sultan sent a force to effect a crossing at Rûpar. Jasrath marched on a line parallel to this force, but it effected a crossing, and the Sultan then passed the river without opposition. Jasrath's followers then abandoned the opposition he had chosen without striking a blow, and their leader fled hastily to Ludhiâna, whence he crossed the Biâs, the Râvî, and finally, after the Sultan had crossed the latter river near Bhowa,⁵² the Jânâhâva (Chinâb). Jasrath now took refuge in his strongest place, Tekhar⁵³ in the hills, but Rai Bhîm⁵⁴ of Jammû guided the Sultan's forces to the stronghold, and it was captured and destroyed. Jasrath's power was, however, undiminished, for, as soon as the Sultan had returned to Delhi after restoring Lahore, he recrossed Chinâb and Râvî with a large force of horse and foot, and attacked Lahore and was only driven off after nearly five weeks' fighting round the fort. He then retreated on Kâlânaur to attack that stronghold, into which Rai Bhîm had thrown himself in order to relieve Lahore. After protracted fighting round Kâlânaur, Jasrath patched up a truce with Rai Bhîm and then went towards the Râvî, where he collected all the people of the territory of the Khôkhars, who were in alliance with him, but on the advance of an imperial army from Lahore, supported by one which advanced on the ford of Buhî, he again fled to Tekhar. The united forces of the Sultan now marched along the river Râvî and crossed it between Kâlânaur and Bhojh,⁵⁵ afterwards effecting a junction with Rai Bhîm on the confines of Jammû. These forces defeated some Khôkhars who had separated from Jasrath on the Chinâb.

In the following year (826 A. H. or 1423 A. D.) Jasrath defeated Rai Bhîm and captured most of his horses and *materiel*. The Rai himself was killed, and Jasrath now united himself to a small army of Mughals and invaded the territories of Dibâlpur and Lahore, but on the advance of the imperial leader he retired across the Chinâb.

After this the Khôkhars appear to have remained inactive for four or five years, but in 831 A. H. (1428 A. D.) Jasrath laid siege to Kâlânaur, and on advancing from Lahore to relieve the place, his old opponent, Sikandar Tuhfa, was defeated and had to retreat on Lahore. Jasrath then besieged Jâlandhar, but he was unable to reduce it, and so he retreated to Kâlânaur, carrying off the people of the neighbourhood as captives. Reinforcements were sent to Sikandar, but before they arrived, he had again advanced to Kâlânaur and united his forces with those of Rai Ghâlib of that town. These leaders then marched after Jasrath and completely defeated him at Kângrà on the Biâs, recovering the spoils which he had gained at Jâlandar. Jasrath again took refuge in Tekhar.

In 835 A. H. (1431-2 A. D.), however, Jasrath descended from Telhar (Tekhar) and marched on Jâlandhar. Sikandar drew out of Lahore to intercept him, but ineptly allowed his small force to be attacked by Jasrath's superior numbers and was defeated and taken prisoner, some of his followers escaping to Jâlandhar. Jasrath in triumph marched on Lahore and laid siege to it, but it was vigorously defended by Sikandar's lieutenants, and on the Sultan's advancing to Sâmâna to its relief, he abandoned the siege, but kept Sikandar in captivity.⁵⁶

⁵¹ Kabulpur (Raverty).

⁵² Not identified : possibly Bhowa and Bhojh are the same.

⁵³ Thaukar or Talher in other historians. Farishta has Bisal, but that is on the Râvî. Raverty calls it Thankir. — E. H. I., IV. pp. 55-6.

⁵⁴ Raverty calls this Hindu Râjâ of Jammu Rai Bhalin, but adds that he was son-in-law of Ali Shâh of Kashmîr, against whom Zainu'l-Abidin, his brother, enlisted Jasrath's aid. The Khôkhars and their ally marched from Siâlkot against the Sultan, Ali Shâh, and defeated him prior to 1423 A. D. About this time the Gakkhars, under Malik Kad, wrested their conquests from Zainu'l-Abidin.

⁵⁵ E. H. I., IV. p. 74.

In 835 A. H. (1432 A. D.) Malik Allâhdâd was appointed feudatory of Lahore, but he was promptly attacked on his arrival at Jalandhar by Jasrath, defeated and compelled to seek a refuge in the hills of Kothi.⁵⁶

In 840 A. H. (1436 A. D.) the Sultan Muhammad Shâh sent an expedition against Shaikhâ (sic) Khôkhar, which ravaged his territories.⁵⁷

In 845 A. H. (1441 A. D.) the Sultan conferred Dibâlpur and Lahore on Bahol Khân and sent him against Jasrath, but Jasrath made peace with him and flattered him with hopes of the throne of Delhi.⁵⁸ After this the Khôkhar power declined, owing to causes of which we know nothing.

In the time of Akbar the Khôkhars held 5 out of 52 *mahâlls* in the Lahore *sarkâr* in the Bâri Doâb, and 7 out of 21 *parganas* in the Chinhâth Doâb, with one *mahâll* each in the Bist-Jalandhar and Rachna Doâbs. In the Dibâlpur *sarkâr* of Multân they held 3 out of 10 *mahâlls* in the Bist-Jalandhar Doâb, and one in the Berûn-i-Panjnad, west of the Indus. Raerty puts their population then at more than 200,000 souls.⁵⁹

It must be confessed that the above notes leave the question of the origin of the Khokhars precisely where it stood. In an account of the Kâtîl Râjputs from Gurdûspur it is said that some of the (earliest) converts to Islam became known as Khokhars, but further on it says: "One of our ancestors settled in the fort of Mangla Devi in the Jammu State and then took possession of Kharipur. Hence his descendants became known as Khokhars," after being converted to Islam in the time of Mahmûd of Ghaznî. And further on it says that Kâtîls do not intermarry with Khokhars, because the latter are of their blood, and are descendants of Kâtîls by Muhammadan wives.

II. — A HISTORY OF THE GAKKHARS.

The Gakkhars do not appear, *eo nomine*, in history until the time of the emperor Bâbar. Their country, says the *Tabaqât-i-Akbarî*, lies on the Indus, well known as the Nilâb, and the territory from the Siwâlik hills to the borders of Kashmir has been *from all times* in their possession, though other tribes, such as the Khari,⁶⁰ Janûba, Jatriya, Bhûkyâl (Bhûgiâ) and Jat, dwell in those parts in subordination to the Gakkhars. In the *Tâzak-i-Bâhârî*, Bâbar describes the hill-country between the Nilâb and Bahra (Bhera), as inhabited by the Jats, Gujars, and many other similar tribes under a Gakkhar *hâkim* or ruler, their government much resembling that of the Jûd and Janjûha and the lands adjoining the hill-country of Kashmir. The government in this time was held by Tâtâr and Hâti, Gakkhars, who were cousins.⁶¹ Tâtâr's stronghold was Parhâlah, Hâti's country was close adjoining the hills. Hâti was in alliance with Baba' Khân, who held Kâlinjar,⁶² Tâtâr was in a certain way subject to Daulat Khân (the governor of the Panjab), while Hâti remained independent. Tâtâr, at the instance of the *amirs* of Hindustân (the Delhi kingdom) and in conjunction with them, was keeping Hâti in a state of blockade in some sort, when Hâti, by a stratagem, made a sudden advance, surprised Tâtâr, slew him and took his country. He then sent on Parbat, his relation, to Bâbar with a contribution by way of tribute, but the envoy went to Bâbar's main camp and thus missed the expedition which had already set out for Parhâla.

⁵⁶ E. H. I., IV. p. 75.

⁵⁷ Ib. p. 85: Jasrath must be meant.

⁵⁸ Ib. pp. 85-6.

⁵⁹ Notes, pp. 366-67. The Khôkhars of the Jalandhar District do not mention Jasrath, but only date their settlement there from the time of the Sayyid kings. Mr. Purser (*Jullundur Settlement Report*, p. 16) says this is negative evidence that Jasrath was a Gakkhar, but he refers to Major Waterfield's *Gujrât Settlement Report*, in which the Khôkhars are quite correctly put down as descended from Jasrath, "who, with Bharat, took Jammû, when in Timûr's service," and afterwards settled in the Gujrât District. — See *Panjab Notes and Queries*, I. p. 141.

⁶⁰ Possibly the Khattars.

⁶¹ Abu'l-Fazl says that in the time of Zainu'l-Âbidin of Kashmir, Malik Kad, one of the nobles of Ghaznî, dispossessed the Kashmiris of the tract between the Jhelum and the Indus. He was succeeded by: (1) Malik Kalân, his son; Bir, his grandson; Tâtâr, the opponent of Sher Khân and Salim Khân, who had two sons, Sultân Sârang and Adam. — Raerty's *Notes*, p. 366. Sârang's sons were Kamâl and Sa'id.

⁶² Kâlinjar lies west of the Indus near Swâbî. — Raerty's *Notes*, p. 274.

Bâbar, at this stage, arrived from Bahra on his way to Kâbul, and, instigated by the Janjûhas, old enemies of the Gakkhars, attacked Parhâla, which he took, Hâti seeking safety in flight. Bâbar's guide to Barhâla was Sûrpa, Sarpa or Saropa, Gujar, a servant of the Malik Hast,⁶³ whose father had been slain by Hâti. Hâti now submitted to Bâbar.⁶⁴

After the Afghâns, headed by Sher Shâh, had recovered their power in India and expelled Humâyûn after Bâbar's death, the Sultân Sher Shâh made over the Ninduna *pargana* to Ismâ'il Khân Balôch in return for the Sarwâni territory, which had been usurped by the Baloches and which he restored to Shaikh Bayazid Kalkapûr Sarwâni, its rightful owner.⁶⁵ Sher Shâh also marched through all the hills of Padmân and Garjâk⁶⁶ (or Girjhâk Ninduna⁶⁷), and selected a site for the great fortress of Rohtâs, which was designed both to hold in check the Gakkhars and restrain the Mughal invasions. The Gakkhars, however, prevented Tôdar Khatri, who was in charge of the work, from obtaining labour, and it was only by offering exorbitant pay that the Gakkhars were tempted to flock to the work.⁶⁸ Sher Shâh, moreover, sent a force against Rai Sârang, the Gakkhar, and subdued his country, plundering also the hill of Balnâo. Rai Sârang's daughter was captured and given to Khawâs Khân, one of Sher Khân's nobles,⁶⁹ while the Rai himself, having surrendered or being taken prisoner, was slain alive.⁷⁰ His son Kamâl Khân was sent as a prisoner to Gwalior,⁷¹ in the Siwâlik hills. Rohtâs was then committed to the care of Hâbib Khân Niâzî and other leaders, 30,000 horse being kept in its neighbourhood to hold in check Kashmir and the Gakkhar country.⁷² Rohtâs appear to have been thus partially built in 1540 A. D., but it was not completed till eight or ten years later.

In 955 A. H. (1548 A. D.) the Niâzîs, defeated by the troops of Sultân Islâm or Salim Shâh Sur, fled for refuge to the Gakkhars' territory.⁷³ Upon this, Islâm Shâh advanced on Rohtâs, the completion of which he urged forward with much earnestness, and which work was carried out in not less than two years, amidst incessant and desperate fighting with the tribe. Sultân Âdam eventually sued for peace and agreed to compel the Niâzîs to quit his territories.⁷⁴ Salim Shâh also released Kamâl Khân, son of Rai Sârang, and appointed him to act, in concert with the governor of the Pañjâb, in the subjugation of the Gakkhar territory.⁷⁵

In 1552 A. D. Kâmrân, driven from Kâbul by Humâyûn, sought a refuge in the territories of Sultân Âdam, who had succeeded his brother Sârang, but that chief sent word to the emperor Humâyûn that he was willing to acknowledge his authority and deliver Kâmrân into his hands. Kâmrân, however, took refuge with the Sultân Salim Shâh, on Humâyûn's advancing to Dinkot on the Indus,⁷⁶ but, failing to obtain any assistance in the Pañjâb, he returned in disguise to the Gakkhar territory on his way to Kâbul, and rashly disclosed his identity to Sultân Âdam, who surrendered him to Humâyûn, and he was blinded (September 1553 A. D.).⁷⁷ Humâyûn now marched against Pirâna, a chief of the Janjûha tribe, who held a strong fort in the Bhîra (Bherâ) country and secured his surrender, handing his territory over to Sultân Âdam.⁷⁸

After the restoration of Humâyûn, Kamâl Khân, son of Rai Sârang, was given half the territories held by his uncle (Sultân) Âdam Khân.⁷⁹ Âdam Khân resisted this mandate and a royal army had to be sent to enforce it. Âdam Khân was defeated and captured and his son fled into Kashmir, but was subsequently taken also. Kamâl Khân then became sole chief of the Gakkhars and he detained Âdam Khân in captivity till his death.⁸⁰

In Akbar's reign the Gakkhars held 7 out of 42 *mahâlls* in the Sindh-Sâgar Doâb of the Lahore *sarkar*.⁸¹

⁶³ Who the Malik Hast was does not appear. See note 16, *supra*.

⁶⁴ E. H. I., IV. pp. 234-8.

⁶⁵ Ib. p. 389.

⁶⁶ Ib. p. 390.

⁶⁷ Ib. V. p. 114.

⁶⁸ Ib. V. p. 115.

⁶⁹ Ib. V. p. 114, and IV. p. 390. A *Song of Khwâs Khân* is under publication in this Journal, and the present writer hopes to publish shortly a very curious legend connecting him with the shrine of Shâh Daulâ in Gujrât.

⁷⁰ Ib. V. p. 114. The *Târikh-i-Dâdâti* says that Salim Shâh captured Sârang Sultân and had him flayed alive.—Ib. IV. 498.

⁷¹ Probably Kahlûr of the hills, i. e., the old capital of the State of Kahlûr or Bilâspur in the Simlâ hills.

⁷² E. H. I., IV. pp. 390 and 415.

⁷³ Erskine, II. p. 462; cf. p. 419.

⁷⁴ Erskine, II. pp. 465-6.

⁷⁵ E. H. I., V. p. 279.

⁷⁶ Ib. V., pp. 278-9.

Erskine, *Baber and Humayoon*, II. 407.

⁷⁷ Elphinstone, p. 470.

⁷⁸ Erskine, II. p. 419.

⁷⁹ E. H. I., V. p. 279.

⁸⁰ Ib. p. 260.

⁸¹ Raverty's Notes, p. 367.

AHMAD SHAH, ABDĀLĪ, AND THE INDIAN WAZIR, 'IMĀD-UL-MULK (1756-7).

(Contributed by William Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Service.)

THE following narrative is taken from a Persian manuscript, being the third of four works bound together in a small quarto volume which I bought at Quaritch's some ten or twelve years ago. The other tracts are :—(1) *Inshāe Miram*, copied Ṣafar 1198 H. (Dec. 1783); (2) *Inshāe 'Abdullah*, copied at Lakhnau, Raſī I., 1198 H. (Feb. 1784); (3) the present narrative; (4) a fragment of Mḥd. Aḥsān, Ma'ānī Yāb Khān (Ijād), Samānawi's *Farrukh-nāmah*. This fragment carries on this rare work to some date in 1128 H. (1716), that is, much farther than either B. Museum MS. Oriental, No. 25 (Rieu, 273), or the twenty-five folios of it in the Münich MS., No. 265 (Joseph Aumer, 'Catalogue,' 1866, p. 97).

The volume has on the flyleaf a list of contents in English, in an 18th century handwriting which I have seen elsewhere; I think it is that of Jonathan Scott, Polier, or W. Franklin. Some one has noted that the initials "W. O." on the same flyleaf are those of Sir William Ouseley, presumably a former owner. The book was No. 387 in the bookseller, W. Straker's Catalogue of 1836, and in 1839 it belonged to Dr. John Lee of 5 Doctors' Commons, by whom it was lent to B. Dorn, when his 'History of the Afghans' was in preparation for the Oriental Translation Fund.

The account of Aḥmad Shāh Abdālī's incursion into India in 1757, as here presented, is one of three notable contributions to Indian history of the 18th century, for which we are indebted to the initiative of Captain Jonathan Scott; and so far as I recollect, not one of them is referred to in the article devoted to him in the "Dictionary of National Biography." The other two works are :—(1) *Hadiqat-ul-aqālīm*, by Shekh Murtazā Husain, Bilgrāmī, surnamed Allāhyār Sānī, H. M. Elliot's "accurate Moortuza Hosain"; (2) *Shahādat-i-Farrukhstyar wa Jālus-i-Muhammad Shāh*, by Mirzā Muhammad Balkhsh, Ashob.

Ṣamīn is the author of *Sharāt-i-'usmānī*, a history of Bilgrām Shekh families written as a counterblast to Ghulām 'Alī, Āzād's *Ma,āgīr-ul-kirām fi tārīkh-i Bilgrām*, a panegyric of the Sayyid families there. He pours fine scorn on Āzād, who was a *Samdhānī*, though he calls himself a *Bilgrāmī*; that is, his mother was of Bilgrām, but his father Muhammād Nūh was of Samdhān, an obscure village on the other side of the Ganges, between Farrukhābād and Qānnauj. In the *Sharāt*, if (my copy, page 255) we find that Ghulām Hasan, poetically Ṣawīn, Ṣadīqī, Farshūrī, Bilgrāmī, was the son of Shekh Ghulām Husain, son of Qāzī Faizullah of Bilgrām (now in the Hardoi district). He was born about 1129 H. (1716-17) and had a brother called Muhammād Ṣadīq (poetically *Sukhanwar*). He traces his descent in the 37th degree from Abī Bakr, Ṣadīq; and for 25 generations his ancestors had been *qāzīs* of Bilgrām. Up to 1179 H. (1765-6) Ṣamīn had three sons and two daughters. The present narrative shows that he was alive in 1197 H. (1782-3). I have found no record of his death.

I think the story here given is of great historical value, as it furnishes us with a first-hand account of actual events. The doings of Aḥmad Shāh in India, except those leading up to the crowning victory of Pānīpāt in January 1761, are elsewhere recorded for the most part in a vague, confused manner. Many points are cleared up by Ṣamīn's story, and it helps to do for Aḥmad Shāh's Indian record, what Dr. Oskar Mann has done so brilliantly for his Aōī-Indian conquests, in a series of articles in the Z. D. M. G. for 1898. The intercalated narrative of 'Imād-ul-mulk's marriage troubles is new and curious; and it throws further light on the character of Mu'īn-ul-mulk's widow, the disagreeable traits in which are largely depicted in Ghulām 'Alī Khān's *Muqaddamah* and the autobiography of her husband's house-slave, Mirzā Tahmāsp, Miskīn.

God the Helper,

In the Name of
God, the Compassionate,
the Merciful.

and may the
end be
favorable.

After praises and prayer, this humble slave (May God impress truth on him) Ghulām Ḥasan, Ṣamīn, (God pardon him and his connections) states that in the year 1197 after the Holy Flight of the Prophet (the Protection of God be upon him, and Peace), at the instigation of a friend, Shekh Allahyār, Bahādur (May God on High save him), son of Shekh Allahyār, the martyr;¹ I arrived in the town of Allahābād, and was introduced to the extremely improving audience of the Lord of Benefits, Captain Jonathan Scott, Bahādur, (May his Good Fortune endure). The beauty of his condescension is more than can be brought forth by the strength of this wounded pen. (Verse.)

Kih dārad ham chū ū luṭf wa sakhā wa shafkat "Who like him has grace, liberality, affection, kindness,

Dil-i-khūrram, rukh-i-zibā, lab-i-shirin, jabin-i-anwār "A joyous heart, a handsome face, sweet speech, an ample brow;

Zī shukr-i-mailh wa akhlāq-i-karīm-i-ū farū mānd, "I fail in recounting his praise and his gracious manners,

Zabān ījiz, khirad hairān, sukhān qāsir, qalam muzfarr, "My tongue stammers, my wits wander, my words suffice not, my pen stumbles;

Sāzad gar man warā dāim ba tāba' khāsh zī jān-o-dil, "If for ever I could do what my heart and soul desire

Kunam khidmat, buram fārmān, nīham gurdān, shāvram kītar. "I should serve him, obey him, bow before him, be his humble servant."

In the said year 1197 H. (1782-83) by order of the said Captain Sāhib, I wrote something of the doings of Ahmad Shāh, the Abdālī king, when long ago, in the year 1169 H. (1755-6), he (Ahmad Shāh) entered the capital, Shāhjahānābād. It was then the reign of 'Azīz-ud-dīn, emperor of Hind, entitled 'Ālamgīr Sānī. All these events the writer beheld with his own eyes; and I now reduce them to writing. Owing to the haste in which I write, I have paid no heed to elegance or style or the employment of metaphor. In spite of scantiness of acquisition and absence of ability, I have not been afraid to become the submissive carrier-out of that Sāhib's orders.

Be it known then, wherever the tongue of the pen mentions "Shāhan Shāh," it means Ahmad Shāh, king of the Abdālī, and the words "Emperor of Hind" indicate 'Azīz-ud-dīn, 'Ālamgīr II.; and where the phrase "Great Wazīr" occurs, Shāh Wali Khān, the minister of the Abdālī, is intended. By "'Imād-ul-mulk" is meant Nawāb Ghayāz-ud-dīn, minister of the emperor of Hind and grandson of Nawāb Nīzām-ul-mulk. By "Nawāb Ghāzanfar Jang" is meant Ahmad Khān, Bangash, ruler of Farrukhābād; and "Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah" means the son of Nawāb Abu'l Mansūr Khān, Bahādur, Safdar Jang, nāzīm of the sūbah of Akhtarnagar Audh.

ACCOUNT OF SAIYID SHER ANDĀZ KHĀN.

Be it remembered that the writer, in order to gain his livelihood, was for several years with that Protector of Saiyids, one Muḥammad Sāliḥ (poetically, Sayyāḥ), bearing the title of Sher Andāz Khān Bahādur, an employé of the late Nawāb Safdar Jang already mentioned. He was on duty in attendance upon Nawāb Zafar Jang, Khān Zamān Khān Bahādur, 'Alī Quli Khān, Dāghistānī (poetically, Wālih), and nicknamed the "Six-fingered."

¹ "The martyr," he was killed in battle on Oct. 20, 1730, outside Ahmadābād in Gujerāt. He was chief commander under Surbuland Khan, the governor, who fought his successor in the government, Rājā Abhai Singh of Jodhpur.

The deceased Saiyid (Sher Andāz Khān) was a native of the town Shāhī, which lies between the towns of Bareli and Pilibhit. He was exceptionally well-instructed in all sciences, unequalled in valour, generosity and enterprise. At the age of twelve the Saiyid left his country² of origin to obtain instruction, and was for nearly two and a half years in the house of this poor one's respected grandfather, with whom he read Arabic as far as the Sharḥ of the Mullā. After that time he went to the town of Saifipur,² the honoured burial-place of the venerable Shāh Saifī, and there the then occupier of the seat of authority, Miyān 'Abdullah Sāhib, adopted him as his son.

After the lapse of some time the Saiyid became anxious to make the journey to the Hajāz and other places of pilgrimage. Accordingly with this intent he quitted Saifipur, and binding the skirt of enterprise round the middle of his heart, he made for the regions of 'Arabistān, and by the special grace of the Lord was honoured by a visit to the Holy Ka'bah, Luminous Madinah, Holy Najaf, Exalted Karbalā, Mashhad the Pure, and other places.

When he came back to Hindūstān Nawāb Safdar Jang urged him to take service and dealt with him honorably. In this space of time the Saiyid was a noted man of the age, honoured and valued by mighty sovereigns, famed *wazirs*, and high nobles. After Safdar Jang came Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah, and he, too, omitted no detail of honour and respect.

Then in the year 1173 H. (1759-60) for the second [? third] time the Abdālī king came from Wilāyat to Hindūstān, and rooted out the Infidel, that is to say, Rājah Bhāo and others of the Mahrattah armies. At this period the deceased Saiyid was in the service of Nawāb Ghāzaufar Jang,² Ahmad Khān Bangash, ruler of Farrukhābād. At the invitation of the Abdālī king, Ahmad Khān, Bangash, sent the deceased (Sher Andāz Khān) to see Rājah Bhāo, leader of the Mahrattahs to conduct certain negotiations.

The Saiyid, having to some extent settled the business with the Mahrattah leaders, was returning to the Abdālī king's camp. On his way he was passing through the *parganahs* of the Jāt. There the control on behalf of Najīb Khān was in the hands of Sa'ādat Khān, Afridi Afghān. On hearing [of the Saiyid's arrival] this man sent a message. "In God's name come and stay, even for an hour or so, with me. I have something of importance to tell you."

The Saiyid turned off his road and with a limited retinue went to visit the said Khān (Sa'ādat Khān, Afridi). The Khān then asked the Saiyid to tell the Abdālī Shāh that the army of the accursed Jāt was very numerous, while he (Sa'ādat Khān) had a very small force. He hoped that troops would be sent by His Majesty to reinforce him. The conversation was still going on, when a spy came to say that a force of Jāts, nearly 7,000 horsemen, was within a distance of two *kos*, and would be soon close to them. The Khān (Sa'ādat Khān) ordered his troops, one thousand horse and foot all told, to prepare for a fight. To the Mir Sāhib he said: "Let the gentleman withdraw to his own camp." The Mir Sāhib replied: "I am a Saiyid, I do not turn my face from a battlefield. Above all, when it is for a Musulmān, as you are. For God's cause you had called me here; and, by God, to yield up my breath for you will be accounted martyrdom."

So saying he urged his horse on to the field, and began a stout contest with the infidels and defeated them. The infidels, who were advancing boldly, were beaten back. At this point another body came out of the same force and discharged their arrows and fired their matchlocks; the Saiyid was wounded in the right thigh. To this he paid no heed, but pressed like another Rustam on the accursed foe, broke their ranks, and cut off four men's heads. He also sustained three or four sword wounds himself on his right arm and shoulder. He continued the contest and cut down several other men. Accordingly, the accursed ones could not resist and took to flight, and he was the winner of a great victory. The Saiyid, followed by two of his horsemen, started in pursuit of the infidels. Then about one hundred horsemen of the infidel's force appeared on his right flank, surrounding him and his two men. The Saiyid was wounded several times with lance and arrow

² The Safipur of the "Oudh Gazetteer," III. 281; it is in the Unao district.

and sabre. At length a sword-cut took him on the right side and cut through him to the opposite side; he fell from his horse to the ground. Immediately after this the enemy's force disappeared. God also willed that the two troopers, too, should become martyrs. At that time heavy rain came on and both sides retreated to their own quarters.

When the news reached the other followers of that Saiyid received into Mercy, who were encamped at a distance of three *kos*, they returned the next morning and carried the Saiyid back from the place where he fell to the previous camping ground. They say his body had on it fourteen sword and lance wounds between his waist and head, besides two matchlock wounds, one on the right thigh, and the other on the left foot. *Anāllāh wa anā 'ilaih rā'iūn.*

In that year [1173 H. 1759-60] the writer was in the service of Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, son of 'Alī Muhammād Khān, Rohelah. At that period Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, on the advice of Hāfiẓ Rahmat Khān and others, had, at the request of the Abdālī Shāh, left the town of Sambhal in his dominions, and was encamped five *kos* off at the town of Hasanpur. On hearing of the martyrdom of the Saiyid, the writer composed a chronogram, of which the line containing the date is as follows (*Misra*) :—

Ba rāh-i-haq shahīn-i-akbar shudah, āh! (Year 1173 H.).

THE NARRATIVE RETURNS TO THE EVENTS IN 1169 H. (1755-56).

I return to my narrative. When the said deceased Saiyid in the year 1169 (1755-6) left Shājī'nd-daulah, and had to search for a livelihood, he was summoned to Farrukhābād by Nawāb Ghāzanfar Jang. The Saiyid took the writer with him.

In that same year the Abdālī Shāh came from Wilāyat *rīd* Kābul and entered Shāhjabānābād, causing throughout Hindūstān a great convulsion. In all directions the *zamīndārs* raised their heads in rebellion and blocked the traffic on all the roads. At that time the rescripts of the Abdālī Shāh, which in their official language are called *raqam*, arrived one after another, calling for the attendance of Nawāb Ghāzanfar Jang with the greatest insistence. Quick-riding horsemen of the Shah's, they are called *chapar*, brought these despatches to Farrukhābād. Their tenour was as follows. As soon as the Shāh's order (*raqam*) had been perused, he (Ghāzanfar Jang) must start for the Shāh's Presence, where he would be the recipient of kingly favours. In case of any delay, he might rely on the arrival of an avenging army, "which will seize thee in whatever condition thou mayest be found, and drag thee to the Exalted Camp, and deliver thee there: and I shall issue an order for thy territory to be ravaged and plundered. It is necessary that in person thou come hastily and at once with thy army and thy treasure to Our Presence."

As is usual in Hindūstān, Ghāzanfar Jang erected a *furmān-bāri* tent of scarlet cloth outside Farrukhābād at the distance of one *kos*, while he himself advanced two *kos* beyond the tent to receive the *furmān*. He conducted the despatch-riders with all due ceremony to the reception tent. There he first placed the Shāh's letter (*raqam*) upon his head, and then read it and ascertained the contents. In this manner for four days in succession, and without any interval, did letters from the Shāh arrive at Farrukhābād. Every day Ghāzanfar Jang mounted and went out to receive them and bring them to the Tent of Honour, where he inspected them and read them.

From this cause the Nawāb fell into somewhat of a perturbation and perplexity, forcing him to reflect on many things. He had "neither legs to run away nor strength to go forward" (*Nah pāe qareebtān wa nah yārāe raytān*). He therefore called together all the heads of his army and demanded their advice. He asked what their opinion was, what plan should be resorted to, and what should be devised. For he had no treasure, nor was his army such that he could lift his head in opposition to any one, nor had he any strong fortress in the vicinity of Farrukhābād where he could place his family in security. In addition, the Mahrattah armies

were present in great numbers, moving to and fro in his territories. Over and above all this, Shujā-ud-daulah's heart was turned against him, because he had procured the betrothal of 'Alī Qulī Khān's daughter to 'Imād-ul-mulk. "While I myself [*i. e.*, Ghazanfar Jang] am lame and thus useless. If perchance the Shāh's army arrives here and carries me off to his head-quarters, my country will be devastated and destroyed. After that calamity, what possibility is there of again restoring it to prosperity. For on every side are powerful enemies, lords of treasure and of armies, who dwell on the confines of my territories. In this state of things, what remedy is there?"

Previously, during the invasion of Nādir Shāh, the inhabitants of Hindūstān had seen and heard of the general slaughter and the plundering and destruction of Shāhjahānābād. Moreover, these Afghāns round about Farrukhābād had, subsequent to Nādir Shāh's time, been badly handled by Nawāb Saifdar Jaug, being ruined and reduced to poverty, and forced to flee to the hill regions. Thus they were at a loss what answer to give, each one of them lost hand and foot [became helpless] and brought to their lips silly words. But some of them who were famed for judgment and wise planning, represented as follows.

The advisable thing is that Your Excellency march two or three stages in the direction of Shāhjahānābād, and fix on some place for several halts. When these days of halting have passed, you should again march two or three *kos* and once more halt. In this manner the Shāh [Abdālī] will become aware that you are coming to join him and will send no army. Should a force arrive, it will come to join itself to yours. You should leave troops in Farrukhābād to protect your women and family; then, if anything happens, these men can carry off your family to the hills.

To sum up: nothing was decided on, which could allay Ghazanfar Jang's anxieties: fear and dread fell upon every one's heart, both gentle and simple. Great and little men, they all engaged in making plans for flight. Ghuzanfar Jang neither ate nor slept.

In the end Mir Sher Andāz Khān, who has already been spoken of, represented that to his imperfect understanding the following scheme had presented itself. Let a trusty person from the Nawab's entourage be sent to interview the Shāh; let him be provided with letters and petitions to the Shāh and the chief Wazīr, setting forth in detail his (Ahmad Khān's) position, the power of the Mahrattahs, his enemies, and their occupation of his lands. If this faithful one [Sher Andāz Khān] were thought worthy of this task, Please God Most High! he would return having arranged all these points favourably, or obtain even a little more.

After much discussion and considerable reflection, the above proposal was accepted as wise and prudent. The Mir Sāhib was to be despatched with some 'presents' and 'rarities.' Accordingly, they collected 101 gold coins, one thousand rupees struck at Farrukhābād, twenty lengths of gold brocade (*kamkhwāb*), seven pairs of shawls, twenty lengths of figured cloth (*mashrū*), and forty silk, scarves with drawn-thread work (*hashidah*) designs on them. These last are in length and breadth the size of a shawl: they are the product of Mau town.² All these things were sent as an offering to the Shāh. There were also five lengths of *kamkhwāb* brocade, two pairs of shawls, ten lengths of figured cloth (*mashrū*), forty yards (*dirāc*) of green and scarlet broad-cloth and ten Mau scarves; all for the chief minister, namely, Shāh Wali Khān. Four lengths of *kamkhwāb*, two pairs of shawls, seven scarves from Mau; these were to be given to Jangbāz Khān, Bangash, one of the famed nobles and a commander over 5,000 horsemen. This man was of Ghazanfar Jang's own tribe; and, owing to his excessive valour, the Shāh had been pleased to proclaim him as his own son.

When all these things had been collected, the Mir Sāhib was sent off with bags containing the petitions and papers, stating the objects sought. One Ahmad Khān, a petty officer, was sent with him, because he knew the Afghān and Turki languages. The said Khān joined singly

² Mau is 16 miles W. of Farrukhābād.

and marched with the Mir, leaving his regiment at Farrukhībād. The first day's halt was made in the Sarāe at Atāpur.⁴ Through fear of the villagers and of thieves, every one had run away and our whole night was passed in watching.

Next day we were at Qādinganj,⁵ which is situated on the edge of the Ganges and was founded by Shujāt Khān. We rested there. Next morning we crossed the river (Ganges) and reached the town of Bisauli, founded by Donde Khān Rohelah. The Mir Sāhib went to interview Donde Khān.⁶ As it happened, on that day Mullā Sardār Khān, Bakhs̄hi, was present. He said that Ahmad Khān (Bangash) was their sovereign, but when he had taken opium he invented silly ideas. "Your pīr is not caught every time. He does not render thanks to God sufficiently, th: Most High having protected him from the hands of the Irānis⁷ and brought "him back from the hills at a set him up again at Farrukhībād."

The Mir Sāhib said. "It is for that reason that I have appeared here, so that what you advise can be put into execution." Sardār Khān replied "There is no harm in your going, "for Najib Khān has written to me that the Shāh has mentioned repeatedly that he had come "to uphold Islam, above all, to support the Afghān clans, whose territories have been occupied "by the unbelieving Mahrattahs. Since Ahmad Khān, too, is an Afghān, he (the Shāh) will "undoubtedly bestow attention on his circumstances. But where has Ahmad Khān the troops "and the resources, that he can cope successfully with the difficult undertakings that are ahead "of him? Without a large and powerful force it will be impossible to expel the Mahrattahs. "The Shah has come to Hindūstān on this occasion, but he will not remain here."

Donde Khān entertained the Mir Sāhib as his guest for one day, and gave him an attendant (*palwānīr*) by way of escort, to accompany him to his boundary and then return.

Thus after three days we reached *parganah* Barān, which is known as Unchah-ganw.⁸ There one Karam Khān was *auydar* on behalf of Donde Khān. He, too, kept us as his guest, for one day. He gave us ten Rohelahs to go with us as escort to Sikandrāh, and thence to return. From Barān in three days we reached Sikandrāh, which was full everywhere of fugitives from round about Shābjihānābād.

The Mir Sāhib left his retinue behind at Sikandrāh, and taking only the limited number of thirty servants, six cavalry men and three baggage camels, decided to push on farther. On the fourth day we were at the town of Anūpshahr, which lies on the river (Gang(s)) bank. On these marches, in every village we passed not a sign of an inhabitant was to be seen, and along the route unnumbered dead bodies were lying. Anūpshahr, too, was crowded with fugitives from Shābjihānābād, to such an extent that it was difficult to force a way through its lanes. The Rājāh of Anūpshahr came to visit the Mir Sāhib, and made known to us that from old time *parganah* Anūpshahr had continued in the *jāgr* of the *Balhshī ul-mamalik*, and at that time was in the *nigāt* of Amī-ul-umārā, Nawāb Najib-ud-daulah, that is, Najib Khān.⁹ Under the oppressive hand of his Rohelahs its lands had fallen out of cultivation, and every year the amount of waste land was increasing. If the gentleman (i.e., the Mir Sāhib, Sher Andāz Khān, would exert himself to get it (paing Anūpshahr) transferred to the *jāgr* of Ghazanfar Jāng and if the said Sāhib were sent there in charge of it on behalf of that noble, they would reach the summit of their desires and their prosperity would return. The Mir Sāhib agreed to try.

As it chanced, the author had gone to water his horse at the river (Ganges). I saw two horsemen, residents of Bilgrām, giving water to their horses. I recognized them and enquired

⁴ Now spelt 'Atāpur' it is close to Mau-Qāimganj.

⁵ In the Etah district.

⁶ He died at Mularrām, 1185 H., 19th April 1771, he was the father-in-law of Nawāb Khān, Najib-ud-daulah (*Tārikh-i-Mulammad*). Sardār Khān, Bakhs̄hi, died on the 22nd Shawwal, 1185 H., 30th January 1772 (*Chahar Gu'shun-i-Shujā'* of Hār Charan Dās, B. M. Or., 1782, fol. 187.)

⁷ An allusion to Sirdar Jang's attacks in 1750, 1751.

⁸ "High Village," now known as *Buland-Shahr*, "High Town", it is in the Dūbah.

⁹ In other words, Najib Khan held at the time the office of Bakhs̄hī ul-Mamalik.

from them what they were doing. They told me that for three years past they had been living in the service of Rāe Bahādur Singh, master of Dāsnah. At the moment, the Shāh having come to Shāhjahānābād and ordered a general slaughter in *parganah* Dāsnah, Rājah Mushtāq Rāe, brother's son of Rāe Bahādur Singh, had fled from that place with his family, and had come to Anūpshahr, bringing a few of his armed men with him. The writer had a former friendship with Mushtāq Rāe, when the said Rāe in the time of Mahārājah Naval Rāe¹⁰ had come from Dāsnah in search of employment, and for about a month stayed in my humble home; from that time I had a great intimacy with him.

In the afternoon I went to pay the Rāe a visit. Owing to the general slaughter at Dāsnah and the plundering of his goods, he was in low spirits. I said : "As your House (*i. e.*, harem) "has escaped, lots more property can be acquired. Praise be to God! Your family and "connections have been protected from slaughter and dishonour." Owing to these words he assumed to a certain extent a more cheerful exterior, and occupied his mind with other talk. After three quarters of an hour, I asked for leave and returned to my tent. From among those armed men of Bilgrām, I selected four men who were of tested valour; the Mir Sāhib took them into his service, and they accompanied us.

The Mir Sāhib made one day's halt in Anūpshahr. Thence in three days' marching we reached the camp of Nawāb Najib Khān, whose tents were near a town called Dankaur¹¹ on the bank of the Jamnah river. We paid a visit to the Nawāb and he gave us the information that he was sending back some *nasaqchis* (armed messengers) of the Shāh, and that on the following day he would send off the Mir Sāhib in charge of some of these *nasaqchis*, who would not only be a protection, but could act as guides until our arrival at the Shāh's camp. This plan was put into execution, and the Mir Sāhib made a present to the two horsemen of twenty rupees. Then, crossing the Jamnah we made our way to the Shāh's camp.

As it turned out, the Shāh had on this very day begun his march from Shāhjahānābād¹² and pitched his tents at Faridābād, a distance of ten *kos* from the camp of Najib Khān. When we had travelled two *kos* of the distance, we saw eight *kos* away the dust raised by the Shāh's army, the cloud appearing as if it were a mountain stretching its head to heaven. When five *kos* only intervened, we struck on a body of five thousand horsemen, forming the *qarāwal* or skirmishers, who had pitched their tents. They were galloping about in all directions, and whomsoever they caught was slain and plundered. Accordingly, a body of one hundred horsemen turned their faces in our direction, with the intention of laying hands upon us. The *nasaqchis* advanced to our front and spoke in the Turkish language some words to them, by which they forbore their attack.

You must understand that twenty thousand horsemen are attached to the Shāh's train as skirmishers, five thousand men being sent from the army in four different directions to a distance of five *kos*, where they encamp. There they remain on duty as skirmishers.

To return to my narrative. At one watch before sunset the Mir Sāhib said to the *nasaqchis* : "Will you take us to the place where are the tents of Jangbāz Khān, Bangash?" The *nasaqchis* pointed out that the force of Jangbāz Khān was camped in the rear of the Shāh's army, he being on duty as rear-guard. The distance from where we were might be seven *kos*. Therefore, we must put our horses to the gallop in order to be able to reach that spot before nightfall. Thus, following the *nasaqchis*, we reached the place by dark. There

¹⁰ The Deputy Governor of Auda on behalf of Safdar Jang; he was killed at Khadāgapj (Farrukhābād District) on the 1st August 1750.

¹¹ In the Bulandshahr district on the left bank of the Jamnah, 23 m. S.-E. of Delhi.

¹² This passage shows that the author's date for his narrative, 1169 H., is not quite exact. Ahmad Shāh, Abdali, left the Dihlī fort-palace for Khizrābād on the 2nd Jamādā II., 1170 H., 22nd Feb. 1757; see B. Museum, Oriental MS., No. 1749, fol. 102^a.

we learnt that two days before Jangbáz Khān had been sent off by the Shāh to slay and plunder in *parganah* Mīrāth.

The *nasaqchis* said to the Mir Sāhib : "Your best plan now is to go to the division of the chief minister, and put up there. Outside his camp you will find a place where you will be safe. We have now to present ourselves for duty at the *Darikhānah*,¹³ and the *Khargah*¹³ of the Shāh, and this duty is imperative." The Mir Sāhib gave them a second present of twenty rupees. For the time the *nasaqchis* were satisfied and agreed to continue as our guides. When one and a half hours of the night had passed, we came to the standard of the chief minister. This standard stood all by itself in the open plain, while the tents were scattered round it at a distance of two musket-shot. We made the camels sit down close to the flag-staff, and were about to unload them, when, all of a sudden, two *nasaqchi*-troopers came out of a tent, rushed their horses at us, and began to beat the camel-men, saying in the Turki tongue : "Get away from here, this is no place for camping upon."

Aḥmad Khan, Afḡhān, who had come with the Mir Sāhib from Farrukhābād, and knew Turki, began to argue with them. Then one of the two drew his sword and came at him, saying : "Thou dost not listen to my orders, I will decapitate thee." While this talk was going on, a horseman rode up from the left hand, and said to the Mir Sāhib : "My commander, 'one Uṣmān Khān of Qasūr¹⁴ *parganah*, is serving with the Shāh; he saw you from his tents and noticed that you were Hindūstānis and he has kindly sent for you to come and pitch your tents close to his. You should not argue with *nasaqchis*, for a lot more will swarm round, and, without any hesitation, will have recourse to their swords."

Thus the Mir Sāhib went to 'Uṣmān Khan. The said Khān was most hospitable, and forthwith had another tent put up for himself, and gave his own up to the Mir Sāhib. He also treated us as his guests and had a quantity of food sent to the Mir Sāhib, such as Peshāwar rice, the mutton of a fat-tailed sheep (*dumbal*), and thin bread (*nān-i-tanak*), prepared in the Hindūstāni mode by the slave-girls who accompanied that Khān Sāhib. We passed the night there in great comfort.

'Uṣmān Khan was in command of 7,000 horsemen, and was a noble of position, with the rank of a *Haft Hazārī*, and the Shāh had given him a jewelled aigrette with a plume of feathers. The Shāh's practice is that, except famed commanders, no one is allowed to place on his cap (*tāj*) any jewelled aigrette or a plume. This is the sign by which the nobles can be distinguished.

To resume. There was one Maulvī Maḥmūd, a Kashmīrī, who formerly acted as *wakil* (agent) for 'Alī Qalī Khan, the Six-Fingered, in the camp of Nawāb Ṣafdar Jang. At this time, 'Alī Qalī Khan being dead,¹⁵ this man was in attendance on the Mir Sāhib. When three-quarters of an hour remained of the night, he was sent to visit 'Imād-ul-mulk and lay our case before him.

• 'Imād-ul-mulk said : "Let the Mir Sāhib come to me, I am quite anxious to see him. Arise and in all haste bring him, saying, that after I have seen him I will attend to the carrying out of whatever it is wisest to do." That very moment the Maulvī came back and said : "I have been to 'Imād-ul-mulk, and he sits waiting for a visit from the Mir Sāhib, and has said thus and thus." The Mir Sāhib replied : "On no account shall I go first to visit the Indian Wazīr, seeing that Ghazanfar Jang will imagine that his affairs have been arranged through his intervention. First of all I shall visit the chief minister [of the Abdālī], and do

¹³ These are kinds of tents, but, as we are told further on, the first name was applied to the office-tents and the second to the Shāh's own quarters.

¹⁴ Qasūr is to the S.-E. of Lāhor, and the head-quarters of a colony of Khwāshgī Afḡhāns.

¹⁵ He had died on the 1st Rajab 1169 H., 31st March 1755, *Tārikh-i-Muhammadī*, year 1169.

"whatever he directs." Upon this the MauNi returned to 'Imād-ul-mulk and communicated to him the Mir Sāhib's intentions.

'Imād-ul-mulk said : "I, too, am coming to the chief minister, let the Mir Sāhib make haste, for this is the very hour for seeing that noble." Near sunset the Mir Sāhib mounted, and, taking the sealed bag with the petition and the statements and letters about the present and the requests to be made, arrived at the tent of the chief minister. It was a small tent and the Wazir sat in it with a small and light wrapper (*pirāhan*) thrown over his body, brocade drawers, and a white fillet (*fāqiyah*) round his head. At the door was no door-keeper (*hājib*) or other hindrance. Before him lay a large white bolster (*gāo-takiyah*) in the fashion of Hindūstān. 'Imād-ul-mulk was sitting there too, on one side of the Wazir, and had on a full-skirted coat (*jāmah*) of blue-coloured brocade, and a parti-coloured turbān (*chīrah*) of signed cloth of the same colour; he sat crouched on his two knees, on the left side of, but even with, the Wazir.

Before the Mir Sāhib had arrived, 'Imād-ul-mulk had made a representation to the chief minister. When the Mir Sāhib entered the tent, he said at once, "Peace be upon thee" and then brought out an offering of four gold coins and five rupees of Farrukhābād mintage. This gift was accepted. Following this, the Mir, in imitation of the Abdālī nobles, placed his head on the knees of the chief minister, and the minister placed his hand upon the Mir Sāhib's back, raised up his head, and said : "Let your heart be at rest. In the matters for which you have come you will obtain all you desire and be given leave to depart." Then the Mir was told to sit down alongside of 'Imād-ul-mulk. The author was then presented, and I sat down at the side of the Mir Sāhib.

The chief minister asked about the state of Ghazanfar Jang, the Mahrattah armies, and the fort of Farrukhābād. The talk finished, he sent for one Mirzā Muṣṭafā the Shāh's Secretary, (*munshi*) and read aloud the letter which was addressed to himself. When he had mastered the contents, he said : "I am now going to an audience with the Shāh : you sit where you are and I will state your case. If you should be sent for, you must come : or, if the petition of Ghazanfar Jang only is asked for, you must send it."

At this moment a runner (*shātīr*) arrived in haste from the Shāh's tent, which had been set up a quarter of a *kos* away, with an open plain between. The messenger shouted out "Sardārō ! Sardārā!" that is, "O Chief." On the sound reaching the ear of the chief minister he at once put on his attire as a Kizzilbāsh, on his head a hat (*kalah*), and on it a jewelled aigrette, with a plume of feathers. He mounted his Irāqi horse and hastened to the audience, followed by one man only, who is called a *yatim* (servant ?). The Mir Sāhib and 'Imād-ul-mulk were left sitting at the chief minister's tent.

'Imād-ul-mulk said to the Mir Sāhib : "There is a question that I have long been desirous of putting to you, give me an answer to it. It is a matter of astonishment to me that a man like you, a man of purpose and valour, should be on the spot, and yet allow Nawāb Ahmad Khān, in opposition to your advice, to betroth the daughter of 'Ali Quli Khān, the Six-Fingered, to me and make her over to me."

The Mir Sāhib replied : "I had gone away to Lakhnau and I had told the Nawāb Shujū'-ud-daulah to place five hundred horsemen under my orders, and I would bring away the whole family of 'Ali Quli Khān from Farrukhābād to Lakhnau. But the Nawāb was inspired by his mother with fright at Ghazanfar Jang, and he was also in dread of Your Excellency (*i. e.*, 'Imād-ul-mulk). Thus, he put off a decision from one day to another. Since I had no special interest in the subject I, too, withdrew from the project."

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 356.)

V. — SUPERSTITIONS.

Omens and Names.

If a Chuhra goes on a journey, and meets a *mirāsi*, he goes back. If some one calls after him he goes back. The braying of a donkey meeting him is a good omen. If a washerman meets a man beginning a journey, it is sufficient to send him back, certain of failure if he goes on. Some men are known to carry good fortune, and are sent out to meet travellers.

A Chuhra never steps over a broom. The broom that is used to sweep corn is hung up on a nail in the house. That for ordinary use is placed on a grave, but never upright.

Children are frequently given names arising out of superstitious: thus *Kekā* is used as a first name. *Ghasitā* means dragged, that is, dragged over a dust heap, *rūri*. *Bura* has the same meaning. As the name is one of dishonour, the evil-eye will not fall on the children that bear it. *Likar* means having half of the head shaved, and the other not; this is to keep the child alive. *Nathū* means having a ring in the nose, to hold him and keep him from going away, i.e., dying.

Oaths, magic and witchcraft.

The oath by Bâlâ Shâh is used.

The practice of magic arts is confined to *faqîrs* and *pîrs*. It is the *sauhri*²⁷ that bring evil spirits. A person possessed is cured in the following manner: — The *faqîr* takes a drum, a *thâlli* or platter and a *ghârd* or earthen jar. The platter is placed over the jar, and the whole is called *ghâridl*.²⁸ The *faqîr* beats the drum, another person beats the *ghâridl*, and others sing. The sick person shakes his head, and when the music (?) ceases they ask him questions: "Who are you?" "I am so and so," he replies. "How did you come into this state?" "Such and such a one put me into this state." "Who bewitched you?" "So and so." "What did he get for doing it?" "So many rupees." "For how long are you sick?" "I have to be sick so many days, and then die." They play and sing again. After a time the sick man perspires and recovers. The evil spirit goes with the perspiration.

A curious and repulsive cure is used among Hindus and probably others. It is called *jari* or *masân*. An unmarried person dies, and his or her body is burnt at the burning *ghât*. A *faqîr* takes some of the ashes from the burning pile, goes to the hills for a certain plant, and makes bread of these two ingredients on a grave. The bread is made into pills, one of which is given to a naked childless woman. She gives the pill in a drink to her enemies, and herself has a child. Her barren condition was caused by an evil spirit. *Masân* means demon, and burning-place among Hindus.

Jhundâ is an iron whip which a *faqîr* beats himself with for the sake of another, so that the evil spirit in him may be troubled and flee. They also burn oil in a *tavd*, iron dish. The *faqîr* puts his hand in the hot oil and pours it on his person. The evil spirit feels it, but the *faqîr* does not. The *faqîr* also beats his body with a millstone. After the sick man recovers, the *faqîr* takes a fowl, kills it, dips a string in its blood, knots the string, blows on it, and finally binds it round the sick man's neck, assuring him that the evil spirit will not come again. If the man goes where there is impurity, *sûtak*, the virtue in the string disappears.

²⁷ *Sauhri*, — 1, lit. (1) parents-in-law; (2) simpleton, wretch.²⁸ *Gharidl*, lit. a gong.

Dreams are from evil spirits, and the Chuhras fear them. To dream that a person who is dead is cutting flesh, is an intimation that there will be a death in the house. Muhammadan *saiyids* give the *ta'wiz*, a charm, to keep away dreams.

The **evil eye** is universally believed in. Some men are very injurious in this way. If a man with the evil eye looks at any one taking food, sickness follows. To cure this, the sick person asks a bit from the evil-eyed man when he is at a meal. The morsel given acts as a cure. When a cow is sick, and gives no milk, they give her a bit of the evil-eyed (*bad naazr*) man's food.

Sorcerers and **witches** act on their victim by making a figure of him and torturing the figure by inserting a needle into it. The torture reaches the person who is personated. Nails and hairs are carried away to be subjected to pain that the original owners may be tormented. They are carefully thrown away when cut off, lest any enemy should get possession of them. Women are especially careful in this particular.

Sickness is caused by evil spirits.

Ceremonial prohibition or taboo.

The Chuhras never touch a *Gagra*, or a *Sânsî*, gipsy. Women and children do not go near graves. The daughter-in-law never mentions the father-in-law's name. Chuhras do not eat monkeys, or snakes, or jackals, or rats.

Agricultural superstitions.

Crops are cut on a Sunday, Monday, or Friday, and sown on a Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday.

If the Chuhras burn a *sip*, winnowing sieve or fan, in a village, the farmer is injured. It is a curse — the curse of the poor.

Social customs.

The whole household eat together, but the women eat after the men. If men eat after women they are injured, because women are weak of intellect.

'*Yd jûh yd jûh, dînôh nogañ pahuchâhî.*' 'Food touched by others and falsehood are both injurious.' They use *shardb* (strong drink), opium (*afîm, post, bhang*) and *charas*. Drunkards are despised.

Customs of social intercourse.

In salutation, they say *pârisî patî* to the great, the answer being *têrd bhalâd kare Khudd*. Also *mathâ têknd, saldm*.

Customs bearing on social status.

They eat *pakki* among themselves, and *kachchi* with *Gagre* and *Sansis*. They smoke only among themselves. No caste above them eats with them.

VI. — OCCUPATION.

The original work of the Chuhras.

They were the tanners of the village communities, and used to live in huts at a distance from the village, the walls of which were made of bones, and the roof of skins. When an animal died, the Hindus beat a drum to let them know that they must come and carry off the dead body. Five rupees was the fee given and also a shroud. The Chuhras took off the animal's hide and ate its flesh. Sweeping was also their work,

Formerly, when a Hindu died, the Chuhras received a sheet or *hafan* (shroud), and they still receive clothes. In the old days they got five rupees at the Hindu burning-place, and

exacted it with clubs. If a cow dies on a Hindu's land they call it *dāshnd*, and the Hindu who takes the cow's tail to the Ganges to be purified is beaten there by a Chuhra with a shoe.

VII. — RELATIONS TO LAND.

Nowadays their work is farm service. They are landless day-labourers on the farm. They are divided into —

(1) The *Āthri*, who gets a maund of wheat for every *māni* at the harvest; also odds and ends. He has *ghundidn*, *pīr dē dānē*, the barley that is sown in a strip round the wheat field; wheat sown by the water course; bread twice a day; clothes and shoes twice a year; tobacco; vegetables and wood.

(2) The *sēp khulli*, who receives three-quarters of a maund for every *māni*, and bread daily if he goes to a distance to work.

(3) The wife, who takes away dung from the farmyard, receives half a maund of corn.

It was cow-burying that led to their isolation. They say the Māchhi, the Jhiwar, the Chuhra, the Changar, and the Mirāsi are all of the same caste, but have different occupations.

There is a story told of the Chuhras by Muhammadans and others that does not reflect to their credit. They are believed to be inclined to be uppish and to forget past favours, being ungrateful, and are supposed to work best when they are well beaten, otherwise they take advantage of the kindness of their masters. I give this only as the opinion of their neighbours.

The story is that once on a time the king of the Chuhras met Moses, who was on his way to talk with God.²⁹ The king of the Chuhras asked Moses to carry a petition to God from him, that he might be enabled to take the usual tax from people passing through his territory. Moses accordingly presented the king's petition, but God said, "Moses you do not know what you are doing, you do not know this people. They will turn on you, and dishonour you in the end." But Moses persevered, and obtained for the Chuhra king what he desired, viz., that he should levy taxes on travellers. The next time Moses passed that way he was accosted in a most humiliating manner. "Oh Mūsī, are you the man that carried a petition for me? You must pay the dues." "Did I not tell you, Moses," said God, "that you would bring dishonour on your head. They have no gratitude."

VIII. — LEGENDARY LORE.

1. Legend of Rāmsar.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| <i>Rām lārdyād Rāmsar.</i> | Rām built Rāmsar. |
| <i>Panj Pāṇḍō lathihē d.</i> | The five Pāṇḍavs came there and rested, |
| <i>Chamba, marvā, kēōrd,</i> | Jasmine, <i>marvā</i> and <i>kēōrd</i> |
| <i>Ras chō chō Bharō tald.</i> | Filled that tank with their essence. |
| <i>Chugdī chagdī gōkhari</i> | A cow grazing |
| <i>Sar uttē khalōti d.</i> | Came to that pond. |
| <i>Bān vaguttē Pāṇḍvān</i> | The Pāṇḍavs killed with arrows |
| <i>Phatkāi kaiśi gān.</i> | The spotted cow. |
| <i>Chug chag lāndē dhāndariān,</i> | They gathered sticks, |
| <i>Tē bhundē sikhdiā ld.</i> | And began to roast it. |
| <i>Āndrān miliyān Bhim nān.</i> | Bhim got the intestines, |
| <i>Lēhndā janjā band.</i> | And made a sacred thread of them for himself. |
| <i>Dil miliyā Judisatrē</i> | Judishtar got the heart, |
| <i>Un léyd sankh bān.</i> | He made a trumpet with it. |

²⁹ They and others call Moses Miltar Mūsā; *miltar* being a title of distinction, although used mostly for the Chuhras.

*Push miliya st Nukaliyé
Us léyá chaur band.
Té khardöré léyá Sukhdév né,
Un léyé paué band.
Té sir léyá Arjun né,
Un léyá mukat band.
Té pósht léyá Mai Kunti né,
Un léyá pichhaörd band.
Té kimia karké mas dá,
Darópti chullé dittá charhd.
Hath khundi té mondhé kamhlí,
Krishn gayd tad d.
'Oh bhai santó, baihén,
Mérí dítthi jé kaili gán.'
'Asin nahin málón jándé
Teri kaisi si óh gán.'
'Aggá hiré hirn dá,
Ohda pichhd kapli gán.'
Chiján sdrilán Krishn né,
Tad léyán khud atká,
Té saráy dittá sú Pándavá.
'Tusin Cháhrí hóró jí.
Kal jug vich miyahá.
Jad béló sach suná.'*

Nukal got the tail,
He made a fan with it.
Sukhdev got the hoofs,
He made sandals of them.
Arjan took the head
And made a crown for his head.
Mother Kunti got the hide,
And made herself a shawl.
And hashing the beef,
Daropty began to cook it on the fire.
In hand a stick, and on shoulder a blanket,
Krishn came up suddenly.
'O faithful brethren, sitting there,
Have you seen my spotted cow? '
'We do not at all know
What your cow was like.'
Its head was like a deer's,
The hinder part like a red cow.'
All the things Krishn seized
And took away,
And he cursed the Pándavs.
'Go, become Chuhras.
In the Kaljug I will associate with you
When you speak the truth.'

Another Version.

*Kdm Váyá Rámsar.
Parj Pándó laththé d.
Pándó baihki mihr kar
Utthé d gayi kaili gán.
Jazba kitd Pándavá,
Unhán phay báyé kaili gán.
Jabali karáki gán nín,
Unhán chhánkí lel baná
Ándrán léyán Bhíma né,
Un léyá janwá baná.
Té kharané léyé Sháhdev né,
Un paré léyé bará.
Té sir léyá Arjun né,
Un léyá mukat band
Té pósht léyá Mai Kunti né
Un pichhaörd léyá rangá.
Pándó áthki baih gayé,
Sri Krishn gage né á
'Oh bhai boithé hoi, á saléyé,
Mérí dítthi jé kaili gán.'
'Asin nahin málón jándé
Teri kaisi si óh gán.'
Us munhón bályá.
'Jis dítthá súf suná.
Aggá hiré hirn dá,*

Rám built Rámsar.
The five Pándavs came there and rested.
The Pándavs were enjoying their rest,
When a spotted cow came thither.
High handed were the Pándavs,
And they seized the spotted cow.
When they had sacrificed the cow,
They divided her.
Bhíma got the intestines,
And wore them like the Hindus' sacred thread.
Sháhdev got the hoofs,
And wore them as sandals.
Arjan got the head,
And put it on his head for a crown.
Mother Kunti got the hide,
And had it dyed for a shawl.
While the Pándavs were sitting there,
Sri Krishn came up,
'O brothers sitting there, O holy men,
Have you seen my spotted cow? '
'We do not know at all
What your cow was like.'
He spake with his mouth:
'Let him who saw her speak plainly.
Her foreparts were those of a deer,

Ohdā pi chhdā kapli gdn.
 Aisī aisi hai si,
 Méri kapli kaili gdn.
 Khauf jé kitā Pāndvān,
 Kyān aéiyē jhūth suñd.
 Chukkē pōsh karō haddiān,
 Asin déiyē rds karā.
 Uttē pōsh takakē
 Té laggé mangn dūdः :
 ' Hé Bhagwán, tū rahm kar.
 Is gdn nán tū uṭhā.
 Gdn bhī hájir hō gān.
 I'nhān dittī turt vikhā.
 Us jagah Brāhmaṇ Chuhṛd hō gayā
 Aur dittī hō sazā.

And her binder parts were those of a red cow.
 She was like this,
 My spotted red cow.
 The Pāṇḍavas were frightened,
 Because they had lied.
 They covered the bones with the hide,
 Placing the bones in their order.
 They spread the hide on them,
 And began to pray :
 ' Oh God, have mercy.
 Raise this cow.'
 The cow became alive.
 They showed her to him at once.
 In this place the Brāhmaṇ became a Chuhṛā
 By way of punishment.

2. Legend of the Marriage of Balmik's Daughter.

Chal, sakhī, ham nahdān nihātē.
 Ghar abyāgat sādhā āe.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Brahma dī déhī nūn kushṭhī dhāyā.
 Ichṛd Kumbhān naharun jāc.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Aggē Jastri hēndān chērdi.
 Sittihān Brahmaṇ rāh puchhā.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 ' Kikar ayā Brahmaṇā ?
 Térē kikar aumē hōē ?'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Dēh méri nī k-aisht hai dhāyā,
 Ham Kumbhān nahdān dē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 ' Tisrī ghāri nahdān tērā.
 Tēthōn kīkaṇ pahunchād jād ?'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 ' Tisrī ghāri nahdān mērā.
 Main nūn kēhṛd mard pahunchād ?'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 ' Ek jé taīnā main chappari dassān,
 Térā jí karé té nahād jād.'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Kēnān dī bhānnī hō chappari
 Uhnān Jastri chē vikhā.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Pahili ṭubbi gayā Brahmaṇ.
 Rētā dī muṭh lē dē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Dujjī ṭubbi gayā Brahmaṇ.
 Bhar ghuggān dī muṭh lē dē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.

Come, friend, let us go bathe,
 The man of God has come to our house.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord,
 A Brāhmaṇ's body became leprous.
 He had to go to bathe at the Kumb festival.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 On his way Jastri fed a herd of swine.
 The Brāhmaṇ asked the way.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' Why have you come, Brahmaṇ ?
 What brought you ?'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' My body is leprous,
 I have come for a bath at the Kumb festival.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' The right hour for bathing is the third.
 How will you reach the Ganges in time ?'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' The third hour was the time.
 Can any man take me there in time ?
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' I will show you a pond,
 You can bathe there if you like.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 The pond where the swine wallowed
 Was shown him by Jastri.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 The Brāhmaṇ dived once.
 He brought up a handful of sand.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 The Brāhmaṇ dived twice.
 He brought up a handful of shells.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

Tisē *tubbī gayā Brāhmañ*,
Lālāñ dī muñh lē dō.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Lālāñ dī muñh jab lēt Brāhmañ,
Har jī kā darshan pāe.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
Har jī kā darshan pāyā,
 Oh dī kāyā dē pāp jhārē dē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 'Bannē á jā, Brāhmañ,
 Térē nahāñ hō vartdē?'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Isé chappari Pāñdō nahā gaē,
 Jihrē nau khand prihri dhōē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Isé chappari Gurū Nānak nihātā,
 Jihrā Sikhdā dā gurū saddē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Isé chappari Gōrakh nihātā,
 Jihrā Tillō té ásan pāo.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Kihrē bhagat dī tú bēti hai?
 Térā kī gh nām dharāe?
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 'Bālā Bālmik dī maiñ bēti hāñ,
 Mérā Jastrī nām dharāe.'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Bābā Bālmik dīyé bētiyé,
 Maiñ nū óhdē kōl pahunchāñ.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Aggē Jastrī té pichhā Brahma.
 Dōñā Bālmik kōl dē.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Aggē Bālmik dī kakkhāñ dī kulli.
 Baiñā ásan lāé.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 Baiñā ásan uttē jáké,
 Harjāl nām jayāe.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.

 • Har jī kā hazār nām,
 Lākñ nām Kishan kā.
 Kēshō kā karor nām.
 Padam nām Bishan kā.

 Aggē Bālmik bhagat baiñā
 Jáké Brāhmañ sir na-rāé.
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.
 'Tāñ kikar áyā, Brāhmañ?'
 Térā kikar aúñ hōe?'
 Jhab mil, Rām ji.

The Brāhmañ dived thrice.
 He brought a handful of precious stones.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 When the Brāhmañ found the stones,
 He saw God face to face.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 He saw God face to face,
 And his sins forgiven, he was clean.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 'Come out, Brāhmañ,
 Your bath is finished.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 In this pond the Pāñdavs will bathe,
 Who will subdue nine parts of the earth.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 In this pond Gurū Nanak will bathe,
 Who will become leader of the Sikhs.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 In this pond Gorakh will bathe,
 Who will make his temple on Tillah.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 'What holy person is your father ?'
 What name has he given you ?'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 'I am daughter of Bālā Bālmik.
 He calls me Jastrī.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 'O daughter of Bālā Bālmik,
 Take me to him.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 Jastrī went on, and the Brāhmañ followed ;
 They both came to Bālmik.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 They came to Bālmik's hut.
 He was seated in contemplation.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 When he sat down
 He took the name of God.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

 Chorus.
 Har has a thousand names.
 Kishan has a lākñ.
 Kēshō has a crore.
 Bishan has a padam.

 Where the Saint Bālmik sat
 There the Brāhmañ went and bowed to him.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 'Why have you come, O Brāhmañ ?'
 What is your business ?'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord,

' Nâm Rabb dê ih bêtî dé ohhad.
Térâ suj dân hô jâl.'

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

• Kahnûn bhuind, Brahmand?'
Tû kahrû janam gawdê?

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

• Tusiñ Brahme chaunké bahôgê,
Méri bêtî nûn pichhê hañdê.'

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Teri bêtî rasô pakârgi,
Sdnnû suj karké khwâlî.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Kangñi, chînd, tê sôank âwld.
Bâlmik jag rachâlê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Tê chavâh kûldh dé devtê ã galî.
Othê paridîn mangal gâe.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Hûrân, pârîdîn, mangal gâvan,
Ôthê târêdîn mandar chhâlê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Jad târêdîn mandar chhâl kar ditti,
Tab châdré Béd mangdê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Pahili lân jab lêi Brahmé,
Dujjé qadam takâlê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Triji lân jad lêi Brahmé,
Chauthi phârd pâlê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Parijwîn lân jad lêi Brahmé,
Chôvîn phârd pâlê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Satvîn lân jad lêi Brahmé.

• Har kâ nâm dhéâl.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Satién lavdâ pûrîdân.

• Ôh bêtî dân kardê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

• Sab jiâr dô maiâ dân khând.

Aggôñ tû mérâ lô jâl.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Jastri dôlé jab pâlê Brahmé,

Uthôñ Pôndor ghar lejâl.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Ôthôñ Vêdvé, Purâlâ, Bhartâ,

Siddrâ, Dharasta nâm dhardê.

• Jhab mil, Râm ji.

Jhab mil, Râm ji.

' In the name of God give me your daughter.
She will be a great gift.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

' Why do you take a wrong step, Brahmana?
Why do you lose your caste ?'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

' You will eat your food in sacred places.
You will set my daughter aside.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

' Your daughter will cook our food,
We will not object to eat it.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

Tney brought *kangni* and *chînd* and *sôank*.
Bâlmik made a feast.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The gods of the four quarters came.
Fairies sang songs of joy there.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

Hûrs and fairies sang.

The stars made a canopy there.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

When the stars made a canopy,
Then they brought the four *Vedas*.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brâhman went round the bride once.
And a second time.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brâhman went round a third time.
And a fourth time.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brâhman went round a fifth time.
And a sixth time.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brâhman went round the bride the seventh
time.

Praise the name of God.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

He finished the seven rounds.

Bâlmik gave his daughter.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

I take alms from all.

In future I give this right to you.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

When the Brâhman put her in a palanquin,
He took her to home among the Paundrâs.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

From her the Vêdvâ, the Pûrabâ, the Bhartâ,
The Siddrâ, and the Dharasta took their

name ;

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

IX. — THE TRADITIONS OF THE CHUHRAS.

The Chuhras have oral traditions which they recite at their gatherings. If a Chuhrā wishes to learn them, he becomes the disciple of some one who is in possession of them, i. e. who can repeat them from memory. I heard, however, that there was a book of the Chuhras in Gujranwala District, but I was unable to obtain it, as the owners had the idea that I would use it to their disadvantage. In the village of Kharollān, in Siālkot, I found a man with a book, which runs as follows:—

1. Bala, the Priest of God.

Bald pīr dyd, duniyā té pahild autā
 Putr sān Brahmē dé pīrē chdr.
 Mdhē tīkē dharm dé wā janēv nāl
 Chugdi chugdi gokhāri hō pāl mardār.
 Kōl gādā dé ānkē kardē nē aridān
 Asin Brahman janam dī gal janēv tanidān
 Utte chār rakhiān dōri té lajidān
 Rabbā, sāddi bāddiān ih kilādān baniān
 Rabb chittih tikkī ghallid sab khōl bayān
 Isthōn gayā sācā munki hum kurnd hubnān
 Taalāt ihni sūnd tainā paricān.
 Maiñ shārd challāi apni is nān harim arkān
 jān.
 Jhaumpā oggē Rabb dē kūl arjān
 Sānkhē ghadnā entīp dē hō khān munh darān
 Rabb ghar Brahmanān mīrd jām ditān
 Maiñ posiyā sān khākē iksē thāl rasoi
 Kōl gal dī dīkī Allah Ta'ābī masand lagā
 Chittih tikkī Bald pīr dī phar hath phayān
 Taalāt ihni sūnd tainā ih dī
 Unū kuan hārdān akhild maiñ takbir chellān.

Bhōd khānī pakambādān jis chugnd khāt
 Rōz qyāvert nān is di bānā mālyā vadīyāt
 Muñ nān Hindū ne fāna dān dēngē, Mussalmān
 ne parhehōgē jāndā
 Mē dīkī ait isturi karēngā mīrā Rabbī rāza
 Ummit nāl i bājishāhī zānān ikē Pīr Khawāja
 Allah akhēd Balēd, teri pāl kumdi

The first to come incarnate to the world³⁰
 Was priestly Bāla. Brahmā's sons were four.
 With painted mark upon their brows and
 twined
 About their breasts the sacrificial thread.
 The cow while grazing in the meadow green
 Fell dead : thereafter round about the cow
 They stood and wrangled. 'Brāhmans boys
 are we,
 We wear the sacred thread, the Hindu garb,
 With cords and fringes. Lord, unhappy we,
 Bewail this mishap.' The Lord despatched
 A writing bearing full and accurate
 Directions. 'You a compact made when hence
 You went, but now grown proud you seek
 To shun your duty. You it is that must
 Prepare to cast the cow away. 'Twas I
 That killed the cow by lawful rite, it is
 Not therefore now unclean.' Then Jhaumpā
 prayed.
 'Oh thou that sendest thy word reveal thyself,
 That I may see thee face to face. 'Twas thou
 That causedst me to be by birth
 A Brahman. From the self same dish with
 them
 I ate and drank.' Then God Almighty called,
 Beside the cow a great assembly. Then
 Within the hand of Bāla, Priest of God,
 Was placed a writing. 'Thou must cast away
 The cow — the work is thine. Who dares to
 call
 That thing unclean which I have duly
 cleansed?'
 The prophets feed on sheep, that feed on
 filth,
 But on the day of resurrection thou
 Shalt sure have praise.' Said Bāla, ' Hindus
 then
 Will shun me, Mussalmans refuse to read
 The burial service over me. How then

³⁰ The translation is not literal, but in verse.

Apā kalm pakar lē, té kāgañ tē siñh².
 Allah ḫkhād Bālād, tu hō siyāna .
 Rōz qiyāmat nū jdkē inhān pachhōtānd,
 Hindū Muṣsalādn dē nēm dā main daryā
 banānd.
 Pār bihiṣti bañkē sāmāñ dīkhānd
 Savā nēzō tō sūraj dūwāgā magrōn hō dōzakh
 dē dāhānd.
 Rām tō Rahim kēán utthē Chhap chlāp iñ bahānd
 Ummat tōri langhākē var bihiṣhti jdhānd
 Ákhē mārē lag jā, mārē man farāndānd
 Jhaumpṛē aggē Rabb dē ek gal sunānd
 Rōz qiyāmat ḫkhād jihṛī bhaiṣul pur sulāt
 (pūl śirdt) bañdānd
 Os rōlē ummat mōrē bālkshnān gāñ suñān tāñ
 Chēlē siflān jōriān, parh nām suñān.
 Rabb Khwāja Khizr sadalā phū opū zabānī.

Tad Matālē pakar lē hath kāgaz tē kānī,
 Kāgaz siñhi likhān dē us rēlē di nishānī,
 Jhaumpṛē ummat bekhshād lē kam hoyā ḫādnī
 Khwāja Khizr ḫkhē Jhaumpṛē, mōra man
 farāndān.
 Térē Shāhī dāñ dēngē main nūn pās bahān,
 Jhaṭak laggēgā chandā dā mnāh pān lān.
 Shāhīdān de bhiṣhti jāñ dā ih pikkā nishān
 Na roza na ashtāmī na tur Makké jān
 Chēlē dassān khōlkē sārē bayān.
 Pir gāñ dā ral turkē Chuhṛā bankē jahirā,
 Pir gāñ dā kōl jā khārā janān tikkewālā,
 Us tērōn dhōtē tō lōi usbāb bhī sārā.
 Utthān baniyā Chuhṛēdā dā asli rāh niyārā
 Jhaumpṛē puchekē bħādiān nūn mārē nāl karō
 takrār,
 Kadōn muinū rājduñ jē suchchā dēb iqrār
 Bħādiān phir Jhaumpṛē nāl kītā takrār
 Möhlat lammā kāi nahān diħħrē nē chār

Wilt thou me purify, my Lord? Forgive
 My people — give me Khwāja Pir as pledge
 Of certain covenant.' God said, ' Thy works,
 O Bālā, righteous are and pure. Thyself
 Must write with paper, ink and pen.' God
 said,
 ' O Bālā, understand: be wise and know
 That on the resurrection day their deeds
 Will bring to those despairing grief, I'll
 make
 Of Hindu and of Muslim faiths a sea,
 Beyond it I will make a heaven that they
 Shall see but enter not. The burning sun
 Will come within a spear and quarter's length,
 The dread alarms of hell will compass them,
 The worshippers of Rām, and of Rahim.
 Will hide themselves in fear and dark despair.
 But thine will cross secure, in safety they
 Will enter heaven at last. Believe, obey
 My plain command.' Then Jhaumpṛē quickly
 said,
 ' All in the audience of Almighty God,
 A covenant sure make now with me, that in
 The day of resurrection, when my people cross
 The narrow bridge that spans the mouth
 of hell,
 Thou wilt have mercy on them: only thus
 Will I consent to cast away the cow.'
 Disciples write his prayers and his fame,
 Sing forth his glory, loud proclaim his name.
 The Lord called Khwāja Khizr to appear,
 He summoned him Himself, and then the Lord
 Took paper, ink and pen to write, and these
 Are of that time distinct memorials.
 Great Jhaumpṛē had his people saved, a work
 For him both quick and easy. Khwāja cried,
 ' Oh Jhaumpṛē mine, give ear to me. With me
 Beside them seated all your Shāhīs must
 Give alms. And as they drink the sparkling
 water
 On every face from out the cup there gleams
 The light from immersed silver, this a sign
 Shall constant be that Shāhīs enter heaven.
 For them there is no fasting; not for them
 Are eighth day moons, or pilgrimages long
 To Mecca. Let disciples clearly tell
 The great prerogatives and freedom they
 Enjoy. The priest approached the cow; before
 The universal world he stood confessed
 A Chuhṛā; yes, a priest beside the cow,
 Adorned with sacred cord, and on his brow

Tān ḡād suṭ̄ lēi chaunkēōn bāhir bāhir
 Jhaumpṛā ḡād suṭ̄ēān dihāyē hōc chār
 Badikh rasōi jēundé chaunkē andar vār.

Bhaiān nā puchhdā maih nān kudōn ralānd je
 nāl,

Jug chauthē nā ralāndāge sāldā sachhdā gaul
 qarār

Us gōshāt ghat kāmāndā paggān lēidān utār.

Phir Jhaumpṛā ḡād suṭ̄ē hō baihd pachhdār

Aggōn rāt guzī jhagardēān sakki bhatijē

Kālak Das

Akhē na us gāt̄ khā bē na kitā gāt̄ grās

Kikur tussēān nakhēr chaddi phir boli jāt̄

Jō na lāyā kath bē gōshāt ghat kamān dē suṭ̄i
 dāfāt̄.

Oh lōlē tā nākē khā, tērā nahiā paindā sānnū
 sun vasā

Gussu Kālak Das nān charhiyā azyād

Kālak Das ḡād dē kāl pahutdē jā

Kāl gāt̄ dē jākē kardī tadbir

Os vār chalāyā gāt̄ dē phir rich surī

Jittē takbir Chuhrēān dī pahili dēndē nō chīr

Lakhi vēkhō Rabb dī vartī toqdr.

Pukhi Kālak Das dī Silavanti nār,

Öhdē māhē punnē ānki gharōn ammīdrār

Jōm jūn dei öterē binghdī kardī guhde

Kari bichārdil nāl duniyā ajab si bahār

Dādiān aggē jākē nit kari bichārd

The consecrating mark, he stood and doffed
 His waist cloth, and his caste marks all.
 Hence rose the Chuhra sect and worship, one
 And separate. For Jhaumpṛā thus addressed
 His brethren, ' When will you, now tell me
 true,

Restore me to my place and dignity ?
 Now promise me.' They promised him that
 they

Would in four days, and only four, restore
 Him to his place among them. So he threw
 The cow beyond the sacred precincts far.
 The cow was cast away, four days had flown,
 When Jhaumpṛā's brethren dined within the
 bound

That marked the sacred hearth. ' Your promise
 now.'

Cried Jhaumpṛā, ' true fulfil. Admit me'
 ' No'

Said they, ' Four ages must elapse before
 We can admit thee. Then, our sacred word
 We pledge, thou mayest return.' In sudden
 wrath

With stroke of bow he knocked their turbans
 off.

Then Jhaumpṛā, all because he threw the cow
 Away, sat excommunicate, the house
 Debarred. Night passed in wrangling. Kālak
 Das,

His nephew, said, ' He did not eat the cow,
 Not even a morsel : why thus have ye cast
 Your brother out ? He did not touch the cow,
 'Twas with his bow he threw the cow away.'
 They said, ' Go then and eat the cow thyself,
 We trust not thee nor him—we scorn you
 both.'

Then Kālak Das grew angry : in his rage
 He stalked towards the cow, and stood to
 pierce

The carcase of the brute, and so since then
 The Chuhras keep the appointed way, to make
 A certain cut upon the dead, and use
 The formula by God appointed. Then
 Went Kālak Das and found his gentle wife,
 His Silavanti wondering. Her time
 Was near with child. She wondered why the
 days

Went by and still no nearer came to her
 Deliverance. In wondering thought she said,
 ' The world is strange as spring time.' So
 she went

Mére mādhē kulle langh gaé mahiné hōe nē bārañ
 Tuhanñ sārī khabar hai kull pēt bhandārāñ
 Mainū dassā khōlkē sariñā anwārāñ
 Dālāñ ralkē es nā gallāñ sī lāyā
 Kihṛā chand nihātiñ tainū patā nahāñ ḫyā ?
 Pēt téñ vich dard nahāñ tainū dukkī nahāñ ḫyā ?
 Rāzī hōkē bahēngī jad bālāk jāyā,
 Jān oh bahindī palang té jaē raiñ vihāñ
 Rabb, mérē pēt vich ki khēl rabbāñ.
 Mainū kīlī khabar nahāñ manū ḫqī aniyāñ
 Tainū khabardāñ, Qādirā, phir tācā jānāñ
 Kurū rājdhōdā dil nāl, duniyā dbaj sī mēla,
 Tad bhandārāñ kū pēyā phir Alif Chela,
 Din manmē mātā mérē gurū dā idā hath nchāñ
 āñd cēlā.
 Tāñ mān putr dā hōwēgā phir jaal hī mēla.
 Kēhrā tērāgurū hai, bacchādā maināñ ḫkhāniñ
 Main pallē kharch pdkē tur pāvdān sabhāñ
 Kitthē ḫhād pind hai, rāundā kēhrī thāñ
 Main bhalkē tur pāvdāgī paikē lamrī rāñ
 Akhē Jhaumprā mērd gurū hai, mātā kōi nāl
 imān

Das autār us āñd duniyā té shāñ,
 Dassē autār ussē dē uggē, marū jāpnāñ nām
 Chuhṛī Kālak Das dā majab hai tamām.
 Jihṛā Shāhī kalmā parhēgā Mōhammad dā oh
 bēmān.
 Jihṛē parhngē Bābā Nānak dā oh khī nahāñ
 paruāñ.
 Jihṛē parhngē Bālē pīr dā durgādhē pawāñ.
 Chēlē sifṭāñ joridāñ sab khōl bayāñ.
 Mān chēlē nāl jhagardī, Bachcha kēhrī gurū
 hai sangī.
 Kikar dāniyā té uss āñdā os kēhrī rangī ?
 Sach hōvē tāñ man lēvāñ gaul kurdr karāngī.
 Chēlē sifṭāñ joridāñ bah rung ba rangī.
 Chēlē dassē mān nān, phir das autār

To seek the midwives. Thus she used to say, 'My time is fully come, the twelfth month now'³¹

Is past. These things you understand : the womb

With all its states you know : come tell me them The truth.' The midwives just to please her told

Her stories. 'Tell us now,' they said, 'what month

You bathed. You have forgotten quite. Well then

Have you no pain : no pangs have you? No? Then

Be comforted, you will be happy when You bear a son.' She sat in thought all night Upon her cot. She said, 'O Lord, within my womb

What wonder is? All ignorant am I, A woman knowing nothing. Only Thou Almighty God knowest all. I trust in Thee All in her heart she said, 'The world is strange.'

Then Alif Chela spake within the womb.

'Oh mother mine, be follower of my guide.

Disciple of my teacher be, lose not

This happy time, for if 'tis lost to you,

In vain is consequent repentance. See, On your belief depends our meeting.' 'Son,' She said, 'who is your teacher? I'll prepare And hasten me at the dawn to seek him.

His village name. Where dwells he? At the dawn

I'll go, and find him though the way be long.'

'My guide and teacher Jhaumprā is,' said he,

'Believe this, mother. Ten times told he will

Become incarnate, bringing glory to the world

In all the ten. His name I will proclaim.

The faith of Kālak Dās, the Chuhṛā, is

A perfect faith. If any Shāhī read

Muhammad's creed, an unbeliever he

Is branded; and if Bābā Nānak's, he

Shall be rejected; all that do profess

The creed of Bālā straight to heaven shall go.

Disciples have compiled his praises.' Still

The mother reasons with the Chela, 'Child,

What guide will be our helper, how will be

Become incarnate? In what form appear?

If this be true, I will believe, and make

A firm profession.' So disciples wrote

His divers praises. Chela now recounts

³¹ Cf. the note at p. 352, Vol. XXXV., 1906, *supra*.

Kam vēkhēn Rabb dē, mālā, Allah dē bē shumār
 Pahīlā autār dvegā phir nāl rī nāl
 Rabb Bābdā Ādam sajjiyād Amma Harra bī nāl
 Na zamān āsmān sī, hai sī jal pānī
 Nā os rēlē jirishī sānū darghā rabbānī
 Na tadōn Bābdā Ādam sī, na Hawwālā sōdānī.
 Tē sisat hai Awwalān, di chēlē suñdānī
 Ih traō dēvē Rabb ē ap̄ bañdā.

The incarnations ten. ‘O mother mine,
 Behold God’s works innumerable are.
 The first incarnate comes, and with him God
 Makes father Adam, and our mother Eve.
 There was no earth, no sky, but only then
 A pool of water. Angels were there none,
 Nor heaven’s court, nor father Adam, nor
 A lady Eve.’ This is the story true
 Of the Original. Disciple read.

2. The One True God.

Trēdn̄ dēvēdān nūn Rabb shabd sikhādā
 Āp̄ apnē dīn dē kalmē parhādā.
 Faktū parhādā Allah ilā, Ishar wah gurū Panāhē,
 Kalma īkī ēk dā Bāldā pīr suñdā,
 Sifstān chelē jōriān parh nām sunđdā.
 Dēbłēdān kalma parhēdān jug gujré chhatū.
 Na tadōn sēn majlisān Khuddā dī sathān
 Na os rēlē lō sī, na divā battī.
 Tē sahāsan bañdyād baiñhkē Rabb ē apnē
 hāthīn
 Ishar Fagtū dērtē nū Allah Ta’ala gal ih ākkhā
 Ik triyā dēvēdā bañyād tuhađđdā sāthī
 Dharti dēo bañdkē gal ihō jē bāqī¹
 Othē hōwē shāala rēkhānā cholākī
 Fagtū tē Ishar hōc Allah dē ānī
 Oh kēhrā triyā dērtā hī bañyād sadđdā hāni.
 Chhattī jug kiti sū bhagati tērē nāmli parhāc
 bānī
 Tainān khābārdā, Qālīrā, tuēn hānā jānī
 Allah lēkē dēvēdān nūn Bāldā pīr kōl jānī
 Bāldā pīr uñhkē chhai sāla buldā
 Allah miān dī; Khair Bālé pīr suñdā

Repeat. The Lord Himself these three saints
 made.

He taught them songs, He gave thus each
 a creed.

So Faktū said, ‘Allah Ilā,’ and Ishwar said,
 ‘Wah Gurū save’! only Bālā priest believed
 In one true God, and worshipped him. These
 songs

Disciples have compiled. They sing his name.
 For six and thirty ages long the creeds

These three divinities repeated. Then
 There were no great assemblages with God.
 There wās no light, no lamp, no wick ; God sat
 And made with His own hands His throne.

He said

To Fagta, Ishwa, holy ones, ‘I’ve made
 A third divinity, associate

With you. The earth a god I make ; that done
 My work is done. Let there be light in it.’

He said, ‘The wonder I would see.’ But up
 Spake Fagta, Ishwar, ‘Who is this whom thou
 A third divinity associate

With us hast made ? Has he, repeating hymns
 For ages six and thirty worshipped thee ?

All things are known to thee, Almighty One !

God brought the gods, the three, to Bālā priest,
 Who rose, and six times worshipped. ‘Peace
 to thee,

O man of God.’ This said the Lord. ‘Peace be’
 Said Bālā priest, ‘to all the world.’ So brought
 The Lord these three together. So a god
 The earth He made, a habitation fit

For all His creatures. Lo, the sky He hung
 Without ropes and chains ; the stars were
 placed

Like jewels in the sky, that God’s bright light
 Might dwell within them. Then a pinch of
 dust

The Lord put in Muhammad’s hand, and then
 In Bālā Nānak’s, but they threw it down,
 And muddy made the water : thus no sign
 Appeared. There was no Granth nor yet Qorān.

• Trai dēvē Rabb nē kitē ikañthē,
 Dharti dēo bañdkē kull ālam vassē.
 Ambar khūb tikduñā na sungal rassē
 Tārē nag vich launē nār ilāhi vassē.
 Chuñki chuñki khāk dī Rabb hath pharāi
 Mōhammad tē Bābdā Nānak dōñā hēthānā vagā
 Pāñi gahārā hō gayā nishānā na āi,
 Na os rēlē Granth sī nu Qorān kitāb bañdā.
 Kam dēkhō Rabb dī, vāri Bālé pīr dī dī
 Gallān kardā jal dē nāl Bālé pīr dā nār.
 Chhattī jug kētī bhagatī, tū glosah hai jorūr.
 Ohō mainān das dē khānā jō bhagatī vich pāyā
 gusūr.

*Mazdā mērī dūnd Khwāja hajúr.
Tad pānī tē jam gayā phir sōhīnā būr
Bālā pīr khāk chhinkiyā dharti bhar pūr
Tad Bālā pīr gayā darghē qabūr.
Chéle sifdān jōriān nakhān kōi quśūr.
Kālak Dās gādā khākē, hō baithā dilgīr
Iksē mān dā chungiyā sī bah gōdī nīr.
Duniyā tē hōe ne baré baré amīr ī jagir.*

* *Kisē nahīn rēl randiyā karmān dā shīr
Allah Kālak Dās nān phir dē dilērī,
Duniyā avāqauñ hai, rāval dī pherī.
Agge paindā kāthin hai chalnā rāt hanōrī,
Ummat tērī bakhshāngā gal man lēnā tā mērī.
Kālak Dās akhē Rabb nān, mérā kī sarband.
Vasdiān ghardān vichān nikañdī phér khair tē
khirand.
Mérā kanā dān lēigā, main hō baithā arband.
Kālak Dās gallān kitiān Rabb nāl lākē mas-
larūd,
Tū kariñ Allah dīl nām, tēra sir mukh laggē.
Aivēn vēkh na bhulnā kōi rauzā baggē
Tērā buk miñtī dā maniyā, dargāh de aggē.
Jehyrā manne sidq nāñ, har shākhē phal laggē.
Kālak Dās rájī hikē, laggā jag richān,
Sard man sōñnd kals dā dān.
Hird, lāl, jāvāhīr blī kōi na ant bayān.
Chabbē laggē chandīc nā kinārī tē shān
Kālak Dās kītā dān tē laggañ sikhā thān
Alifé Chilé nān phir imām bāñān
Alifé duñ dākhi jāñ Rabb dā jārmān.*

*Chéle sifdān jōriān sab khōl bayān
Alifé kītī dil nāl duñ dā kahānī.*

But, see, comes Bālā's turn. 'Twas Bālā's soul Addressed the water. 'Ages thirty-six I worshipped God. You are my witness. Speak, Was there a time when I lacked faithfulness? Come help me now, O Khwāja.' Sudden then The pinch of dust all in the water clear Took shape -- the water surface clothed itself in green.

Yes, Bālā, priest, cast forth the pinch of dust. And lo! the earth appeared. So Bālā, priest, Was high exalted in the court of heaven. Disciples wrote these stories true. Now turn To Kālak Dās, who ate the cow. He sat Apart in sadness. 'I have sucked the breast Of her who was their mother dear and mine. Her bosom was my rest as theirs. Many rich And many poor have been, but never one Has borne the consequences of the deeds That others wrought.' But God thus comforts him,

'The world is fleeting : like a fortune told It comes and goes. The way to heaven rough, And in the darkling night you travel. Still Thy followers I will save -- my word is sure.' Then Kālak Dās addressed the Lord, 'Alas! Provision now for me there's none. A man Cast out am I. From me none alms will take, For only they give alms who houses own.' Such speech had Kālak Dās with God. 'Con-

fess The Lord, e'en to the sacrifice of life. Be not deceived — the white-washed tomb is vain

While thy hands full of dust adored will be Within the court of heaven. The righteous man

Is like a tree whose every branch bears fruit.' So Kālak Dās in gladness offered gifts, Of gold he gave a maund and one-fourth more To top the flag, and diamonds rare so bright With rubies red, and jewels rich in tale Innumerable. Tassels hung in state Adown the flag, embroidered rich with gold. So rich a gift gave Kālak Dās, wherewith He beautified the place of prayer. The priest Was Alif Chela. Alif prayed the prayer Appointed thus by God. Disciples sang These songs, compiling them in full. The prayer, The story, Alif heartily recites.

MISCELLANEA.

LACHCHHAN RĀJĀOÑ KE : OR, THE SIGNS OF ROYALTY IN RĀJĀS.

I.

Hukm agiyāon ko khat mēn līkhē;
 Jamābandī sūjh farq sē rakkhē.
 Nigah-dost daurah karē, bār bār.
 Siffat sē bolē, nā ho gul ba khār.

A Rājā should issue his instructions in writing, and must exercise full control over his finances. He should carefully inspect his kingdom throughout, never treat his subordinates harshly, and try to live on amicable terms with them.

II.

Hans, sarūp, bugh, mīn, mōr atti gidh bhantji.
 Jugal kāg. Guṇ dharē ten guṇ bāne lijā.

A king should learn from the swan, heron, paddy-bird, fish, peacock and vulture. He should also learn love and unity from pairs of crows.

Girē parē ho pēchwākē, tēk dijē boh bistār
 sinchari.

Those who have fallen into misfortune must be comforted, while the oppressors should be punished.

Itnē lachchhan rāj kō, tab pag gaddi pah dhartē.

Only when these qualities are attained by the king, should he ascend the throne.

H. A. ROSE.

IS THE CULT OF MIĀN BIBI PHALLIC?

The article (*ante*, Vol. XXXIV. p. 125) on the cult of Miān Bibi, which flourishes in the Hoshiārpur District of the Pāñjāb, is not easily explained. In his Settlement Report on the District Mr. Coldstream says that the image of the Miān is nude,¹ but in the only two charms which I have been able to secure from Hoshiārpur the Miān and his two wives are all represented as fully clothed. In charm No. 1 the Miān certainly wears a turban and appears to be fully clothed. He is squatting on a couch and smoking his *huqqa*. The wife on the right seems to be holding a fan. This charm is rudely stamped on a thin piece of silver and is considerably worn, so that it is difficult to conjecture what the objects above and near the heads of the figures are intended to be. Below and on the left is conventional ornamentation.

Charm No. 2 is of a more recent type — or is at least newer and stamped from a better die. The Miān is standing up, smoking a *huqqa*, and wearing apparently a cap. Both his wives are fanning him.

That the cult is in its origin a phallic one I have myself no doubt, but a perusal of the songs published in the article above referred to may not leave that impression on every reader's mind, and it is impossible to be certain as the songs cannot be said to really prove anything. I have failed to trace any precise parallel to the cult in d'Alviella's *Migration of Symbols*, in Mr. Rendell Harris' *Cult of the Heavenly Twins*, or in Dulaure's *Des Divinités Génératrices*.

H. A. ROSE.

15th August, 1906.

¹ "Among the lower class of Musalmāns, such as Gūjars, and perhaps among the women of the villages generally, the worship or propitiation of Miān Bibi is common. The Miān Bibi, the old man and his [two] wives, is represented on silver charms worn on the person, as a nude male figure attended by two females, one waving a fan (*chauri*) over him, the other filling his tobacco pipe (*huqqa*). See extract in *North Indian Notes and Queries*, § 3 of Vol. IV.

CULT OF MIAN BIBI.



Charms showing Mian Bibi with attendants,
worn by devotees.

HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS.

BY H. A. ROSE.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 252.)

III. — The Twenty-two Tikâs of Jungâ (Keônthal), near Simla.

THE State of Keônthal is one of the Simla Hill States in the Panjâb, and its capital, Jungâ, so called after the god of that name, lies only a few miles from Simla itself. Besides the main territory of the State, Keônthal is over-lord of five feudatory States, viz., Kôti, Theog, Madhân, Gând and Ratêsh. Excluding these States, it comprises six detached tracts, which are divided into eighteen *pargânds*, thus:—

I. — Southern tract, comprising ten *pargânds*:— (1) Fâgû, (2) Khâlâshî, (3) Tir. Mahâsû, (4) Dharêch, in Fâgû *tahsil*; (5) Ratêsh, (6) Karâli, (7) Jât, (8) Parâli, (9) Jhajot, (10) Kalânj in Jungâ *tahsil*.

II. — Northern tract, which includes four *pargânds*.— (11) Shill, (12) Matiâna, (13) Rajâna, (14) ? Matiâna, in Fâgû *tahsil*.

III. — *Pargand* Râwin, and IV. — *Pargand* Pûnnar, forming Râwin *tahsil*.

V. — *Pargand* Râmpur, and VI. — *Pargand* Wâknâ, in Jungâ *tahsil*.

The three *tahsils* are modern Revenue divisions, but the 22 *parganas* are ancient and correspond in number to the 22 *tikâs*, which are described below. It does not appear, however, that each *pargand* has its *tikâ* and the number may be a mere coincidence. The fondness for the Nos. 12, 22, 32, 42, 52, &c., in the Panjâb, and, indeed, throughout India, is well-known, and goes back at least to Buddhist times.

The Simla Hill States form a network of feudal states with dependent feudatories subordinate to them and the jurisdictions of the local godlings afford a striking reflection of the political conditions, forming a complex network of cults, some superior, some subordinate. To complete the political analogy, the godlings often have their *wâirs* or chief ministers and other officials. Perhaps the best illustration of this *quasi-political* organisation of the hill cults is afforded by the following account of the 22 *tikâs* of Jungâ. At its head stands Jungâ's new cult. Jungâ, it should be observed, is not the family god of the Râjâ of Keônthal. That function is fulfilled by the Dêvi Târâ.²⁴

The Cult of Jungâ.²⁵

Legend. — The Râjâ of Kôtlâhr had two sons, who dwelt in Nâdaun. On the accession of the elder to the throne, they quarrelled, and the younger was expelled the State. With a few companions he set out for the hills and soon reached Jakho, near Simla. Thence they sought a suitable site for a residence, and found a level place at Thagwâ in the Kôti State. Next morning the Mlân, or 'prince,' set out in a palanquin, but when they reached Sanjauli, his companions found he had disappeared, and conjecturing that he had become a *déoid*, returned to Thagwâ, where they sought him in vain. They then took service with the people of that part. One night a man went out to watch his crop and, resting beneath a kénâ tree, heard a terrible voice from it say, "lest I fall down!" Panic-stricken he fled home, but another man volunteered to investigate the business and next night placed a piece of silk on the platform under the tree and took up his position in a corner. When he heard the voice, he rejoined "come down," whereupon the tree split in half and out of it a beautiful image fell on to the silk cloth. This the man took to his home and placed it in the upper

²⁴ An account of this will be found in Appendix I., attached to this paper.

²⁵ [The family likeness of the legends connected with these hill deities of the extreme North of India to those connected with the "devils" of the Tuluvas on the West Coast, very far to the South, is worthy of comparison by the student. See Devil Worship of the Tuluvas, ante, Vols. XXIII.—XXVI., 1894—1897.—Ed.]

storey, but it always came down to the lower one, so he sent for the astrologers, who told him the image was that of a *dēotā* who required a temple to live in. Then the people began to worship the image and appointed a *chēlā*, through whom the god said he would select a place for his temple. So he was taken round the country, and when the news reached the companions of the Nāḍāun prince they joined the party. The god ordered temples to be built at Nain, Bojārī, Thond, and Kōtī in succession, and indeed in every village he visited, until he reached Nādaun, where the Rājā, his brother, refused to allow any temple to be built, as he already had a family god of his own named Jipūr. Jungā, the new god, said he would settle matters with Jipūr, and while the discussion was going on, he destroyed Jipūr's temple and all its images by lightning, whereupon the Rājā made Jungā his own deity and placed him in a house in his *darbār*.

Jipūr is not now worshipped in Keōnthal, all his old temples being used as temples of Jungā who is worshipped in them. Nothing is known of Jipūr, except that he came in with the ruling family of Keōnthal.²⁶ He appears to have been only a *jāthērā* or ancestor. Jungā has another temple at Pojarli, near Jungā, to which he is taken when a *jāg* is to be celebrated; or when an heir-apparent, 'tikā,' is born to the Rājā, on which occasion a *jāgyā* is performed. On other occasions the images made subsequently are alone worshipped in this temple. The ritual is that observed in a Shiwālā and no sacrifice is offered. There are 22 tikās or "sons" of Jungā. None of these can celebrate a *jāg* or observe a festival without permission from the Jungā temple, and such permission is not given unless all the dues of Jungā's temple are paid. Thus Jungā is regarded as the real god and the others are his children.

The following are the 22 tikās of Jungā :—

| | |
|---------------------|------------------|
| 1. Kalaur. | 12. Kulthū. |
| 2. Manūnī. | 13. Dhānūnī. |
| 3. Kanēti. | 14. Dūm. |
| 4. Dēo Chand. | 15. Rāitā. |
| 5. Shanēti. | 16. Chānanā. |
| 6. Mahānphā. | 17. Gaun. |
| 7. Tirū. | 18. Bījū. |
| 8. Khatēshwar. | 19. Kusheli Deo. |
| 9. Chādēi. | 20. Bāl Deo. |
| 10. Shanēti and Jāu | 21. Rawal Deo. |
| 11. Dhūtrū. | 22. Kawali Deo. |

1. The Cult of Kalaur.

Legend. — A Brāhmaṇ once fled from Kullū and settled in Dawān, a village in *pargand* Ratēsh. There he incurred the enmity of a Kanēt woman, who put poison in his food. The Brāhmaṇ detected the poison, but went to a spot called Bangā Pānī, where there is water, in Dōrañ *janjal*, and there ate the food, arguing that if the woman meant to kill him she would do it sooner or later, and so died, invoking curses on the murderer. His body disappeared. In the Gāphal-kī-Dhār plain, was a *bakhal* plant. One day a Brāhmaṇ of Garāwag observed that all the cows used to go to the plant and water it with their milk, so he got a spade and dug up the bush. He found under it a beautiful image (which still bears the mark of his spade) and took it home. When he told the people what had happened, they built a temple for the idol, and made the Brāhmaṇ its *prajāri*. But the image, which bore a strong resemblance to the Brāhmaṇ, who had died of the poisoned food, began to inflict disease upon the Kanēts of the place, so that several families perished. Thereupon, the people determined to bring in a stronger god or goddess to protect them from the image. Two Kanēts of the *pargand*, Dhēlī and Chāmī, were famed for their courage and strength, and so they were sent to Lāwī and Pālwī, two villages in Sirmūr State, disguised as *fāqirs*, and thence they

²⁶ Nevertheless Jungā is not the family god of the Rājās of Keōnthal. A somewhat similar legend will be found in Appendix II. of this paper.

stole an *ātī-bhājāwddi*, 'eight-handed,' image of Dēvi, which they brought to Dhawar in Rāteśh. The people met them with music and made offerings to the stolen image, which they took to Walān, and there built a temple for it, ceasing to worship Kalaur. The plague also ceased. The people of one village, Gharēj, however, still affect Kalaur.

2. The Cult of Manūni.

Manūni is **Mahādēo**, and is so called because his first temple was on the hill of Manūn.

Legend. — A Brāhmaṇ of Parālī, in the Jamrōt *pargānd* of the Patiāla hill territory, a *pujāri* of Dēvi Dhār, and others, went to buy salt in Manqī, and on their way back, halted for the night in Māhūn Nāg's temple at Māhūn in the Sukēt State. The Brāhmaṇ and the *pujāri*, with some of the company who were of good caste, slept in the temple, the rest sleeping outside. The *pājdārī* was a *chēla* of the god Dhārto, at that time a famous *dēotā*, revered throughout the northern part of the Kēonthal State. On starting in the morning, a swarm of bees settled on the baggage of the Brāhmaṇ and the *pujāri*, and could not be driven off. When the party reached Mundā, where the temple of Hanūmān now stands, the swarm left the baggage and settled on a *bān* tree. Here, too, the *pujāri* sainted and was with difficulty taken home. The astrologers of the *pargānd* decided that a god had come from Sukēt and wished to settle in that part, and that unless he were accommodated with a residence the *pujāri* would not recover. Meanwhile the *pujāri* became possessed by the god and began to nod his head and declare that those present must revere him (the god), or he would cause trouble. They replied that if he could overcome the god Dhārto, they would not hesitate to abandon that god, though they had revered him for generations. Upon this 'a bolt from the blue' fell upon Dhārto's temple and destroyed it, breaking all the idols, except one which was cast into a tank in a cave. The *pujāri* then led the people to Mundā, where the bees had settled and directed them to build a temple at the place where they found ants. Ants were duly found in a square place on Manūn hill, and a temple built in due course; but when only the roof remained to be built, a plank flew off and settled in Parālī. Upon this the *pujāri* said the temple must be built there, as the god had come with a Brāhmaṇ of that place, and so a second temple was built and the image placed in it. That at Manūn was also subsequently completed, and a third was erected at Kōti Dhār. The cult also spread to Nala, in Patiāla territory, and to Bhajjī State, and temples were erected there. The Brāhmaṇs of Parālī were appointed Bhōjkīs and the *pujāris* of Kōti Dhār *pujāris* of the god. Meanwhile the image of Dhārto remained in the tank into which it had fallen. It is said that a man used to cook a *rāt* (a large loaf) and throw it into the water as an offering, requesting the god to lend him utensils, which he needed to entertain his guests. This Dhārto used to do, on the condition that the utensils were restored to the pool when done with. But one day the man borrowed 40 and only returned 35 plates, and since then the god has ceased to lend his crockery. Beside the god's image is another, that of a *bir* or spirit, called **Tonda**. Tonda used to live at Parālī in a cave which was a water-mill, and if anyone visited the mill alone at night he used to become possessed by the *bir*, and, unless promptly attended to, lose his life. But once the *pujāri* of Manūn went to the mill, and by the help of his god resisted the attempts of the *bir* to possess him. In fact, he captured the *bir*, and having laid him flat on the grind-stone sat on him. Upon this, the *bir* promised to obey him in all matters if he spared his life, and so the *pujāri* asked him to come to the temple, promising to worship him there if he ceased to molest people. The *bir* agreed and has now a separate place in the temple of Manūn, whose *wazīr* he has become.

3. The Cult of Kanēti.

Legend. — After the war of the *Māhabhārata*, when the Pāṇḍavas had retired to the Badrī Nāth hills to worship, they erected several temples and placed images in them. Amongst others they established Kanēti in a temple at Kwāra, on the borders of Garhwal and Bashahr, and there are around this temple five villages, which are still known after the Pāṇḍavas. Dōdra and Kwāra are two of these. The people of the former wanted to have a temple of their own, but those of Kwāra objected

and so enmity arose between them. The Dôdra people then stole an image from the Kwâra temple, but it disappeared and was found again in a pool in a cave. It then spoke by the mouth of its *chela* and declared that it would not live at Dôdra and that the people must quit that place and accompany it elsewhere. So a body of men, Kanêts, Kôlis and Tûris, left Dôdra and reached Dagôn, in Keônthal State, where was the temple of Jipûr, the god of the Râjâ's family. This temple the new god destroyed by lightning, and took possession of his residence. The men who had accompanied the god settled in this region and the cult of Kanêtî prospered. Aichâ, a Brâhman, was then *wazir* of Keônthal, and he made a vow that if his progeny increased, he would cease to worship Jipûr and affect Kanêtî. His descendants soon numbered 1,500 houses. Similarly, the Bhalêr tribe made a vow to Kanêtî, that if their repute for courage increased, they would desert Jipûr.

4. The Cult of Dêo Chand.

Legend. — Dêo Chand, the ancestor of the Khanâgô sept of the Kanêts, was *wazir* of Keônthal and once wished to celebrate a *jag*, so he fixed on an auspicious day and asked for the loan of Jungâ's image. This the *pujâris* refused him, although they accepted his first invitation, and asked him to fix another day. Dêo Chand could not do this or induce the *pujâris* to lend him the image, so he got a blacksmith to make a new one, and celebrated the *jag*, placing the image, which he named Dêo Chand after himself, in a new temple. He proclaimed Dêo Chand subordinate to Jungâ, but in all other respects the temple is under separate management.

5. The Cult of Shanêtî.

There are two groups of Kanêts, the Painôi or Painûi and the Shaintî. Owing to some dispute with the *pujâris*, the Shaintîs made a separate god for themselves and called him Shanêtî.

6. The Cult of Mahanpha.

The Chibhar Kanêts of Jâtîl *pargând* borrowed an image of Jungâ and established a separate temple.

7. The Cult of Tirû.

Legend. — Tirû is the god of the Jatik people, who are a sept of the Brâhmans. A Tirû Brâhman went to petition the Itajâ and was harshly treated, so he cut off his own head, whereupon his headless body danced for a time. The Brâhmans then made an image of Tirû and he is now worshipped as the *jathâra* of the Jâtiks.

8. The Cult of Khatêshwar.

The Brâhmans of Bhakar borrowed an image of Jungâ and built a separate temple for it at a place called Kôti, whence the god's name.

9. The Cult of Chadef.

The Nawâwan sept of the Kanêts brought this god from *pargând* Ratêsh and built his temple at Charôl, whence the god's name.

10. The Cult of Shanêtî and Jau.

Jungâ on his birth made a tour through the Keônthal territory, and, having visited Shaint and Jau villages, ordered temples to be built in each of them. Shantî is subordinate to Jungâ, and Jau to Shanêtî. Both these temples are in the village of Kôti.

11. The Cult of Dhûrû.

A very ancient god of the Jai *pargând* of Keônthal. All the *samindârs*, who affected Dhûrû, died childless. The temple is financed by the Râjas and the god is subordinate to Jungâ.

12. The Cult of Kûlthi.

The Chibhar sept of the Kanêts affect this god. His temple is at a place called Kawâlath.

13. The Cult of Dhānūn.

Legend.—The image of this god came, borne on the wind, from Nādaun after Jungā's arrival in the country. It first alighted on Jhako and thence flew to Nēōg, where it hid under a rice-plant in a paddy-field. When the people cut the crop they spared this plant, and then turned their cattle into the fields. But all the cattle collected round the plant, from under which a serpent emerged and sucked all their milk. When the people found their cows had run dry, they suspected the cowherdess of having milked them, and set a man to watch her. He saw what occurred, and the woman then, enraged with the plant, endeavoured to dig it up, but found two beautiful images, (they both still bear the marks of her sickle). The larger of these two is considered the Rājā and is called Dhānūn (? from Dhānd, rice), and the smaller is deemed the *wazīr* and is called Wāno (meaning "tyrant" in the Pahārī dialect). This was the image which assumed a serpent's shape and drained the cows. Two temples were erected to these images, but they began to oppress the people and compelled them to sacrifice a man every day, so the people of the *pargānd* arranged for each family to supply its victim in turn. At last, weary of this tyranny, they called in a learned Brāhmaṇ of the Bharobo sept, who induced the god to content himself with a human sacrifice once a month, then twice and then once a year, then with a he-goat sacrificed monthly, and finally once every six months, on the *ikddshis* of Hār and Khātik *sudi*. The Brāhmaṇ's descendants are still *pujāris* of the temple and *parohits* of the village, and they held Bhiyār free of revenue until Rājā Chandr Sain resumed the grant. They now hold Sigar in lieu of service to the god.

14. The Cult of Dūm.

Dūm has a temple in Katian, a village of Phāgu *tahsīl*, and goes on tour every five or ten years through Keōnthal, Kuthār, Mahlōg, Bashāhir, Kōt Khāi, Jubbal, Khanār, Bāghal, Kōti and other States. In Sambat 1150 he visited Delhi, then under the rule of the Tuñwars, many of whom, after their defeat by the Chauhāns, fled to these hills, where they still affect the cult of Dūm. He is believed to possess miraculous powers and owns much gold and silver. He became subordinate to Jungā, as the god of the State.

15. Raihā.

This god has a temple in *pargana* Parāli.

16. Chānanna.

He is the deity of the Doli Brāhmaṇs.

17. Gāun.

The image is that of Jungā, who was established by the Rawal people.

18. Bijū.

Bijū was originally subordinate to the god Bijat, but as he was in the Keōnthal State, he became subordinate to Jungā. His real name is Bijlēshwar Mahādēo, or Mahādēo the Lightning God, and his temple stands below Jori Chandni in the Jubbal State.

Nos. 19, 20, 21 and 22.

Regarding No. 19, Kūsheti Dēo; 20, Bāl Dēo; 21, Rawāl Dēo; and 22, Kawālī Dēo, no particulars have been discovered.

The Fairs.

It must be understood that the above are not the only cults which prevail in the Keōnthal State. For instance, fairs called *jāt* or *zāt* are observed at Garēn and Bhālāwag in this State, and, as will appear from the following accounts, other godlings are popular within its borders.

I.—The Zat Fair at Garēn in Pargana Ratēsh.

This fair is held on the 29th of Jēth. The images of the Dēvi Ratēsh and Kalwā dēotd are brought in procession from the temple, where they are kept, to Garēn, 400 or 500 persons accompanying them; and of these some 50 remain at Garēn for the night, the rest returning home. By mid-day next day a great crowd of people collects, the men coming in bodies from opposite directions, each man armed with a bow and arrow and flourishing a *dāngṛd* (axe), with a band of musicians preceding them. A man in one of these bodies shouts:—*Thadairi rd bhākhā, awāj ji jhamak lāgi thi.*²⁷ hō hō, I hunger for a shooting-match: come, the fair has started; hō, hō. The others call out *hō hō* in reply. The tune called a *thadairi* is then sung, and matches are arranged between pairs of players. One champion advances with his arrow on the string of his bow, while the other places himself in front of him, keeping his legs moving, so as to avoid being hit. The archer's object is to hit his opponent below the knee, and if he succeeds in doing so he takes a *dāngṛd* in his hand and dances, declaring that a lion's whelp was born in the house of his father at his home. The man who has been hit is allowed to sit down for a time to recover from the pain of the wound, and then he in turn takes a bow, and placing his hand on his opponent's shoulder says 'bravo, now it is my turn, beware of my arrow.' If he hit his opponent he, too, dances in the same way, but if he fail his victor dances again crying, 'how could the arrow of such a jackal hit a tiger's cub?' This goes on until one or the other is beaten. The matches are usually arranged between men who are at enmity with one another. The play lasts for two days. Sometimes disturbances break out. These used to be serious; even resulting in men being killed on either side, but nowadays a stop is put to the play, if a disturbance is feared, by pulling down the *dēotd*'s flag, when the players desist of their own accord.

On the third day a goat and two buffaloes, all males, are sacrificed to Dēvi. The latter are killed in the same way as those at the Tārab Fair,²⁸ but the shambles are at a distance from the temple, and two picked men take their stand, one on the road to Fāgū, the other on that to Ratēsh, to prevent the wounded animals going towards their respective villages, as it is believed that it is unlucky for one of them to reach either village, and bloodshed often results from the attempts of the different parties to keep the animals away from their village. Efforts have been made to induce the people to allow the buffaloes to be killed by a single blow, but the *pūjāris* will not allow this, as being the offsprings of Dēvi's enemies, they must be slaughtered with as much cruelty as possible. After this rite the people make offerings to Dēvi, the money going to the temple fund, while the other things, such as grain, goats, &c., are divided among the *pūjāris*. The *chālī* of the Dēvi then begins to nod his head (*khēlnā*, lit. to play), and taking some grains of rice in his hand, distributes them among the people, saying, 'you have celebrated my fair without disturbances, and I will protect you against all misfortunes throughout the year.' If, however, any disturbance has occurred during the fair, the offenders are made to pay a fine on the spot to obtain the Dēvi's pardon, otherwise it is believed that some dire catastrophe will befall them, necessitating the payment of a still heavier fine. The Dēvi passes the night at the fair, returning to her temple on the morning of the fourth day.

II.—The Jat Fair, Bhalawag.

This fair is held at Bhalawag on the first Sunday in Hār. There is a legend that a *siddhā* once lived on the Chāhal hill. He was famous for his miraculous teats, and was said to be a *siddh*. He built a small temple to Mahādēo on the hill, and established a fair, which was held continuously for some years. The offerings made at the temple were utilized to meet the expenses of the institution. After the Gurkha conquest this tract was ceded to the Mahārāja of Patiāla in the time of Rājā Raghunāth Sain. Once Rānā Sansār Sain visited the fair, but a dispute arose, and the Patiāla officials having used unbecoming words against the Rānā, he removed the *ling* of Mahādēo to his

²⁷ Lit., 'you hunger after archery, come on, since you itch for it.' *Thadairi*, fr. *thoda*, an arrow, means archery, and one of the tunes or modes of the hill music is so called, because it is played at archery meetings.

²⁸ [See Appendix I., below.]

own territory and established it at Bhalawag, and since then the fair has been held there. It only lasts one day. The Rājā, with his Rānis, &c., sets out with great pomp to the scene of the fair, the procession being headed by a band, and reaches the place about mid-day. People pour in from all parts, and by two in the afternoon the fair is in full swing. The Rājā takes his seat on the side of a tank, into which people dive and swim. A wild *leo* is also thrown into it as a scapegoat (*blēt*) and some people throw money into it as an offering. In the temple of Mahādēo, *ghī*, grain, and money are offered by the people according to their means. The *pujāris* of the temple, who are Brāhmans, divide the offerings among themselves. Worship is performed there daily, and on the *sankrānt* days Brāhmans of other villages come there to worship. On the fair day worship is performed all day long. People also give the offerings they have vowed.

There is a legend about this tank, which is as follows:—Once a Brāhman committed suicide in a Rājā's *darbār*. In consequence of this *halīyād* (a profane act, especially the killing of a Brāhman), the Rājā became accursed. He tried by all the means in his power to remove the curse, but in vain, for if he had a child born to him, it soon died, and though he performed worship and tried many charms and amulets, it was all of no avail. An astrologer then told him that as a *Brāhman-hatīyād* had been committed in his *darbār*, he would never be blessed with a son, unless he sank eighty-four tanks at different places in his realm for watering of kine. The Rājā accordingly constructed eighty-four tanks at different places in the hills from Tajaur to Mattiāna. Of these tanks some were very fine, and one of them is the tank in question. After making all the tanks, the Rājā sent for the builder, and, being much pleased with his work, gave him as a reward all that he asked for. But people then became envious of the kindness shown to him by the Rājā, fearing that he would be elevated to the rank of *musāhib* (courtier), and so they told the Rājā that if the builder did the same kind of work anywhere else, the Rājā's memory would not be perpetuated and that steps should be taken to prevent this. The Rājā said that this was good advice, and that, of course, he had already thought of it, so the builder was sent for, and although he tried to satisfy the Rājā that he would never make the same kind of tank at any other place, the Rājā paid no heed to his entreaties and had his right hand amputated. Thus disabled, the man remained helpless for some time, but having recovered, it struck him that with his skill he could do some work with his left hand, and he, accordingly, built two temples, one at Jāthiū Dēvi and the other at Sādū, both now places in Patiala territory. When the Rājā heard of this, he at once went to see the temples, and was so delighted with their work that he gave a reward to the builder, but at the same time had his other hand cut off, and the man died a few days after. It is said that after the making of the tanks, the Rājā celebrated a *jag* on a very large scale, and four years after was blessed with a *tikd* (son).

APPENDIX I.

Dēvi Tārā of Tārab.

This Dēvi is the family deity of the Rājā of Keonthal, and her arrival dates from the advent of the Rājā's family in this part of the hills. Her legend is as follows:—Tārā Nāth, a *jogī*, who had renounced the world and was possessed of miraculous power, came to Tārab to practise austerities. He kindled his fire, *dhūnd*, in the jungle. When rain came, not a drop fell on his sitting place (*dsan*), and it remained dry. Hearing of the supernatural deeds of the *faqir*, the Rājā went to visit him. The *jogī* told the Rājā to erect a temple to his goddess, Tāra Mai, on the hill, and to place her idol in it, predicting that this act would bring him much good, and that it was only with this object that he had taken up his abode on the hill. In compliance with these directions, the Rājā ordered a temple to be built, in which the *jogī* Tārā Nāth placed the Dēvi's idol according to the rules set forth in the Hindu *Shāstras* for *asthāpan*, 'establishing an idol.' The Pāṭo Brāhmans, who attended the *jogī*, were appointed *pujāris* of the temple. This Dēvi has eighteen hands, in each of which she holds a weapon, such as a sword, spear, &c., and she is mounted on a tiger.* The hill on which the *jogī* resided had, before his arrival, another name, but it was re-named Tārab after him.

As the Dêvi is the family deity of the Râjâ, she is revered by all his subjects, and it is well known that whosoever worships the Dêvi will prosper in this world in all respects. It is also believed that she protects people against epidemics, such as cholera and small-pox. It is likewise believed that if the Dêvi be angry with anybody, she causes his cattle to be devoured by hyenas. The *zamîndârs* of *pargândas* Kalanj and Khushâlâ have the sincerest belief in the Dêvi. Whenever sickness breaks out, the people celebrate *jâgs* in her honour, and it is believed that pestilence is thus stayed. Some nine or ten years ago, when cholera appeared in the Simla District, some members of the *Jungâ Darbâr* fell victims to the disease, but the Râjâ made a vow to the Dêvi, and all the people also prayed for health, whereupon the cholera disappeared. The people ascribe the death of those who died of it to the Dêvi's displeasure. Some four years ago, and again last year, small-pox visited *pargand* Kalanj, but there was no loss of life. Some two or three years ago hyenas killed numbers of goats and sheep grazing in the jungles round Târab, and the Dêvi revealed the cause of her displeasure to the people, who promised to celebrate a *jag* in her honour. Since then no loss has occurred.

Close to the temple of Dêvi is another, dedicated to Siva, which was erected at the instance of the *jogî* Tara Nâth. The first temple of the Dêvi was at Ganpari village in *pargand* Khushâlâ. This still exists, and the usual worship is performed in it. The Dêvi's original seat is considered to be Târab. Her oldest image is a small one.

There is a legend that Râjâ Balbir Sain placed in the temple at Târab an idol made by a blacksmith named Gosâûn, under the following circumstances : — One Bhawâni Dat, a *pandit*, told Râjâ Balehr Sain that as Târab was a sacred place he ought to present an idol to it, which he (the *pandit*) would place in the temple according to the Hindu ritual, and he added that the idol would display miracles. Accordingly the Râja ordered Gosâwan to make the idol required. The blacksmith made an earthen image of the shape suggested to him by the *pandit*, who told the Râjâ that while the idol was being moulded, he must offer five sacrifices. This the Râjâ did not do, and moreover he had a brazen image prepared. Immediately after the blacksmith had completed his idol, he was attacked by a band of dacoits, who killed him with two of his companions, as well as a dog and a cat. Thus the five necessary sacrifices were fulfilled. The Râjâ was then convinced of the veracity of the *pandit*'s statement and acted thenceforward according to his directions. He performed all the requisite charities and sacrifices, and, having seated the idol, took it to Târab. He performed several *havans* in the temple and placed (*asthâpan*) the idol in it. This Dêvi is the one who is mentioned in the *Chandiki-Pôthi* by Mârkandâ Rishi, who killed Mahî Kahâshor.²⁹

The Fair of Dêvi Târa is held at Târab in October on the Durgâ *ashtami*, and lasts for a day. On the first *nauvrâtrî*, the Brâhmaṇas worship Durgâ in the temple, and a he-goat is sacrificed daily, the Râjâ bearing all expenses. On the morning of the *ashtami*, the Râjâ, with his Râni and all his family, sets out from his court so as to reach the plain below the temple at ten in the morning, and there takes a meal; after which the whole Court goes in procession, preceded by a band of musicians, to the temple, which the Râjâ, with the Râni, enters at about one in the afternoon. The Râjâ first offers a gold *mohar* and sacrifices a he-goat, and each member of his family does the same. Everyone presents from one to eight annas to the *bhôjki* and the *pujârî*. After the ruling family has made its offerings, other people may make theirs, and money, fruit, flowers, ghee and grain are given by everyone according to his means. The *bhôjki* and the *pujârî* divide the heads of the slaughtered goats, returning the rest of the flesh to the persons who offered them. This worship lasts till four, and then the sacrifice of bull-buffaloes begins. These are presented by the Râjâ as *sankalp* or alms, and taken to a place not far from the temple, where a crowd of people surround them with sticks and hatchets in their hands. The *pujârî* first worships the animals, making a *tilâk* with rice and saffron on their foreheads. Boiling water is then poured on them to make them shiver, and if that fails, cinders are placed on their backs. This is done to each animal in turn, and unless each one trembles from head to foot it is not sacrificed. The people

²⁹ [This reference is clearly meant to be classical, and for Mahî Kahâshor read Mahîshâsura. — Ed.]

stand round entreating the Dêvi with clasped hands to accept the offerings, and when a buffalo shivers it is believed that the Dêvi has accepted his sacrifice. The people then shout 'Dêvi-jî kî jai, jai,' 'victory to the Dêvi.' When all the buffaloes have been accepted by the Dêvi, the first is taken to the shambles and a man there wounds him with a sword. Then all the low-caste people, such as the Chamârs, Kôlis, Bharos, and Ahirs, pursue the animal, striking him with their clubs and hatchets and making a great outcry. Each buffalo is brutally and cruelly killed in this way, and it is considered a meritorious act to kill them as mercilessly as possible, and if the head of any buffalo is severed at the first stroke of the sword, it is regarded as an omen that some evil is impending, and that both the person who inflicts the blow and the one who makes the sacrifice will come to harm in the course of the ensuing year, the belief being, that as the buffaloes are the children of the Dêvi's enemies, it is fitting to kill them in this way.³⁰ After this sacrifice, food is offered to the Dêvi, and *artî* is performed at six in the evening.

The fair is the occasion of much merriment and even debauchery. Women of all classes attend, unless they are secluded (*pardd nishin*), and those of loose character openly exact sweetmeats and money for the expenses of the fair, from their paramours, and put them publicly to shame if they do not pay. The plain is a *sanctuary*, and no one can be arrested on it for any offence, even by the Râjâ, but offenders may be arrested as soon as they quit its boundaries and fined, the fines being credited to the temple funds. Offences are, however, mostly connived at. There is much drinking and a good deal of immorality, with a great many petty thefts. The Râjâ, with his family, spends the night on the site of the fair. The *bhajki* and the *pujâri*, who, with the *bhandârî*, receive the offerings received at the fair, are Sarsût Brâhmans of the Rai-Bhât group, while the *bhandârî* is a Kanêt. Brâhmaṇ girls are also brought to this temple, where they worship and are fed, and also receive money and *dachhna* (*dakshna*).³¹

On the third day of the Dasahîrâ, the goddess is worshipped at 2 P.M., in the *darbâr*, all the weapons being first taken out of the arsenal and worshipped, and then all the musical instruments. The essential worship is that of the sword and flag. After this the Râjâ holds a *darbâr* with full ceremonial and then visits the temple of **Thâkurji Lachhmi Narâyan**, whence the image is brought in a palanquin, while the Râjâ walks just behind it, attended by all his officials, in order of precedence, to the plain set apart for this festival. On this plain a heap of fuel³² is piled at a short distance from a green tree, which is adorned with small flags and round which is tied a wreath containing a rupee. The Râjâ with unsheathed sword goes round the heap, followed by the rest of the people, and the heap is then worshipped and set fire to. It is essential that the *wazîr* of the State should be present at this ceremony, and if he is unavoidably absent, a representative, who wears an iron *sanjuâl*, is appointed, and the heap is then fired. The man who cuts the wreath on the tree in the midst of the burning fire and takes the rupee is considered a hero, and his prosperity during the ensuing year is assured. Before the heap is fired, a pitcher of water with a mark on it is placed close by, and whoever hits the mark is deemed lucky, besides receiving a prize from the Râjâ. If no one is able to hit it, the man who represents Hanûmân, and who accompanied the idol, smashes the pitcher with his mace. The image is then carried back to its temple with the same pomp as before, and a *tarban* is given to the Râjâ on behalf of the Thâkurdwâra, while his attendants are given *bhig* and *charnamrit*.³³ Wreaths of flowers are then distributed. The festival is believed to commemorate the conquest of Ceylon by Râm Chandar, the ancestor of the Râjputs, which was accomplished after worshipping Dêvi.

A somewhat similar festival is the **Saér Fair held at Khad Ashni**:—On the morning of the first of Asauj, a barber, having lighted a lamp in a *thâl* (plate) and made an idol of Ganêsh in cow-dung, comes to the Râjâ and his officials and makes them worship the idol. The Râjâ and

³⁰ Mahî Khashwa, Mahisâsûra, who tormented the Dêvi, was a bull-buffalo, and, when he was killed, his descendants were metamorphosed into bull-buffaloes.

³¹ A fee for spiritual service.

³² The stack is called *lankâ*.

³³ The water with which the feet of the idol have been washed.

officials then give him presents according to their means. In the afternoon, the Rājā gives alms, and, accompanied by a procession with a band and his Rānis, sets out for Khaj Ashni. The inhabitants of the neighbouring villages assemble there in thousands to enjoy the sight. Some fighting bull-buffaloes, which have been reared for the purpose, are brought to the fair the day before and fed up with ghī, &c. The Rājā himself rears six or eight buffaloes for this fair, and they are similarly prepared for the fight. The fair begins at one in the afternoon, when the he-buffaloes are set to fight in pairs, and the person whose buffalo wins is given a rupee as a reward by the Rājā. So long as the fight lasts, music is played.

The people at the fair distribute sweetmeats, &c., among their friends and relatives. Swings too are set up and the people revel in drink. They can commit disturbances with impunity, as no offenders are arrested on this occasion. Many people from Simla bring haberdashery for sale, and the articles are largely purchased by women. At five the people begin to disperse, and the Rājā returns to his *darbār*. About 6,000 or 7,000 persons assemble at this fair, and the Rājā distributes rewards among his servants on its termination. Its introduction is due to the Rājā, and it is not held in honour of any particular god. The place where the fight takes place is dedicated to the god **Bādmān**. Formerly rams were also made to fight, but now only bull-buffaloes are used. Before the commencement of the fight, a *rōt* is given to the god. This *rōt* is made of $5\frac{1}{4}$ sérus of flour, $5\frac{1}{4}$ of *gur*, and $5\frac{1}{4}$ of *ghī*. The flour is first kneaded in *sharbat* of *gur* and then made into a thick loaf, which is then fried in *ghī*. When it is cooked, it is taken with *dhūp*, *tilak*, flowers and rice to the place of the god, and after worship has been performed, it is divided in two, one piece being left at the temple and the other distributed among the people.

According to one legend, this fair was instituted by the forefathers of the Rājā, who originally came from Gauḍa in Bengal and were an offshoot of the Sain dynasty. This festival is also observed in that country. It is said that the Rājās of the Sain dynasty were the devotees (*upāsak*) of the Dēvi, who rejoices in fighting and the sacrifice of bull-buffaloes. Although this fiction is not generally accepted, the story is told by men of advanced age, and the late Rājā Mālēr Sain also ascribed the fair to this origin. It is said that that Biru dēota is the *wazīr* of the Dēvi, and therefore the fair is held at the place where there is a temple of the Dēvi or Biru. It is also said that the day of the fair is the anniversary of that on which Rājā Rām Chandar constructed the bridge to Ceylon, and that the fair is held in commemoration of that event. In the everyday speech of the hill people Biru dēota is called **Bādmān dēota**.

APPENDIX II.

The Goddess Ath-bhōja of Dharēch.

Legend.—A Rājā of Kōtlēhr in the Kāngra District, named Jaspāl, had two sons. The elder succeeded to the throne, and the younger, in consequence of some dispute, quitted the dominions of his brother, went to the hills, and took the name of Gajindar Pāl. On leaving Kōtlēhr, he brought with him an eight-handed image from the fort of Kāngra, and came to Bhajji, where he begot four sons. Chirū, Chānd, Lōgū, and Bhōgū. On his death, these four partitioned his dominions thus : Chirū took the *ilāqa* of Bhajji, and Chānd that of Kōti, while Lōgū and Bhōgū received *pārgānā* Phāgū in Jāgir. The descendants of Chirū and Chānd are to this day the Rānās of Bhajji and Kōti respectively. Bhōgū married, and three families of his descendants, Marchitāk, Phātik, and Haliṭāk, still exist in *pārgānā* Phāgū. Lōgū did not marry, but became a dacoit. In those days the country round Phāgū was under the Rānā of Ratēsh. Harassed by Lōgū's raids, the people complained to the Rānā, but Lōgū was strong and brave and the Rānā could not capture him. At last he commissioned a Chanāl¹⁴ to kill Lōgū, promising him a reward if he succeeded, but though the Chanāl pursued Lōgū for some time, he failed to seize him. Lōgū had a *liaison* with a Brahman girl, and one day she was sitting with him under a tree, when the Chanāl chanced to pass by, and, taking Lōgū off his

¹⁴ Chanāl is a low caste in the hills.

guard, smote off his head and carried it to the Rānā, leaving his body at Hohān village, but the corpse of its own accord went to Dhar, a village surrounded by a rampart and with only one entrance, which was closed at the time. The headless body pushed open the gate, and entered the village. When the people saw it all besmeared with blood, they were terrified and gathered together, but the body disappeared, and though they searched for it, they could not find it. At last they discovered a stone *pindlī* (an idol having no special shape). On consulting the astrologers, they were told, that Lögū had been transformed into a *dēotd* and that they should place (*asthdyan*) the *pindlī* in a temple and worship it as a god. Then Bhōgū and other *zamīndārs* established the eight-handed Dēvi, which Lögū's father had brought from Kōtlēhr, at Kiliyā in Dhīraj village and placed Lögū's *pindlī* in the jungle of Dāwān. The Brāhmans who had come with the Rājā of Kōtlēhr's sons were appointed *pujāris* of both deities, and it was then decided that Dēvi was the superior and that Lögū was her subordinate. Shortly afterwards several brazen images of Lögū were made and a handsome temple built to him in Bakhōg village, where he is daily worshipped. In Dāwān hamlet he is worshipped once every three years.

A fair is held at Dēvi's temple on the Durgā *ashtami* day and at that of Lögū on the Salōnā, i. e., the *pūrannāshī* of Sāwan *sudī*, and at the Diwālī in the month of Kātak.

(*To be continued.*)

AHMAD SHĀH, ABDĀLĪ, AND THE INDIAN WAZĪR, 'IMĀD-UL-MULK (1756-7).

(Contributed by William Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Service.)

(Continued from p. 18.)

NEXT 'Imād-ul-mulk began to talk about the invasion of the Shāh and his own calamities at the coming of the Shāh to Shāhjahānābād, telling the story with all its details. His account was as follows :—

'IMĀD-UL-MULK'S STORY.

The daughter of Mīr Manūn, son of Nawāb Qamar-ud-din Khān, Muḥammad Shāh's *Wazīr*, was betrothed to me. Then Mīr Manūn met his death at Lāhor.¹⁶ His widow, by the medium of a woman in the Shāh's (the Abdālī's) family, with whom she had some sort of relationship or connection, wrote a letter to the Shāh, setting forth her unprotected condition. The Shāh was touched and said he would adopt Mīr Manūn's widow as his daughter. He ordered certain *jāgīrs* to be left in her possession and added some tracts of land as a gift from himself.

As Mīr Manūn's daughter had already been betrothed to me ('Imād-ul-mulk), her mother wrote to me : "The feast for the marriage of my daughter remains to be performed. You can either come here [Lāhor], or send for us [to Dihlī], so that this business may be carried through." But the Begam added that she could not come to Dihlī without the permission of the Shāh. In reply I wrote to her : "Get permission from the Shāh and come yourself to Shāhjahānābād." The Begam submitted this proposal to the Shāh, and permission to leave Lāhor having been granted, she reached Shāhjahānābād two years ago.

In the interval mention began to be made [to me, 'Imād-ul-mulk] of the daughter of 'Alī Qulī-Khān; and the other matter [of the marriage to Mu'in-ul-mulk's daughter] was

¹⁶ Mu'in-ul-mulk (Mannū) met his death at Lāhor by a fall or by poison on the 9th or 10th Muharram, 1167 H., 3rd or 6th Nov. 1753. 'Imād-ul-mulk is telling the story in 1169 H., according to our author. The real date of this interview must have been, however, Jamādā II., 1170, end of February, or first week in March 1757; see B. M. Oriental MS. No 1749, ff., 102a-105b.

postponed for one year, and I was married to the daughter of 'Ali Quli Khān.'¹⁷ After a year the Begam Sāhibah was sent for by the Shāh; and repeatedly his letters arrived summoning her. The answer she wrote was : "I came to Shāhjahānbād to see about the marriage of my daughter. Two years have elapsed while I have been sitting and waiting here and Ghiyāz-ud-din Khān [i. e., the person speaking, *rīz*, 'Imād-ul-mulk] has never carried out the ceremony. 'Nay, he is on the point of making his first marriage with the daughter of 'Ali Quli Khān, the Six-fingered, the Dāghistānī; and her mother was a singing woman."

In reply to this letter the Shāh sent me an angry letter, and over and over again forwarded preremptory orders for the Begam to return to his Court. While this was going on, I had married 'Ali Quli Khān's daughter, and on this account the Begam Sāhibah was to some extent ill-disposed towards me. More than once she wrote to the Shāh that she had been involved in all these complications, yet up to that date her daughter had never been married, "but was still seated solitary at home."

The Shāh, upon the representations of the Begam Sāhibah, was greatly incensed against me in his heart. When the Shāh drew near to Dihlī and was encamped at Shāhdarrah¹⁸ I sent for Nawāb Najib Khān, and said : "We must deliver one battle against the Shāh." His answer was : "Pay me this day two *krors* of rupees, cash down, and I will fight." I replied : "Nothing is due to you by the State for your arrears and pay, seeing that in liquidation of your claims I have handed over to you more than one half of the territories. At a day's notice whence can I produce such a sum of money? This claim that you have announced is inconsistent with your loyalty as a subject."

Najib Khān and his followers raised a tumult and for a whole day barred exit from and ingress to my house, and pressed for payment of the above sum. Then, keeping the fact a secret from me, Najib Khān appointed one Rasūl Khan, Afgān, as his agent, and sent him to the Shāh's camp, where he was to act under the auspices of Jaihān Khān, the Shāh's general-in-chief. That very same day a letter in the most cordial terms came from the Shāh, inviting Najib Khān to his camp.

At midnight Najib Khan came out of Dihlī and marched off with his troops to the Shāh's camp, where he was presented through Jaihān Khān and obtained a regal *khila'f* (set of robes). I saw that in the realm of Hind there was no defender, I was left alone, "driven off from 'that side, and on this side, left forlorn,"¹⁹ exposed to dishonour and to death. Thus it seemed best to let come what come might, and go off in person to the Shāh. When it was one watch (three hours) before dawn, without informing any of my people, but taking my life in my hand, I got on to my horse, and, followed by four attendants, an hour and a half after sunrise I reached the tent of the chief minister, where I dismounted. The chief minister was most kind and took me to his arms. Then he called for breakfast for me. In every way he tried to comfort and reassure me. One of the family of the chief minister was related to my mother, and this lady, who was then travelling with him, heard of my arrival, and, following custom, sent out some one to ask how I was.

This conversation ended, the chief minister went away to see the Shāh and reported that Imād-ul-mulk Ghiyāz-ud-din Khān, the *Wazir* of Hindūstān, had left the capital and had reached his (the chief minister's) tent all alone, and was stopping there. He was waiting for permission to kiss the threshold of the Heaven-exalted Court.

¹⁷ Her name was Gannā Begam and her mother was a dancing-girl. A translation of one of her poems is to be found in Vol. I. of Sir William Jones' works. Her tomb is at Nūrābād, sixty-three miles south of Āgrāh, and it bears the short inscription, 'Āb, qām-i-Gannā Begam' (1189 H., 1775-6). "Alas! weep for Gannā Begam."

¹⁸ On the left bank of the Jamnāh, just opposite to Dihlī.

¹⁹ *Āz ān sū rāndah, wa az mū māndah.*

An order issued : "Let him be brought." I went, and I saw that Najib Khān, and Jahān Khān, and five other commanders were standing there with folded hands. As my offering I produced five gold coins, and a jewelled amulet, having mounted on it a diamond of great price.

The Shāh said : "Art thou Ghiyāz-ud-din Khān?" I replied : "I am he ; a sinner and a transgressor." He said : "Thou wert *Wazir* of Hindūstān, wherefore foughtest thou not with me?" I replied : "The *Amīr-ul-umārā* of Hindūstān was Najib Khān. Behold, here he is present before the Shāh's throne. I said to him : 'We ought to fight one battle.' He paid no heed and, without reporting to me, left Dihlī and was honoured by admission to this Exalted Court. Except this noble there was within the realm no other renowned commander having an army. Thus, where was the army I could lead into battle?"

The Shāh said : "It is two years since I sent to you the daughter of Mīr Manūn, under her mother's charge, so that she might be married to you. Up to this day you have not been married to her. Repeatedly have I sent for the Begam of Mīr Manūn, she being my adopted daughter, and yet you never sent her to me. Over and above this neglect, you made your first marriage with the daughter of 'Ali Quli Khān, whose mother was a dancing-woman, and yet you failed to carry out my orders."

I replied : "The Begam of Mīr Manūn caused me to record a written oath, sworn to upon the back of the Qurān, and took it away with her. It was to the effect that after I had married her daughter I would never marry another wife. Now, the daughter of 'Ali Quli Khān had equally become betrothed to me, but when 'Ali Quli Khān died, Shujā'-ud-daulah had endeavoured to get the girl for himself. Thus I was forced to consider my reputation and dignity and name, which were at stake; so I entered into my first marriage with her and thus avoided the breaking of the oath that the Begam Sāhibah had forced me to write out."

Upon this the Shāh said : "Intizām-ud-daulah (son of Qamar-ud-din Khān) has filed before me, through my 'arzbegī, Barkhūrdār Khān, an agreement under his own seal, offering two *kros* of rupees on condition that charge of the office of *Wazir* in Hindūstān is made over to him. The rescript conferring the office of *Wazir* in India has been written out, and only awaits the seal of my *Wazir*. If thou agreeest to one *kror* of rupees, thou shalt be maintained as before in that office."

I said : "This slave could not lay his hands even upon one *lakh* of rupees. Whence can I produce a *kror*?" He (the Shāh) answered : "Thou canst bring it from Shāhjahānābād." I represented : "I could not collect a *kror* of broken pebble-stones there. What chance, then, of getting rupees?" He replied : "How much treasure hast thou stored in thy house?" I said : "Fourteen thousand rupees in cash, two thousand seven hundred gold coins, and four *lakhs* worth of jewels, silver vessels, and so forth. If it be so directed, I will send for them this day, and deliver them over to His Majesty's officials."

On this occasion a slight smile passed over the Shāh's face, and he said to Shāh Wali Khān, his chief minister : "This is the *Wazir* of Hindūstān and you, too, are a *Wazir*. Take him to your quarters and persuade him. If he agrees to a *kror* of rupees, then make out the rescript for the *Wazir*'s office in his name, and maintain him in his old position." He presented me with robes of honour of the Qizzilbāsh style, six pieces in number, and a jewelled aigrette-holder, with a plume of feathers; then dismissing me, sent me away with his *Wazir*.

Upon this we came back to the chief minister's tent. He pressed me to the utmost, and said the rescript appointing Intizām-nd-daulah to be *Wazir* of Hind was already made out; only his (the chief minister's) signature and seal remained to be attached. Any sum that

I chose to promise he would get agreed to, and then would have the order made out in my name. "As the Shāh and I too" (he added), "on account of Mir Manūn, are inclined in heart towards you, we have made some delay in impressing the seal on the rescript for 'Intizām-ud-danlah.'"

I replied that absolutely I could not think of taking or attempting the *Wazīr*-ship in a State where there was no army and no treasure. Nor had I any power of laying hands upon a *lakh* of rupees. True kindness and condescension would, in my case, consist at this juncture in excusing me from such an undertaking. Under no conditions could I accept the office.

The chief minister once more went to the Shāh and made a representation of the case. Then and there the rescript for the office of *Wazīr* was completed in the name of Intizām-ud-daulah; and it was sent off to him at Shāhjahānābād by the hands of a *nasqchī*. Intizām-ud-daulah reeled with excitement, and ordered the kettle-drums to be beaten in honour of his appointment as *Wazīr*.

Two days afterwards the Shāh entered Shāhjahānābād. Five hundred horsemen were set apart to look after me and bring me with them. That same day, that on which the Shāh entered Dihli, he gave an order that the daughter of 'Ali Qulī Khān should be marched away from Shāhjahānābād and taken to Balkh. Accordingly, that very day their march began and their camp was pitched at the town of Bādli.

At the time of afternoon prayer the Shāh said to me: "This night the marriage ceremonies of Mir Manūn's daughter will be celebrated in my presence. Go away now, and when one watch of the night has passed, be ready for this business in accordance with your own customs, and appear then in my audience-hall." At the same moment he sent notice to the widow of Mir Manūn.

When one watch of the night had gone by, I appeared at the appointed place. Then, with his own auspicious hand, the Shāh applied *henna* to my palms, and caused the ritual of marriage to be carried out in his own presence. He said: "From this time I have taken you as my son; in every way let your heart be at rest." He conferred on me a gift of 5,000 rupees and two shawls he had worn himself. For this I made him my acknowledgments. Then I sent to the Begam 5,000 rupees on account of the Unveiling of the Bride. The Shāh said: "To-night remain where you are, you are a bridegroom." Then he was pleased to honour his own sleeping apartment.

The same day there came to the Shāh a petition from Rājah Sūraj Mall Jāt, to this effect. "This faithful one is a slave and a servant of your government. I entertain no ideas but those of submission and obedience. My hope from your mercy and grace is, that I should an order of the Shāh secure the honour of issuing, I will place grass in my mouth and an axe upon my neck, and attend to kiss the Threshold, whereby my head will be raised from among my peers as high as the Seventh Heaven."

The order of the Shāh was: "Let it be written — 'Why delay for the issue of an order, if he is a true subject of the Empire, let him appear and attend our audience.'" Considering the offer of Sūraj Mall to be *bendīde*, the Shāh went off to his sleeping quarters and retired to rest.

When one watch of the night was left before daybreak, the Shāh arose and entered his oratory, and until the time came to say the morning prayers busied himself in reading portions of the Scripture (*wazīfī*) and recitation (*aurād*), and perusal of the Qurān. After

completion of the morning prayers, he entered the Hall of Public Audience and took his seat upon the throne. At one and a half hours after sunrise the emperor of India appeared, and they gave formal audience together, seated upon one throne.

The Shāh ordered Intīzām-ud-daulah to be sent for, so that they might that day collect from him the first instalment of one *kror* of rupees. A general order was given to the *nasaqchis* (a sort of military police) to visit the houses of the other nobles, — above all, that of Mīr Jumlah, Sadr-us-sudūr, who had a treasure-house containing trays upon trays full of gold, — and bring in them and their gold.

In fine, from that moment a strange uproar arose within the city, and cries reached the ear everywhere of "Bring gold! Bring gold!" An exceeding fear fell upon the dwellers in Shāhjahānābād.

The widow of Mir Manūn sent a message to me. "At this time the *nasaqchis* have not given one moment's grace to Intīzām-ud-daulah but have carried him off to the audience. A wooden triangle (*chobhāe qainchi*) has been erected with a view to punishment; and the Shāh has said that this day one *kror* of rupees, according to agreement, being one instalment, must be collected. If this is not done, he will issue an order for a beating with sticks."

On hearing these words I hastened off to the Hall of Public Audience, and, making my obeisance to the Shāh and to my own Sovereign, I remained standing in my due place. I saw that what the Begam Sāhibah had said was quite true. Intīzām-ud-daulah, his face white as a sheet, was standing close to the triangle. In a short time the Shāh would have lost his temper and flown into a rage.

Going close up to Intīzām-ud-daulah, I said softly: "What is the source whence you thought of getting the money?" He said: "By asking for time and forming plans; at this moment, beyond this one ring that I have on my finger, I have not control over even one 'rupee.'" Hearing this appalling reply, my heart sank within me; and I concluded that "of a truth, this man has not the power of paying in even a few thousands of rupees. This day sees the end of the honour of the house of us Turānis! Whatever force and torture may be used to this man, will, all of it, in the judgment of the common people, be attributed to me *Ghiyāz-ud-dīn Khān*, because he has claimed the *Wazīr*-ship and displaced me. They will say I had planned that he should be either disgraced or slain."

Therefore, in the most abject manner, I laid my head at the foot of the Shāh's throne, and said: "May I be thy sacrifice! May I be the averter of thy misfortunes! This dignity and honour of the Turānis, of so many years' standing, — alas! that in the days of a Shāh equal in dignity to Salaimān, they should be reduced to entire nothingness! and should become a laughing-stock to the Irānis! I rely upon the graciousness of the Shāhan Shāh, that as an alms-offering upon his blessed head, they may be preserved from dishonour and granted pardon."

The Shāh said: "This day will I have the money; I have heard that in the house of *Ghiyāz-ud-dīn Khān* there lie stored twenty *kros* of rupees; and out of this accumulation this son of his has covenanted to pay two *kros*. I relinquished part, but this day I mean to realize one *kror*, be it by gentle means or by torture. Let the position of the treasure-store be pointed out; or, if not, I will order a bastonading."

Intizām-ud-daulah spoke : " Whatever treasure there was, my father caused to be buried within his mansion. The widow, Shūlāhpūrī Begam knows about it." Forthwith the Shāh ordered the Begam to be produced. Unable to resist, the poor Begam came to the Hall of Public Audience in a woman's litter with a dirty cloth thrown over it. There the Shāh screened off an enclosed space, and called the Begam to his own presence. He said to her : " Thou art as a sister to me; nor do I wish to shew any disrespect to the family of the sovereigns of Taimūr's line, or to that of their chief minister; you should give up their treasure."

The Begam was shaking and trembling all over, and quite unable to return any answer. An order was given that if the woman did not tell where the money was, iron nails were to be driven in underneath the nails of her hand. On hearing these words the poor creature lost her senses and fell down in a fit. Then Intizām-ud-daulah and I were called to the presence. The Shāh said : " Carry this woman away and place her on one side. Find out exactly where the store of money is."

To make a long story short. After a short time the Begam recovered her senses and said " I am not able to specify the place where the treasure is. Only this much I know, that whatever there is of it is buried within a certain mansion." This statement I reported to the Shāh. He directed that the Begam be carried to that spot. One hundred axe-men and twenty *nascqchis* were placed on the duty of seeing the ground explored and recovering the treasures from it.

Thus, for six hours the earth was excavated, and at the end of that time the treasure was hit upon. When it had been counted, it was found to amount to sixteen *lakhs* in coin. A report was made to the Shāh that this amount of buried treasure had been disinterred. Since, according to Persian reckoning, one *lakh* is 30,000 rupees, while by Indian rules 100,000 rupees are called one *lakh*, the Shāh, following mentally the Persian mode of account, understood that something about one *kror* of rupees, more or less, had been seized.²⁰

After the recovery of this money, the Shāh pardoned all the transgressions of Intizām-ud-daulah and conferred on him robes of honour as *Wazir*, and uttered many apologies in connection with Shūlāhpūrī (Begam). Out of the money found he presented ten thousand rupees to the Begam. A general order was given that not a soul should slay, plunder, or oppress within the city of Shāhjahānābād. The Shāh rose and retired to his sleeping apartments.

On that day the slaves and camp-followers of the Shāh had gone out, by way of foraging, towards Faridābād to bring in water and grass. It so chanced that Kunwar Juwābir Singh, son of Sūraj Mall, Jāt, and Shamsher Bahādur,²¹ Marhattāj, and Antā Mānlābor, Marhattāj, were about that time at fort Ballamgadh with five to six thousand men. They issued from the Ballamgadh fort and, coming upon the foragers, took them unawares, attacked them, and drove away one hundred and fifty horses, while some fifty to sixty of the men were killed. This event was reported to the Shāh the same evening.

That very moment the Shāh sent for 'Abd-us-samad Khān, who was the commander of thirty thousand horsemen, and whispered to him : " Without delay take out your men and go against the infidels. During the coming night select a hiding-place and go into hazzāsh

²⁰ The sum was really 534 (Persian) *lakhs*, and thus not much more than half a *kror*.

²¹ Shamsher Bahādur, son of Būji Rāo, Peshwā, by a Muhammadan dancing-girl.

"Send on one hundred of your men in advance into the open country and induce the infidels to fall upon them. Your horsemen must engage them and, by alternately fighting and retreating, bring them gradually close to you. At that point come out of your ambush and offer them up as food to the relentless sword."

'Abd-*us*-*samad* *Khān* did as he was told. Juwāhir Singh and the two Marhaṭṭah chiefs already mentioned, escaped alive with nine other men, and sought shelter within the fort of Ballamgadh, among the nine being one Hidāyat 'Ali *Khān*, *faujdār* of *chaklāh* Shukohābād Manipurī, Bhongām *et cetera*.²² When half a watch had passed after sunrise 'Abd-*us*-*samad* *Khān* presented himself before the Shāh to make his obeisance, accompanied by about five hundred infidel heads carried on spears, and captured horses, with other goods and chattels. A jewelled aigrette and robes of honour were conferred on him.

The Shāh ordered his advance tents to be sent out and put up in the direction of Faridābād, stating that on the following day he would enter that place. To the emperor of India he said : " You should march along with me, so that wherever there are any rebellious or turbulent men, or any of your enemies, you may issue your credentials, and they shall receive thorough repression and be forced to give proper tribute. My purpose is this — that in order to reduce your kingdom to order, so far as by my hands it can be done, ample exertion of the most effective sort be brought into play."

The emperor brought forward unworthy objections, and declared then to the Shāh : " We desire that between us the ties of brotherhood should be set up, by the marriage of one of the royal ladies to His Majesty the Shāh." The Shāh replied : " I desire no disrespect to the House of 'Amir Tammūr.' The emperor of Hindūstān became still more pressing in his request — nay, he said to the Shāh : " The longing of the whole body of Begams in the royal family is in secret that this should be done. What harm is there if the daughters of sovereigns are delivered to sovereigns. My pleasure will be consulted by this being carried out."

Therefore, that very night one of the daughters of Zinat Mahal was married to him. The Shāh treated this spouse with such honour and respect that he made her the head over all his other wives. After this ceremony the Shāh said to me : " Thou hast only lately been married. Stay where thou art." I answered : " This faithful one will remain in attendance on the felicitous Stirrup. If you allow, I will bring my family with me. Then, the connections of 'Ali Qulī *Khān*, who form part of the good fame of this slave, have, by the Royal orders, marched off to the town of Bādli, which lies five *kos* from Shāhjahanābād, on their journey to Balkh. On this subject I await, for the present, whatever you may be pleased to order."

The Shāh said : " Let them be brought back to Dihlī. Let them be under the control of 'Umdah Begam. When I return to Wilāyat, whatever the widow of Mir Manān desires shall be done with them." I made my obeisance of thanks, and, in spite of the Shāh declining to take me with him, I managed somehow or other to march along with him, wanting to see what would happen.

['Imād-ul-mulk's narrative to Sher Andāz *Khān* ends.]

After this narrative was done, Ghiyāz-ud-dīn *Khān* asked the Mir Sāhib, saying : " I should like to inspect the memoranda and requests of the Nawāb, my brother (that is to say, Ahmad

²² This Hidāyat 'Ali *Khān* may possibly have been the father of Ghulām Husain *Khān*, author of the *Siyar-ul-muta akhkhīrīn*.

"Khān), to find out what matters he has prayed the Shāh to grant him." The writer at a sign from the Mīr Sāhib fetched the memoranda, which were with a servant in a bag, and handed them to him ('Imād-ul-mulk). After he had gone through them, he made alterations in several places. Thus, for "Sūbah Bangālah six krors is offered" he wrote "four krors"; and for the Marhattāh country he altered "fifty lakhs" of rupees into "twenty lakhs," and in regard to the Audi Shābz he replaced "two krors" by "seventy lakhs." Other memoranda were prepared and made over to the Mīr Sāhib.

Let us return to our narrative. 'Imād-ul-mulk and the Mīr Sāhib were engaged in this conversation, when a messenger from the Shāh's audience ran up and said: "The chief minister has stated the business of Ahmad Bangash to the Shāh and his petition has been sent for, you must give it to me." Thus he carried off the petition in its bag. The Shāh himself read it, and reassured the chief minister; and two mounted *nasaghīs* were sent off at once to fetch Jangbāz Khān, who had gone to the town of Mirath. Their orders were to bring him back at once with all haste.

When the chief minister returned to his tent, he said to the Mīr Sāhib: "The Shah has interested himself in the highest degree in the affairs of Ahmad Khān, and has announced that whatever Ahmad Bangash has asked for should be granted." He would send Jangbāz Khān back with his (Ahmad Khān's) envoy. Accordingly, *nasaghīs* had been despatched at once to Jangbāz Khān. In four days' time Jangbāz Khān will arrive. With regard to you (the Mīr Sāhib) he said that the next day being a halt, you are to be presented to him. The chief minister having thus reassured the Mīr Sāhib in the most perfect manner, sent him away. At noon he forwarded to the Mīr Sāhib one tray of fruit and four trays of food, when the Mīr Sāhib presented a gift of ten rupees to the minister's servants.

The next morning we attended at the quarters of the chief minister. The chief minister conducted the Mīr Sāhib to the Shāh's presence. The Shāh enquired: "You are a Sayyid?" He replied: "They call me so." The Shāh went on: "Sayyid, let your mind be easy; I have sent for Jangbāz Khān. In four days he will be here, and I will depute him to Farrukhābād in your company. Write to Ahmad Khān to begin making his plans, and he should be in every way without anxiety. I have entered these realms as an upholder of the Faith and a succourer of the Afghān tribes. My purpose is that the accursed group, the Marhattāhs, who have occupied the territories of that tribe (the Afghāns), shall, through the fear and power of the Lord, be uprooted and expelled by me."

The Mīr Sāhib made an obeisance of thanks and produced the list of presents and rarities. The things were all in the author's charge, he having attended in the Mīr Sāhib's train and being seated in the Shāh's audience-hall. An order was given to lay the things out for inspection. Mirzā Muṣṭafā, the Shāh's Secretary, came up to the author and placed the gold coins, *et cetera*, and the rest of the things in large and small trays, then laid them before the Shāh. The whole gift was accepted. He remarked: "The rupee of Farrukhābād is better looking and better made than that from any other place in India. I have heard that Ahmad, Bangash, is a man of valour, though, nowadays, the Marhattāhs have got hold of his territories. He ought to eject them, and please the Lord! it shall so come to pass, and I will make over the country as far as the borders of Bangal to Ahmad Khān."

After this speech, he conferred on the Mīr Sāhib a robe of honour of seven pieces, together with a jewelled cigarette, a turban of a flowered pattern, a tight-fitting coat of shawl stuff, in addition to

a pleated over-gown and a *yabāe* (?), with a flowered edging, a waistband of shawl-stuff, and a pair of shawls from *tūs*.

At this point four *nasaqchis* appeared and made some statement in the Turkī language. The Shāh's face flushed red, and he said in Persian : "Send for Jahān Khān." To Jahān Khān he said : "Take Najib Khān with you and march this very instant. Move into the boundaries of the accursed Jāt, and in every town and district held by him slay and plunder. The city of Mathurā is a holy place of the Hindūs, and I have heard that Sūraj Mall is there; let it be put entirely to the edge of the sword. To the best of your power leave nothing in that kingdom and country. Up to Akbarābād leave not a single place standing."

Jahān Khān made his obeisance and marched off the same day. Then he (the Shāh) directed the *nasaqchis* to convey a general order to the army to plunder and slay at every place they reached. Any booty they acquired was made a free grant to them. Any person cutting off and bringing in heads of infidels should throw them down before the tent of the chief minister, wherewith to build a high tower. An account would be drawn up and five rupees per head would be paid them from the government funds. The next day the march for the territories of the Jāt began.

To the Mīr Sāhib the Shāh said : "Sayyid, I have come as an upholder of Islām. The accursed generation of Marhattahs, how can they withstand me? I will sweep their very name out of this country. In my heart is a firm resolve to pursue them into the Dakbin regions. So long as you are with the army, come daily to make your bow without fail." Out of those gold coins he picked up ten and presented them to the Mīr Sāhib, saying : "I present you with these by way of *ulash* (table money ?)," and then in the kindest way gave him leave to go.

(*To be continued.*)

MISCELLANEA.

FURTHER TRACES OF TOTEMISM IN THE PĀنجĀB.

THE following instances of clans or sections, both among Hindus and Muhammadans, which bear totemistic names supplement those already published *ante*, Vol. XXXII. p. 201, 312 ff. Personally I am by no means convinced that totemism can be said to exist in the Pāنجāb or North-West Frontier Province, since there is clearly no organised tribal system based on totemism, and most of the instances collected are explicable as *tubus* based on verbal resemblances, or as nicknames.

Khaggā. — From *khaggā*, a kind of fish, so called because their ancestor Jalālu'd-Din Khaggā saved a boat-load of people from drowning. Like the Bodlās, the Khaggās can cure hydrophobia by blowing.

Kahal. — From *kahī* or *kahil*, a weed. This tribe is found in Bahāwalpur, and is an offshoot of the religious tribe of the Chishtis, with whom they still intermarry. They are fervent in

religious observances. Their origin is said to be that a child was born near the Indus, close to a *kahī* weed. They are quite distinct from the polygamous Kahals, who live on crocodiles, &c.

Labāna or Lobānā. — It is tempting to derive this name from *lān* (salt), and I think it means 'trader in grain,' but *labāna* is also 'an earth cricket, with formidable jaws,' and, in the South-West of the Pāنجāb, people whose children have pimples, *pānī-watrā*, tied a *labāna* (or *pānī-watrā*), as the insect also seems to be called) round their necks, believing that a cure will result. It is said of the Labānās that a son was born to a Rāthor Rājput with moustaches, and so he was nicknamed Labānā, after the insect.

Sunārs. — Among the Mair Sunārs, four sections merit notice :—

Baggā. — The Baggā section claims descent from Rāo Chhabītā of Delhi, whose complexion was *baggā*, which means 'white' in Pāنجābi, and hence their name.

The **Plaud** section claims descent from the saint Pallava, whose name is derived from *psallava*, or leaf, because he used to worship under the leaves of a banyan tree.

The **Masūn** claims descent from a child born when his mother became *sati*, at the *chhatā* or *masdū*, "burning-place."

The **Jaurā** section derives its origin from the simultaneous birth of a boy and a serpent called a *jaurā*.¹ The serpent died, but the boy survived, and his descendants, who are of this *göt*, still reverence the serpent.

Brahmans. — Among the Nagarkotia Brahmins of the Kangra District certain snake sections have already been noted. In addition to these, the **Batehrū** (Pakka and Kachchha) have the following sections:—

(i) **Chappal**,² an insect; no explanation is forthcoming.

(ii) **Sugga**,² a parrot; no explanation is forthcoming.

(iii) **Bhangwaria**, fr. *bhangārī*,² a kind of tree.

(iv) **Khajūre Dogrē**: Date-palm Dogar, a section founded by a man who planted a garden of date-palms, and which originated in the Dogra country on the borders of Jammu.

(v) **Ghābrā**,² a rascal; one who earns his living by fair means or foul.

Mahajans. — Among the **Mahajans** of Kangra the following sections have been noted:—

(i) **Bherā**, said to be derived from *bedhi*, 'ewe'.

(ii) **Makkerū**, said to be from *makki*, a bee.

(iii) **Kohāru**, an axe or chopper.

Ghirths. — Among the **Ghirths** of Kangra the following may also be noted:—

(i) **Pathrālā**, founded by a leaf-seller (*pattā*, leaf).

(ii) **Khērā**, founded by a woman whose child was born under a *khēr* tree.

(iii) **Banyānū**, founded by a woman whose child was born under a *ban* or oak.

(iv) **Daddā**, founded by a woman whose child was born near a bamboo, and laid on the tree.

(v) **Khunā**, an animal of some kind. The name was given to a child as a token of affection. Hence his descendants are still called by the name.

(vi) **Ladharia**, from *ladhār*, a kind of tree.

(vii) **Ghurl**, a wild goat; so-called because its progenitor cried like one.

(viii) **Khajūrā**, date-palm (*cf.* the Brahman section of this name); so-called because its founder was born under a date-palm.

(ix) **Khattā**, from *khattā*, a kind of tree: for a similar reason.

Brahmans. — In Ambālā the Brahmans have two almost certainly totemistic sections:—

(i) **Pile Bheddi**, or yellow wolves; so-called because one of the ancestors was saved by a she-wolf, and so they now worship a wolf at weddings.

(ii) **Sarinhe**. — They are said to have once taken refuge under a *sarin* tree, and they now show reverence to it.

Rājputs. — The Rājpats in this District have a *göt* whose names (*sic*) end in *palis* (now corrupted into Prakāsh), because their ancestors once in time of trouble took refuge under a *dhāk* tree. Their women still veil their faces before a *dhāk*, and it is also worshipped at marriages, &c., by them.

Jats — In Miāniali, a district on the Indus, the Jats have a sept, which is thus described:—

The **Thinds**, who are owners in several villages near Leiah, say they were originally Chughattas, but a boy of that family was found by the Pir, greased or buttered all over, with insects clinging to him. The Pir said: "They have buttered you well," and he was called Thind thereafter.³

Chhimbās. — The **Chhimbās** of Māler Kotia have the four following *gōts*, regarding which no traditions are forthcoming:—

| | |
|----------------------|-------------------------|
| Daddū, frog or toad. | Khurpā , trowel. |
| Thuān, scorpion. | Laura , penis. |

Wasirs. — In Kohāt the custom among the Wazirs is that after the birth of the *first-born* child, the mother walks out of the house, and names the child after the object, such as a tree, animal, insect, &c., that first catches her sight. For instance, one tribe, the Gidār Khel, is so called after the jackal.

H. A. ROSE

May 31st, 1906.

¹ Lit., 'twin.'

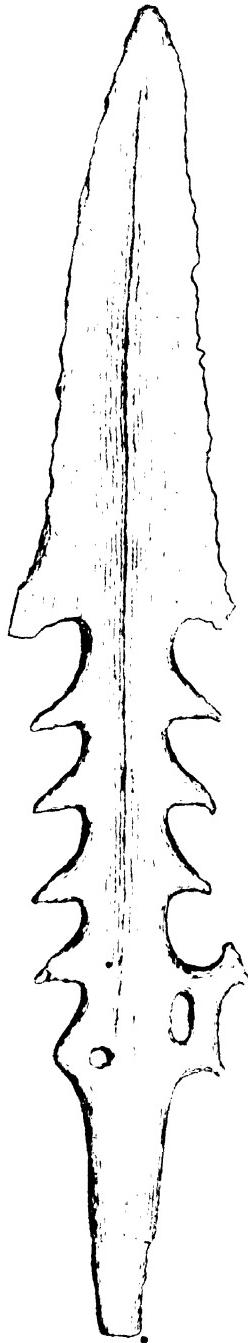
² Not in the Punjabi Dictionary of Bhai Maya Singh.

³ *Thind* = greasy or buttered: *cf.* p. 66 of O'Brien's Multāni Glossary.

PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS FROM INDIA.

Plate VII.

Bronze, (?) copper harpoon-head,
from India, presented in 1880
by Sir A. Cunningham to the
National Museum, Dublin.



Bronze, (?) copper implements from Parbatia Union District.

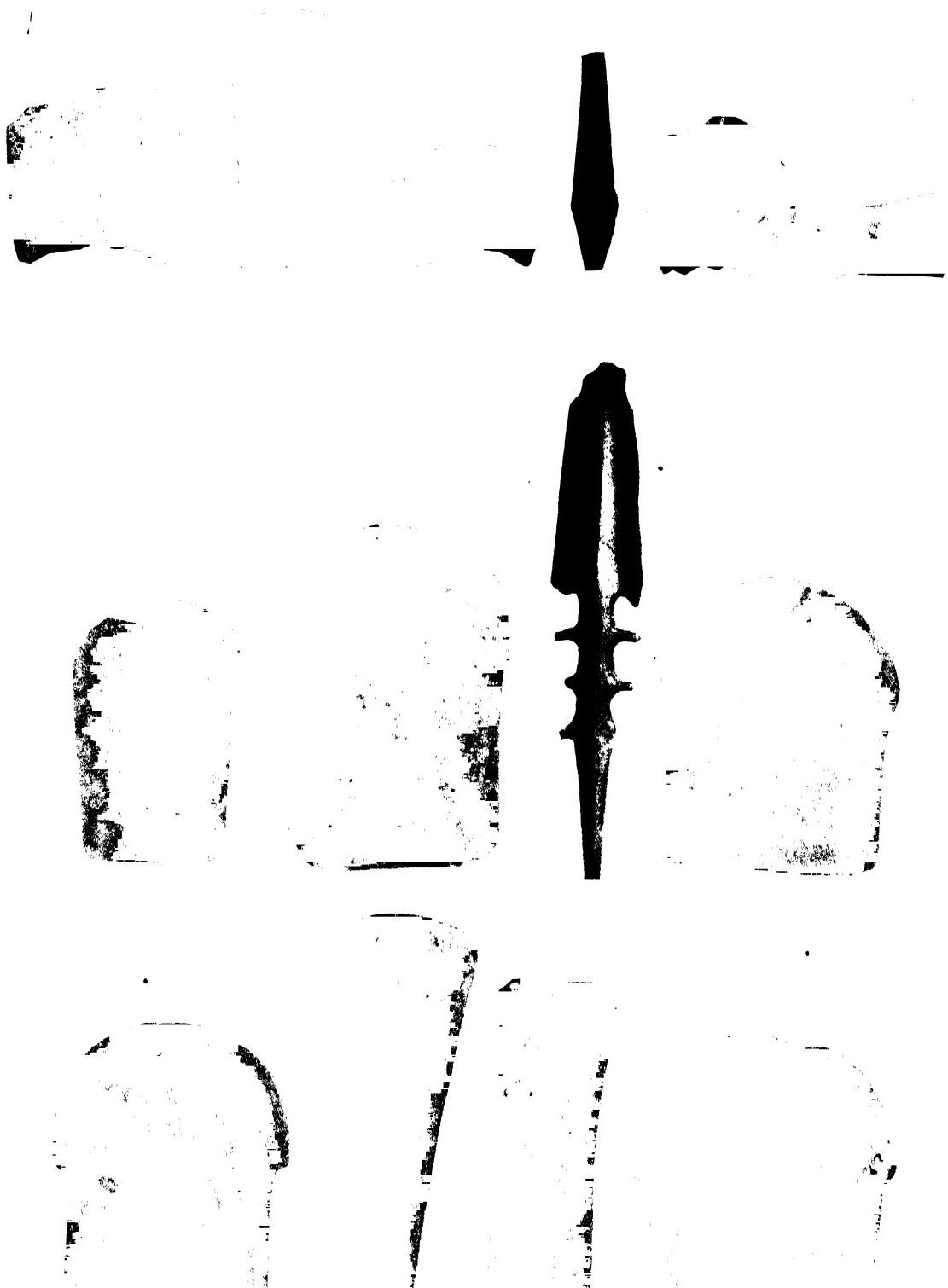


SCALE ABOUT ONE-QUARTER

V PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS FROM INDIA.

Plate VI.

Bronze (?) copper implements from Bithūr or Brāhmāvarta in Cawnpore District.



**THE COPPER AGE AND PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS OF INDIA —
SUPPLEMENT.**

BY VINCENT A. SMITH, M.A., I.C.S. (RETD.)

(Continued from Vol. XXXIV., p. 244.)

I PROPOSE in this short article to complete my review of the present state of knowledge concerning the copper age and prehistoric bronze implements of India by utilizing some materials which were not at my command last year.

In December 1904 Dr. Vogel, acting under instructions from the Director-General of Archaeology, deputed his Assistant, Pandit Hirananda, to examine the site at Râjpur in the Bijnaur District, U. P., and to obtain photographs of copper or bronze implements reputed to exist at **Bithûr** or **Brahmâvartha** in the Cawnpore District, and at **Pariâr** on the opposite bank of the Ganges in the Unâo District of Oudh. The Râjpur implements are fully illustrated in Plate I. of my former article. The photographs of the site, which Dr. Vogel has kindly sent me, show that it is a piece of waste ground adjoining a grove, and marked by a mound or tumulus, apparently of earth, a few feet in height. There is nothing sufficiently characteristic in the appearance of the spot to justify the expense of reproducing the photographs.

The town of **Bithûr** is situated on the Ganges, twelve miles to the north-west of Cawnpore. Local legend affirms that the god Brahmâ celebrated his completion of the work of creation by a horse-sacrifice at the Brahmâvartha Ghât. Dr. Führer states that 'numbers of ancient metal arrow-points are found in the soil around Bithûr, said to be relics of the time of Râmachandra' (*Monum. Antiq., N.-W. P. and Oudh*, p. 168). By 'arrow-points' Dr. Führer meant the large objects which are more properly described as 'harpoon-beads.' Two specimens of this class and two 'flat celts' of primitive lithic type in the Lucknow Museum have been illustrated in Plate IV. of my former paper. The photographs supplied by Dr. Vogel (Plate VI.) now illustrate fourteen more objects from the same site. One of these is a harpoon or spear-head, with three points on each side below the blade, and the rest may be called varying forms of 'celts.' Four of these with broad rounded edges are slightly shouldered, and nearly related to the Midnâpur specimen previously figured in my Plate II., fig. 6. The narrow celts are obviously copies of common forms of stone implements. The bent implement, figured at the end of the top row of Plate VI., is a new form, but a duplicate of it occurs at Pariâr (Plate VII.). Presumably all these Bithûr specimens are made of copper, not bronze, but without analysis it is impossible to be certain what their composition is. Dr. Vogel's Assistant has failed to report where the fourteen objects now photographed are preserved, but probably they are kept in a temple or temples.

Pariâr is a village in the Unâo District of Oudh, on the Ganges, opposite Bithûr, fourteen miles to the north-west of Unâo, as indicated in the Map to my former article. Like Bithûr, it is sanctified by Brahmanical legends of the usual kind, and is frequented as a bathing-place. The great *jhil* or swamp, which almost surrounds the village, is called Mahnâ, and probably represents an old river-bed. 'In the temple of Sômâsvâra Mahâdêva on the banks of the *jhil* are collected a large number of metal arrow-heads said to have been used by the contending armies [of Lava and Kuâa, sons of Râmachandra]; they are also occasionally picked up in the bed of the *jhil* and of the Ganges' (Führer, *op. cit.* p. 272, erroneously printed as 172 in my former paper, p. 237). The photographs now published evidently are those of implements preserved in the Pariâr temple (Plate VII.). One implement, as already observed, is a shouldered celt like four specimens from Bithûr and one from Midnâpur, and another is a peculiar bent tool resembling a Bithûr specimen, and, I think, new to science. The pandit unluckily omitted

to note the scale of his photographs, but in the *Progress Report of Panjab and U. P. Circle for 1903-4*, p. 21, the dimensions of a Pariār implement in photograph No. 114, now reproduced, are stated to be $6\frac{1}{2}$ by $8\frac{1}{2}$ inches. This object must be the round-headed shouldered celt shown in the Plate, and the scale of the photograph, consequently, is approximately one-fourth of the originals.

In my previous paper (p. 243; 15 of reprint) I described 'a fine harpoon-head, presented by Sir Alexander Cunningham to the collections now in the National Museum, Dublin, and said to have been found somewhere in India. This weapon has four teeth, not recurved barbs, on each side below the blade, and the loop on one side of the tang, through which the thong attaching the head to the shaft was passed, is formed by the legs and body of a rudely-executed standing animal. The general appearance of this object, which is apparently made of bronze, not copper, is more modern than that of the copper implements from Northern India.' By the kindness of Mr. George Coffey, Curator of Antiquities in the Dublin Museum, I am now able to present a drawing of this unique implement, prepared by a member of his staff (Plate VII.). The implement may be, as I supposed in my previous paper, less ancient than the copper articles from Northern India and Gujerat, but, even if that be the case, it certainly dates from a period of very remote antiquity, and is characteristically Indian in form.

I conclude by quoting miscellaneous observations with which I have been favoured by correspondents interested in my previous paper. Canon Greenwell, the veteran archaeologist, writes:—'I did not know that so many [copper implements] had been found in India. It is evident that there never was a bronze cultivation there. Indeed it cannot be said that there was ever any real development of a bronze cultivation, except in Western Europe. Assyria and Egypt certainly did not possess one: nor can Greece, the Islands, or Asia Minor be said to have brought it to any high pitch, though there are splendid specimens, such as the Mykenae blades. Still there is nothing like the fine swords, spear-heads, etc., so abundant in the United Kingdom, Denmark, France, Switzerland, and Italy. Hungary developed it certainly; but further east and south it never reached to any height, nor have many bronze weapons, etc., been found in those countries. Spain, too, is very poorly represented, which, as it had much traffic with the Eastern Mediterranean, seems to point to the bronze culture not having come through that channel. The Eastern origin of bronze and its development must be given up; and, so far as we have evidence at present, somewhere about the head waters of the Danube seems to be the most probable place of birth. But we want many more facts before any safe conclusion can be come to.' These weighty observations raise a big question which I am not prepared to discuss at present, but I may be permitted to feel some satisfaction at having had the opportunity of communicating to the scientific world a considerable body of facts to help in the final solution of the problems of the origin and extent of the so-called Bronze Age. Canon Greenwell is of opinion that the Dowie dagger or sword¹ is certainly prehistoric, and observes that 'the handle has something in common with the ordinary bronze sword.' He also thinks, and rightly, that the Norham harpoon was brought to England in modern times, probably by some sailor. He knows of 'several similar finds; Carib stone-axes and North American arrow-points have occurred in England,' and the way in which they came has been traced.

Professor Ridgeway of Cambridge alludes to Major Sikes' 'copper (for they can hardly be called bronze) axes, vessels, and curious rods with a curved end' from Southern Persia, which have been described by Canon Greenwell in the *Archæologia*, and were discussed at the York meeting of the British Association. Professor Ridgeway is inclined to think that these objects are of comparatively late date, the first century B.C., or even the first century A.D.

¹ *Ante*, Vol. XXXIV., p. 243, and reprint of the paper, p. 15, with figure.

This opinion is based on 'the very advanced character of the grooved work on the bottom of one of the vessels, and a similarly late description of the bottom, as well as shape, of the other'; supported by the fact that the owners of Major Sikes' objects buried their dead. I have not followed up these references. The Professor is anxious to get 'more data from Persia itself.' Perhaps some reader of the *Indian Antiquary* may be able to supply them. Professor Ridgeway possesses a copper arrow-head found in a grave near Koban in the Caucasus, associated with a bracelet and beads of glass, which seems to date from the second century A. D.

Mr. Gatty tells me that a copper celt, quite plain, and roughly made, was found some years ago by a keeper, under a heap of stones on the moors above Sheffield, in the parish of Bradfield. Mr. Gatty lived in that parish for twenty years, and collected flint implements, but never heard of any other copper or bronze article being found. The shape, so far as he remembers, was like this:— []

These supplementary notes exhaust for the present all the information which I possess concerning the ancient copper and bronze antiquities of India. Perhaps the publication of them, like that of my previous paper, may attract the attention of observers and scholars interested in prehistoric archaeology, and help in the elucidation of problems now very obscure.

AHMAD SHĀH, ABDĀLĪ, AND THE INDIAN WAZĪR, 'IMĀD-UL-MULK (1756-7).

(Contributed by William Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Service.)

(Continued from p. 51.)

Rubric. — The Shāh marches from Farjādābād towards the territory of Sūraj Mall, Jāt; he pitches his camp close to Sherkot; on the same day at the request of 'Imād-ul-mulk he seizes by force the fort of Bullamgālī, which lay three *kos* from the camp, towards the left; flight of Juwābir Singh, son of Sūraj Mall, Jāt, Shamsher Bahādur, Marhaṭṭah, and Antā Mānker, Marhaṭṭah, who were within that fort; slaughter of the rest of the garrison.

Be it known that the following was the order of the Shāh's march and encamping. One march was never more than five *kos*. When there remained one watch of the night he started; and performed his morning prayers upon his arrival at his advanced tents. He had not a single kettle-drum sounded, nor music at fixed hours, nor trumpets (*karrah-nāw*) and such like.

Before the Shāh mounted, twelve thousand special slaves assembled, three thousand on each side of the Shāh's tent. The title of these men was *Durrānt* (the pearl wearers), and from their ears hung gold rings, mounted with very large pearls. They remained drawn up in ranks at a distance of one hundred paces, seated on their horses. When the Shāh placed his foot in his stirrup, the twelve thousand slaves at one and at the same moment, with a single voice, shouted aloud: "Blessed be the Names, in the Name of God, peace be unto His Majesty the Shāh!" This sound rose to heaven and reached the ears of the army, thus enabling them to know that the Shāh had started. Then the rest of the army from that time got ready, and at the moment of dawn began its march, and reached its new quarters at one watch after daybreak. The general rule was to march one day and halt the next; but on some occasions there was a halt of even two days.

The mode of the Shāh's progress was as follows: The Shāh advanced alone amidst the ranks of his slaves, riding a horse, his sword slung from his shoulder, and his quiver on. There were four bodies of slaves, each of three thousand men, one division in front, one behind, and one on each side. Each division of them wore a hat of a different style. It was prohibited for a slave belonging to one division to ride with another division; he must keep with his own set. If by chance any one disobeyed the rule and the Shāh noticed him, the man received a beating so severe that he was left half-dead, or with perhaps only a gasp of life left in him.

All these slaves were well-made and good-looking, of white and red complexion, with gold-lace waistbelts and hats of flowered gold lace. On each side of the hat hung flowered-pattern tufts (*turrāh-hāē*), towards the ears, near the cheeks. Their long sidelocks were in curls. Many of the slaves, those who were officers, had jewelled cigarette-holders with feathered plumes fixed on the top of the hat. They rode fast horses of Kābulī breed, and guided them, each in his own station, with a grave demeanour. They moved at the distance of a musket-shot from the Shāh's person, all their faces turned towards him. The Shāh rode alone in the middle, with an open space around him.

In whatever direction he chanced to glance, one slave holding a pipe and another bearing a porous bottle of water rushed up to him. Then the Shah would take the pipe-stem into his hand, rein in his horse, and proceed slowly. When done with his pipe, he would rinse his mouth three times with water from the bottle.

The treasure and the food supplies, the stores of clothes, and so forth were carried in the following manner. On the left flank, outside the ranks of the slaves, there were one hundred camels loaded with bread, baked and then dried, two hundred camels loaded with grain, this was called *sūrsāt*.²³ This grain was given out daily in allotted portions to the nobles and the servants of the Begams. On the right flank were two hundred camels loaded with clothes and vessels, silver pots, and so forth. Such treasure as there was came in the rear of the guard of slaves, which followed the Shāh; it was carried on mules and two-humped dromedaries.

Shāh Pasand Khān and Jangbāz Khān, with the *gūwāchi-bāshi*, were told off to the rear-guard and held command over its movements. The three thousand slaves, who rode in front as advance guard, fully armed and ready, bore each a lance whose head was either gilt or silver-plated, having a decorated (*muquiyash*) and fringed (*musalsal*) pennant. To the onlooker, owing to the multitude of lances, it seemed like the glittering of rain. In the rays of the sun the spearheads and pennants so shone, that you might imagine the stars were sparkling in the sky. It was wondrous as a garden in springtime, and a sight worth beholding.

On the day that the Shāh after the afternoon (*zuhr*) prayer set out to conquer the fort of Ballamgadh, the author in company of the Mīr Sāhib [Sher Andāz Khān] was in attendance on His Majesty. By a lucky chance the ranks of those slaves formed up close to me. In whatever direction I looked, my eyes rested on countenances lovely as youthful Joseph, as if the slaves from Paradise, throng upon throng, had descended upon earth, and with their fairy-like dispositions were seated firmly in the saddle, thirsting for the blood of the children of Adam. By the Lord! I was so overcome that my head drooped to the pommel of my saddle.

A horseman named Mīr Muhammad 'Atā, by race a Barakki Sayyid, belonging to the troops of the 'Usmān Khān already mentioned, who, to a certain extent, was proficient in Arabic and Persian, and used to pay a daily visit to the Mīr Sāhib, had set up a friendship with the author. At the time I have been speaking of, he was at my side. He exclaimed: "O So-and-so! What is the matter with thee? Thy complexion has turned saffron-colour and thy eyes red as the planet Mars. The hot rays of the sun have affected thee!" He offered me water from the *chāgal* or leather-bottle that he carried, and I re-opened my eyes. I answered: "I have no need of water"; and I repeated the following quatrain:

Quatrain.

*An roz kih ātash-i-muhabbat afrokht,
Āshiq roshan-i-ishq zi ma'shūq anokht;*

Az jānib-i-dost sar-zad īn soz wa gudāz,

Tā dar na girift-i-shama' parwānah na solght.

"The day when the fire of affection was kindled,
"The lover learnt from the loved-one the brightness
of love;
"Through a friend arose this burning and
melting,
"So that the butterfly should not fall into the
lamp and burn."

²³ Turkish, "requisitions in kind levied from the enemy."

He said : " Say it over again ! What is it ? " I replied : " O brother ! seest thou not that this crowd of lovely faces with white cheeks and rosy lips has brought affliction on my life and faith, "and robbed me of my heart ; and these dusky eyes with sword-wielding eyebrows and arrow-like eyelashes, how they stab me as with daggers by their amorous and languishing glances, and spill "the blood from many hearts."

He gave a loud guffaw, and glancing towards them he brought forth a heavy sigh, and exclaimed : " Thou speakest truth, come on so that we may be closer to them. I am acquainted "and friendly with a number of them." I recited the couplet :—

Harzah-gard-i-bāgh chūn bulbul nayam; parwā- "A butterfly am I, no vagrant songster of the *naham,*
Mitawānam kard parwāzi, kih bas bāshad "I can wing my flight, and that is enough for *mara.*"

Two days afterwards the said Mir, on some pretext or other, brought four of these slaves on a visit to the Mir Sāhib ; and to some extent an intimacy arose, and they came frequently. The Mir Sāhib (God give him rest) treated them with great kindness, and feasted them and received them with civility. He even gave them money, as much perhaps as fifty rupees.

One of them sang Persian odes (*ghazal*) excellently, to the accompaniment of music, and possessed a heart-alluring singing voice. Every time he came there was a wonderful crowd. He got me to write him several *ghazals* and took them away with him.

One of them is the following :—

Ghazal.

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>Turā, st qald chū sarv, wa turā, st rūe chū māh,</i> | "Thou hast the cypress' waist, thou hast a moon-like face, |
| <i>Yake miyān-i-qabā, wa yake ba zer-i-kalāh,</i> | "The one girt in thy coat, the other showing below thy cap. |
| <i>Rabūdī az man jān, wa burdī az man dil,</i> | "Thou hast robbed me of life, hast carried off my heart, |
| <i>Yake ba qadd chū sarv, wa yake ba rūe chū māh;</i> | "One by this cypress-like waist, the other by this moon-like face : |
| <i>Khabar dahad lab-i-tū, wa nishān dahad rukh-i-man,</i> | "Thy lips tell a tale, and my face reveals it, |
| <i>Yake zi surkhī-i-la'l, wa yake zi zardī-i-gāh.</i> | "Those by their ruby redness, this by its hay-like pallor. |
| <i>Būd chū bakhtī wa qadam, chashm wa zulf-i-tū dā, im,</i> | "Be thy eyes and locks lasting like Fate and the Ages, |
| <i>Yake zi khwāb-i-nazhand, wa yake zi tāb-i-dū-tāh.</i> | "These by venerated sleep, those by their two-fold brightness. |
| <i>Zi dard wa hārat-i-tū dīdah wa dil-am har daur</i> | "From pain and grief of thee my eyes and heart for ever |
| <i>Yake mi-bārad khūn, wa yake bar-ārad āh :</i> | "The first rain blood, the other heaves a heavy sigh : |
| <i>Shudā, st müe man as'rānj 'āraz, wa zulf-at,</i> | "By grief my hair is changed, while my locks |
| <i>Yake chū shir-i-sufed, wa yake chū qtr-i-siyāh.</i> | "Are grown white as milk, thine still black as pitch." |

Praise be to God ! Whither are my words wandering !

Hemistich.

Husn-i-in qissah 'ishq ast, dar daftār na mi- "The beauty of this tale is love, no volumes can *ganjad.*" contain it."

To return to the narrative. The retinue of the servants of the Begams, which was called the retinue of the *Haram* of the Shāh, marched in the following order. After the morning prayers they started. Closed litters ('imārī) were placed on camels; these had curtains of red broadcloth, some decorated, but most of them plain. On several of the camels were large closed litters, but on most of them two panniers (*kajāwah*), the furniture of which was also of scarlet broadcloth. There were about two hundred camels. In the midst of them, which was styled the *kalb*, or "heart," went fifteen to twenty persons, carried on *takhts*, or platforms, in the Hindūstānī manner, borne on the shoulders of *kahārs* (a caste of litter-carriers).

This procession, from the number of covered red litters, formed a sight worth seeing. In advance, at the distance of an arrow's flight, went five hundred mounted archers, and as an armed retinue (*qur*) there followed one thousand horsemen. At five to six *gharts* (1½ to 2 hours) after sunrise they reached their encampment. The horsemen who came first gave a shout, using the words *Yurhā! Yurhā!* that is, "Withdraw on one side." In every lane and passage in the camp through which the retinue of the *Haram* took its way, every one, great and small, remained with his face covered by his skirt, until the last of the procession had gone by. If by chance any one ever glanced towards the retinue, one, two, or three horsemen would ride at him and without a pause most relentlessly thrash him. The retinue would take four or five *ghart* (90 to 112 minutes) to pass any given spot. All the people on their road, through the camp, were in a most extraordinary condition of apprehension, and you might say each of them was a man afflicted by God.

The camp of the Shāh was pitched in two portions. The first was the male and the other the female quarters. Between the two was left an open space of about the width of two or three arrows' flight. The female camp was called the *Haram*; the men's camp had two names; where the Shāh sat was styled *Khargāh*, and where the scribes of the office were placed was called the *Darikhānah*. In the screens of the *Khargāh*, facing the *Darikhānah*, there was one large entrance, constructed of wood, painted of an azure colour, and partly gilt, on which were beautiful flowers of many sorts depicted by the brush. On the top of the gateway was placed a large dome made of copper, two sides of which were gilt. This was called the *Qubbah-i-Shāh* (the Shāh's cupola). It was so high that it could be seen at a distance of three to four leagues (9 to 12 miles?). If the light of the sun were over against it, it shone from afar, and the men in charge of the baggage train were guided by it to their destination. It was there that the Shāh's own tents would be found.

At each of the two wings of this entrance stood a large standard in a gold-embroidered scarlet broadcloth cover. From the top of each standard hung a bow upside down, and a flower-pattern cloth, viz., a waist-cloth, hung down from each end of it. To each bow notch a naked sword was attached to the bow-string (*chillah*). If a halt were ordered, the two swords were placed upright. If there was to be a march, then at nightfall, one sword was let down and placed upon the ground. These were the signals of a halt, or a march.

To go on with the story. When the Shāh marched from Faridābād and reached his camp, the fort of Ballamgadh was three *kos* to the north. 'Imād-ul-mulk represented to him that the fort of Ballamgadh was close by, and the infidel Juwāhir Singh, son of Sūraj Mall, Jāt, with Shamsher Bahādur and Antā Mānker, two Marhattah chiefs, were within the fort. His Majesty's wisest course was to detach a strong force to drive the fumes of overweeningness out of their heads.

The Shāh said: "My scheme is to uproot the forts of Dīg and Kumher. What is there for me to attack in little forts like this?" He ('Imād-ul-mulk) represented: "If these rebellious fellows did not happen to be in this fort alive, it would be of no importance. At this moment, when the infidels have taken refuge so near to us, to leave them unmolested and continue our march, will raise many suspicions."

The Shāh replied: "Take with you Afzal Khān, the Ghilzah, who is at the head of forty thousand men, and invest the fort." 'Imād-ul-mulk and the said Khān arranged for the

investment of the fort. The garrison went on fighting with swivel-pieces and muskets until the hour of afternoon. The Shāh from moment to moment sent off express riders to ascertain progress. After the afternoon prayer the Shāh started himself and soon reached the spot. The Mir Sāhib followed, and the author with him, as related above.

Then the Shāh in his own pure person inspected the fort from all four sides. He fixed on one direction and caused the ground to be measured with a rod up to the foot of the wall, and caused the cannon called *Kullah-i-khūnbārah*²⁴ to be brought, and ordered it to be fired into the air. *Kullah-i-khūnbārah* sent its charge up to heaven and it returned to earth within the fort. By concussion its two pieces, which were of iron in the shape of a large casket (*dvrj*), split asunder, and, wherever they went, reduced everything to splinters. What chance had a human being of standing against them! The firing continued for four or five *gharī* (1½ to 2 hours), the aim being constantly altered. Changing from one position to another, the balls were sent in one after another. In short, after the same fashion, four other mortars (*kullah*) were brought into action. A number of the infidels within the fort were killed, and great confusion arose there.

At this time the Shāh was engaged in the evening prayers, and continued to sit on his prayer-carpet till the time of sunset prayers (*namāz-i-maghrib*), then night came on. All three chiefs of the infidels came out of the fort and slunk into the ravines adjoining the river Jaman (Jannah). It was not known in what direction they had gone.

After the lapse of twenty to forty-five minutes, sounds not issuing any longer from the fort, the Shāh ordered it to be stormed. Strong bodies from all directions moved conjointly upon the gates in close formation and effected an entrance. The gates were broken open with axes, and all persons found within the fort were put to the sword. But of Juwāhir Singh and the others not a trace could be found. 'Imād-ul-mulk himself came into the fort and inspected the corpses one by one; but as he reported to the Shāh, the accursed one was not among them.

The skirmishers were ordered to keep a watch over the neighbourhood in all directions and take care that he (Juwāhir Singh) should not get away in safety. In spite of all their activity, no trace could be discovered. Some days afterwards, Hidāyat 'Alī Khān, *saujdār* of Shukohábād, was introduced to 'Imād-ul-mulk by the Mir Sāhib. This *saujdār* told us he was in the fort with Juwāhir Singh. The Jāt chief, Shamsher Bahādur, Antā Mānkher, and he (Hidāyat 'Alī Khān) dressed themselves in Qizzibāsh clothes, and, going through an underground chamber into the ditch of the fort, they threaded their way through the Shāh's troops, and hid in some ravines near the Jannah river.*

For two days and two nights they remained concealed in that spot, and got not a mouthful to eat. Such terror had overcome them that they would not emerge even to drink water from the river. When the Shāh had marched away, they came at night time by a route they knew before to a village, and there mounting a bullock-carriage reached a small fort in another village. There he (Hidāyat 'Alī Khān) went to sleep; where the other three vanished to he knew not. All he could find out from the guide was that ten matchlock-men and one horseman had come with three horses, and carried them in some direction or other.

To make a long story short, after the taking of Ballangāl, the Shāh told 'Imād-ul-mulk to make out a list of all the cash and goods found in the fort, and produce it before him. Accordingly, there were found in the fort, twelve thousand rupees in coin, with pots and vessels of silver and copper, and gilt idols, 14 horses, 11 camels, clothing, grain, and much other goods. All this was confiscated. The grain was delivered to the *sursāt* (the food-supply department, see *ante*). Of the cash total five thousand rupees were given to Afzal Khān and two thousand to 'Imād-ul-mulk. Two camels were presented to the Mir Sāhib. The Shāh made a two days' halt at this place and issued an order for slaughter and plundering.

* "The blood-shedding Heel," probably a mortar, and so named from its shortness or shape.

It was midnight when the camp followers went out to the attack. It was thus managed ; one horseman mounted a horse and took ten to twenty others, each attached to the tail of the horse preceding it, and drove them just like a string of camels. When it was one watch after sunrise I saw them come back. Every horseman had loaded up all his horses with the plundered property, and atop of it rode the girl-captives and the slaves. The severed heads were tied up in rugs like bundles of grain and placed on the heads of the captives, who by the Abdālis are called *Kannah*, and thus did they return to camp.

After afternoon prayer (*zuhṛ*) an order was given to carry the severed heads to the entrance gate of the chief minister's quarters, where they were to be entered in registers, and then built up into heaps and pillars. Each man, in accordance with the number of heads he had brought in, received, after they had been counted, five rupees a head from the State.

Then the heads were stuck upon lances and were taken to the gate of the chief minister. It was an extraordinary display ! Wherever your glance fell nothing else was to be perceived but severed heads stuck upon lances, and the number could not be less than the stars in the heavens.

Daily did this manner of slaughter and plundering proceed : *Wa shab rā az faryād-i-zanān kih bah asrī awardah, ba ānhā suhbat mī-kardand, goshhā: mardum kar mī-shudand,* It was a marvellous state of things, this slaying and capturing, and no whit inferior to the day of Last Judgment.

All those heads that had been cut off were built into pillars, and the men upon whose heads those bloody bundles had been brought in, were made to grind corn, and then, when the reckoning was made up, their heads, too, were cut off. These things went on all the way to the city of Akbarābād, nor was any part of the country spared.

In addition to all this, five thousand Rohelah foot soldiers had joined the army. Each man procured some thirty to forty buffaloes. The plundered goods, such as jewels and clothes, they loaded upon these buffaloes, and established a market of their own within the camp, where they sold all these things at low prices. Cloth goods worth ten rupees they sold at one rupee, and those worth one rupee for eighty *tankah*. Copper and other vessels that had been broken up were strewed along the route of the army and no one stooped to pick them up. Excepting gold and silver nothing was carried away.

In this manner Jahān Khān and Najib Khān went on ahead of us, as far as Mathurā. The towns of Mathurā and Bindrāban were subjected to a general slaughter, and completely plundered. The latter is a principal holy place of the Hindūs, situated upon the bank of the Jamnah ; it is in the territory of the Jāt.

On the day that the Shāh marched from Shergaḍh, after the reduction of Ballamgāḍh, he pitched his camp near Hasanpur and Nadīnāb. The same day Jangbāz Khān arrived from Mīraṭh, bringing with him much booty. Among other things were four elephants, loaded up with silver only, seventy-six horses, and a quantity of other property. The whole was produced for the Shāh's inspection.

As to the plundered elephants and palanquins it was remarked that these two modes of travelling were specially used by the emperors and nobles of Hindūstān. The Shāh said, elephants were admirable means of baggage transport. But a mount, the control of which is not in the hands of the rider, and it can carry him whither it wills, should not be resorted to ; while a litter is only suitable for a sick man.

Afterwards Jangbāz Khān was given robes of honour and a jewelled plume-holder. He was told that an envoy sent by Ghāzānfar Jang, Ahmād Bangash, had arrived at Court ; and he agrees to such and such an amount of tribute, and prays that some commander, with some properly qualified claimant (*tūrah*), be sent by the Shāh to reinforce him, so that out of dread of the Abdāli might, his

enemies may withdraw from his territories. Patents for the provinces of Andh and Bangālah were in preparation in his (Aḥmad Khān's) name. "Thou, who art of his tribe, hast been asked for, and "as I look on you as my son, I wish to send you for the execution of this project in the place "of any princely heir. I follow after you stage by stage."

Jangbāz Khān assented, made his obeisance, and straightway sought the chief minister at his tent. Mir Sher Andāz Khān was sent for. The papers stating the demands of Aḥmad Khān were read. Then he (Jangbāz Khān) said to the chief minister: "I command no more than five thousand horsemen, while Aḥmad Khān has not much of an army, nor any funds. How can I eject the Marhaṭahs or occupy *suhūk* Aude? Shujāt-ud-daulah possesses a treasury and an army, and is the governor of that province. The same thing applies to the territory of Bengal. Thus, the undertaking of these enterprises is opposed to reason and wisdom. I decline to go."

The chief minister said: "When you were in front of the Shāh you accepted and then left his audience without a protest. Now you are raising difficulties. What does this mean?" Jangbāz Khān answered: "I was unable to say these words to the Shāh himself." Then 'Imād-ul-mulk intervened, saying: "The army is part of the provincial government. Whenever the province has been made over to Aḥmad Khān, he can collect as many troops as ever he likes. The whole race of the Afghāns form his army, there must be two hundred thousand fighting men of his tribe. You are only nominally required to impress people with dread of the Shāh. Knowing you to be a brother of the same race as himself, Aḥmad Khān applied for you."

Jangbāz Khān would not agree but continued to give a flat refusal. The chief *Wazīr* carried his words to the Shāh. His order upon this report was to send 'Abu-ṣ-ṣamad Khān instead. The chief minister told the Mir Sāhib what order the Shāh had given, and asked him to write about it to Aḥmad Khān, and call upon him to state his views. The Mir Sāhib pointed out that what Ghażanfar Jang (Aḥmad Khān) wanted was the nomination of some prince of the imperial family — as for the rest, he would see to it himself. 'Abd-us-ṣamad Khān commanded thirty thousand horse, and for the time being the daily expenses of such a force could not be provided. For this reason he indicated Jangbāz Khān, whose force is only five thousand men.

Then the Mir Sāhib proceeded to the tent of Jangbāz Khān and presented the shawls, *et cetera*, the gifts intended for him, as previously detailed. Out of the whole present he accepted only a pair of shawls and returned the rest, saying: "Nawāb Ghażanfar Jang is the chief man of my tribe, out of politeness I accept a pair of shawls. I am no king or minister that I should extend my foot beyond my due station." The Mir Sāhib insisted much, but not another article did he accept. As to marching himself, he absolutely declined to do so.

Two days passed in this fruitless discussion. On the third day, when the Shāh happened to make a halt at one of the camps, 'Imād-ul-mulk and the Mir Sāhib laid before him the proposal that he (the Shāh) in person should march as far as the town of Mathurā, and there make some stay. Then whatever Aḥmad Khān proposed, if it seemed advisable, could be carried out. The Shāh said: "It is well."

Rubric. — March of the Shāh towards Mathurā on the representation of Mir Sher Andāz Khān, and after reaching it and making a seven days' halt, he starts on his return to his own country.

On the day that the Shāh entered the neighbourhood of Mathurā, he crossed the Jamnah and encamped near Mahānān (Mahāban?), where there is a *sarāe*, built by one Sayyid 'Abd-un-nabi,²⁵ and it goes also by the name of Sarāe Nabi; it lies two *kōs* to the east of Mathurā.

* ²⁵ He was made *faujdar* of Mathurā on the 16th Rabi II., 1079 H. (26th September 1668), and was killed in an attack on a *Jāt* fort upon the 21st Zu'l Hijjah of the same year (24th May, 1669), *Maṭāṣir-i-Ālamyārī*, 74, 93.

En route the Mir Sāhib paid a visit to Najib Khān, who was at Bindrāban with Jahān Khān. These two nobles had marched fourteen days earlier, and had carried out a general slaughter in the country round Mathurā and Bindrāban, and had halted there. The author went with him (Sher Andāz Khān). Wherever you gazed you beheld heaps of slain; you could only pick your way with difficulty, owing to the quantity of bodies lying about and the amount of blood spilt. At one place we reached, we saw about two hundred dead children lying in a heap. Not one of the dead bodies had a head. In short, we reached the quarters of Najib Khān and sat there some three quarters of an hour. The stench and fetor and effluvium in the air were such that it was painful to open your mouth or even draw a breath. Every one held his nose and stopped his mouth with his handkerchief while he spoke. The Mir Sāhib said to Najib Khān: "How can you relish your food or a drink of water?" He replied: "What can I do, I am under the Shāh's orders; in default of his order I can move nowhere."

When I got to the town of Mathurā I saw exactly the same state of things. Everywhere in lane and bazar lay the headless trunks of the slain; and the whole city was burning. Many buildings had been knocked down. A naked man emerged from the ruins and asked me for a little food. I gave him some money and asked: "Who art thou?" He said: "I am a Musulmān, I was a dealer in jewellery, my shop was a large one. In addition to precious stones and engraved and mounted goods, I had 4,000 rupees in cash in the shop. On the day of the slaughter the Shāh's army suddenly appeared, when nobody had the least expectation of them; it was at dawn. A horseman, drawn sword in hand, came at me and tried to kill me. I said I was a Musulmān. He said: 'Disclose your privities.' I undid my cloth. He continued: 'Whatever cash you have give to me that I may spare your life.' I gave him my 4,000 rupees. Another came and cut me on the stomach with his sabre. I fled and hid in a corner. My shop was emptied. For several days past I have had nothing to eat, but a few uncooked grains of corn. Camp followers come in day after day and knock down the houses. In many places buried treasure is discovered and carried off. But still there are hoards left in other places not yet found by any one. If you can take me to the camp with you and place men at my disposal, I will point out the hoards."

In brief, I made over to him a sheet to cover him, and brought him with me. When I reached the bank of the Jannah, I found it was fordable. The water flowing past was of a yellowish colour, as if polluted by blood. The man said: "For seven days following the general slaughter, the water flowed of a blood-red colour. Now fourteen days have elapsed, and the colour of the water has turned yellow." At the edge of the stream I saw a number of Bairagi and Suniyāsi huts, huddled close together. These men are ascetics of the Hindū faith. In each hut lay a severed head with the head of a dead cow applied to its mouth and tied to it with a rope round its neck."

To continue my story. I brought the man above referred to with me and produced him before the Mir Sāhib. The next morning, with the permission of the chief minister and Imād-ul-mulk, ten horsemen of 'Usmān Khān's regiment were sent with him and several axe-men. He took them to a house. After they had applied their axes once or twice, a box was uncovered. It held two hundred gold coins, several pieces of diamond, half a sér's weight of jewelled ornaments, and the same quantity of plain gold ornaments. After that, several other places were broken open, but nothing was discovered.

We came back and displayed the property before the chief minister. The Wazir made a sign to the Mir Sāhib saying: "Half I give to you and Imād-ul-mulk, half is mine." The Mir Sāhib represented that he had never accepted plundered property. "All belongs to Your Lordship, for you have come from your own country with the intent of upholding the Faith and expelling the infidel. You are engaged in a Holy War, and this is a special holy place of the infide!" The minister rejoined: "Well, I give it you from myself." But the Mir Sāhib still refused.

On the next day the Mir Sāhib attended the Shāh's audience. The Shāh was inspecting the lists of booty from Mathurā that had been drawn up by Jahān Khān. After he had done this, he

conferred robes on Jahān Khān and Najib Khān, and told them to move on to Akbarābād, where there were many wealthy men, who are subjects of the Jāt. These must be either slain or made captives, and all their property seized and delivered over to the officials of his government. That same day they made their first march towards Akbarābād.

At the same audience the Shāh said : "Is there any one who can compose a rhyme on this victory ; the meaning must be that I have given Islām peace from the oppression of the infidel, the words *durr-i-durrānī* to be included in the date-giving line." You must understand that the Shāh styled himself *Durr-i-Durrānī*.²⁶ At the head of his missives, instead of his own name, he wrote these words in gold ink with his own hand.

In the Shāh's army was an Afghān poet, a native of Kābul, whom he knew by sight. His name was Khawāṣ Khān, and his pen-name was Bezhan. The teaching of Prince Taimūr Shāh was confided to him. The Shāh sent for this man and instructed him as to what he wanted, telling him to reflect on it and bring him the result. The Mir Sāhib told this story to me.

Next day the Mir Sāhib was at the quarters of 'Imād-ul-mulk. There Khawāṣ Khān said that two days had gone by and he was still puzzling over that chronogram and the expressions required in it by the Shāh. He could not get it into shape. The Mir Sāhib began to speak of me and then sent for me. I went to the place. 'Imād-ul-mulk said to me : "You, too, must try to think this out." I gave no reply. He went on : "Certainly — you must have a try." I answered : "I have no choice left ; but I must have till to-morrow to prepare it, and I will then produce it."

That same day I set to work and got the hemistich for the date, and then composed a strophe of two couplets, which I made over to the Mir Sāhib. The hemistich for the date is :

Bu Hind aiman namud Islām Shāh-i-durr-i-durrānī

1169 H.

"The King of Islām, the pearl of pearls, brought peace to India."

The morning afterwards, the Mir Sāhib stated to 'Imād-ul-mulk that So-and-so (*i. e.*, the author), after reflecting two or three hours, had written this chronogram in a rhymed strophe. 'Imād-ul-mulk inspected it and approved it highly ; then he said it was very excellently written and quite perfect. He sent for the writer and said to me : "Your Mir Sāhib wishes to place this chronogram before the Shāh, while I say it is not wise to do so ; for this reason that the Shāh will summon you to his presence, and will doubtless present you with a robe (*hullah*), but he is sure to say also, 'Remain in attendance on me.' He will appoint a monthly salary and rations, and carry you off with him. What are your ideas about this ?" I repeated this hemistich —

Ai roshnā-i-i-taba' ! tu bar man balā shudt
"O sharpness of wit ! thou art my damnation,"

and held my tongue. After a moment or two 'Imād-ul-mulk made a sign aga'in to me, and said : "What is your wish, speak." I replied : "This loyal servant obeying your exalted order brought forth 'moist and dry' (*rath yābis*?). So long as the Mir Sāhib does not turn me away, men may offer me *lakhs* of rupees, and I would not leave him." He answered : "The men of towns, in particular of those round Lakhnau, who are famed throughout the realm for their noble descent and valour, are extraordinary creatures, full of airs and graces (*bā ān o bān*)."

²⁶ "Pearl of Pearls." No doubt he, like the rest, had worn in his ear a gold ring, mounted with a pearl, when one of the household slaves of Nādir Shāh. Before he rose to power a *fāqir* had prophesied his success, and styled him *Durr-i-durrānī*, "Pearl of Pearls." Hence his epithet of the *Durrānī*, "the man of the Pearls."

After the writer had returned to his quarters, 'Imād-ul-mulk, in my absence, said to the Mir Sāhib: "Let me have Muhammad Hasan, and he will live with me as your representative. I will appoint you to the office of Branding and Verification [of troopers' horses] and the inspection of the personal rolls of my soldiers; it will be your office and he will be your deputy." The Mir Sāhib answered: "Muhammad Hasan is my right hand; if your Lordship designs to amputate my hand, what objection have I?" These speeches were reported to me by the Mir Sāhib that night, and he added: "Now let us wait and see what happens. Whatever country or whatever office it be, you will not go away from me."

To return to our story. As Jangbāz Khān persisted in his refusal, the chief minister and 'Imād-ul-mulk and the Mir Sāhib sat from early morning to midday in consultation upon what should be done with regard to Alīmad Khān's business. After much argument 'Imād-ul-mulk advised that one of the princes of Hindūstān should be appointed to the *sibahs* of Audh and Bengal, and despatched in charge of him ('Imād-ul-mulk). Jangbāz Khān should also be sent. If he agrees, well and good; if not — it is the emperor's country, and in the non-presence of the emperor, the prince affords a perfect claim and title. Wherever he directs his steps, crowds of helpers will join him. The kingdom is his kingdom. Not one of the nobles and *rājahs* of Hindūstān, except they be disloyal, will act in opposition.

Thus they reported to the Shāh that if His Majesty had planted in his heart the desire to assist the emperor of Hindūstān, then one of the princes, sons of the emperor of Hind, ought to be sent for; a patent for the eastern provinces should be granted to him, and he should then be sent off in company with Jangbāz Khān. In this manner the said Khān's (Jangbāz's) scruples would be removed, and all others concerned would be re-assured.

In accordance with the chief minister's proposals, the Shāh considered the plan and held it to be a good one. At once he wrote and sent off a letter to the emperor of Hindūstān, 'Azīz-ud-dīn, 'Alamgīr Sūnī, calling upon him to send a prince at once, without any delay. The emperor of Hindūstān selected two princes; the first was named Hidāyat Bakhsh, holding the title of Wālā Jāh, Bahādur. He was a son of this same emperor of India. The second was Mīrzā Bābā by name and A'īl Jāh by title, the emperor's son-in-law. They were despatched under the care of Nawāb Saif-ud-daulah, the Chief Almoner (*sadr-us-sadūr*). A patent for the Audh province was made out in the name of Mīrzā Bābā, and for Bangālah in that of Wālā Jāh, aforesaid. The emperor affixed his own seal to these, and handed them to the princes. At the time of leave-taking he said to Nawāb Saif-ud-daulah: "I make over these two princes to you in trust. If something in the shape of my heart desires can be accomplished, my purpose is fulfilled; otherwise, these pledges, entrusted to you, I shall demand again. See to it that they fall into no one else's hands."

The said Nawāb, taking the two princes with two elephants, one riding horse for each, and a mere soldier's tent, reached our camp by forced marches. The Shāh also issued to them patents for the provinces in accordance with those given by the emperor of Hind. The chief minister persuaded Jangbāz Khān, and the Shāh added: "My son, I will not leave you to be destroyed, my hand is at your back."

'Imād-ul-mulk received an aigrette and a plume. A handsome set of robes, along with a jewelled aigrette and a feathered plume for Nawāb Ghāzansar Jang, Alīmad Khān, were made over to the Mir Sāhib. At the time of leave-taking the Shāh said to the Mir Sāhib: "Sayyid, wherever I may be, if a letter from thee reaches me, whatever request you make, it shall be attended to. Set your mind at rest."

As the weather was hot and it was the season of the spring harvest, a great deal of sickness appeared in the Shāh's army and it took one hundred rupees to purchase one *sér* of tamarind,

a drink made of tamarinds being prescribed with benefit. Daily one hundred and fifty men died. Finding that the climate was adverse, the Shāh arrived at a fixed decision in his mind to return to Wilāyat. He despatched the princes and 'Imād-ul-mulk and Jangbāz Khān to Farrukhābād; while he wrote to Jahān Khān and Najib Khān that as soon as they had read his letter, and wherever they might be, they must start for his camp. Giving over this letter to 'Imād-ul-mulk, he instructed him, and two days before his own departure started him and his party off for Farrukhābād. The Shāh himself two days afterwards marched from Mathurā, and, taking the route *via* Kābul, made his way to Qandahār.

Let us go on with the story. The Mīr Sāhib went stage by stage with that expedition as far as Akbarābād. Jahān Khān had carried out a general slaughter in that city as far as Nilah-gumbaz; then he invested the fort. Rājah Nāgar Mall and others were shut up in it. They finally agreed to pay Jahān Khān four *lakhs* of rupees, promising to produce the money on the following morning. Three hours after sunrise had passed, when 'Imād-ul-mulk and the others made their entry into Akbarābād. Owing to the general slaughter and the investment, the city was in confusion as if Judgment Day had come. The inhabitants of the city had disappeared.

'Imād-ul-mulk went straight to Jahān Khān and made over to him the Shāh's letter. After reading it he said: "I have a promise to be paid four *lakhs* of rupees to-morrow morning. I stop here to-day and up to midday to-morrow. On receiving the sum named from Nāgar Mall, I will begin my march." 'Imād-ul-mulk retorted: "That is impossible. This is imperial territory. What damage has been done cannot be helped. But now the Shāh is on the march and you have got this order. Relinquish the hope of collecting the rupees, for after the receipt of them there will be delay."

Jahān Khān said: "One *lakh* has been promised for this evening, get that paid over to me. Then what harm is there if I march." Thus 'Imād-ul-mulk sent word to Rājah Nāgar Mall. The latter thought it a lucky escape and sent the *lakh* of rupees to Jahān Khān the same day, and that Khān began his march at the time of evening (*maghrib*) prayer, and went away.

The day after this we made a halt in Akbarābād. The princes and Jangbāz Khān crossed the Jamnah and pitched their camp in a line with Katrah Wazīr Khān.²⁷ Then quitting Akbarābād they moved stage by stage as far as *parganah* Mainpuri. During these marches two or three things happened, the record of which is worthy of being dwelt upon.

From Akbarābād, Najib Khān sent his full brother, Sultān Khān, with four hundred horsemen in attendance on 'Imād-ul-mulk. When the princes, 'Imād-ul-mulk, Jangbāz Khān, and Sultān Khān reached Mainpuri, they consulted and decided to halt there. The Mīr Sāhib was to go on to Farrukhābād, and bring back Ahmad Khān with him. On his arrival, whatever was decided on, could be carried out. The Mīr Sāhib left the author with the tent and baggage at Mainpuri and departed for Farrukhābād. Nawāb Ahmad Khān sent two tents with screens for the princes, and one tent with screens for 'Imād-ul-mulk. They wrote to the author that he was to deliver these tents at their respective destinations and obtain and forward with all speed answers to the letters. The Nawāb himself would join the camp in four days. The author carried out the instructions sent him by the Mīr Sāhib.

On the fourth day, in the morning, a messenger arrived with a letter from the Mīr Sāhib, saying, that on that day at one watch after sunrise the heir-apparent, Mahmūd Khān, would reach the camp in advance, and the Nawāb himself would reach it in the afternoon. I carried off this letter to

²⁷ On the left bank, opposite Rāj Ghāt, between Nawābganj and the river; see Constable's "Hand Atlas," plate 48.

Imād-ul-mulk. When he had looked at it, he said : " Go to Nawāb Yāhyā Khān" (who had also come with us²⁸) " and on my behalf say to him that I am mounting to go out and escort into " camp Ahmad Khān. He, too, should mount." I went, gave my message, and returned.

At this point another messenger came in to say that Nawāb Ahmad Khān must have reached a place five *kos* distant, and his son, Maḥmūd Khān, was in his company. Imād-ul-mulk sent the author to Jangbāz Khān requesting him to mount and come out to act as escort. I went and said the Nawāb Wazīr had sent this message. He jumped up and said : " *Fulān-i-man* has mounted and " is coming to me, what care I, and why should I go out to greet and escort him in." I came back and repeated his words to Imād-ul-mulk. He was putting on his clothes, ready to mount. He sent the author back again, telling me to say that the Mir Sāhib had handed me over to him when he left, and what could he write to the Mir. I then left him. At length the said Khān also mounted. He and Imād-ul-mulk and Yāhyā Khān went out four *kos* to meet the now arrival, and together with him they returned to the camp.

Early next morning Imād-ul-mulk went to the tent of Ghāzanfar Jang Ahmad Khān. The two of them then mounted in one litter, and in another litter was Maḥmūd Khān. In this mode they went to see the princes. When they reached the entrance there was a long stoppage and both *pālkis* were struck by men with their maces of office, so that a great uproar ensued at the entrance and it lasted for some hour and a quarter. Everybody exclaimed that this was a part of the ceremonial of sovereigns, and nobles look on it as a part of their grandeur. In fine, after an audience, robes of honour were conferred on both, that is, father and son, with a sword and horse for Maḥmūd Khān.

In the afternoon Nawāb Sultān Khān came to visit Ghāzanfar Jang. Upon his reaching the entrance he attempted to enter. One Muṣhrif Khān, the chamberlain ('arz-beḡ) of Ghāzanfar Jang, said : " Be pleased, sir, to wait a moment until I have announced you." He went in and reported. The Nawāb remarked : " Say to Sultān Khān that he must wait twenty minutes while I put on my clothes." On hearing these words Sultān Khān was offended, and made off to his own tent.

Ghāzanfar Jang remarked : " What idea had he got into his head ? Is he not aware that he " was once in my service, and to this day the descriptive roll of Najib Khan is preserved in my record-room ? " The words were carried to Sultān Khān, and he ordered his advance tents to be sent out in the direction of Dihlī, as next morning he meant to start for Shāhjahānābād. Imād-ul-mulk interviewed Ahmad Khān that evening, and said whatever the occasion called for, and gave him advice. An outward reconciliation then took place between the two nobles and they had an interview. After that Ghāzanfar Jang went to Sultān Khān's quarters, and one day entertained him at a banquet.

After one week we marched from Mainpuri, and all the chiefs on reaching Farrukhābād pitched their tents on the Ganges bank close to Fathgadh. Two days afterwards news was received that Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, Rohelah, ruler of Añwalah and Bareli, had come to an agreement with the Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah, and they had exchanged turbans. Then Imād-ul-mulk proceeded to Añwalah and prevailed on Sa'dullah Khān, Hāfiẓ Rahmat Khān, Mullā Sardār Khān, Donde Khān, Fath Khān, sāmān, and the other leaders to march for the prince's camp.

At this time news came that Imād-ul-mulk had been made a prisoner by the Rohelahs of Kātehr. It so chanced that on the same day Imād-ul-mulk reached Farrukhābād in safety. The same day at noon another report reached us that the Marhattah army had arrived within two marches of us, and on that night or next morning would be at Farrukhābād. Ghāzanfar Jang brought away from Farrukhābād all the inhabitants, and conveyed them to our camp on the bank of the river. So complete was the evacuation that there was not a soul left in the city.

²⁸ The eldest son of Khān Bahādur, Zakariyā Khān, a former governor of Lāhor ; his mother and Imād-ul-mulk's mother were sisters, daughters of I'timād-ud-daulah, Qamar-ud-din Khān, the Wazīr who was killed in 1746.

At the end of five days Sa'dullah Khān, with the chiefs named above, arrived on the further bank of the river and encamped there. They were written to and asked to cross over the Ganges and join our force. This they did, and the whole army was united near *parganahs* Mīrābād and Jalālābād.²⁰ The tent of Sa'dullah Khān himself was pitched three miles (one *farsakh*) from us.

Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah began a march out of his own territory and arrived at *parganah* Sāndī and there halted. Between the two armies there was a distance of nine *kos*. When a week had passed, he (Shujā'-ud-daulah) sent his wife's brother, Nawāb Sālār Jang, to Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, with a message that if at this time he would espouse his cause in this great and difficult business, it would be the height of favour.

Then Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah one day left his camp and drew up outside of it, and gave an order that commanders should report the mustering of their troops. On that day the regiment Mim Bāshī of Sādiq Beg, Mughal, was ordered to parade for inspection. Sardār Khān, the leader of five thousand Mughals, attended, but of his whole command only twenty-five horsemen put in an appearance at the muster. All the rest out of fear of the Afghāns — they having of aforetime received a terrible handling from Ahmad Khān — had fled with their families from Lakhnau, and Baiglah, [*i. e.*, Faizābād], some going to Benares, some to 'Azīmābād, some to Allahābād and other towns. No man of the Mughal race was left. From that day the said Nawāb discharged all of the Mughals. He was in a high degree anxious and perplexed.

The only course open to him seemed that Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān should, in whatever way was possible, put an end to the war and invasion. Nawāb Sālār Jang remained several days at Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān's tent, while some settlement of the dispute was being arrived at. One day there was a general report in Shujā'-ud-daulah's army that Sālār Jang had been made a prisoner. At that time great consternation arose, especially among the men from Shāhījāhānābād, and the whole group of Begams was in a great state of mind. Next day they learnt that it was all a mistake.

To continue the story. With Ahmad Khān were about fifty thousand horse, old troops and recruits, as entered in the lists. The Rohelah force was even larger. Every day the princes' audience was attended by all the leaders, including Jangbāz Khān, Hāfiẓ Rahmat Khān, Mullā Sardār Khān, Bakhshī, and Nawāb Ahmad Khān. They remained until noon and held consultations; but Sa'dullah Khān would not agree to appear.

In the end 'Imad-ul-mulk said that Sa'dullah Khān must come to the princes' audience. That Nawāb paid no attention to this. Still, one day he came and was honoured by presentation to the two princes. A title was conferred upon him, *viz.*, Shams-ud-daulah, Mubāriz-ul-mulk, with the grant of robes of honour and a sword. The other chiefs admitted that they were willing to obey the orders of the emperor and of the Shah; in whatever direction the princes might advance, they were ready to follow in their train and take part in the contest and battle-fray. Accordingly these assertions they supported by an oath. Sardār Khān, Bakhshī, Hāfiẓ Rahmat Khān, and Dondē Khān, went off to see Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān and informed him. He said: "You may fight, I do not forbid you; but not in the very slightest will I become ally or supporter of any man on either side."

They said he ought to remain with the army until the province of Bengal was recovered; no such opportunity would ever fall to their lot again. The said Nawāb, however, refused absolutely, and repeated his former answer. Then one day a report came to Jangbāz Khān that horsemen from the army of Shujā'-ud-daulah had driven off his camels while grazing. It was noon-time. As soon as he heard this, the said Khān lept from his place like a coal from a flaming fire and instantly went to see the princes, flung his turban on the ground and said: "At once I ride out to fight;

²⁰ These are to the north of the Ganges, on the Audh border.

"with you I have no concern." The prince took his own turban and placed it on Jangbāz Khān's head and said a few words. Jangbāz Khān came out and rode off, followed by his troops. The rest of the divisions, one after the other, mounted and took the field.

When they had come out two *kos* from the camp, a fierce storm arose, a cloud of yellow dust rose so high into the air that neither sky nor earth was visible. An hour and a half afterwards heavy rain came on, which lasted one and a half to one and three-quarter hours. All this wind and rain blew in their faces. So violent was the torrent of rain that the small streams could only be crossed by swimming. Jangbāz Khān halted where he was, in the expectation that when the wind lulled and the rain abated they would be able to move again, and begin the fight.

The wind and rain were so severe that all the tents in the army were blown over, the horses, pulling up their tethering pegs, dispersed in all directions, and the men were involved in difficulties and discomfort. The disturbance continued for full three hours, and the wind remained as high as ever and the rain as heavy.

Seeing no help for it, Jangbāz Khān ordered a return march from that place at three-quarters of an hour or one hour before sunset, and re-entered his camp. He remarked: "O friends! it seems as if we were acting against God's good pleasure. I am convinced now that for a further space of time the stay in this region of the Marhatāhs and others, our enemies, has been decreed."

After two days he sent a message to the princes through Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān that Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah had agreed to pay five *lakhs* of rupees to the Shāh's army as a tribute. As Jangbāz Khān had heard that the Shāh had started for his own kingdom, he had accepted this proposal. Next morning a *lakh* of rupees arrived in cash; and a cessation of hostilities was arranged. Nawāb Ahmad Khān lost heart, and was displeased; taking with him the princes and 'Imād-ul-mulk he returned to Farrukhābād.

Two days previously the author had started with a note from princes Hidāyat Baksh and Wālā Jah Bahādur, in consultation with Nawāb Saif-ud-daulah, who to some extent had become estranged from 'Imād-ul-mulk; and Nawāb Ahmad Khān had made several speeches to the Mīr Sāhib, through which his displeasure betrayed itself. Thus he, too, (the Mīr Sāhib) was a sharer in this consultation. He sent the author with the said note to see Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah.

This was the substance of the note. If a force were sent to a distance of two or three *kos* from us, we will leave this camp on the pretext of a hunting expedition, and come to join that force and then come on to you. You must also send twelve thousand rupees in cash.

When I (the author) got to Shujā'-ud-daulah's camp, I obtained an interview through Āghā Mirzā Muhammad Sādiq and Mīr Ghulām Rasūl (*alias* Mīr Manjhle), grandson of Nawāb Sipāhdūr Khān, deceased, whose grove is at Allahābād.³⁰ Shujā'-ud-daulah said: "To-morrow I shall be employed in getting together the *lakh* of rupees that I have agreed to pay. The day after that I will give you an answer and send you back with Mīr Ghulām Rasūl Khān." After this I went to visit Shekh Sāhib Shekh Allahāyār³¹ and Sayyid Nūr-ul-hasan Khān,³¹ both being then in the service of Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah and commanders of cavalry regiments. With them I spent the day.

On that same date Nawāb Ghāzanfar Jang Ahmad Khān and 'Imād-ul-mulk, taking the two princes, recrossed the Ganges and returned to Farrukhābād. The Mīr Sāhib (Sher Andaz Khān)

³⁰ This man was the son of Khān Jahān, Kokaltash, 'Alamgir's foster brother. He was governor of Allahābād towards the end of 'Alamgir's reign, and died in 1130 H. (1718). The name of the grove has been now corrupted into "Bagh Subahdār."

³¹ Both natives of Bilgrām. The former, H. M. Elliot's "accurate Murtaqā Hussain," is the author of the valuable *Hadiqat-ul-aqālīm*, also written at the instigation of Captain Jonathan Scott. Nūr-ul-hasan Khān finally moved his home to Pañnah 'Aqimābād and died there.

also went back to Farrukhābād. The next morning, when I reached the site of the camp, I found nobody but Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān there; thus I stopped in his camp along with Mir Ghulām Rasūl Khān. As the zamindārs were out on the roads plundering, it was impossible to proceed to Farrukhābād. It was with the greatest difficulty that I got a note sent there for the Mir Sāhib.

His answer was that I must stop where I was and begin a negotiation to get him (Sher Andāz Khān) into Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān's employment. I (the author) obtained an interview with the Nawāb through Mir Ghulām Rasūl Khān. The Nawāb said: "From this day I take you into my service, and as soon as I reach Añwalah, I will send a *parwānah* summoning Mir Sher Andāz Khān."

That same day Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān ordered his army to march in the direction of Añwalah, while he himself, unattended, went into *parganah* Pāli to meet Shujā'-ud-daulah. After they had passed a night in the same place, Sa'dullah Khān returned to Añwalah. When he had arrived he sent a *parwānah*, inviting the Mir Sāhib to come with one hundred horsemen. The letter was made over to one Shāham Khān, whose home was at Mau,³² with orders to forward it by the hand of his own servant to Mir Sher Andāz Khān.

Ten days afterwards the said Khān's brother sent back the letter unopened and wrote that Mir Andāz Khān had been appointed *jaujilār* of the *parganahs* near Anūpshahr, which had been granted by the Abdāli Shāh to Nawāb Alīmad Khān. He had received robes of honour and had departed for his charge. The two princes and 'Imād-ul-mulk had started for Shāhjahānābād. Jangbāz Khān had remained on at Farrukhābād, awaiting the money payment promised by Shujā'-ud-daulah.³³

The author took the returned letter to Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, or, rather, after I had opened and read it, I made it over to him. The Nawāb signed an order fixing the author's pay at forty rupees a month, and appointed me one of the gentlemen troopers (*yakkah*). Jangbāz Khān wrote from Farrukhābād for the money agreed on, as to which the Nawāb (Sa'dullah Khān) had made himself responsible. Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah paid one *lakh* of rupees, and in regard to the remaining four *lakhs* he made a promise to pay in fifteen days, and went back to Lakhnau.

When one month had passed and the money had not arrived, Jangbāz Khān came to Añwalah in person and demanded payment. Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān said that Rājah Mān Rāo, his *dīwān*, was at Bareli; when he came back a correspondence would be opened with Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah, and in a week the money should be handed over to him (Jangbāz Khān). A week went by, but the *dīwān*, from several causes, was still detained in Bareli and had not returned to Añwalah.

Jangbāz Khān crossed the Rāmgangā river which flows between Añwalah and Bareli, and went as far as Bareli, where he surrounded the house of the said *dīwān*, and there was a great disturbance. That very day he obtained the four *lakhs* in cash from the *dīwān*, and then made a start for his own country. Thus the sum fell to be paid by Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, and not a copper of it was recovered from Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah.

The author for twelve years remained in the service of Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān. Upon his death³⁴ (May God give him rest and admit him to Paradise), I was two years in the employ of Nawāb 'Abdullah Khān, the former Nawāb's brother and holder of *parganahs* Sahswān³⁵ and Ujhāyānī, *et cetera*. Having taken a few months' leave and gone home, I heard there that Nawāb 'Abdullah Khān, while engaged in playing with a large snake, was bitten by it and expired. I therefore decided not to return.³⁶

³² Mau Rashidābād to the west of Farrukhābād.

³³ The "Ser Mutāqherin," III. 148, says 'Imād-ul-mulk had reached Farrukhābād on the 7th Shawwāl, 1170 H. (24th June 1757).

³⁴ Sa'dullah Khān died on the 5th Sha'bān 1176 H. (18th February 1763), aged 27 years—*Tarikh-i-Muhammad*. Thus the period of service under him could not have exceeded six years.

³⁵ Both now in the Budāun district, United Provinces.

³⁶ 'Abdullah Khān died on the 7th Safar 1180 H. (14th July 1766)—*Tarikh-i-Muhammad*.

Nawāb 'Abdullah Khān was an able poet; his pen-name was 'Āṣī. He was also a capable musician and painter; and he knew a lot of secrets about snakes, and spent much time in playing with them. At length his fate came from a snake's poison and by God's decree he passed from this transitory world. May God give him rest.

Couplet.

Dunyā, st dār-i-be-baqā, 'uqbā, st mashrūt-i-fanā "The world is a passing show, eternity conditioned by decay :
Bas khüb shud kiz yād-i-mā in ham guash, ān "Enough that in memory of me this and that happened."

[The End.]

Additional Notes.

The chronology of this invasion may be here farther elucidated from the *Tārikh-i-Ahmad Shāh*, B. M. Oriental MS., No. 196, ff., 62^b. to 98^b., and *Tārikh-i-Ālamgir Sānt*, B. M. Oriental MS., No. 1749, ff., 84^b—128^b.

Ahmad Shāh sent out his tents from Qandahār on the 22nd Sha'bān 1169 H. (21st May 1756) and marched on the 27th (26th May). About three weeks later Īraj Khān arrived as an envoy from India. Kābul was reached on the 9th Shawwāl (6th July 1756). About the end of August, Qalandar Khān was sent to India with Īraj Khān. On the 22nd Zu'l Hijjah (16th September) the march from Kābul began ; the camp was at Jalālābād on the 8th Muḥarram 1170 H. (3rd October 1756), and his advance troops entered Lāhor on the 4th October. The Shāh reached Peshawar early in Safar 1170 H. (end of October). Qalandar Khān received his first audience at Dihlī on the 6th Safar (30th October 1756). The march from Peshawar was resumed on the 22nd Safar (15th November). On the 27th Rabī' I (19th December 1756) Āghā Rizā Khān was sent by the Indian Emperor to Ahmad Shāh. Some time in Rabī' II. (23rd December 1756 to 20th January 1757) Ahmad Shāh moved from Sonpat to Narelah. On the 4th (26th December), after a consultation, the emperor's tents were sent out to Kaṭrah Mahaldār Khān (close to Bādli), and Ya'qūb 'Alī Khān, Afgān, undertook to obtain a favorable settlement from the Durrānī. On the 28th (19th January 1757) 'Imād-ul-mulk appeared in the Shāh's camp at Narelah. Ahmad Shāh entered the Fort at Dihlī, sat on the throne, and coined money, 8th Jamādā I. (28th January 1757). Khān Khānān (Intizām-ud-daulah) had been made Wazir on the 26th January ; and the marriage of 'Imād-ul-mulk to Mu'in-ut-mulk's (Mannū's) daughter took place on the 20th of February.

Ahmad Shāh marched eastwards on the 21st February and Jahān Khān carried out the slaughter at Mathurā on the 28th February 1757. The two princes, who had been sent for, left Dihlī on the 14th and reached the Shāh's camp on the 18th March. The Shāh's return march began on the 27th March ; he reached Faridābād on the 29th, and on the 2nd April moved to a place between Bādli and Narelah. From that point his movements do not concern us.

* The dates of the ineffective campaign against Shujā'-ud-daulah may also be given. On the 3rd April 1757 the princes were at Mainpurī, and Ahmad Khān, Bangash, joined them. They moved on to the Ganges on the 4th and Hidāyat Baksh proceeded to Itāwah, while Mirzā Bābā remained at Qādirganj till the 19th. When Shujā'-ud-daulah came out, the prince retreated to Farrukhābād. The princes recrossed the Ganges on the 30th May and Sūlār Jang arrived from Shujā'-ud-daulah on the 10th June. Terms were arranged, and on the 24th June the princes crossed back and returned to Farrukhābād. They moved on to Dihlī and 'Imād-ul-mulk followed with Ahmad Khān, Bangash. They were at Kol ('Aligarh) on the 14th July, and four days from Dihlī on the 23rd. 'Imād-ul-mulk on the 13th September 1757 introduced Ahmad Khān at Court, he having been newly appointed Amir-ul-umarā (*vice* Najib Khān).

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION, SIALKOT.

(Continued from p. 31.)

3. The Creation.

*Awwal Maulé sâjiyâ sab thiñ pâni
 Pâni uttân tôriyâ, phir sab bayân.
 Allah Maulé sâjiyâ lau, kalam, samîn tê
 ñamân.
 Chând tê suraj sâjiyâ târîdân nâl bhariyâ
 ñamân.
 Baré baré hó gayé né âqlân dé parikhân
 Târîc gîne nu jângé, kûrd hai jahân.
 Chôlé sifdân jôridân sab khôl bayân.
 Rôz qiyamat nûn suraj akhîn kâdihégâ sôldâh,
 Kals tê chandôe diân tadân Shâhîdân nûn lôrđâh
 Ottâhâ Bâlî pir karégâ Shâhîdân diân gaurâh
 Sdyâ hôwégâ chandôe da, baddal diân lôrđâh
 Dûl suhô khâdî mômînô, phir sat jugwâlî,
 Khwâja Kâlak Dâs hó khuré niyâlî.
 Eh paun vaggégâ jâlim, dâyâ chând Shâh dégâ
 dikhdâlî.
 Allah rasôi jiêun lèi bah iksé thâlî
 Jag sapûran hó gayâ, Kâlak Dâs di vârî,
 Chôlé sifdân jôridân kâr barî tiyârî.
 Ottâhâ Bâlî dhâhiyâ Rabb nûn, mérâ man sawâlî*

*Allah dâ nâm karégi méri kâlî sâl
 Tussân jag dâ vich dâudâ, têndâ dîddâr,
 Tain jag sapûran hôwégâ, dargâh-i-darbâr
 Allah ôthâ Jhaumprâ nâl, kitâ takrâr,
 Têrî Shâhî jag karngé vâr âlhô vâr,
 Allah dassé khôlké sârê narwâr.
 Thâd rakhiâ pôchâk phullân dé hâr
 Chhândâ sâddâ rakhiâ awwal vichkâr,
 Dilân ghundiâ khôlaingé tâd délîngé diddâr
 Tâd jag sapûran hôwégâ, dargâh darbâr
 Chôlé sifdân jôridân, pañh nâm chatrâ.
 Jhaumprâ aggé Rabb dâ arj gujârâ
 Jag sapûran na hôwégâ vâr âlhô vâr,
 Maiñ nûn ôthâ ghat dâ jitthâ dônakh dâ avârî,
 Shâhî méré rakhiâ, jô chand sitdrâ.
 Allah âkhâd Bâlî, têrî pâk kamdi
 Apê kalam pakar lâ, kûgar tê siyâlî,
 Chaudhân tabak baikhshâ lâ sârî lôkâlî,*

First God created water everywhere.
 From this beginning all the story then
 He gave of the creation. God the Lord
 Made tablets, pens, the earth, the heaven.
 He made

The sun, the moon, and filled the sky with stars.
 Full many wise men lived and died, but none
 Could count the stars. The world is vain.

All this

Disciples have in full recorded. Lo,
 Upon the Resurrection Day the sun
 Will ope his sixteen eyes; the canopy
 With golden poles will shade the Shâhîs then.
 Great priestly Bâlâ then will help the Shâhs.
 The shadow of the flag will refuge be
 Like shadow of a cloud. Believers, hear,
 The true-age prayer, when Kâlak Dâs will
 stand

With Khwâja. Both will be our helpers. Then
 Tempestuous storm of wind will sweep the
 earth.

The Shâh will come, in form a second moon,
 And God will sit and eat with him. What time
 The offering was made by Kâlak Dâs
 It was accepted. Hymns disciples sing,
 So carefully preparing. Bâlâ spoke
 To God, and said, 'My supplication hear.
 My kindred black thy name adore ; do thou
 For ever in the sacrifice preside.

Appear to us, and prove our sacrifice
 Acceptable to thee within thy court.'

A promise true God made to Jhaumprâ. 'See,
 Thy Shâhîs all must sacrifice — the day,
 The eighth, a sacred day must be.' And so
 God gave him knowledge of the mystery,
 Command to keep the altar swept, and see
 That garlands of sweet flowers encircle it.
 'The sacrificial portion due to me

The inmost be — it is the first and best.
 If they their hearts unlock I will appear
 And will accept their sacrifice.' Now read
 And ponder well the record of His praise.
 So Jhaumprâ made petition to his Lord.
 'To sacrifice on every eighth is hard;
 For me impossible ; like moon and stars

Téri gal nahin phérni jō kar lēi sli.
Bálē pír pakar lēi, kágaz té kánī,

Varhē dī jag karogé ik muddlímī,
Bálē pír ummat bákhshd lēi kam hóyā dslmī
Chéle sifidn jórídān, var Durgā Bhówáni.
Ohi ik sach paun dhanī.
Awāl sifid Khuld dī chéld bandé,
Mān té piid nán sévién jain sansár vikhadé.
Dívī mātā sévién, jain shabd sikhdé.
Pir, paikambar, auliyé, Rabb āp bandé¹
Bhinné dáné bijwéi jaun khét jamdē,
Jihyd láwé ajmatdā sohī óh pír krhdé
Aggē pahré sach dē, kuchh hó gayé nē hó,
Sach duniyd thiñ tur gayd, jhūth payd jör,
Lálach lagd sach nún, Rabb bañdyd chór
Jhūthé painch hí manniyé, phirén baré lób.
Is pahré dē ddmī hó baré atatt,
Órak sifat suhánni kíl léní nahin rakh
Sidqdnwádlé suhángé bási lgdn nahin pak,
Jinhdn suhiyá sidq nál, bihishtin vayn beshaqq

Auganhdá chéla hóyā Langar Sháh dé váré.
Óh sannhán bahut mrdán jhuggé bahut ujdré,
Órak qhatphd ánké sháhdn duáre
Jitnē aib sawdb sdn bákhshd léyé sdre
Ós nínhdn ihuridn nám dídn dhar sútar cháré
Chéle úpar nínhdn dē chað kók usdré
Nám buhiyá itnd jón ambar táré
Barakat Bálē pír dí kók hankár na mdré
Chéle sifit bañdndi kí kilit tadbir.
Aggē Bálē pír dē hóyā dd mangir
Duniyád tóh bé hirs hdn nahin jag na sér
Aqibat rélé baurnd tucn sachchd pér
Sifat shurú karn dí man karé bichár
Sab haqiqat pír dí suñdwán zdhír
Báld pír áyd duniyád té das autár
Chéle ddnishwánd bí hók lach hazár
Unhdn nám bañdyd itnd kók bishumár
Órak nahin dyd nám dí sab challé níhár

Preserve my Sháhís, even if thou must
For ransom me cast into hell.' God said,
'O Bálá, thou deservest well: take pen,
And ink and paper, for I grant thy prayer.
Throughout the world thy followers shall be
saved.'

So priestly Bálá took a reed and wrote,
'We make a yearly sacrifice,' and thus
Great Bálá had his followers' sins forgiven.
'Twas easy. His disciples sang his praise,
Bhówáni aiding, goddess eloquent.
The Lord of wind and sky alone is true.
The first of God's commands disciples sing.
To father and to mother honour give,
Who showed the world to ns: the goddess too
Who taught us truth. The priests and
prophets all
Were made by God. If perfect seeds are sown
Straight barley grows from out the earth,
and so,
When fruits are good the priest is proved
a true
And perfect priest. The former ages all
Were times of truth, but truth has left the
world:
Untruth prevails: Desire attacked the truth
With onslaught fierce. God made this thief
desire.
False teachers are received, and proudly walk
Amid an evil age, where wicked men
Do wickedly. All this I must reveal.
The true will hear, the false reject, but those
That hear with faith at last will enter heaven.
A sinful man am I, disciple born.
Within the time of Langar Sháh. 'Twas he
Broke into many a house, and many a hut
He burned. At last he came, repentant he,
To seek the gates of Bálá's shrine, where he
Had all his sins forgiven. The name of God
He made foundation sure, and, as with plumb
And compass, straight he built a hiding place,
The base firm resting on the name of God,
The top far reaching to the stars of heaven.
The blessing Bálá gave accomplished this.
There is no room for boast. To write a song
Assayed the priest's disciple. Thus he caught
The hem of Bálá's garment as he prayed,
And said, 'O thou true priest, the world is
vain,
No sacrifice have I, no merit, none:
Be thou my helper in the end. How shall

Saddi jāndi tiyārīn mān karē vichār
Hukam Bālē pīr dā haddhān nāmōn qahār

Sidqānāwālē suhāngē hōr lōk gawār
Jinhān suhiyāl sidaq nāl īh payē ardhōn pār

I praise thee in a song ? My heart would sing
My theme shall be the virtues of the priest.
Ten times did Bālā come a priest indeed
Into this world—ten millions had he wise
Disciples—men that thought upon the Name,
But never yet could measure it. They left
The world and went in wonderment. I too
Will leave it, and my heart exclaims.' The
priest.

Great Bālā thus commands, 'Adorers of
The Name escape God's wrath : the righteous
hears,
The rest are ignorant. But those that hear,
And trust, shall be set free from fear of pain.

4. Story of Dhagāna.

Andar Narwarkot dé Shāh pīr Dhagānā
Öhdd bāy³² pārd hōyā dī réhēd aniyānā
Chhē mahiné guzar gayē pīr muridi jānā
Varyād Dillī dākkē kar sūhd bānā.
Aggē Chuhṛā nambardār sī ohadd nām Sadhānā.
Os palang dāhyā vīr dā sirē tē rakh sirhānā.
Turt ba turti pīr dā chād kītā khānā
Pir vēkh palang tī (vēkh karm rabbāna)
Vaqār pēi sarkār dī kātwāl bhujāyā.
Thattī varō dākkā nambardār buldāyā
Chuhṛē subbhō chō dē bālshāh furmāyā
Āi asaddā jānā nahin ghar pīr ē dyā
Ih dāhād kād nāng hai bālshāh azmāyā
Is dé bīp Akbar Shāh dā manjā gagan
bhondāyā
Isā Nānī diān kālīn bakhshān sōhnā thān
bañwāyā.
Nālē chāli manjedā dā hālā bakhshāyā.
Sawā pahr din charhiyā manjā dhart lakāyā
Ih bi kād nāng hai usē pīr dā jāyā

Asaddā ghar sakhdādā mī dī pīr ē dyā
Chelē siśdi jōriān, parh nām sunāyā,
Kāl wāl utthān pallēyā Chuhṛē nahin jānā.
Wazīr amir puakhādē tū kyān nahin dādē
Dachhan Khair Din nā kitthē tur gayā wāndē

In Narwarkot there lived a great high priest,
Dhagāna. When his father died he was
A child, but, six months passed, the time
drew near

When his followers must be visited. He came
To Dehli clad in red. The lambardār
A Chuhṛā was, his name Sadhānā, he
A bed prepared all for his priest, and placed
A pillow on it. Then in haste he cooked
His food for him. The priest regards the bed.
How wondrous are God's works. A messen-

ger

In haste came running to the Chuhṛas' homes,
And to the headman orders gave to send
The Chuhṛas all—the king commanded. 'But'
He said, 'we cannot go to-day—our priest
Has come—beware, he is as dangerous
As any serpent. All this knows the king:
He tried him once, for this child's father sent
King Akbar's cot straight to the sky, for
which,

He gifted him the fertile village lands
Of Isā Nand, a golden temple too,
And freed him forty villages from tax.
That priest all in the morning caused the bed.
Suspended in the sky to seek the earth.
This young priest too a cobra is, the son,
Of him we spake of. This we longed for, Sir,
He visits us.' This song all in his praise
His true disciple made. The messenger
Brought word, 'The Chuhṛas will not come.'

The king

Ké wéllán té Chuhréan muddhón vair jinnandé
 Chankidár khulóké pakitd ldyd
 Chuhré nahin áundé ghar pír nē dyd,
 Os dé bdp Akbar Shdh dd manja gagan bhu-
 áyd
 Guess khádd Jahángir muñh murká dyá
 Uhó pír pakar léaund na jáná pdyd
 Ohu phdsi dénd léaké. Ihó hukam suñdyd
 Lashkar bddshák dé chd kiti dhád
 Aggé baihd pír si Shdh dch vaqdé
 Bdl aiyánd bai gayd dyd Jag di Khái
 Hrdiyé phéré bddshák désoedn rich slré
 Uhó pír pakar léduné Rabb méré bdp dé sirbh
 mihná utáré
 Chuhra Chhappari Band si nám Mang saldé
 Os pír andar lukdyd, aulál vikhádé
 Báráh baras dí larki ldy pír dí ldt

Vidh mdtl júri val chhadli, kaun hafté
 Chlé siftdn jórídñ, parh nám suñáin.
 Ján kandré naddi dí pír child³³ kamdé,
 Báráh baras guzárké phir rihdé.
 Róza báráh barsdn dd andj na khdé
 Muñh thín Rabb dhéauñ péyä tap kamáé
 Sháh namána nám si tulón vár phir akhdé
 Pir karé tapassiyl chlé dkh sundé
 Mál Nür Diráni ódar uñh jangal jde
 Jangal suttd pír si. Jd khalí pôwándi
 Oh dñ mde gayd súlké bah kól bulndi
 Tañdñ jhas jágundi muñh thín shirmándi
 Jékar hónld bdl, pírd, maiñ pír khadándi
 Angán disdd sôhnd kyán ñdar jändi
 Par maiñ lar laggi tuddé méri umar vihándi
 Main ghar baihlí twldé bin dammán bñndi
 Pir Dhagdñl uñhké dalil gurđri
 Baré baré balwant né rannán né mdré,
 Káwan Lank luñdyi Sítá dé mdré
 Kahn churdé muníri Guzri pair khildré

Demanded, 'O Khair Din, why brought you
 not
 Them forcibly? Where are the idle folk?'
 Police and Chuhras are old enemies,
 A watchman standing by adds fuel to fire.
 'The Chuhras will not come because their
 priest,
 Whose father sent great Akbar's bed sky high,
 Is come.' So Jahángir was angry. Drops
 Of sweat stood on his brow. 'Go,' cried he,
 'Catch
 This priest, and see he flee not. Bring him
 here,
 And hang him!' So the king's command.
 The king
 His army marched against him, but he found
 No force opposing, for the priest there sat,
 Transformed into an infant who was brought
 To Jagdi Khái, while every province round
 Was taught to seek and him identify.
 The king commands that he in chains be
 brought,
 If haply from his father's name God wipe
 The old disgrace away. A Chhappari-band,
 A Chuhra, Mang by name, concealed the
 priest.
 He hid him in his house and showed, instead,
 His children. Then in marriage to the priest
 He gave his daughter, girl of summers twelve.
 'Twas Vidh, the mother, that united them,
 And none may separate the pair. Now far
 The praises publish* that the true disciple
 sang.
 The priest upon the river bank engaged
 In contemplation. Twelve long years he passed,
 Twelve years of fasting, solid food he'd none.
 He worshipped God, and lived an anchorite.
 Then God alone he knew, and so he came
 To be a worthy priest. Alone he lived,
 Until his own disciples came to say
 His wife, his Nur Diváni, missed him much,
 And grieved for him. She ran towards the
 wild,
 Even where her priest was sleeping. There
 she stood
 And bowed beside his feet. His flesh was
 dried
 Upon his bones. She called him, standing near
 She clasped his feet to wake him modestly:

* Period of abstraction and meditation.

Rdjā Bhij ghōrā bāñ gryā, rāni chōbuk mārē,
 Aivēn jadd pāikambardān lāy mōe vichārē
 Nām lēo ummat dd sab ranndān nē mārē
 Jahāngir Chugatta bādshāh, Dillī dé lārē
 Uhnū gāh gāyī dāmī, assān kāuī vichārē
 Pir Dhagāndū uṭhākē aīn nād vāhyā
 Arsha, aixim kambiyā, bhuchāl sī dyā.
 Haibat dhartī Dhaul nānā dāchān lālī dyā
 Khabar hūi dargāh vich, Rabb vēhi puchāyā
 Hukum zōrvārdān dd vēhi bhāuānā dyā
 Puchāyād akē pīr nū, Tussānā ki farmāyā?
 Māin dīvā dhariyād akē vich tēl bī pāyā
 Battī dé chhad bālikē sach bar Khuddāyā
 Dé nār apnē nār thiān na rahān trēhāyā
 Maiā mayjād Bālā pīr hān maiā ih jarmāyā,
 Lé sanēhē pīr dé vēhi mur jdnād
 Jitnā hāl hawāl sī sab akh suhāndā,
 Oh mauj dd Bālā pīr hai, tān rāzī honādā.
 Jhōj piyārē nār dd Rabb dast phurāndā
 Dēn dōdān nū vandikē ikkō jēhā chhāndā

Ih bī dāvin daskē Shih Bālā Ahndā
 Mat kōi shēlā is di ohā gal bhōwāndā
 Ih bayā zōrvāwar pīr hai mat azmat lāhāndā.
 Sārē dāvin daskē ihāl aīnāndā
 Ihād adab karnd kōi nāl dhiyān
 Thā chhdā surā hō sād, nahān ant bayān.
 Ih chhattī jug jal bimb rīch kitā ashāndā.
 Par siyādā andar rakhiyā khud nāl dhiyān

She said, 'My priest, had you been still a child,
 I would have fondled you as once I did.
 At me! had my dear home resounded sweet
 With children's voices, then I had not thus
 Been here. You wed me but my youth, alas,
 Is passing swift away. Oh let me stay,
 And serve you like a slave.' Dhagānā rose,
 And mused, 'A many valiant men have been
 Undone by women. Rāwan lost Ceylon
 For Sītā. Gujri fascinated Kahn
 What time he stole the ring, and Ranja Bhoj
 A horse became; his wife applied the whip.
 And thus the sons of prophets fought and
 died.
 They said they died for men — for women
 'twas
 They died. Great Jahāngir Chagatta, once
 The king of Dillī, gay bridegroom became,
 And lost his honour to a dancing girl.
 What will become of me?' Dhagānā cried.
 He rose, he shouted, till the heavens shook.
 The earth did quake; the white ox Dhaul for
 fear
 Did tremble, and the light of day grew red
 Like blood. The voice straight penetrates
 Heaven's court.
 Forthwith God sends His angel Gabriel.
 A message brings he from the Lord; he comes
 So speedily all to the priest and asks,
 'What seekest thou?' The priest replied,
 'A lamp
 Have I prepared, and placed within it oil,
 And eke a wick: light thou the wick. True
 God
 Who art. Light from thine own light give
 to me,
 Quench thou my thirst, for Bālā priest am I,
 A wanderer free. My one request vouchsafe.'
 So Gabriel, back bearing his request
 Presented it, with explanation, 'Lo,
 'Tis Bālā, wandering priest, that makes request,
 And will not be content till it be given
 A cup of sparkling light.' God gave it free,
 And placed it in the angel's hands. He said,
 'Give them, the husband and the wife, give
 both
 An equal share, and say that Bālā comes
 Into the world again. Let none refuse
 To hear him, for he is a mighty man
 Of God. He may be angry, in his rage

*Aggē gayē duniyā tē nau vēri jawān
 Huin daswān vāri trūk ghar dyā parwān
 Par sadkē ih dé nām tōn hōnd qurbān.
 Vēhi nūr dittā vandkē dassē pīr dé anwān.
 Jēhrē ih dé murid nē, bihishti jān.
 Nahān qadr firshtēdān, ihnū ān buldān.
 Jān aggē Dharm Rādē dé khar jā puchdān.
 Shāh Bālē dé murid nān na pawē dhruwān
 Jitnē aib savdāb nē sab bakhshē jān
 Jā Shāh Bālē dé murid haiān, nālē nek nigdān
 Khullé durwajjē rāyqād, hō bēpariād.
 Massalli jēhrē bān gayē unhdān dī kōi nahān jā*

*Oh Narakē dākhil hōngā, dāzakh di bhd
 Munkir tī Nakir bī, phir bikhā mangān,
 Nīkan badilān puchhāngi, nālē hadidilān bhaian
 Jā Shāh Bālē dé murid haiān, na puchhān na
 jannān.
 Oh! dālār kārnāt itnē nālē pakhē jhodañ
 Pir pāyālū nūr dā pī ghar val āyā
 Dicā balēd jōt dā ohnū Rabb valhāyā
 Nau mahinē gujar gayē pīr kukhē āyā
 Āyā rāt sōhāg dī mān shajan manāi
 Arshān thān firshtē ziyārat nān dē
 Dirvān dē bālkī shamālān jaýāi
 Hārān pariān baithkē sab mangal gāi
 Ziyārat kariō pīr di Rabb pārī jālē
 Rāt sanichar vār di pīr Bālā jammāi
 Bañlā dicē māt hōe vīt dāi bhonnāi.
 Gurhītī dāhī nūr dī vich sōnē chhannāi.
 Pohilā darshan mān kitā jis pāyāl thañiñ.
 Pir daswān autār jē suñiō akhīn tī kannāi.
 Nāriñ sadi gujar gayē aggē daswān punnāi
 Pir pandit dākhle, Pir bhōrē pādāi.*

He may dishonour some. Go, Gabriel, go,
 Declare to them the signs, and see that they
 Give him due honour. He is great, so great,
 His greatness none will measure. On the deep
 He floated six and thirty ages; then
 He gave oblations; in the shell I kept
 And shielded him from harm. Nine times
 before

He has incarnate been, now in thy house
 A tenth time he will come. Let all regard,
 And sacrifice themselves to him.' An equal
 share

The angel gave them, and the signs he showed
 'Who follow him will go to heaven at last,
 The angels dare not summon them, nor dare
 To bring them to the presence of the king
 That rules in Hell. No force unlawful will
 Compel the followers of Bālā Shah.

Their sins will be forgiven who look with faith
 To Bālā Shah. All fearlessly they come
 And enter free the doors of Heaven, but those
 That are Masallis straight will enter Hell,
 Where flames await them. Munkir and Nakir
 Will strict examine them, a record true
 Of deeds, both bad and good, they will demand,
 And then they'll break their bones, but Bala's
 men

Will be nor asked, nor born again. All grace
 Will them be shown, and fans be waved on
 high

To cool them.' Bala drauk the cup of light
 And homewards sped — a lamp with heavenly
 light

Was given him. Nine months passed, a child
 was born.

One happy night the mother omens sought,
 And lo! from heaven high came angels down
 To see the child. Bright lamps were lit, and
 placed

On stands; bright fays and fairies came to sing,
 'Behold the priest, and God be with you all.'
 On Saturday, by night, the priest was born,
 The lamps that burned grew dim, the midwife

ran
 In fear. The child's first draught was one of
 light

All in a golden cup. His mother looked
 And saw him first. She gave him milk and so
 The priest was now the tenth time incarnate.
 Hear ye with eyes and ears, the ninth is passed.,
 The tenth great age begun. The Pandits said,

Bārah varhē is nūn na vā lōdō
Sakht sitāra is dā jē sach puohhdā.
Ih dērtēdn vichchōi bārd̄ hai; na gal vadhdā.

Hujrē Shāh Mugim dē kōi gaddi bhāri.
Pir sāhib dē pātrē saiyid balkāri.
Kisi dūti jākē ôthē chuglē māri.
Tālī Chuhṛeān dē pīr dī kōi bēshamāri.
Sūnkē saiyid pīr nē gaddiñ jōrđiān
Kuhdrē unhdān uṭhā lēyē mōndhē dhar par
nādiān.
Tālī dē hēth dīkē sab nazrdān kardē.
Traē darē bañāngē sōhnē kārigar sāf kardē.
Phull laggahyē takhtiān buhē sōhnē bandē,
Sōhnidān bañidān charukidān, ghar bürdān dhdidān.
Saiyid apō rīch bahskē salāh kātān dī kardē.
Pir Dhagānā jākē mūr arzān kardā
Nālē pir kahndā pēyā, Rabb thiñ dardā
Par chācha jis nūn akhīyē pand̄ chā, nahān
khārdā.
Sayid, zōrāwar nō, Rabb kikar ik kardā
Pir Dhagānā Saiyidān dē nāl na hōyā kāhki

Hōr andar pīr hai is tālīwālā
Tālī hath nahān lauñd, mat karō uchdla.
Saiyid dhonlē, 'Lēd, Khān, tālī dakkān wālā !'
Pir Dhagānā partkē mūr ghar val ayā.
Qusal utlār bhōrē dā ziyārat pā.
Jitnā hāl hawāl sī sabb akh sunāc,
Pir Sahib dē pōtrē tālī vadhan nē dē
Phir khāli us nē nahān jāuñd bājh dēkh dikhā
Tālī bābat kuchh nahān jag mēhnā lde
Bālē nūr bāp nūn phir arz sunāc
Saddē dādhē sahib dī tālī kaun vadhdē
Bakhsh zabdnā rahm kar sir khdk ralde
Jekar sāya sāhibdā tur āpi jāc
Pir Dhagānā akhēcā, 'Tussiñ bāl aniyānē,

'The child must hide twelve years in darkness
drear;
No light must see— his star is powerful. He,
If you the truth would know, among the gods
Is strongest. This keep secret.'

Shāh Mugim²⁴

Had his last resting place where Saiyids brave,
His grandsons, lived. An enemy brought
them word

The Chuhras dared them cut their shisham tree.
The shisham tree the priest of Chuhras loved
Is great. The Saiyid priest, this hearing,
yoked

The oxen to the wagons. Saiyids took
Their axes, shouldered saws, and stood beneath
The shisham tree. Regarding it they said,
'Yes, three good doors the tree will make, the
wright

The boards shall plane; we'll carve them fine
with flowers.

So beautiful they'll be — and lovely chairs
We'll make — our wives will run to own
them.' So

The Saiyids talked with purpose fixed and
firm,

To fell the tree, but Pir Dhagāna came.
He begged them to have patience, not to cut
The tree. A priest he was and spoke them fair
As fearing God. A man may make request
And humbly say 'Friend, help me with my
load.'

The friend thus meekly asked no aid affords.
Just so the Saiyids harsh comply not. What
Will God do now? Dhagāna, priest, was calm.

He to the Saiyids said, 'The Master is
Within; touch not the tree; you'll rue it else.'

The Saiyids angrily cried, 'Who's the man
That will prevent us?' Priest Dhagāna came,
Unlocked the door that led to chambers dark
Beneath the ground, and looking on his son

The rightful priest, the story told him thus:—
'The grandsons of the Muslim priest have dared
To come with purpose ill to fell the tree,
The shisham tree. But learn they must to

feel,
And recognise, our power. The tree itself
Is little worth; the insult offered us
Is great. The world will scoff.' But Bala said

²⁴ Mugim for Mukim : cf. mugat, which is probably for mukat.

*Andar is bhore dé bārah sūl rihānē
Aōn utthān nashé kai dush rihānē.
Nāl dagé dé mārdé Nathān bōj chhaddānē
Bē pacwādān us liān thāpē jānē
Bālē Nārī dkhigd, kyān hāl gāudā.
Main nān apācē dūkh dā khel patā sunādā.*

*Khārē upar chāykhī mainān chā nukhāi
Chhattī sāl di bār lage tēkhē ūhdē lāo.
Jē manjāri Sāhī dī, fātēh sāpar pā.
Faqr namānē ns nān ik gal sunāi.
Hāiā dāna bijādā janān khit jamānā
Jihkar dīrje jākī fātēh upar pāch.
Nāhīn tē qhīrī apān dālē kēl jamānā.
Lekh ian hāp dā pīr kārī tāiyārī.
Phāhā nīzī vāng kāi andarōn kōlē bārī
Andarōn is dāryōn dī pīr lāvē tārī.
Dmīgāl utte jāliyāl, main nān bān gayi bhārī¹
Tidhā pārdī kājī kar mādālyārī.
Kīhā Rabb pīr nān kyān sikh gāzārī,
Takabhar hāth talwār hai nāhīn chalde kārī.
Qahza khāt talwār dā tu bāh kī dhārī.
Snyed dī rasul dī jānjī shīr dī mārī
Chālē sīyādā jāyādā pāxh nān chatārī.
Pīr thārīōn nīlāgā mā lādī rārī
Ohlā mathā Bālē chānd dā jīrān asmānē tārī²
Chānl jīrān āsmān tē jīrān chāmkān mārī*

In answer to his father, 'Who will dare
To cut the *tālli* tree, which is the Lord's.
Forbid me not and I will lay in dust
Their hends; if on me rests God's power,
Behold,
Like chaff they go.' But priest Dhagāna said,
'You're still a child—within this cell you've
lived
For twelve long years: defeat means dire
disgrace,
And if you're killed, a hawk escaped, alas,
Is not more swiftly lost to sight than you.'
'The Lord is all resourceful,' Bāla said,
'Why weep you? Tell me all your grief, and
seat
Me on a basket, bathe me, glorify
The Lord who gave me grace to worship Him
For six and thirty years. If He appears,
My adoration paid, then victory
Undoubtedly will be yours.' The father then,
Like hermit true, made this request. 'Essay
Your power: a grain of corn sow, which sown
Shall in an instant grow if victory
Is ours. If not, then insult and a grave
Beside your fathers will your portion be.'
The boy, his sire assenting, now prepared
To go. Like burning coal he went in wrath.
With speed as of a spear. His heart was
fixed
In prayer all close within God's presence.
'Thou,
O Lord, didst send me to the world; behold,
Thy servant now is troubled. Succour me.'
The Lord addressed the priest, 'Why art thou
sad?
Pride grasps a sword in vain; no wound it
makes:
Grasp then thy sword's hilt, sharpen it and
cut
Clean off the lion's paws, Muhammadi's race.'
These songs are sung, compiled by followers
true.
Oh read and sing God's name. The priest
emerged
From out his dark seclusion. Giving alms
His mother kissed her son — his forehead
high
Was like the moon. It shone as do the stars
That shine in heaven, or like the moon aloft
That beams and glows. The beauty of his
face

¹ *Nār matthā dī ramakdā lēnlā lishkārē
Pīr pōshākān pīr lādān nāhdikē nyār khārē.*

Atar té amir nē uttē kam vichāré
 Pir bhōrēnā niklyā salām mā nān kardā.
 Awwāl sēvān tuhl nān mērd pīr hai kharid.
 Putr jān dēn té mā dā jī nahān kardā.
 Naiñ hōwēn gindhālē, rag kajéjā bharid.
 Bēbi dkhē Shāh nān kivēn ih nu jāl
 Mān putr rāl baithkē chā hējh vadhāe
 Naiñ nir na thiliyā dūkh kulejā khāe
 Pir kāhlā hō pāyā māl fāli wādh lē jāe
 Viālā hōyā pīr jī, mān khair pulsārē.
 Khalqat dī hamlikā, lōg pīnā dé sāri,
 Arzān karn hath bankhē sab dur dī mārē
 Shér té bhagiār dē, launā ugāhi dhārē
 Tāliwālā pīr hai, har kisi nān jāppē
 Chhinj tamashāl vikhāl lōj agayā apē
 Lōg tamashagir nē, kōl jhurdā māppē
 Pir Dhagānā dkhuld Allah karē sujāpē
 Dōvēn ikuṭhē hō paē jut puē ne sāni

Pir ih dkhē, Saiyidā, kōi dē nishāni,
 Tāli vadhānē d gačchā tainā hōi girdāi.
 Aithé hī mar jarēngā hō jānēngā sāni.
 Gussa āyā Saiyid nān, aggān āyā
 Pir nān jhīyakké os kohārā chāyā
 Pir panjā ughariā magar Saiyid dī lāyā
 Jitnā lāhū surir dā sab bāhir dyū
 Zamān té jā pāyā na bōlē bulāyā
 Manjē uttē jākē sir nayrān chāyā
 Khudiwālē nān mārlā Rabb ī ap farmāyā
 Jadōn chēld rāvānnā kar rēhā jadōn vaddhan
 nān si āyā
 Shāh Dhigānā dkhuld pīr lakh hajāri
 Ik miyān nahān moendān huñ dō talwārēn.
 Pēo putr nahān jānētā rāl ikse thālī
 Jān Nishaurā māl bāhā jī lē mund Khiyālī.
 Lēkē jān bāp dā pīr ghōrē chārhiyā
 Majjalān majjalidiyā d Nishaurē variyā
 Aggē choudhri Rām Chend si, jis vāggān té
 phāriyā
 Bah ja jkandā lākē, kihā hariyā bhariyā.

Shot dazzling rays. The priest on basket
 bathed
 Now fully dressed and scented, issued forth.
 He made obeisance to his mother, who
 In reverence said, 'Tis I shall worship thee,
 O priest of all the house.' She grieved and
 wept
 At parting from her son. Her eyes were full
 Of tears, her heart was breaking. 'Husband
 mine;
 Prevent him.' So she spake and sat her down
 Beside her son, and fondly him embraced.
 Her eyes dropped tears, her heart was wrung
 with pain.
 The priest must leave her, for the *tāli* tree
 Was in dire danger; so he went and she
 Cried 'God speed' after him. A crowd of
 friends,
 The village folk, with folded hands, implored
 The priest to stay — they feared for him. 'A
 wolf.'
 They cried, 'or lion who can face?' But he
 Was Tāliwālā priest — his name and fame
 Brought all the country round to watch the
 sport,
 And view the wrestlers, for they love to see
 A worthy match. The parents of the priest
 Were sad. Dhagānā said, 'God succour thee.'
 So face to face they came, an equal match.
 So thought the people. 'Saiyid!' cried the
 priest,
 'Show me a sign — why came you, tyrant,
 here
 To cut the *tāli* tree? Now die you shall,
 And perish quite.' The Saiyid angry grew;
 He cursed the priest in surly tones, and he
 But laid his hand upon the Saiyid's back,
 Worn out there crushed a stream of blood,
 and prone
 The Saiyid fell. They laid him then, bereft
 Of sense and speech upon a bed, and brought
 Him from the arena home. God kills the proud;
 It is his Law. And so it was that day
 That brave disciple faced the Saiyid when
 He came to fell the tree: Dhagānā said,
 'A mighty priest art thou. O never shall
 Two swords one scabbard occupy: we may
 No more as son and father eat one food.
 Naushera by Khiyali is thy home.'
 The priest obedient mounted then his horse,
 And reached by stages sure Naushera. There

Ballā nūrī pīr sī, rahīdd mūnh suohchē.
Chhattre, bukrē, kih lōyē mullān nān na puchchē.

Ram Chand, the Chowdrī, seized his horse's reins,
And cried, ' Dismount ! Unfurl your flag,
and dwell
O blessed man, with us.' Enlightened priest
Was Bala, pure and holy. Food unclean
He ate not, for he killed his own, both sheep
And goats. No Muslim priest he asked.

5. Story of Dana.

Atē Imminābd bi dūr nahīn kōi lammī mukhē,
Örak ḫabarānī hōngidān Dānd vi puchchē,
Rāj si Chugattān Dilli vich phērd
Jahāngir Chugattā Bādshāh niyān karē chan-
gērā.
Dānē nān mūt ākhīd, Usīdāl hai mērā,
Mainān karnā aundā tērā adab bahutērā.
Duniyā té nahīn āuṇd mur dujjā phērd.
Lai lai mānhōn mangkē kōi mulk changīrā.
Dānā qazī dīl vich dalil qazdrā.
Dé chhaddī Imminābdī di bālshāhī sārī¹
Kīlī mērī na murē phir Dillī tārī²
Halāl harām nakhēr sān chaupdyān tērī³
Imminābd likh dittā Jahāngir Shāhzālē
Kitē kam Khulā dé phir nahīn durāḍdī⁴
Shardī kull Panjāb di ras tērē té sāddē⁵
Chugli jehṛd jā karē chuk dēdī durāḍdī⁶
Dānā rāzī hōkē Imminābdī á vardā⁷
Shahr dyād hōmākē lōk nazrān dhardē⁸
Khābar hō gayī Panjāb vich á Dānā rāyād⁹

Naushera town is near by Imminābd, And Dānā heard of Muslim law profaned, Chugattās reigned in Dillī. Jāhāngir, The king, did justice. Dānā was his friend, He said, and teacher. So the king decreed Him honour great, and said, ' I come not hero Again — man lives but once — make thy request, And I will give thee province good.' He thought, And said, this Dānā Qazī, ' Give me all Imminābd, without appeal to theo In Dillī : I will cleanse the land of all Unlawful things.' Great Jahāngir bestowed Imminābd on him. The Lord's great works Are wonderful. Said Dānā, ' Panjāb law Is ours to make or change : who disobeys Shall exiled be.' In gladness entered he Imminābd. All men brought gifts. Through- out

The Panjāb it was noised that Dānā made This entrance to the town. The Brahmans feared.

They knew not what the Lord would do. Whene'er

There was a wedding. Dānā first of all In Imminābd was called, the best of food He chose, and, though no gift he gave, yet he Kept count of others' gifts. None dared complain,

As fearing the Chugattās. Dānā was A king among them. Beggars feared to beg, And strangers ceased to smoke ; fāqīrs indeed Shrunk from him as a man shrinks from a grave.

This song of praise the true disciple made To glorify the name.

Shahrīn Brahman kambdē Rabb kīkar iñ kardā
Jō kōi Inminābd vich viāh rachāē
Pichhōn mēl āundā awāj Dānā jādē
Uhnān khānōn kōi na mōrdd jō khāé sō khādē,
Tambbōl lēndā likh, āp neāndrē na pādē,
Mārē dar chaugattēdā kōi gal na hilāc
Aukhē lōg Dānā thīn kuchh pēsh na jādē
Dānā Imminābd vich rāj si baiṭhā kardā
Dardā Imminābd vich kōi d gadā na kardā,
Kōi musāfīr d varā huggd pīyē nāl dardā
Faqīrān nū dār itnā jō azāb qabr dā
Chēlē siftdā jōriān pēyā nām hī paṛhdā.
Shāh Daulā faqīr sī, hai sī dariyāi
Lagā jāndā Gujrāt nān kar lammī dhāi
Rāh vich Imminābd āe uhnān kaun haṭāē

Variyd shahrē jākē jā sadā buldā
Sakhtī vēkh faqīr dī mil Dānā jādī
‘ Kalmē panj bañā bī, mainān ākh sunātiind.’

Shah Doulāh was

A famons saint who loved the streams. He made

'Main Allah dā nām jāhnān, hōr parhiyā
nahīn.'

Dānā hōyā qahrwān sir bhār chukkā,
Lōkdnā ākh vēkhkē faqir chhuddiyā,
Us mundē magar lālō aggē bhajdyā,
Iṭṭān māran vāvehīn aggē bhannā āyā
Khairāt tān sī chaḍdiyā jē shahrōn bāhar sī āyā.

Bāvā Nānak Gurū sī sab dā sānhjā,
Oh pūrā kārdmāt dā tān gurū sadāndā
Uhnūn Hindū mathā tēkdē oh jit val jāhndā
Sail karé sansār dā duniyā ajmān lā.
Rāh vich Imminābād sī oh var gayā vāndā
Thākur duārē jākē Bābā dērā lāc,
Shahr āyā hamākō lōj nazrān lē āi
Hinlū mathā tēkdē, Sāddā sat gur ē āyā
Khābar hō gayī Dānī nū oh āpē āē
Dānā qāzī baiṭhkē uhnūn gal sunāi,
Jō tainān mathā tēkdē sab jhūṭh lōkāi,
Hinlūn dā tū gurū hain zahiri kalā dikhān
'Main sat Gur dā ām jāhnān, kuchh parhiyā
nahīn.'

Aggē Bābā bōliyā, "Sun, mullā Qāzī,
Pir pākumbar anbyē sab vaḍdē qāzī,
Sāni nahīn kōi Rabb dā sab jhūṭh bāzī.
Faqr Allah dī zāt hai, sun ahmaq qāzī.
Dānā hōyā qahrwān chārh gussā jāi
Bābā andar dékē chā chakkī chohās.
Oh pūrā kārūmāt dā ultē chādar plāi
Jitnā dānā shahr dā hō ātā pījhāi
Azmat pūrī tān gayā phir naskē jāi.
Chelē sifāt jōriān parh nām sunāi."

His way to Gujrāt by stages long
And entering Imminabad he begged an alms,
But all unhappy met with Dānā, who
'To try him asked the Kalmas five.
'I only know,' said the faqir 'the name
Of God. Nought else I know.' Dānā was
wroth.
He laid a load upon the poor man's head,
Despite the people's prayers to let him go.
He set the city boys upon the saint,
Who stoned him from the town.

Then came a saint
Whom all men owned to be a teacher true,
The Gurū Nānak. Hindūs bowed to him,
As here and there he wandered trying the
world.

In Imminābād he stayed : the people brought
Their gifts to him and said, 'Sat Gur has
come.'
But Dānā came to see him, questioning,
'Men honour you without a cause : what sign
Show you that I should honour you who teach
The Hindus?' Nānak said, 'I know but
this,

The name of my Sat Gur. Oh Muslim judge,
All priests and prophets, makers of the law,
Called men of God, are nought 'fore God. A
play

It all is — God alone is the true saint,
Oh foolish Qāzī! Dānā angry grew.
He locked the saint up — made him turn the
mill

To grind their corn. So Nānak spread his
sheet
And ground the corn of all the town without
An effort. Fleeing then the town he showed
His power so. This song of praise was made
By true disciple. Read and glorify
The Name.

Mirāliwālā dā mulvānā bahut kitābān parhdā,
Āe gayē nānchērdā dhigānē sī lardā
Ātā khōkē faqirān dā Dānē kōl kharḍā
Chelā ākhē gāvīēn Rabb kīsar ik kardā.
Jāndā jihṛi gaṛi val, rannān pēyā ḍarāē,
Maulī maihndā dhari sūrmān kōi na pāē,
Rannāi nūn āyā dar itnā kōi phul na handāē
Kōi mard kisi nāl gal karé oh kafarat lagāē
Mullā aise phitīsiyā vaddi chīrā khūē
Chelā aggōn gābōndā sāri gal sunāē,

Mirāliwālā Mulla read
So many books, he met all men in strife
Of argument. He sent the poor saints' alms
To Dānā. Let us see, the Chelā sang
What the Lord does. The mulla's wont was to
Insult the ladies, who left off to use
Their lace and henna, ceased to dye their eyes
And wear their jewels ; even wreaths of flowers
They dared not wear, and, if a man should
hold

Gallān bhdīn kardē Bāvē tē Sodī
 Mullā Mirālwālē dā kōi pokhā hōdī
 Muholān bhdīn kakkiān dērhi si khōdī.

Mullā bēfarmān hai uhdī bhairi vādi,
 Namāz rōra nahin jhāndā chaur ustad bāsā dī.
 Gulli lēndū jumerāt dī ghar ekōi jēnī

Mirālwālēn tur pēyā Gahñā mulvānā
 Aggē garh Nishaurē dā gayā vēkhē jag
 shahāna,
 Vēkh sirishtā pīr dā Gahñā ghabrānā,
 Chattrē bakrē kōh lō saddēh nahin mulvānā.
 Sarbal kōlā hō gayā Gahñā mulvānā,
 Chōla ukhē, Gahñā, ih jag hī shahānā
 Kōl pīr dē dānkē Gahñā karē bayān,
 Chohattre bakrē kōhnāēn karnān tū gyān,
 Sharāwālē mulvānā, tērī kaddh lēngē jān.
 Shamas Tabrēz pīr si rich Multān,
 Sharāwālē mulvānē bī dī ultī khall lahdā
 Oh dā bhāndā kītā adrā nāl dēn na khān.
 Us sūraj tikkā bhuniyā tān māh lagā si pān.
 Itthōn kīkar bacheñā sānnūn das bayān
 Chhatrē bakrē sāqqē apnē shardā hai tuhaddi
 Shardā nahin mangā asin gayē tainū lārn dī
 hai vādi
 Bhājī tainūn nahin ghalliyā vich pā rikābī,

Sānnūn tērī khabar nahin tū kēhē thān dā
 qāzī
 Oh Gujrānwālē na gayā, oh Imminbādē
 dhānā
 Bāh vich rōndā jdondān Gahñā mulvānā
 Aggē majlis Dānā qāzī dī bthē jē kuribād.
 Pag lāhkē piṭṭedī jā Gahñā mulvānā
 Dānā qāzī akhiyā Ihnūn pakar bāhād.
 Jān kīt ihnūn māriyā main nūn puchh sunndā
 Jān ihnūn kuchh lar gayā kī mantar pāb
 Chhil Kaisar dā khauf hai ihnūn andar pāb
 Lōkān uhnu pakariyā Gahñā tad bī tappā

Converse with any maid, a blasphemer
 He straight was judged. The mulla grew
 full rich
 With bribes, and fat — the story I will tell:
 The Bābas and the Sodhis talked about
 The mulla. 'Rogue and rascal he,' said they,
 'Mustaches brown and beard but scanty his.
 He has no principles, his ways are bad.
 The fasts and prayers are nought to him ; he
 would
 Be called a teacher — takes his Thursday bread
 From all the houses.'

Mullā Gahñā, marched
 To Gārh Naushera : there he saw the rites
 That Chūhrās practised in the sacrifice.
 Their priest killed rams and goats himself,
 nor once
 Called in a Muslim priest. And seeing this
 Gahñā grew angry like a glowing coal.
 'Oh Gahñā,' the disciple said, 'observe
 The way the Shāhis sacrifice.' But Gahñā said,
 'You kill both rams and goats, how dare you
 have
 Such rites ? We that do know the Law of God
 Will kill you. Know you not that Shams
 Tabrēz,
 Priest of Multān, was by the masters of
 The law hung up by the feet and flayed, because
 He broke the law. They cast him out. They
 would
 Not let him eat. The sun approached, and he
 Did roast his fish and ate his scanty meal.
 They spared not him, then how will you
 escape ?'
 The priest replied, 'The rams and goats are
 ours,
 The law is yours. We do not want your law,
 Nor have we called you. Yours it is to seek
 A quarrel. Go. We know not you, nor where
 You dwell and execute your law.' But he
 Went not to Gujrānwāl, but took his way
 To Imminabad, to see the Qāzī. So
 He went in tears. Gāhpā the priest appeared
 Before Dānā the Qāzī. There he wept
 Such bitter tears, and threw his turban down
 So vehemently, and beat his breast so sad
 That Dānā Qāzī cried 'Take hold of him.
 Here seat him—and see he has been beaten, or
 A serpent poisonous has stung him, so
 Use charms. Or mayhap he has some disease.'

Chuglî Bâlâ pîr di aggâ Dânâ dê dasot,
 Chuhrâs dâ pîr hai rich Nishaurâ dê varot,
 Chhattre bakrê koh lai, mullâ nû na puohhâ.
 Dana bâkâ siphâhâ nûn Uth karb tasyâri,
 Asvâr hâ jâb ghoriân khich lô talvârî.
 Pîr nûn gal karn na dâlîni phir d'ijji vârî.
 Aithâ pakar lêluâ, pîrî vêkhângâ sârî,
 Chhattre khâhâ vêsh lâ, valdâ balkârî.
 Chelé siflân jôrâi, Rabb païj savârî.
 Sau asvâr pur pêyâ ghoriân lô charikhâ.

Control him—and shut him up indoors.
 They tried

To hold him, but he cast them off and railed
 Against priest Bâlâ, saying to Dânâ, 'He,
 The Chuhras' priest, lives in Naushera. He
 Kills rams and goats himself, and disregards
 The Muslim priests.' Thus spake he. Dânâ
 gave

His soldiers orders to prepare to mount
 Their horses, ride away, and draw their swords,
 Nor let the priest resist by even a word.

He must not have their leave to utter word.

'Go bring him here in chains, his priesthood I
 Will prove. I'll see if he kills rams himself,
 The headstrong man.' His own disciple wrote
 This song of praise. May God vouchsafe us
 peace.

(To be continued.)

BOOK-NOTICE.

THE TODAS. By W. H. R. RIVERS, Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. With Illustrations. London: Macmillan & Co., 1903, pp. xviii, 755, 40 Tables and Map.

EVERY visitor of Ootacamund has met the sturdy, shock-headed aborigines of the soil, who first greet him with a merry 'salâm' and then naively and confidently ask him for his tribute in the shape of an 'illâm' (as the Arabic word *in'âm* is pronounced by them). Their little colonies of barrel-shaped huts are scattered all over the Nilgiri plateau. Two of them are on the very outskirts of the summer capital: one near Sylk's Hotel and another close to the Government Gardens. Others occupy some of the most picturesque spots in the environs: near the Marlimund Reservoir, near the Umbrella Tree, at the top of the Sigur Ghat, in Governor's Shola, &c. From the time when the hills were first visited by Europeans (which is less than a century ago), the Todas have excited much interest, and a pretty extensive literature has grown up regarding them. No observer, however, has made so deep a study of them as Dr. Rivers, whose special accomplishments as an anthropologist, and whose previous experience of similar work in the Torres Straits, enabled him to gather very accurate and detailed information about their customs and beliefs. The result of his stay among them is the delightful volume to which I seek to draw the attention of all friends of India.

Dr. Rivers gradually examined nearly every individual of the whole tribe, which numbers

about 800 people. With the help of two interpreters—a catechist and a forest ranger—he extracted from them a vast mass of valuable items of information, which he checked and verified by cross-examination and independent statements. He found these uncultured savages extremely intelligent, veracious, and far from reticent except on certain tabooed matters.

The Todas are a purely pastoral race and do not possess any wealth or means of subsistence except their fine, fierce-looking buffalo-cows, to the care of which their daily life is devoted. No wonder that in their belief milk has become a sacred substance and the dairy a place of worship. 'The milking and churning operations of the dairy form the basis of the greater part of the religious ritual of the Todas' (p. 38). Besides the 'ordinary buffaloes' attached to any village, there are herds of sacred buffaloes which are tended by dairymen-priests. The holiest kind of dairy is the *tî*, and its priest the *paldâ* (*i. e.*, milkman). Dr. Rivers gives a full description of the complicated dairy ritual, plans of the dairies, and photographs of the dairy-vessels, the priests, and their attendants. The most sacred object of the dairies are certain buffalo-bells (*mani*), which are kept in the innermost room of the dairy-temples, and to which a miraculous origin is imputed. The picture on p. 51 will interest Sanskrit scholars, as it shows the native method of churning, which is frequently alluded to in Hindu literature. Most of the dairies resemble in form

the ordinary dwelling-huts; but a few, such as the so-called 'Toda Cathedral' (pp. 44, 46), are circular, with a conical roof. To keep off cattle and wild beasts, both huts and dairies are surrounded by walls and have a very small opening, which can be passed only by creeping, and is closed by a sliding door on its inner side. The interior has two raised portions on which the people sleep.

One of the most striking customs of the Todas is polyandry combined with polygyny. 'Wives are constantly transferred from one husband, or group of husbands, to another, the new husband or husbands paying a certain number of buffaloes to the old' (p. 523), and 'a woman may have one or more recognised lovers as well as several husbands' (p. 529). The catechist who translated the Commandments was met by the serious difficulty that there is no word for adultery in the Toda language. Dr. Rivers has taken the trouble to work out, and has published, as an Appendix, the genealogies, as far as they were remembered, of nearly the whole of the Toda community. These pedigrees are valuable in various respects. They illustrate the complicated system of Toda kinship and provide statistical material for the study of the marriage regulations. The older census records show a considerable excess of men over women. Dr. Rivers attributes this fact to the practice of female infanticide which, as his new tables prove, has now almost entirely ceased.

As may be expected, Dr. Rivers' volume contains a full account of the funeral ceremonies of the Todas. I have witnessed cases of both varieties: the so-called 'green funeral' at which the corpse is burned, and the 'dry funeral' at which certain relics — a lock of hair and a piece of the skull — are finally cremated. On these occasions the fire is produced by friction, as I am able to confirm from personal knowledge. Before the cremation various articles, which the deceased person is expected to require in the other world, are placed near the body. As a *conditio sine qua non* some buffaloes have to be killed, which will supply him or her with milk and ghi in the future life. 'Formerly it was the custom to slaughter many buffaloes at every funeral. This impoverished the people and was prohibited by the Government about forty years ago, and since that time the number of buffaloes killed at each ceremony has been limited to two for each person' (p. 338). The two victims are caught and dragged to the appointed spot, where they are dispatched by striking the head with

the blunt side of an axe. The racing of the infuriated and frightened animals by muscular youths, the dignified bearing of the more aged spectators (who remind us of Roman senators), the lamenting of the mourning women, the musical (?) strains of the band of Kôtas (who receive as their fee the flesh of the slaughtered buffaloes), — all this combines with the grand contour of those lovely hills in producing a weird scene which no visitor will ever forget. The Todas call the abode of the dead 'the world of Am,' i. e., of the Hindu god Yama. It is believed to be situated to the west of the Nilgiris, and to reach it a river near Sispara has to be crossed by a thread bridge. Wicked Todas cannot cross it, but fall into the river, where they are bitten by leeches. When they get out on the further bank of the river, they have to stay in a sort of purgatory before reaching their final destination.

I conclude these hasty notes on Dr. Rivers' important work by reprinting from p. 386 the translation of a funeral dirge, which alludes to Ootacamund and its lake and the boats on it, and betrays the influence of the Zenana Mission, under whose protection the author of the poem had lived for some time:—

"O woman of wonderful birth, renowned were you born, O flower of the lime tree! Having found a proper husband, you married; having found a proper wife, I married. I gave my best buffalo to Piedr for you. I took you as a beauty to Kuandr. A house we built, bracelets and buffalo-horns we made in sport. I thought we should have had many children and many buffaloes should we have enjoyed. Liberal you were and refreshing like the shade of the umbrella tree. We thought that we should live long. We went together as we willed. We bought strong buffaloes and we prevailed over injustice. Peacefully we paid our fine. We lent to those that had not. We went to see the bungalows and the reservoir. Many courts we visited and ships also. We laid complaints before the native magistrate; we made bets and we won. We said that we would not be shaken and would fear the eye of no one. We thought to live together, but you have left me alone, you have forsaken me. My right eye sheds tears, my right nostril smarts with sorrow. I bewailed but could not find you. I called out for you and could not find you. There is one God for me."

E. HULTZSCH.

ARCHÆOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET.

BY THE REV. A. H. FRANCKE.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 333.)

III. — INSCRIPTIONS AT BASGO AND NYEMO.

THE villages of Basgo and Nyemo are situated on the right bank of the Indus, at the two ends of a long plain which is the site of the important Battle of Basgo, when the invading armies of the Mongols and Tibetans were defeated with the assistance of the army of the Mughal Emperor of India. The strong fortress of Basgo, the ruins of which come into sight, when the end of the large plain between Saspola and Basgo is reached, was not destroyed during the Mongol war, but by Dogra troops between 1834 and 1841 A. D.

(a) The Fortress of Basgo.

This fortress is mentioned twice in the *Ladakh Chronicles* before the great siege of c. 1646-47.⁸ We first hear of it as one of the possessions of Dragspa'bum, the rival king to 'dBur-mde, c. 1400—1440. Dragspa'bum may have found some fortifications in the place, but he seems to be the man who made a really valuable stronghold of it, and it is probable that all the thick ancient walls and round towers were built in his time. The supply of water in the fortress must have been continuous, as is shown by the length of the Mongol siege, and the existing brook was probably included in the fortifications. Also, there could have been during the war no lack of food, as the grain-stores of all the Ladakh castles were almost inexhaustible, owing to the custom of adding some grain at every harvest. The castle store-houses sometimes look like very deep round wells, and at Wanla I was told that the grain stored there of old was not even yet emptied out.

The most conspicuous building in the fort, and the one which alone is still entire, is the Chamba ('aByamspa) Monastery, built by King Sengge-rnam-rgyal, c. 1590—1620. It contains an image of Maitreya, made of copper (clay and wood ?), gilt, in size "such as he will be in his eightieth year" (as the *Chronicles* say), i. e., about three stories high! The face cannot be seen in the lower story, as is often the case with these statues, because the head reaches through the ceiling and must be inspected from a higher place.

* Of the once famous Royal Palace here, called Babstan-lha-rtse, there is not much left. A small building, which is locally known as the Seljang (probably 'Ser-lcang) Monastery, is to be found inside the ruins. There is a court on the roof with covered galleries all round it, in fair preservation. There are here some very rude Lamaist paintings, with explanatory inscriptions in modern dBu-med Characters. One portion of the wall is covered with a very long inscription in black ink in dBu-can Characters, which probably tells of the construction of the galleries and the decoration of the palace. It is certainly of some historical value, but in such bad preservation that I could not make much of it. The middle and lower portions are quite gone. I tried to find a king's name in it, and the Lama who assisted me in the task, occasionally pointed to certain words in the inscription. When he took his finger off the wall, away went the word which he had pointed out, and I believe that it is in this way that the most important parts of the inscription have been destroyed. There is, however, some hope left that it will be possible to fix its date approximately. The inscription contains a great number of names of state-officials and similar well-known persons, whose dates will, no doubt, eventually become known by a collation of the various inscriptions in these parts. I copied one of the many names, that of a Lama, Stag-thsangba-nagag-dbang-rgya-mthso. The term *Stag-thsangba* plainly indicates that he must have been a disciple or

⁸ I find that the date of the siege of Basgo has been preserved by Bernier, the friend of the Moguls (see Pinkerton's *Travels*). He speaks of this battle as having taken place 17 or 18 years before 1664, i.e. 1646-47. I am convinced that a date preserved by a European is more deserving of our acceptance than one preserved by the Tibetans, on whose authority 1686-88 has been accepted up to the present as the date of the siege.

successor of the great Lama **Stag-thsang-ras-chen**, who flourished during the reign of **Sengge-rnam-rgyal**, mentioned above, and thus the date of the inscription has to be fixed at any rate about 1600 A. D. or a little later. The Lama **Ngag-dbang-rgya-mthso** is mentioned as a contemporary of Sengge-rnam-rgyal on an inscription from Saspol.

(b) Hymn in Honor of **Sengge-rnam-rgyal**.

(On Stone.)

This hymn (in **dBu-can Characters**) is found on one of the numerous *mani*-walls which are built along the trade-road, below the Fortress of Basgo. Close by is a tablet on stone, containing a hymn in honor of **Nyima-rnam-rgyal**, but the stone has become so much weathered that hardly any part of the inscription, besides the name of the king, can be made out. I also noticed in the neighbourhood a tablet containing a hymn in honor of **bDe-skyong-rnam-rgyal**, but it has not yet been read.

Tibetan Text.

skyé dgu phan bdei sbrang char silili
mung bde dgabai lotog sosor smin
snyanpai ringa chen nam mkhai ltongsnas rdungs.
gragspai dpal ldan riboi rtse nas yyo.
dpung thsogs dragpoi dar skad 'ururu
dge beu 'adzompai smon bya thiriri
dar rgyas skyidpai glu len gyururu
yulla yyang chags sala 'adurdü mtho
chos rgyal pho brang rab brtan la rtse dang
de sogs 'adzam gling yongsla dbang bsgyurpa
'ajigsmed sengges btegspai khri stengdu
Nya khri btsanpo zhes byai sa bdag hyung
ndkhyenpa rab rdzogs 'ajampai dbyangs dang
mthsungs
rukha myayam sa skyong thugs rje chenpo 'adra
thub bstan skyongba ysangbai bdagpo bzhi
chos rgyal chenpo sengge rmañ rgyal gyi

Translation.

The rain which is of great advantage to all beings, makes *silili*
And the different kinds of fruit (harvest) ripen, pleasing in their own beauty,
The great and melodious drum of heaven is beaten in the zenith,
And shakes [the air] from the zenith of the famous and glorious mountain.
The strong voice of the noble company [of gods] makes *'ururu*,
The prayers in which the ten virtues are gathered, sound *thiriri*.
The song of the spreading happiness sounds *gyururu*.
In the land pleasure grows, and high joy on the earth.
The palaces of the kings of faith, **Rab-brtan lhartse**,
And the others, were raised by the fearless lion who
Really is the wielder of might in Jambudvipa.
On the throne
Originated a lord of the earth, called **Nya-khri-btsanpo**.
He is like the perfectly wise 'aTsam-dbyangs. (*Mañjushsha*).
He is like the protector of heaven and earth, the great Merciful (*sPyan-ras-yzigs*; *Avalokitesvara*).
He is like the protector of the doctrine of Buddha, the Lord of mysticism (*Phyag-rdor*, *Vajrapani*).
May the life-time of the great king of faith, **Sengge-rnam-rgyal**,

sku thse brtancung dbu rmog mthoba dang
 chab srid bcassu rtagtu rgyas gyur cig
 sgrolmai rnam sprul bskal bzang rgyalmo bzhugs
 .
 sras dang longs spyod chab srid rgyaspar shog
 yzugs mdzes spyan legs lhai sraspo nono rgyal
 sras
 bDe ldan rnam rgyal sras Indra Boti rnam rgyal
 stod
 lhayi srasmo ycesma Nor 'adzin rgyalmo bzhugs
 yab yum drungdū chosla dgābar shog
 chos blon chenpos dgu dgā mangpo dgā.

Remain firm, and his helmet remain high!
 And may also his political power spread!
 There resides also queen bSkal-bzang, the incarnation of the (white) Tārā.
 May her children and abundance increase!
 Praise to the princes of beautiful shape and good faces,
bDe-ldan-rnam-rgyal, and Indra Boti-rnam-rgyal!
 There resides also the daughter of the gods, the beloved princess **Nor-'adzin**.
 May [she] rejoice in the religion before father and mother!
 The great ministers of faith are enjoying ninefold happiness.

Notes.

* *smon bya*; the word *bya* is probably related to *byodpa*, and the meaning of the construction would be ‘doing prayer,’ pray.

— *adurlu*, the exact meaning of this word I find it impossible to ascertain. In my translation I have considered it parallel to *yyangs-chags*.

Rab-brtan-lla-rtse is the vernacular name of the castle at Basgo.

Indra-Boti-rnam-rgyal; according to the *rGyal-rabs*, the name of the second son is Indra-Bhodhi-rnam-rgyal. The name testifies to Sengge-rnam-rgyal’s inclinations to Hinduism, which are also mentioned in the *rGyal-rabs*. The last lines are somewhat injured and cannot be read with absolute certainty.

(c) The Ancient Ruined Monastery of Basgo.

Outside the present village of Basgo, a little to the east of it, on the plain between Basgo and Nyemo, there are the ruins of an ancient monastery which is generally known as **Sogpoi mGonpa, the Mongol Monastery**. It is locally believed to have been erected by the Mongols during the siege, c. 1646-47, but at Basgo and Nyemo almost everything ancient, of which there is no certain record, is nowadays thought to be connected with the Mongols, who are also believed to be the erectors of many a ruined *mchod-rtren*. In most cases, however, it is quite improbable that the Mongols had anything to do with them.

As regards the Monastery, it is quite probable that it existed as such at the date of the Mongol War and was destroyed during that war. This supposition is strongly supported by the fact that there are *mani-walls* along the two paths which branch off from the main road and lead to the ruin, because *mani-walls* were hardly built before 1600 in Ladakh, as a study of the votive tablets on them proves; and it is not likely that *mani-walls* would be constructed on a road to a ruined building which had lost its significance. These considerations go to show that these two particular *mani-walls* were constructed between 1600 and 1646.

The Monastery consists of a large hall, twelve paces square. On the right and left of the East side are two smaller rooms which project out from the east wall, and probably formed the ends of a gallery that once connected them. The walls are still in existence, but as the roof has long fallen, rain has destroyed the paintings with which they were once decorated. The only traces of paintings now existing are the **raised medallions**, the forms of which are still quite distinct. In the plate attached the arrangement of those on the West (fig. 1) and of the North and South walls (fig. 2) are shown. The East wall had none, but contains the door. Their existence creates the presumption that the Monastery was built by Kashmiri monks.

Monasteries with raised medallions on the walls are very rare, and, as far as I know, only in a single instance, that of the Chigtan Monastery, are the original paintings on the medallions, or at least traces of them, still preserved, a fact which makes the Chigtan Monastery to be of the greatest importance with regard to the ancient Kashmiri form of Buddhism in Ladakh. A Muhammadan *mullah* is said to have covered the paintings there with mortar, and when I visited the place, the mortar was still on them. But possibly the mortar may prove to have been the means of their preservation, for I can quite imagine that, by working carefully over them with a brush, these ancient pictures, overlaid and hidden probably in the eighteenth century A. D., can be brought to light again.

There are some ancient ruined *mchod-rtens* at Basgo, which probably go back to the first days of this monastery, say, between 900 and 1000 A. D. Most of these are to be found in or near the gorge, West of the village, on the road to Saspola. Several of them take the form of a staircase-pyramid, with a ground-plan of star-shape. They thus remind one of the ancient ruined *mchod-rtens* at Alchi.

(d) The Ruined Nunnery at Nyemo.

On a rock above the Eastern part of the village of Nyemo, near the gorge leading up to the plain between Nyemo and Phyung, are the ruins of ancient buildings, which are popularly known as Jomoi-mgonpa, the Nunnery. There is but little beyond the foundations to be seen of it now, and, besides potsherds of the ordinary sort, there is nothing on the spot to remind one of its ancient occupants.

South of Nyemo, on the right bank of the river, there are ruins of a huge castle built in cyclopean style, of the origin of which even local tradition knows nothing; and not very far from this castle, which is called Chung-mkhar, in a little enclosure of rough walls, is a stone image of rather rude make and very ancient appearance. This is generally known as the Aphyi-Tomo-rDorje (Grandmother Nun rDorge), and is apparently believed to represent one of the ancient abbesses of Nyemo. The figure wears a crown of five points on her head, and carries a crozier in her right hand (see fig. 7). Such croziers are not used nowadays, so I am told. On her face is a black spot which is due to the hot butter which is smeared over it at times; for the cult of this old image has not yet ceased, and on certain occasions, especially on New Year's Day, the whole village assembles, and drums and claxonets are played before the image for several hours. For the rest of the year, the image is in the care of a peasant, called the Chung-mkharpa, who is the owner of the ground near the castle.

By the name of the ancient abbess, said to be thus represented, one is reminded of the famous rDorj-ephagmo, Vajravarahani, who is nowadays continuously incarnated in the abbesses of the Samding Monastery on the Yamdrok Lake. But it is practically impossible to decide now, whether in the name of the image at Nyemo the ancient name of the abbesses of Nyemo has been preserved for us through popular tradition, or whether the name merely represents the fame of the abbesses of Samding.

Between the ruins of the Monastery and the Castle are several ancient *mchod-rtens* and traces of rows of *mchod-rtens*, which seem to have contained 108 *mchod-rtens* each. These rows are the predecessors of *mani-walls*. Popular tradition assigns these relics of a former age to the Mongols, and says that the Mongols constructed all of them during their siege of Basgo. This is, however, quite improbable, because after and during the reign of Sengge-rnam-rgyal (c. 1590—1620), the building of *mani-walls* became a popular custom, and entirely superseded the former rows of 108 small *mchod-rtens*. This obliges us to date all rows of *mchod-rtens* before 1600, and especially those rows at Nyemo, which are in a particularly dilapidated condition and probably several centuries older than the *mani-walls*. Historical information about the Nunnery is hardly likely to ever become available, but the stone-image of the abbess appears to belong to 10th or 11th century A. D.

REMAINS AT ALCHI & BASGO.

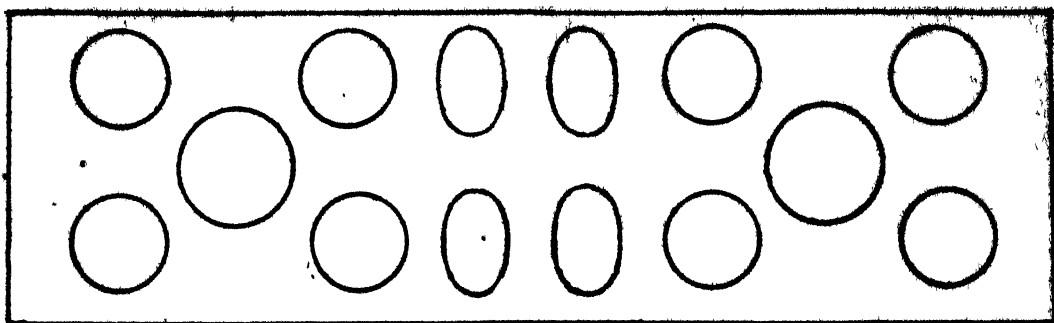


Fig. 1

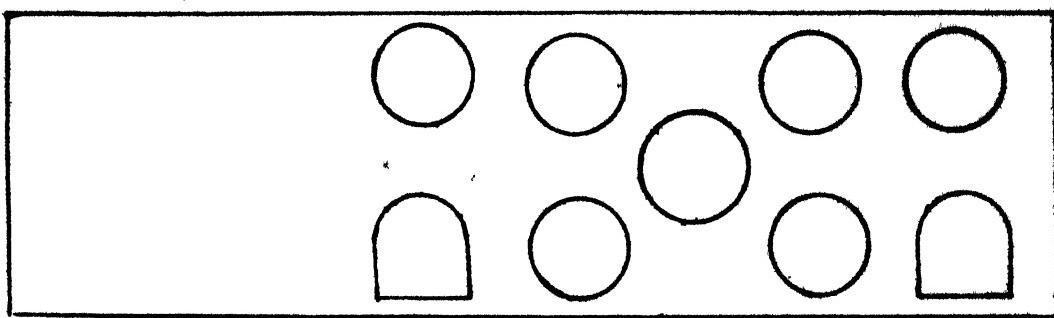


Fig. 2

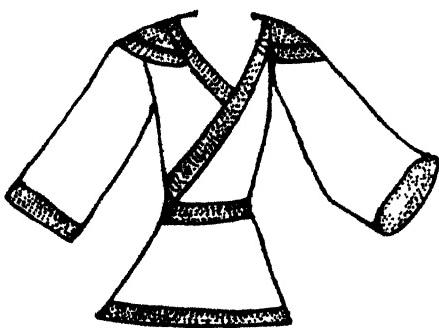


Fig. 3.



Fig. 5

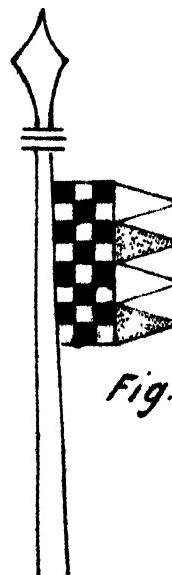


Fig. 4

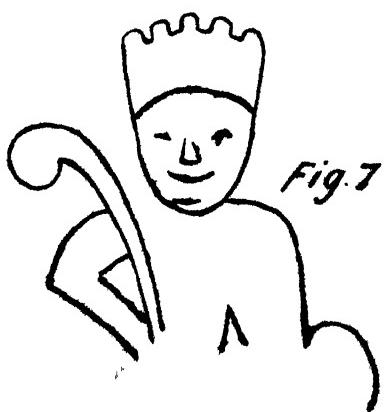


Fig. 7



Fig. 6

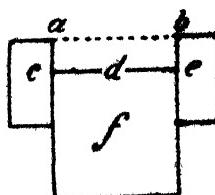


Fig. 8.

Description of the Plate.

Fig. 1. Western wall of the ruined monastery at Basgo, showing arrangement of medallions.

Fig. 2. Southern wall of the ruined monastery at Basgo, showing arrangement of medallions.

Fig. 3. Dress from the historical pictures in the ruined monastery at Alchi. Dress white, the spotted parts red.

Fig. 4. Flag from the historical pictures in the ruined monastery at Alchi; black, white, and red.

Figs. 5 and 6. Hats from the historical pictures in the ruined monastery at Alchi.

Fig. 7. Rough sketch of the sculpture of the abbess at Nyemo.

Fig. 8. Ground plan of the ruined monastery at Basgo; *f*, central hall; *c*, *e*, side halls; *d*, door; between *a* and *b* was probably a wooden gallery.

IV.—INSCRIPTIONS AT DARU.

The village of Daru is situated a little above the trade road on the large plain, which extends between the villages of Nyemo and Phyang. It is of little importance and hardly ever visited by travellers. It has, however, a ruined castle, which is said to have been built by the ministers (*lkā-blon*) of Daru, who were servants of the kings of Leh.

(a) *Inscription of King Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal.*

Not very far from the trade road, South-West of the village, there is a boulder, about nine or ten feet high, which has two walls abutting on its Eastern face, and having the appearance of being the remains of a hall. The face of the boulder, which formed one side of the hall, has on it five or six sculptures, among which the figure of Vajrapani is the most prominent. Besides the sculptures, there are several inscriptions on the boulder in various stages of legibility and possibly of different times; those on the right side being carelessly executed and having the most modern appearance. One of the clearest of all the words is the name of the king, which has still the traces of its original red colour.

The present writer also found a number of inscribed fragments of stone-tablets lying about the boulder, which he took to Leh and deposited at the Moravian Mission. But in spite of much time spent over them, it was found impossible to fit any two together, and they seem to belong to several different tablets. There may be more fragments under ground, which might be brought to light by the spade. On one of the fragments the syllables *rGyalmo-rTan* Queen *rTan* could be read. Had the historiographers of Western Tibet thought it worth while to mention the names of the various queens of the country, such fragments would have a great historical value.

Of the inscription on the rock, which is mostly in *dBu-can* Characters, I was able to make out the following portion:—

Tibetan Text.

On the left side.

..... cam, cam palun

lha chen gun dgā rnam rgyal.

lag ygo (or *mgo*) 'jam yangs skyab khomd (?) shi (?)

Under central figure.

blon chen phyag rdor jo, log bas (?)

To the right of central figure.

phyagna rdorje
blo bzang don 'agrubo
dkon mchog bkris dang

To the right of the preceding.

. . . e zhen
. . . grubpa
bkris.

Notes on the Tibetan Text.

It is almost impossible to give a translation of the inscription; because those parts which can be read with some amount of certainty, consist only of names, and it is in several cases doubtful whether they belong to human beings or to mythological conceptions.

cam is probably a defective writing of the word *lcam*, spouse. The first name would be that of a queen: spouse (or queen), Palun (perhaps Paluna). She is not mentioned in the *rGyal-rabs*, but, as already stated, the names of only a few queens are given in that work.

Lha chen gun (*kun*) *dgā rnam rgyal* is doubtless the name of a real king (see below); *gun*, instead of *kun*, corresponds to the actual dialectical pronunciation of the word.

'ajam yangs, is doubtless the word *'ajum dbyangs* (Mañjughosha); but, as the other words in the line are not clear, we do not know, whether it is meant as a name of the mythological or a real person.

skyub [*s*], help, in the same line, may be part of a personal name; but it may also be part of a prayer to *'aJam dbyangs*.

About the other words in this line, there is not much certainty. *Lag* means 'hand,' but the connection is not clear.

blon chen phyag rdor j'o; *blon chen* means 'great minister'; *phyag rdor* is Vajrapāni; *j'o* means 'lord.' If the inscription refers to the mythological being, the title 'great minister' remains strange. There may have been a real minister of such name.

phyagna rdorje is once more the Tibetan name of Vajrapāni. This name in its Sanskrit and Tibetan forms is carved also on the west side of the rock several times.

bLo bzang don grub is either the name of an ordinary person, or that of the third disciple of *Tsong-khapa*, who lived about the year 1500 A. D. One of the sculptures may thus refer to him. If that could be proved, we should have to date this part of the sculptures and inscriptions at any rate after 1500 A. D.

dKon mchog bkrashis (*bkris*) may be the name of a locally famous lama or a state-official.

e zhen is too incomplete to suggest any translation.

grubpa, fulfiller, is probably the second part of the name of a lama.

bkris (*bkrashis*), happiness, may also be the second part of the name of a lama or other person.

Identification of king Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal.

This name, which can be read with the greatest certainty on the boulder at Daru, cannot be found in the *rGyal-rabs* of Ladakh. Does this mean that he was a Tibetan king of a line different to that of the kings of Leh, although bearing their dynastic name?

If the ministers (*bka blon*) of Daru are the descendants of some old line of local kings or chiefs, that line cannot have remained independent long after the arrival of Central Tibetan Dynasty, about 1000 A. D. Also it is not likely that any chiefs of Daru could be in possession of the same dynastic name as the kings of Leh. So Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal is not

likely to have been a local Daru chief, and he cannot have been one of the Purig chiefs, because their dynastic names were quite different. Nor can he have been a Balti chief, because the Baltis were Musalmans at the time that they overran Ladakh. And, lastly, there is no history of the arrival of any Central Tibetan kings after 1000 A. D.

These considerations preclude any identification of this king outside the line of Leh, and there is, moreover, much to show that *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* must belong to that line. The names of the Tibetan kings generally consist of two parts : the dynastic name, and the proper name. The dynastic name of the ancient line of the kings of Lhasa was *bTsan* or *bTsango*, and is found in many of their names, e. g., *Nya-khri-btsango*, *Srong-btsan-sgampo*. The dynastic name of the first dynasty of the kings of Leh was *Lha-chen*, and is found in most of their names, e. g., *Lha-chen-dpalgyi-mgon*, *Lha-chen-naglug*. Whenever it does not occur, as in the name *bKrashis-mgon*, it may be presumed that the king was not the eldest but a younger son of his predecessor. As the second dynasty of the kings of Leh was descended directly from the first, the name *Lha-chen* was added to many of their names at their pleasure. The dynastic name of this second dynasty was *rnam-rgyal*, and it is found at the end of every one of their known names. This dynasty is particularly well known, not only from the chronicle *rGyal-rabs*, but also from its many inscriptions. Such a name, therefore, as *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* would be that of a king of the second dynasty, but it is curious that the name *kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* does not occur in the chronicle, although even after the second dynasty had been robbed of its power by the Dogras, the syllables *kundgā* occur as part of a very long royal name in *'aJigsmed-(etc)-rnam-rgyal*.

If, then, *Kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* is to be held to have been one of the kings of Leh, and cannot be found among the list of kings of the second dynasty, it remains to be seen if he can be placed among the kings of the first dynasty. There is a passage in the *rGyal-rabs*, hitherto held to be doubtful, which may enable us to so place him. Karl Marx's MS. A. of the *rGyal-rabs* puts king *Lha-chen-jo-dpal* directly after king *bKrashis-mgon*, but Marx notes that Schlagintweit's text of the *rGyal-rabs* (which is quite in accordance with his own MS. A., at any rate in those early parts) places a king, *Lha-rgyal*, between them.

Lha-rgyal, taken by itself, is a strange form, and suggests the omission of something between *lha* and *rgyal*. My explanation of the circumstances is as follows: — The ancient MS. from which both Karl Marx's MS. A. and Schlagintweit's original MS. were copied had some fault in the place where some such name as *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* originally stood. Several things may have happened to create the omission ; e. g., the right bottom corner of a page may have been torn off in such a way that only *Lha* remained of the first part of the name, the last syllable *rgyal* being preserved on the left top corner of the next page. If a European scholar were to find a MS. in such a condition, he would feel it to be an obligation to inform his readers of the fact. It is different with a Tibetan. He believes he has done wonders if he copies all he can make out. Usually he simply leaves out a doubtful passage altogether, and goes on as if nothing were missing. These habits will account for the difference between Schlagintweit's and Marx's MSS.

The presence of the dynastic name of the second dynasty in the names of this king creates a difficulty ; but it may be pointed out here that the name *rnam-rgyal* was not new when it was made a dynastical name in c. 1500 A. D., but can be found in central Tibetan names about the year 1000 and perhaps earlier.

If, therefore, this theory of the identity of *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* with the *Lha-rgyal* of Schlagintweit's MS. of the *rGyal-rabs* be correct, we have to date this king c. 1250—1275 A. D., which date would very well account for the ancient character of this part of the inscription.

(b) A Passage from a Votive Tablet of King bDeldan and Prince
(or King) bDe-legs.

On one of the *mani-walls*, a little below Daru, towards Phyang is to be found a votive tablet containing the name of Prince bDe-legs, beside that of his father bDe-l丹, in the form which was usual, while bDe-legs was the heir-apparent. I have not yet found any votive tablets containing the name of bDe-legs as king, but on a tablet at Domkhar can be read the name of bDe-legs alone, with the title *rgyal-sras*, prince. This is remarkable because votive tablets of bDe-leg's father and son (*Nyima-rnam-rgyal*) are not at all rare. The easiest explanation of the omission of the reign of bDe-legs from votive tablets is that the Lamas forbade the people to mention this king on them, and destroyed all those bearing his name which were in existence, because after the battle of Basgo he was obliged to become a Musalmān. That *mani-walls* were constructed during his reign, we know from a votive tablet at Nyurla (aNyungla). On this tablet instead of the name of a king, that of a high Lama, Mi-pham-mgon, is given who is styled rGyal-thsabs or Viceroy. After the battle of Basgo, the great Lama Mi-pham-mgon, for whose name *rGyal-rabs* wrongly inserts that of Mi-pham-dbangpo,⁷ was sent to Ladakh by the supreme government of Lhasa, to conduct the peace negotiations, and the authority of bDe-legs was so much shaken that the great Lama took the place of the king in the minds of the people.

Text.

(In dBucan Characters.)

. . . . lha chen bde ldan rnam rgyal bde
legs rnam rgyal, dbu rmog mtho zhing chab
srid rgyaspar shog

Translation.

. . . . the great gods, bDe-l丹-rnam-
rgyal [and] bDe-legs-rnam-rgyal, their
helmets being high, may their reign (or
progeny) spread!

Note.

The reason why the inscription was not copied in full was want of time and the fact that some parts of it were in such bad condition that the reading proceeded very slowly. I may here mention that another tablet containing the names of both these kings was discovered at Phe, on the Indus, below Daru.

(c) Sanskrit-Tibetan Votive Inscription by the Minister
Thse-dbang-dongrub, c. 1800 A. D.

(On Stone.)

A long the wall of the present government garden at Daru there is a *mani-wall*, which is furnished with two large votive tablets. Although both the wall and the tablets are only about 100 years old, the latter are not in particularly good preservation. The state of preservation of an inscription depends entirely on the kind of stone selected, and the softer the stone the shorter the time the inscription lasts. The Tibetan part of the inscription was originally copied in full, but the paper containing the latter portion of the inscription has unfortunately been lost,⁸ and I can now offer only the first part of the Tibetan text.

⁷ *Mgon* and *dbangpo* are almost synonymous, which explains the fact that the name occurs in two forms.

⁸ Together with the copy of the Alchi Bridge Inscription and others.

Text.

(In dBucan Characters.)

Sanskrit.

Om namo(m?) Bhagavate aparimita ayur dznyāna subhanisitastana tsoradzāya ; tathāgatāya ; arhate samyaksambuddhāya ; tadyathā ; om [punye punye] mahāpunye aparimita punyer dznyāna sambharopateito om sarvasam samskāriparishudha dharmate gaganā samugate subhava bishudhe (vishudhe ?) mabūnaye pariyariye svāhā !

Tibetan.

Mi dbang choskyi rgyalpoi phrinlas ysergyi shing rta gyendu la drenpai 'akhorlopa bkā mdzod thse dbang dongrubkyi sku thse mdzadpa stobs

Translation.

(Of the Sanskrit by R. C. Dutt, C.I.E.)

Om, adoration to the Lord, the immeasurable, the life of contemplation, the soul fixed on holiness, the Tathāgata, the Arhat, the awakened, the self-existent !

Om, to him of perfect holiness, of great holiness, of immeasurable holiness, of unmeasured righteousness, of radiant soul !

Om, to him who has done all sacraments, to him of pure religion whose way is high as the heavens, to the well purified, to the great teacher and traveller in the righteous path,— Glory !

(Of the Tibetan.)

When the great minister, Thse-dbang-dongrub, the upwards driving coachman of the golden carriage of the works of the king of faith, the powerful over men died, power

Notes.

La drenpa, an idiom meaning about ‘driving upwards.’

bkā mdzod, literally ‘treasure-house of words.’ I translated it by ‘minister,’ but it may more properly mean ‘wise man.’

sku thse mdzadpa, ‘making his lifetime,’ used in the sense of completing his lifetime.

V.—THE ROCK INSCRIPTIONS AT SHEH.

There are three inscriptions at Sheh, one accompanied by various sculptures on the rock on which the castle is built, and the two others on the **Maitreya Rock**, a little below the village on the Indus, which is now popularly known as **Sman-bla**.

There are traces of several other inscriptions on the Maitreya Rock, in both **Persian** and **Tibetan characters**, which have been effaced, probably during some war. It is probable that when either the Balti or the Dogra armies marched up the Indus valley, they destroyed the Tibetan inscriptions, and carved others in Urdu or Persian on their place. If this happened, the Ladakhis would in turn destroy the new inscriptions, as soon as the hostile army had left the country. The two very ancient Tibetan inscriptions that have escaped destruction owe their escape to their positions on the rock. One is carved so high up that it cannot be reached unless special arrangements are made, and the other was hidden behind a masonry-wall so that it could not be read, until the wall was broken down by the missionaries in January, 1906. Indeed, I am told that some lines have not even yet come to light.

Nos. I. and III. of the legible inscriptions have been copied by **bLo-bzang-thar-rnyed**, meteorological observer at Leh : No. II. by **bDechen-bZodpa**.

INSCRIPTION No. I.

Position: High up on the Maitreya Rock.

Text.

idkon mchog ysumala phyag 'athsal dang, nga
 (da?) skvalbs su ysolte, rgyalpo chenpo, tsan po
 lha sraskyi sku yondu mangārisikyi' abangsla
 rigste, phyogs beui semscan thamscadkyi
 bsodnamissu bsodsnas, 'aphagspa byams dpal,
 khor tang beaspai sku yzugs
 . . . pa mthar brtan
 bgyis.

Translation.

I greet the three highest beings (Buddhist Trinity)
 and ask [them to come] to my help. Making
 it as an offering of the great king, the Tsanpo,
 the son of the gods, and for [the benefit of] the
 subjects of mNgaris, and for the benefit of all
 the beings of the ten regions, the images of the
 august Byams dpal-(Maitreya) with his
 attendants stupa made.

Notes on the Tibetan Text.

ysolte; the style of the writing used for this word reminds us of the Endere Inscriptions in Turkestan, where we find the final consonant of a syllable written not *after*, but *below*, the preceding one. In this case the *l* is written not after, but below the *s*.

mngārisi, instead of later mNgaris. This is the ancient name of Western Tibet, as is proved by the *rGyal-rabs*, though in more modern times it has been restricted to the most Eastern part of that country.

rigs is the classical *sgrigspa*, arrange, &c. See *Lalakhi Grammar*, Law of Sound, No. 3.

bsodsnas; I take this word to be another instance of placing the second consonant under the first. Otherwise the word would have to be read *bengosnas*, which would give it the sense of 'resolve to go the way of Nirvana,' according to Sarat Ch. Das' *Dictionary*.

byams-dpal, the glorious Maitreya. This shows that the inscription refers to the figure of Maitreya with his attendants carved along with it on the rock, giving the same date both for the inscription and its attendant sculptures.

mthar-ten. I am told that this refers to a particular kind of *stupa*.

INSCRIPTION No. II.

Position: Behind the masonry-wall at the same site.

Text.

dkon mchog ysum dang, 'ajigrtengyi mgonpo
 kuula skyabssu ysolnas, khyaba phagspa
 byamspha 'akhor dang beaspai sku yzugs khra
 svalpa mthāi bardu choskyi 'akhorlo dampa
 myurdu bslobpar skulla ysoldcing, dos mchod-
 kyi rkyen sbyardpala sogspai bsodnams dang,
 'aphagspa rnamskyi byin rlabs kyis, btsanpo
 lha ras ydung rabs dang phyogs beui semscan
 phalpo che . . . thamscad, bdeskyid phon-
 sum thsogs shing, blanamedpai sangsrgyassu
 myurdu grubpar stonte 'aphagspa sku yzugs
 rdo 'aburdu bgyispao, yyaskyi dgebai bshes
 nyen rnamskyis kyang thson ysal bur bgyiba
 dang brtanpar bgyio.

Translation.

Asking the three highest beings (Buddhist Trinity) and all the lords of the world [to come to my] help, the image of the august Maitreya with [his] attendants [was made]. Praying that the glorious (bright shining) one may quickly teach and admonish the holy wheel of religion until the ends (of the earth), and that there may be the merit of the confirmed effect and such like of the periodical sacrifices; and through the blessing of the exalted ones, may the btsanpo, the son of the gods and (his) family, and the ordinary as well as the great beings of the ten quarters remain in perfect blessing, and be taught to attain soon to the very highest Buddhahood. [For all this] the image of the exalted one was made of stone. All the friends of the virtue of the right hand will [from time to time] renew the colour (make clear colour) [of the image] and protect it (make it safe).

Philological Notes.

khyaba-'aphagspa, I am told that this is a locally well-known title of Maitreya; but what *khyaba* means I have been unable to discover.

khra svalpa (or *ysalpa*), I am told that this expression means 'very bright, shining.'

sbyardpa, perfect stem of the infinitive *sbyor[d]pa*.

rdo 'aburdu, used in the sense of 'according to stone,' 'of stone.'

Epigraphical Notes.

Though the characters of this inscription are of the ordinary dBu-can type, there are a few peculiarities in them, which point to its antiquity.

(a) The letter *ng* has a stroke attached to the right end of its lower line, which makes it look almost like a dBu-can *p*. This peculiarity has not yet been observed at Endere (Stein Collection), nor anywhere else.

(b) The *i* sign has not always the position of the Dêvanâgari short *i*, but often that of the long *i*, as is also the case in the Endere MSS., and many other ancient inscriptions.

(c) The second or final consonant of the syllable is written below the first consonant. Of this we have one certain and one probable case in the previous inscription. This peculiarity is also found at Endere and in the ancient Balti Inscriptions.

A Comparison of the Ladakhi and the Endere Inscriptions.

It will be useful here to review the peculiarities of the Endere relics, as they are the oldest datable specimens of Tibetan orthography, and to compare the most ancient West Tibetan Inscriptions with them. The question is a very important one, because on it the possibility of dating the Tibetan Inscriptions depends.

The peculiarities of the Endere MSS. and Sgrafitti (8th century) are the following : —

(a) The *i* sign takes the shape of the Dêvanâgari long and short *i* interchangeable.

(b) In several cases the final consonant of the syllable is written below the first consonant.

(c) The masculine definite article is in most cases *phd* and *pho*, instead of modern *pa* and *po*.

(d) In many cases the ordinary *c* and *ts* are replaced by *ch* and *tsh*; and both *ch* and *tsh* have *y*, *d*, or *b* prefixes attached to them, whilst in the classical orthography they are furnished only with *a* and *m* prefixes.

(e) When *m* comes before *i* or *e*, a *y* intervenes.

(f) Words ending in *r*, *l*, or *n* are furnished with a *d* suffix, called *drag*.

A comparison of the ancient Ladâkhi inscriptions with those of Endere discloses the fact, that several of them exhibit some of the peculiarities of the Endere epigraphy, but not all. This leads to the supposition that the six characteristics of Endere orthography were not dropped all at once, but one by one, and Dr. L. D. Barnett has observed that, according to the Endere relics, the *drag* was even then on the point of disappearing (8th century A. D.).

In. Ladakh, the peculiarities of the Endere epigraphy are exhibited in the following inscriptions :—

(a) Interchange of long and short *i* is found in Inscriptions at Sheh; at Alchi-mkhar-gog (but only in the oldest); and at Sadpor (Baltistân).

(b) Subscription of the final consonant is found in the inscriptions at Sheh; in one at Khalatse (at the bridge); and at Sadpor.

(c) The masculine article *pha*, *pho* has so far only been discovered at an ancient gold-mine near Nyurla, where a personal name is spelt *danarnapha* (or perhaps *tanarnapha*).

(d) *ch* and *tks* for *c* and *ts* are found in the Balu-mkhar Inscriptions.

(e) *y* intervening between *i* or *e* and initial *m* is found in the Sheh Inscriptions (see Inscription No. III., below); in the Alchi-mkhar-gog Inscriptions (the oldest); in those at Sadpor; at Khalatse (at the bridge); and at Balu-mkhar.

(f) The suffix *drag* is found in the Sheh Inscriptions.

The latest peculiarity of the ancient orthography to disappear would appear to be the intervention of *y* between an initial *m* and *i* or *e*, as this is exhibited in all the ancient inscriptions; and the latest of them which can be dated with some amount of probability, is the Khalatse Bridge Inscription (probable date 1150 A. D.). Peculiarities which disappeared much earlier are certainly the masculine articles *pha*, *pho* and the suffix *drag*.

The Sheh Inscriptions exhibit the interchange of long and short *i*, the subscription of the final consonant, the intervening *y*, and the suffix *drag*.

This last point is of great importance, as the use of the *drag* was supposed to be on the decline at Endere. I propose, therefore, to put their date between 900 and 1000 A. D.

The King of the Inscriptions.

Both the Maitreya Rock Inscriptions are plainly by the same king, and both refer to the same subject, the carving of the image of Maitreya. The personal name of the king is not given, but this omission seems to have been customary at that time, as the Khalatse Inscription also speaks simply of "the great king." We find, however, two dynastic names, in the Maitreya Rock Inscription, the name *bTsanpo* and *Lhayi-sras*. The former is the dynastic name of the Central Tibetan Dynasty, from which the Western Tibetan kings descended, and the latter, which means 'son of the gods,' not only reminds us of *Lha-chen*, 'great god,' the dynastic name of the earliest Western Tibetan kings, but is also used interchangeably with *Lha-chen* by the later kings. We may thus, with some confidence, attribute these inscriptions to one of the kings of the *bTsan-po-Lha-chen* line of Central Tibet and not to local chieftains. The first of this line of kings was *Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon*, the conqueror of Western Tibet, who reigned, according to Grünwedel's *Chronology*, c. 975—1000 A. D., or, according to Sarat Ch. Das' *Chronology*, 20—30 years earlier, and I believe that it was under him that both sculptures and inscription were set up. Votive offerings of this nature were mostly made by the kings, not so much for their own spiritual benefit as for that of their parents, as we learn from the *rt/gal-rabs*, and my belief is that the king caused the figures and inscription on the Maitreya Rock to be set up for the spiritual welfare of his father, who may have died when he was in Western Tibet. This supposition at once explains the use of the word *bTsanpo*, as Nyima-mgon's father was the last of the *bTsanpos* in the family, and the word *btsan* was actually part of his name, *Lde-dpal-'akhor-btsan*. It is of some interest that, in the Inscription, the wish is expressed that the sculpture may be a means of blessing to the people of Western Tibet. Apparently, the king wished to please his new subjects with it.

The result of this examination of the Inscriptions is that they must be most probably dated c. 950—1000 A. D. and must be assumed to be by *Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon*, the conqueror of Western Tibet, for the spiritual benefit, in the first place, of his father *Lde-dpal-'akhor-btsan*, and secondly, for that of his new subjects. In any case, the probability is that they are earlier, and not later, than 1000 A. D., and refer to some Central Tibetan king. At the same time it is difficult to see why any king earlier than *Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon* should have taken an interest in the village of Sheh, as it apparently became the first capital of Western Tibet after its conquest by him.



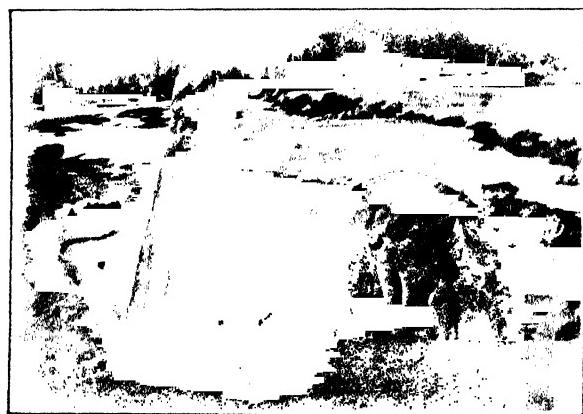
Ancient stone figure at Changspa, Leh.

Photo: Dr. F. E. Sharpe.



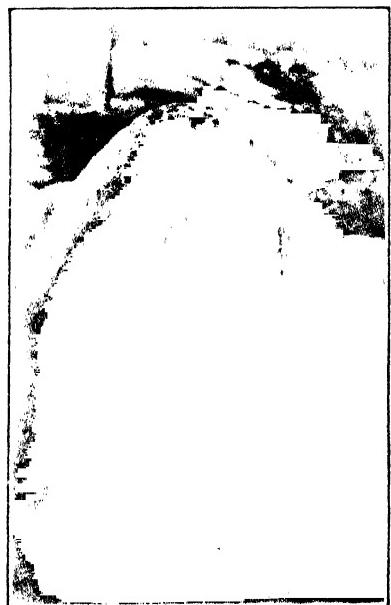
Image of Maitreya in the garden of the
Moravian Knitting School, Leh

Photo: C. Bernard, Lieutenant, French Army.



Ancient stone figures on the Yarkand
Road, Leh.

Photo: Dr. F. E. Sharpe.



Ancient stone figure by the brook,
Changspa, Leh

Dr. F. E. Sharpe.

INSCRIPTION No. III.

This inscription is carved high up on the rock below the castle of Sheh, above an image of Maitreya, and can only be read with the greatest difficulty, even with the help of a field glass. It is impossible nowadays to get close to it. The following is bLo-bzang-Thar-rnyed's reading of it :—

Tibetan Text.

dkon mchog ysumla bataste, phyog cu gyal khangs myo zanggi bter chos khal ga phulbai byang lha byamsbai nyu ku rdo 'abar ('abur?) gi mchodpa dang ku sbob ; kho chengyi zhir myig tsang cing byorbar byas skyong dang tsangyis (or : skyongba tsangyis) en skarba

Notes.

A translation of this is impossible, as it is evident that it has not only become more weathered than the others, but is also written with a more careless orthography. From the few words, which can be made out, it looks very much as if it dated from about the same time and referred to a similar object.

dkon mchog, &c. The first line means 'looking at the three highest beings' (Buddhist Trinity) *phyog[s b]cu*, the ten regions.

byamsbai (or *pai*), of **Maitreya**.

rdo 'aburyi mchodpa, 'offering of a stone statue, image.'

myig tsancing, probably 'the eye getting clear'; *myig* instead of *mig* is a case of the ancient orthography.

skyongba tsangyis, 'by the protector, by the Tsanpo.' Thus, the king at Sheh would appear to call himself Tsanpo, as a descendant of the famous Tsanpos of Tibet. The term may perhaps, however, signify a name of Phyag-r dor, similar to the form Thub-bstan-skyongba.

APPENDIX.

The Age of the Buddhist Stone Images of Ladakh.

All the stone images of Ladakh are in relief. They are found on the living rock as well as on raised slabs of stone, and are in varying states of preservation. The following have come to my knowledge :—

(a) *Outside Leh*. — The images at Dras; the famous Chamba (Byamspa) at Mulbe; the medallion at Sadpor in Baltistān; the rGyalba-rigs-lnga at Spadum in Zangskar; the images at Kartse in Purig; a stone with sculptures at Tingmogang; a similar stone at Saspola; several reliefs on the living rock at Spitug, the stone abbess at Nyemo; the Vajrapāṇi at Daru; the Sman-bla and figures near the castle at Sheh; the Maitreyas at Igu, with ancient frescoes close to them.

(b) I am told by Dr. F. E. Shawe, who made a collection of photographs, that in Leh and its environs there are a great number of them. Of these the best known are :— four stones with images on the Yarkandi road; one stone with several sculptures at Changspa; three stones with single figures about the brook near Changspa, and another in the village; one figure at Gonpa, above Leh; an inscribed figure in the garden of the present Moravian Knitting School; one, painted red, near the palace of Leh, close to one of the former city gates; one on the plain, south of Leh, in a *mani*-wall among a large number of *mchod-rtens*; one at Skara, below Leh; and one below king bDe-khan-nman-rgyal's *mani*-wall on the Sheh road. This last has figures on all four sides.

With regard to the date of these figures we can safely say that they are never made nowadays, and, according to local tradition, it is a long time since they were made, a fact which does not hinder the people from still worshipping some of them. As a few of them have inscriptions, it is possible to assign approximate dates to them. The figures thus made dateable are the following :— The Maitreyas at Sheh, c. 950—1000 A. D., as shown above; the Sadpor reliefs (pictures and inscriptions, *vide* Miss Jane E. Duncan's *A Summer Ride through Western Tibet*), c. 1000 A. D.

from the orthography employed ; the Dras figures, with inscriptions in Kashmiri *śāradā* characters, most probably of the Kashmir Buddhist emigration to Ladakh, which was at its height 900—1100 A. D.; the Vajrapāṇi at Daru, c. 1250 A. D. (or 20—30 years earlier according to Sarat Ch. Das' *Chronology*) ; the figures at Spadum in Zangskar of the time of the Mons, before the Tibetan conquest, which took place c. 950—1000 A. D. ; the figure in the garden of the Mission Knitting School at Leh, c. 1000 A. D., from the accompanying inscription. On the whole, although one of the dates is as far forward as far as the thirteenth century, I feel much inclined to believe that the year 1000 A. D. should be taken as roughly the date of these images.

I would draw attention to the striking similarity which many of these sculptures have to the ancient Budhhist images at Gilgit, one of which is reproduced in Biddulph's *The Tribes of the Hindoo Kush*. And although the art was continued for some time under the rule of the Tibetan kings of Leh, I feel much inclined to believe that it is Pre-Tibetan, and probably Dard in origin. At any rate it is Indian.

The inscription on the Maitreya at the Knitting School, Leh, runs thus :—

Text.

nga zharba
ma shii bardu rje
sam chodching rkyan
bai bsodnamskyis
grol bya sem

Translation.

I, a blind one,
Until death
May offer high thoughts and
Through the adorning [religious] merit
May (or will) be delivered, the soul . .

Notes.

rkyan is probably for *rgyan*.

Signs of age in the Inscription are : three inverted *i* signs; *ching* instead of *cinc*; and the form of the *sh*, which reminds us of *zh*.

**THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL)
IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE.**

1654—1670.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 210.)

PARTING from them, my boy & I tooke Councell wth way to steere ; My boy advized a back way, for that y^e people of that Contrey were verry bad, and theires a Towne 12 Corse [*kōs*], wth is 6 English mile of ; Theire we will goe & buy p̄vitions, wth we did, And after Travelled 17 days wthout touchinge at either towne or howse till we caime to y^e great Citty Guzzurratt. These Contreys [Rajputana] are not as others, but haue many Kings. Some haue not aboue 600 people feighting men vnder them, some 5000. I got safe to Guzeratt, tho very weary of all my Travells. This was y^e first iunct money [*chungam*, custom, poll-tax] I paid, otherwise cald head money, soe much for a Man & doble as much for a horsse.

I lived in that Citty 17 days privatt in a brammonists [brahman's] howse, by reason my sarv^t told me I must live as his sarv^t if I intended to travell safe in that Contrey, wth I did, for in those parts they are great Enemies to a Xpian.

They Mervelled to see a whiteman, never seeing one before in that Contrey, Caused my Man, then My Maister, to say he bought me in the Bloches Contrey, & I was his slave. Next morning, I rideing out to water wth my horsse, y^e people stareing on me, A Naagg [*nāik*], y^t

is a greatman, mett me, And askt me in his Lingua who I served, & followed me home to y^t howse I lodged at, being I had not the Lingua. My man, then Master, discorsing wth him, y^e Naagg demanded wth Lingna I could speake. He told him I was but a new sarvt & could speake noe Lingua. Then, S^d y^e Naag, how doe y^u vnderstand him. He replied, by Signs. He was verry ernest to buy me, but my Man put him of, telling him I was his Brothers sarvt. The cause of my staying soe longe amonge them was, Wee could not Travell, They being in warrs one wth an other.

I had not scaped Sellinge but y^t my boy was trusty, w^{ch} is rare of a Cannarry [Kanarese], for y^t Contrey he was.

From Guzeratt to Brampoore [Burhanpur] is 400 Leagues. I was 4 Months in goeinge it. When we caime to Junkann [custom-house], I lighted of my horsse & gote on y^e Ox, w^{ch} carried y^e boy & things, & the boy mounted On my horsse as Maister Att seuerall villages, for theire was noe Cittys on the way ; forts theire weere, but we went out of the way to misse them. In every 40 Leagues theire was Junkanns [custom-house officers], who tooke head money. Wth much troble wee past, My man haueinge y^e Lingua, but I not. And the people weere verry inquaissitive what I was, being a white man, w^{ch} was rare in y^t Contrey. When we caime wthin 60 Leagues of Brampoore, my Man told me, this is y^e great Junkinn Towne called Halloe [Halabas, Allahabad].

When we caime wthin sight of the towne, beinge on the edge of a hill, S^d my sarvt, Maister stay here, I will observe if we can miss the towne. I told him he knew it was daingerous to goe out of y^e roade way, but left it to his discretion. Mr, S^d he, I beleive yor money is almost gon. I s^d, by tow such Cotte [Bhāī, tu sach kahāī], Brother, thou speakest trewth. S^d he, after we had Consulted together (but I had y^t about me my sarvt knew not of), we haue a way we may passe, but if not, y^u haue freinds at Brampoore, & y^u shall pawne me heere till y^a send releife. After we had refresht or selfs, my boy said, Haw'dow'ea'noun challa [Khudā kē nām, chalō], Lets goe in the naime of god. Am'ar'ra ser'vp'ra bout'bos'hey [Hamārā sir īpar bahut bhōj hai], I haue, s^d my man, for he was gray wth age, A great Charge vpon my heade. Am'ar'ra', Jou'row char, be'te Amorra Zam man hey [Hamārā jōrū, chār bē!ē, hamārā cūmīn hai], My wife & Children lie at stake for me to yor freinds if y^u get anie hurt. Hodah io'hey [Khudā ik̄ hai], S^d he. Theirs but One god, Se'de'ra decking'ga' [Sīdhā rā dikhāēngē], w^{ch} shall direct vs y^e right way. When we had past y^e towne Holloe [Allahabad] towards Brampoore [Burhanpur], we mett wth a Company of horssmen, w^{ch} had taken 24 Marchants, w^{ch} had past & not paid theire Junkin money. S^d my man, these are Rogues ; They haue laid wait both wayes, because they knew y^e Marchants would pass by y^e vpper way to save theire Junkin money. Ou'ta' amora' bail away [Uṭhō, hamārā bail aswār], Alight p̄sently [at once] & get vppon y^e Ox. He mounted p̄sently on y^e horsse & rid towards them, And said to me, Ton asta asta pecha hey [Tum āhistē āhistē pichhē āō], com you Softly behinde. Comeinge to them, he knew one of the horssmen, who askt him from whence he caime. He S^d, I caime from Gasaratt, And I and my man are goeinge for Brampoore to buy some swords and knives for such a Naag [nāīk] in Guzuratt whose sarvt I am. When I caime neare, S^d my Man, then Maister, to me, Get y^u a heade, this boy is a foole, & cald me naimes, Telling his acquaintance of me was but small. S^d y^e Man, Kiss was ny marra [kis wāstē nahīn mārā], Why doe you not beat y^e Rogue. S^d my Mr, Ka'poyn'ge' as ham du'han'na o'mar'rā'ga [kyā pāūngā is ham diwānā mārēgā], What shall I get by beating a foole. My man puld of his girdle & gaue it y^e herssman, w^{ch} pleased him well. Tam'cou a 'marra'sad ca'poss [tum kahō hamārā sāhib kē pās] w^{ch} is, When y^u se my Maister, (S^d he to y^e Marchants, who weere for Guzerat), ham is voc'cat dalgeer [ham is waqf dilgir], I am at this tyme sad & Mellencolly, because he sent a sarvt wth me I am forst to be a nurse to. The Marchants replied, & y^e Soldiers, Tom bar'ra sa'fect' adam me' hey'tom better ny gente Kiss wast to mor'ra pass Chocke'ra leta

[*tum barā safēd ādmī hai, tum behtiar nahiñ jāntē; kis wāste tumhārā pās chokrā lētā*], y^u are an Antient gray man ; methinks y^u should vnderstand better then bring a Child in yo^r Company. He tooke his leane, I beinge got a full English mile before them. When my man caime vp full speed a head, he asked me laughinge, ham ho'pe' sad ne [*ham khūb sāhib nē?*], Am not I a good Maister. I told him, yes. S^d he, now its yo^r tyme to be Maister ; I did this for yo^r saife deliverance vnder god. In 3 days afterwards we arrived at Brampoore [Burhānpur], Where I was in safty out of all trobles. The Gouerner theire is cald Dowd Caune [Dāud Khān]⁹⁴ wth whome I had formerly beeene In armes, This beinge in the Magulls Contrey. He treated me verry well, but was Jealous [suspicious that] I had runn away from ye Magull, yet S^d nothing to me, for he knew I could not pass w^{thout} his leane, questioned me many things but I resolved him nothinge. Beinge theire 6 days, weary when I caime but now well refresht, in that tyme caime the french Embassadōrs, who had beeene att John a Badd [Jahānābād], ye Magulls Court, But wth little hono^r.⁹⁵

These 2 Embassadōrs, One from ye ffrench Kinge for his p̄ticuler⁹⁶ to greet ye Magull, One from him for ye East India Company,⁹⁷ in ã 1668, when they Caime neare ye Court, ye Emperror had notis & Wee the English. They caime not in yt state vsually ye Engl or Dutch come in, Soe ye Emperror thought himselfe vndervallewed, And sleighted them, Commanding them stay 2 Leagues from Court when they expected to come to rights. Besides the Embassadōr for the K[ing of] ffraace had Express order from his King to deliver his Letters to ye Emperrors owne hand, w^{ch} was refused. However, the English had leaue to vizitt the fr [French] Embassadōrs & did send them theire tents & other nessarys they wanted. The Embassadōrs, Concluding y^e Emperror affronted them, they p̄vide to goe back, w^{ch} the Emperro^r had notis of, & Commanded them to be brought back wth all theire goods and attendance, Saying, did they think to goe out of his Contrey w^{thout} Leave. The next night The Embassadōrs were assalted in theire tents, robbt of all, 3 or 4 Sarvts kil'd & they sadly affrighted. In this Condition They staid a day or two. But after[wards] Theire Money & Goods were found & restored & they ordered to come to Court, The English accomping. When they caime at ye Court gate, theire armes were taken from them & theire pocketts seercht, But ye Engl went in wth sword & Target & pistolls by theire sides, w^{ch} greived ye Ebassadōrs.

M^d1 This affront was p̄tly ocationed by ye Contrivance of ye Engl, for that, in yt tyme of ye last Dutch warr, ye french caused ye English letters to be given ye Dutch, w^{ch} was delivered into theire hand to be Conveyed for ye est India Company.

They⁹⁸ would [have] p̄sented theire letters to ye Emperror, but they were not p̄mitted. They then desired ye fr [French] father⁹⁹ might interpret them, but ye Emperror Askt ye Engl if they could not doe it, they being in Lattin. M^t White s^d yes, Soe they were delivered to him. The

⁹⁴ This is probably Dāud Khān Qarūsh, governor of Allahabad in 1670. Mr. Irvine tells me he is mentioned by Manusci.

⁹⁵ The author is inorrect. Only one of the French ambassadors (Péber) came to Burhānpur from Agra (not Delhi) in the company of Tavernier, at the end of 1637. I am indebted for this, and the two following notes, to Mr. Irvine.

⁹⁶ De la Bonillaye Le Fons was the King's man. He went eastwards to Patna, and was never after heard of again. He was probably murdered by his hired guard, who mistook his box of books for treasure.

⁹⁷ Péber was the representative of the French East India Company. The story of the embassy is given at length in Tavernier's "Recueil."

⁹⁸ i. e., the French ambassadors

⁹⁹ Mr. Irvine suggests that the "French father" may possibly be Father Busée, S. J., a Fleming, who was in India about this time.

Emassador for ye Company had his desire granted, his deport humble, Soe they weare dismisted,¹⁰⁰ And from Brampoore I travell'd wth them as followes. But to returne to ye Gouerner who stopt me, haueing sent to ye Court to know If I had come wthout license. But they redy, ye Embassadors, I showed the Gouvernor my pass from ye Empr^r, w^{ch} gaue me my liberty, And in 28 Days we arrived at Surratt, w^{ch} is but 60 Leagues from Brampoore. Att Surrat I staid 14 Days, Sr George Oxenall [Oxinden]¹ President their for The East India Company, with whome I had severall affars, And haueing dispatcht, I left it, But he was verry importun[ate] wth me to know how I succeeded in my Jurney into Prester John; but I knew well what I should tell him would be in England before me. But some things I told Mr Rob^t Smith, the Minister.

From Surratt I went to Madderaslepotan [Madras] in Bengall, in w^{ch} is the Kingdome of, Gulcandar [Golconda], Wher are all the Dymond Mines, w^{ch} is A Months Jurney or about 600 English Miles; from thence to MasLepotan [Masulipatam], w^{ch} is 60 Leagues; Thence to Checacull [Chicacol, Ganjam district], a great Citty, w^{ch} hath a Kinge of it selfe, a verry stronge place; Thence to Muscatt, w^{ch} belongs to the Arrabbs, the King of it called Wyley²; Its a place was taken from the Portugalls.³

In that time I was theire, they sent an Armaloe to retake it, but in Vaine, beinge wth loss & shame beaten away. After this, King Wyley [the *wali*] sent out 11, Elleaven, vessels wth about 800 Men to ye Portugalls Contrey, to a Citty calld Dew [Diu], A stronge fort & Garrison. They Landed, stormed & Plundered the Towne & brought 800 Prisoners away, Men, Weomen & Children, 8 Chests of Silver, 4 Chests of Gold. This I, John Cambell, se brought into Muskatt in the Month of August 1668, All don in 14 Days.*

This was great dishonor to ye Portugall affaires, they cominge to looke out for the Arrabbs & had gon on ye Persian Coast and tooke A little money Dew to them for custome out of Conge [Kung] and returned, On w^{ch}, S^d ye kinge of ye Arrabbs in my heareinge, They haue com out to seek me; I will now goe to seeke them, And offerd me great rewards to goe wth him, but my answer was, they weere Christians And I was one, Soe could not gratify his desire.

Att my beinge in Goa, in Anno 1668, was a Portugall ship; the Capt. of hir⁵ had not only ye Command of the ship but all ye Ladeinge. And beinge One day at a Gameinge howse (for play at Dice⁶ is much vsed theire), And theire beinge many fydalgoes [fidalgo], verry rich, this Capt^t fell in to play wth them, And lost not Only ship, but all his Ladeinge, w^{ch} don, in great troble he went to a Surgeon, And caused him cut of his left hand close at ye wrest; ye Surgeon hausinge don his Dewtie, he, ye Capt^t, bought a box iust fitt to hold ye hand Cut of, & it being put in & ye Key in his pockett, he tooke it vnder his Cloke & went to ye Gameing howse, wheere was at play ye fidalgoe who had won his ship & goods wth a great heape of money & gold

¹⁰⁰ In a letter from Surat to the Court of Directors of the East India Company, dated 26th March 1667, there is the following account of the French embassy: — "The Transactions of the French have bin much wondered att by all, one of the Two that came hither and went upp to Court, he that was sent from the King of France with letters Recommendatorye hath bin much slighted and att last is gone away alone, some say to Bengalla, Leaving his consort, who after a tedious attendance, finding none that would prefer his cause to the Kinge, in regard he came Empty handed, was Returning hither, but was rob'd of all he had, one dayes Journey out of Agra, and Received three or Foure wounds, which comming to the Kings eare, tooke pitty on him, sent for him backe, gave particular order for his care, and afterwards admitted him into his presence, Received his petition, Gave order he should be paid out of his Treasury what was pretended to be taken from him." — India Office Records, Factory Records, Miscellaneous, Vol. 2.

¹ Sir George Oxinden was President of Surat from 1662 till his death, on the 14th July, 1669.

² The author mistakes the Arabic title *wali*, a governor, for a proper name.

³ In 1650.

⁴ In a letter to Surat, dated from Ispahan, 5th Sept. 1669, Stephen Flower refers to "wt. had past at sea between the Portugalls and Arabs in this Gule" and to "the Arabs proceeding at Dio," but there is no record of the occurrence, as given by Campbell, in 1668.

⁵ Hiatus in the MS.

before him, & he haneing ye Dice, ye Capt puts downe his box & sd, para esta. At it, sd ye fydalgoe.⁶ Theire gr^t play is passage, & its ye play theire, if ye Caster throw awmes,⁷ ace & a tray, he pays doble ye stake he throwes at. The fydalgoe or K^t threw awmes, ace & a tray, & seing it, said, open yor box & tell yor moneyness, pushing his heape to him. Hold, said ye Capt., & tooke out ye Key of his box & opend it & showed his hand & ye arme it was Cut of, & s^d, y^u haue lost both yor hands. They caine to Composition & ye Cap^t had his shipp & goods and doble his vallew. The Cap^t is now in Lisbon, And knowne to me Jn^o Campbell & many others, who se his hand & Arme it was Cutt of.

At the same tyme in Goa, I was Carried to see a fathur, counted a holly man of ye Order of ye Pollistians,⁸ borne in Dunkirk, who had beeene deade almost 12 Monts before, but lay aboue ground to be seene by all y^t caime; & of seuerall Nations round about theire caime, viz^t And see him lie as at ye tyme of his death vnbowelled, or wth out anie art don to him saue ye shaneing his face every weke & paireing or Cutting his nailes, wth a Naturall fresh Culler. The faime of it caime to ye Pope, as nothing don almost in Anie p^t of ye world, but theire are padreys to give advice. The Pope sent for the boddie of this Padre; ye Pollistians who are ye richest Scotietie of fathers in ye world, denied it. But the Pope demanding his right hand, it was granted & Cutt of, Jn^o Campbell then p^sent, and it bled as fresh as if it had been Cutt from ye Boddie of a liveinge man. They indeavord after to p^serve him from Corruption but could not, soe 3 days after he was buried.

One day, I sittinge wth King Wyley [the wali], 3 brave Weomen psoners weere brought before him; 2 Weere Brammonists [Brahmans] wifes, theire husbands being kilde. The 3^d was a Portugall, w^{ch} I freed. She told me she had to pay me what I laid out, & Did 3 doble, when I delivered her in Conge [Kung]. Sd ye Kinge to me, will you free thother two. I sd this is a Christian & I an other, They Gentues.

Two of King Wyleys Sarri^s being by, wth Katars [daggers] by theire sides, These 2 Brammonist weomeu drew each a Katar from them & before ye Kinge rip vp their Bellys & Dyed.

The next day, about 8 Clock in the morninge, theire Arrived A ship of ours from Bumbay, 220 Leagues by Sea from this place. Wyley ye Kinge of y^e Arrabbs sot for me & s^d, w^t doe y^u make this ship to be. I S^d, English. Welcome, S^d he, y^{ts} or Brother. Comeinge into ye rode, his Ladeinge was rice & Butter & Coquer Nutts, w^{ch} was great Relieve to yt Contrey, for, Except ye great Ones, they eate only Tammer [*ta'ama*], vizt., Dates & fish. The contrey is very barren, & haue great respect to ye English yt furnish them wth p^sitions, for they are often vexed wth fammin.

Capt William Hill was commander of the vessell & was verry glad to meeete w^t an Englishman theire, yt king Wyley esteemed, & could Speak ye Lingua, for ye Capt could not. I delt wth the Kinge for him, for his Rice Butter & ye rest of his Ladeinge, & truckt wth ye Kinge for 350 psoners, Both well pleased, And for my Curtesey Kinge Wyley p^sented me wth a Black boy & Capt Hill a Dymond Ring, w^{ch} I accepted.

From Muskatt I went to Conge, in ye Pertion Dominyon, wth my Lady psoner, for soe she was, & hir husband slaine at Due [Din]. I was much made of & gratified.

Thence I went for Commerroone [Gombroon], w^{ch} the English haue A factory at,⁹ & Receive halfe Custome of it for theire good Service in helping ye Pertian to take ye famous Ormous, Once

⁶ Mr. Donald Ferguson suggests the following reading of this passage — “The Captain put down his box and said, ‘Para esta’ [‘I wager this — *caiza* = box]. ‘Atido’ [‘Done!’], said the fidalgo.”

⁷ i. e., ambs-ace, double ace, the lowest possible throw at dice.

⁸ i. e., a Paulinist, the local name for the Jesuits. John Campbell seems to be alluding to the shrine of S. Fran^cois Xavier, whose body was removed to Goa in 1554. According to his wont, Campbell alters dates to suit his purpose so that he may appear to have personally witnessed the events he describes. The right arm of the Saint was sent to the Pope in 1614. See *The Voyage of Fran^cois Pyrard of Laval* (Hakluyt ed.), Vol. VI. p. 61, f. n.

⁹ The English factory at Gombroon was established after the taking of Ormuz, in 1622. In a letter to the Court from Surat, dated 2nd Nov. 1638 (*Factory Records, Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2) the Council remark that they have a “Right to the Gulph of Persia and port of Gombroon, by a firme League and Covenant made and Concluded att the Expulseinge the Portugall, which cost our nation both men and money to purchase.”

soe ominent in ye portugalls tyme, from whome It was taken by y^e Persian,¹⁰ That its said of it; If y^e world were a Kinge, Ormous was ye Dymond in it.¹¹ But now in the Dust, And Bossara [Basra],¹² w^{ch} is 15 days Jurney from Commaronne, y^e great port.

Wee had not beeene at Commoroou 2 days, but advice caime Capt. Hill was arrived at Due, haueinge soe good a voyage by my means. Mr Gayrey,¹³ y^e March^t, not knoweinge me, writt to M^r flowers¹⁴ that if such an English man caime, discribinge me, wheere he had Cognizance or interest y^t he would serve me, though, S^d he, meaninge me, he did me a discortesy once, yet hath he now served me beyond my Expectation & made me treble mends [amends].

The discortsey I did him was in Conveyinge Sr Humphry Cooke out of India,¹⁵ for M^r Garey would [have] sent him to y^e Company because he traded in India in y^e Companys goods.

My Lord Cooke¹⁶ his father being sent by y^e King of England to be Gouerner of Bumbay, a Towne Given by y^e Portugalls as part of y^e Dowrey of or Royall Queene Katheran,¹⁷ lyeinge 24 howers Saile from Surrat & is an Isleland and the best port in India The Christians haue.

My L^d was sent wth 600 English Soldiers, & y^e vice Roy of Portugall had order to deliver it to y^e s^d L^d Cooke, but tooke snuff [offence] y^t he was not treated or respected aboard y^e Engl vessell as he expected, set them a shore in a part of y^e Isleland wheere they had noe fresh water & would not d^l [deliver] the Towne Bumbay till most of y^e s^d 600 soldiers wee[re] kild wth a flux by drinking brackish water.¹⁸

Mr John¹⁹ Flowers factor for y^e India Company at Spahawne [Ispahan] & Commaroon, My Kinsman, I left him att Commaroon & went for Spawhowne & by M^r flowers order had y^e vse of y^e Companys howse theire for my entertainint.

¹⁰ Ormuz was taken by Shāh Abbās, with the help of the English, in 1622.

¹¹ Thomas Herbert gives the proverb in this form :—

" If all the world were made into a ring,

Ormus the gem and grace thereof should bring." — *Some Years Travels*, ed. 1638, p. 105.

¹² The Company established an agency at Basra, in 1640.

¹³ Henry Garey was Acting Deputy Governor at Bombay in 1637, and assumed the title of Governor after the death of Sir Gervase Lucas, in 1638. He was never confirmed in the office, and was censured by the Court for his arrogance in 1671.

¹⁴ Stephen Flower, with whom Campbell claimed kinship, was a factor in the E. I. Co.'s Service. He was " second " at Gombroon in 1633 and " Chief " from 1635 to 1639.

¹⁵ I can find no foundation for this story.

¹⁶ Sir Humphry Cooke was Governor of Bombay for the King, from April 1665 to the end of 1666, during which time there was constant friction between him and Sir George Oxinden, the Company's representative at Surat.

¹⁷ In 1631 Bombay was ceded to the British Crown as part of the dowry of Katherine of Braganza, wife of Charles II. It was transferred to the E. I. Co. in 1666.

¹⁸ This statement is incorrect.

¹⁹ Stephen Flower was the Company's servant at Ispahan and Gombroon. It is strange that if Campbell really were his kinsman, that he should mistake his Christian name. A paragraph in a letter from Flower to Surat, dated Gombroon, 21st January 1639, shows Campbell in a very different position from what he leads us to infer, at this time :— " On a Junke y^t (in Company eight more from Seinda) lately arrived att Congo laden with goods, etc. provitions, came passenger one M^r John Cambell who had served y^e King of India as a Gunner seven or eight yeares and having obteined licence to depart for his Country (to w^{ch} his freinds had often sollicited him) his resolutions was to travell overland for England, (wth wt monseys etc.. hee had gained in y^e time of his service to y^e value of 7 or 8000 rups.) towards w^{ch} hee was advanced as farr as Scynda, when in Company of about 40 persons more in y^e Caphila, they were unfortunately mett wth by y^e _____ who robbed them all of their money and goods stripped him to his shirt and hardly escaped with his life, in w^{ch} miserable condition at his arrivall Scynda finding noe remedy, hee chose rather to proceed on his Intended Journey though with nothing than returne againe to the service of his old Master, and about six dayes since repaired hither for my assistance, upon y^e relation of which sad story, I have taken his present condition into consideratiou, and furnish'd him with w^t necessary to carry him to England, whero God sending him safely to arrive, I have hope of receiving from himselfe or friends satisfaciou, in two or three days more he departs in Compa : a Portugall Padre to Busara whero I shall Command him to y^e fathers courtesie there for his safe proceeding to Aleppo, and there noe doubt but y^e consult to whom I shall alsoe write will befriend him in what further needfull, It would bee a shame not to commiserate and assist in such cases as this our owne country m^{en} from whose misfortune God defend us." — *Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 106.

But from Commoroon I tooke in the way to Spawhawne [Pilar] wh^{ch} is 70 Leagues from Commoroon, haueing a note from Mr Jno^r flowers & ye Commendore of y^e Dutch, we English haueinge noe howse theire but the Dutch had, yt I might haue entetain^t theire; 3 days I lodged theire wh^{ch} was in the tyme of Gouerners fast, soe could not speake wth him. But at night, After I had spooke wth him, that night caime a letter from Mr flower to me,²⁰ Telling me of Monsier Demingoes invitation of all y^e English, french & Dutch, wth sarvants, to a feaste he had made, being y^e french Agent at Commoroon.

The french Agent at Dinner Dranke to y^e Dutch Commendore; y^e Dutch Commendore had noe sooner pledged, but s^d to Monseur Demingo, I am poysoned. S^r, S^d Monsier Demingo, theirs noe poysin in my howse, & tooke vp the same Glass & drank of it. He had noe sooner dranke but he fell alsoe to vomitt, & S^d, I think its poysin indeede. This broke vp y^e Mirth, they both sick. Thanks be to god, noe other taste^d of it, But had it beeene given when we had after Dinner begun to drinke as vsuall, all y^e Company had beeene lost.²¹

We Examined y^e Attendants & found it to be Contrived by y^e great Bannion [Banyan] who ought [owed] y^e Company of y^e Dutch 30000 Tomaine [toman], every tomaine 30 Ropées, wh^{ch} is Engl^{ish} money 3l. 7s 6d. And Thretinge y^e Boy who fild y^e wyne, He Confect y^e Bannyon, did hyer him for 20 Tomaine, & gaue him the poysin to poysin his Maister & all the Company. This boy or slau^e went away p̄sently wth y^e Banyan & his sonn. They herd they went towards Larr. Mr flower writh to me at Larr & desired me for his honors sake to lay hold on them, for we haue laid hold of all y^e rest heere, telling me y^e Cause as aboue. They comeing to Larr, herd of a strainger there, tooke me for a Dutchman Soe tooke y^e Gouerners howse Vockelee [vakil]²² I had my spies abrode, wh^{ch} told me they had giveu & p̄mist [the] Vockeell money & p̄mist to turne Moores [Muhammadans]. On wh^{ch} I tooke horsse & went to y^e Gouerner howse, A mile from my Lodgeinge. When I caime, I sent word into y^e Gouerner I desired to speak wth him. He gaue me leave to com in to him; his naime is Augungee [Aghājī].

When I caime in & wth my armes, not vsuall for a Strange [r] to doe in yt Contrey, One of his men tooke my Armes, y^e Gour bidinge me sitt downe. I showed my letter. S^d he, I cannot vnderstand it. I told him my grevance. Is theire, s^d he, such persons heere. I told him, yes, in [the] Vockeels howse. He sent for [the] Vockeel & the 3 persons wth a gard to bring them Before he questioned them, he s^d, poyntinge to me, Doe y^u know this man. They said noe. But theire songe was they would be mad^e Moores. The Gour askt theire reason, saying, we never knew a Gentue or Banyan turne Moore, but for some great falt. The Casa [qāz] being by, S^d, can y^u deny to make a heathen a trew Believer. I, heareing this, s^d to y^e Gouerner, shofhna me danney che gusta [shumā mi dāñi chah gujātā], doe y^u know what y^u say. S^d he, be'ne'she'en [bā nishin], sit downe, be not soe force. I s^d these are y^e men, & I charged him wth Shaw Sollyman

²⁰ From Flower's own account, given in the next note, the 'feast' seems to have taken place at Gombroon and not at Isphahan.

²¹ In a letter to Surat, dated at Gombroon, 10th April 1669, Stephen Flower gives the following account of the poisoning affair:—"The heats being entred many begin daily to fall sick of feavours & others dead, among whom y^e Kings Vizeere Sonne to his Exceeding greife, bat 3 dayes since & it were well if this were the onely hazard yt^r. poor Europeans are subject to in these parts, where many come to untimely ends by poison, both of English & Dutch, by theire owne Servants and y^e brokers as too apparent appears and hath bin proved by a late accident and Example of that nature, hapned in y^e house of Deputy Marriage, where himselfe and y^e Commadore by drinking and tasting a cupp of beare had almost lost their lives as might the rest of y^e Company (among whom I was present) had itt not pleased God by a timely discovery to prevent soe greate an evill, for wh^{ch} and all his mercies and deliverance this or at any other time I hope I shall remaine truely thankfull, for a particular relation and more satisfactory acco^t of this sad story I desire you will be referred to the verball repetition of S^r Nicolo Vidall and others." — *Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 105.

²² I. e., took refuge in the *vakil's* house.

de Roy [Shāh Salaimān's *duhāt*].²³ When he herd y^e word, he rose vp & made 3 Sallams towards his kinge. I told him, these are y^e men haue, or would [have] beene y^e death of 25 March^{ts} besides theire Sarvants; y^a haue them in yo^r Custody ; looke to them ; I am goeing for Spawhawne. Sa y^e Gouerner, two of these men looke like gr^t men. Pray, s^d I, question them, He then questioned them & said, tell me trewth, Ile make y^a Moores, & then y^a are fre from all harme. He found they were guilty of w^t I accused them of, And Committed them to a Roome ; See I left them. The Gouerner att ptinge [parting] S^d, y^e Engl, Dutch & french are or good freinds, Shall we loose 3 places for 3 men, in w^{ch} are Thowsands.

Next morning he sent for me betimes & askt me wheere I was bound. I sa^d for spawhaun. He askt what service I would command him. I told him noe service, but desired Good iustice. He is Gouerner of Conge, Commoroon & Larr. While I was thus talking, caime in 3 wth chaines & Locks on theire hands. Said y^e Gou^r, how like you this; I S^d well, & y^t y^e Engl Dutch fr & portugalls would Command his good justice.

S^d y^e Gou^r, I haue don this on yo^r word & caused a letter to be written & I to set my hand to it & my seale alsoe, y^t if I had abused them wthout cause, the ffranks must give acc^t of it, and that before I left Spawhawne.

Next morning they were sent away wth 20 horse as a gard to Co^mroon, wth a post before, w^{ch} would goe y^t in 3 days (I was 7 in comeinge), & demanded of me to stay till answer was returned. The 5th day after came answer from y^e Gou^r [of] Co^mroon that they had hanged the Commendores slane, And 2000 Tomaine was gathered by y^e Banyans, 1000 for y^e Gouerner of Co^mroon, y^e other 1000 for y^e Gouerner at Larr & 80000 for to be deviled amoung y^e Marchants [who] were theire, ffranks, To sau^e the Banyans lives; & never anie Banyan to Broak or serve in business to y^e Christians On that Coast, w^{ch} is 100^{ds} of thowsands to theire losse, for they did all business for y^e factories.

From Larr I tooke my Jurney for Serash [Shīrāz], 140 Leagues from Larr. First I came to y^e padreys theire. Next day caime y^e English Broker to me & told me It was not fit I should be here & Carried me to y^e English howse.

The Gouerner of Serash bring a great Caune [Khān], yt is Lord, & for some reason then not knowne, forsake his meane^s. And b^took him to a Mountaine privat, & for 2 mo had a day noe more then y^e quantity of a penny white loafe. His desire after so^tme tyme theire was to know how all did wth his familly. A spirritt apperings to him told him he could not goe to see his family wthout he would doe one of y^e 3 thing when he caime theire he would ppound to him, vizi^t lie wth his Mother And Daughter or be Drunke. He answered ye last he would Doe. He went to his howse & great p^{ri}ntions was made, And being Over come wth drinke he lay wth Mother & wth Doughter. Nex morning, Remembering what he had don, tooke his Doughter, it being in the tyme of y^e raines, and Threw hir into a great Tanke. She was taken vp by others & knowne to be such a Ld^a doughter. The Ld, after he had throwne in his doughter, went to y^e Justices & told him what had past, & y^t he judged himselfe not worthy to live.

The iustice & Governer past it by, but sent for the Mother & Doughter & askt if it was as the Ld had told. They both denie it. In caime y^e Men y^t took vp y^e Doughter out of y^e tanke, & herd what they S^d & Quest how she caime theire; y^e Ld^a hir father made answer I carried hir theire. S^d y^e Doughter, father now I must speake, begg yo^r pdon, I confess you forst me to it. A counsell was held & y^e Ld^a was put in Irons. His Brothers sonn, then Gouerner, S^d, my vnkle since he left y^e Gouern^t hath drank bangg & post,²⁴ w^{ch} makes him talk Idley.

(To be continued.)

²³ Fryer gives the same spelling 'Deroy, an interdict.' It is an appeal to the King for justice.

²⁴ Bhang and post, a preparation of opium.

THE CHUIHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Continued from p. 83.)

Dānā pakī bahut karé, vāgān tōn pharké,
 Aggē dhar lēānād, nāl lēād pharké.
Ethi pakay lēānād vēkhgē na kharké.
 Unhān ghuiri lai bhaaj Atārā langhē;
 Kiti kam Khudā dē phir hōngē chāngē.
 Soñkē rang ih nō jihē Maulā rangē.
 Jiyā öyā gaj dā kikar lāmāt lagai,
 Oh rāj Nishanri ánkē, milē öhndā Jāmu nāi,
 Jitnā hāl harvāl si sab ákk suināi.
 Pir pahilē pahar lāl jē phir javān hō jāc,
 Digar nāl 'áj̄ hai budhhā salidē.
 Dihāt langhē sk, tric umar kundā.
 Kūnā nāl halim dē kōi bayi dānāi.
 Apni áp samblāt̄ō, maiñ kakndā jē nāi.
 Ik siyāh partkē, jā arz suñāi
 Asūn tān tērē galām hān, Dānā piyā kohāi,
 Chilē chayhiyā tir hai pasittā na jāi
 Aggē bhācēn na pōhē, hōldhmbē jāi.
 Chilē sijtān jōyān pājē nām suñāi.
 Pir siyāhīn nān puchhdā ; Dānā ki farmāi.

Na kuchh oldā chukigā na churā kād,
 Na us zāmīn kikī sānnā dānā dalatā.
 Tuhānnā sārī khobar hai tussān utthān ö
 Rang siyāhī dā uldī dā, kuchh chārā na challē.
 Jichar kū vasdi ghar rich hōwan tharthalli
 Ik dān na layli khāwand dē gallē
 Gal thēn jakaugā kudhdhā na kuchh tanhdī
 gallē.
 Udāt rang siyāhī dā, kuchh chārā na challē,
 Ihō vas siyāhī dā (jir ji !) kuchh mān māh
 gallē.
 Bālkē pār dīl vich dalal gurāri
 Pir jaikambar chal gayā dā gayi sāldi vāri.
 Dhainsar hātē chal gayā tarlākē dē rāti

A hundred horsemen marched—they rode in force,
 And Dānā gave them orders strict to seize
 And chain him; thus to bring him quickly, nor
 Take time to look again towards him, but
 To hasten back. They spurred their horses—
 passed
 Atāwā, all the Lord's great works are good.
 Those lines above are beautiful that he
 Has painted — Lo a thunderstorm is here.
 How will it pass? They to Naushera came.
 And first a barber Jāmu met them. Straight
 He told them all about the priest, the man
 Who had been boy till just that morning, since
 The boy had in a trice grown man, assumed
 The form of age in the afternoon, and so
 Was called old man — all in a single day
 He reached the third stage — youth and mid-
 dle age
 He passed, and entered white old age. To talk
 With calmness is the property of age
 And wisdom: therefore said he calmly, 'Sirs,
 Beware of harm. I do not seek to vex
 Or injure you.' A soldier then approached
 And said, 'Your servants we—Judge Dana calls
 You. Fixed upon tht bow the arrow lies:
 It cannot miss you. If it does, 'tis ours
 To throw again, to make it sure.' Disciple I
 Have made this song. Repeat it. Asked the
 priest,
 What wants your judge with me? I have not
 bought
 His property; I have not stolen his goods;
 He gave for me no pledge that I might have
 Sufficiency of corn. What reason is
 That ye have come from him?' The soldier's
 face
 Grew pale; he nerveless grew, just like a
 shrew
 That while she stays makes neighbours trem-
 ble, but
 A day comes when rebellious she denies
 To do her husband's will, and he grows fierce,
 Rough seizes her, and casts her out disgraced.
 So stood the soldier, (Praise the priest),
 abashed;

Müsâî nañhâ maut thûn chârê kûñh bhâjîn
 Ûrak qabré jâ pégâ khâ gird pôhâjî
 Aiđé aidé ohâl gayé maut kisi nahîn tâlî.
 Bâlê pîr dil vich phir pâli jallî
 Akbar hâtô chal gayâ, ohhad gayé né Dilli
 Edi jad paikambarân jinhâñ dhartî mullî

Ronn pichhê laq mōe né, kôi mat na challî.
 Bâlê pîr di sunî gayî dargâh-i-faryâd,
 Likh chitkhat Rabb ghâlliyâ phir kitâ yâd.
 Baithâ tu kyâñ Bâlê, phir hò nadrâz,
 Jô tére khâss murid né vich bishhtâna eðs,
 Phir chhattrê khâñ nûn mulañgê khângê nâl
 mizâkh
 Chelé sifstân jbyâdân kar ijij niyâz.

Il Châlêdân richhôn nikalkê bañmasalli buhindé.
 Beimân must dê dujjâ dôzakh jandé,
 Pichhôn parakhâtângé jadâñ agjé na jândé,
 Châtâ akhâ Musallîb, kyâñ dôzakh râñ jândé.

Kôl Pir dê bâlikâ Multânî Shâh dêyé hunkârâ
 Shâh Bâlê dâ bâlikâ laggé bahut piyârâ,
 Athân kihâñ rich shahr hai kull sabbhô sârâ
 Jhandâ talî té dhar lawâñ, na laggé bhâd.
 Pâñv vaggé Râvî dâ, Pir ji, kôi beshunârâ
 Har Râvî vich ôrh sâñ, rûh jâc sârâ
 Vichhê Dâñâ rûh jâc shurâ puchhañwâlâ.

Chelé sifstân jbyâdân kar aqî niyârâ.

All shamed and helpless, of authority
 Divested. Bâlâ priest thus thought in heart
 'Both priests and prophets, all have run their
 race ;
 Mine may be ended. Men like Dhainsar died,
 And those that ruled three realms are gone.
 One ran
 From death, even Moses — sought he hard to
 hide
 From death in all the quarters of the earth,
 But no, he fell at last in weariness
 Into a grave. Such men have died and failed
 To conquer death.' Then Bâlâ thought of
 God.
 Great kings like Akbar died and left their
 state
 And Dilli all behind. A great prophetic host
 Have graves that fill the world. They
 fought once here,
 Espoused a woman's cause, but perished ; all
 Their plans were frustrated, but God did hear
 Our Bâlâ's prayer. The Lord a letter wrote
 To him. He summoned him, and thus he
 said,
 'Why sitst thou there, O Bâlâ, why shouldst
 thou
 Be so disconsolate and sad ? Be sure
 Thy followers will enter heaven : for food
 They shall have rains, yes, more than need
 demands.
 They shall be fed to all satiety.'
 'Twas his disciple made this song with all
 Humility. Some traitors are that false
 Desert the Chuhras, and become great knaves,
 Musallis. Vainly thus they go, for neught
 It boots, and then, besides, to hell they go.
 Grieved will they be some day when from
 God's face
 They are excluded. 'Why, Musallis, why
 Go straight to hell ?' the true disciple asks.
 Multânî Shâh, disciple, stood beside,
 A follower true of Bâlâ, much beloved,
 Who said, 'The length and breadth of this
 good town
 Is eight full miles — I will take up the flag.
 It is not great beyond my strength to raise,
 And then the Râvî will o'erflow its banks
 And flood the town and judge. In it I'll
 drown
 The town, and Dâñâ, too, will perish with
 The rest, because he dared insult our law.'

Pir kēhā Multānī Shāh, Phir Rabb thiñ darsyé,
 Sai manāñ dē jōr nāñ ik sa'at jariyé,
 Rabb pāc nē muāmalé sir uttē dhariyé
 Shahr vassé ammē jammé chal gallāñ kariyé.
 Bālē pir nahāké pōshāk hai pāc
 Bōk band amari bādalā narma safedā.
 Zarī dōshālā pahinké pag sōhiñ buddhā.
 Bāhar dyd pīr ji, lōg dékkai seiji
 Bālē pir charhn nū ghāyrā mangayé.
 Utte ghattiāñ urdkāñ zīn dōshālē pōwāé,
 Muñh kandiyālē dékē hath rāgiñ pāc.
 Charhē rikābī lat dē, hath hanné pāc.
 Charhtul! Bālē pir dī phir lākhi na jāc.
 Hundi sārīñ akh na, sūraj lachkāc.
 Jōñ rāt dēvallī Hindūdāñ charāg jagāc.
 Chelé sūrat dītthāc, tāñ sifat bāndāc.
 Bālā pir charh pēyā, jhagré té turiyā.
 Budhwār dā rōz sī māh Bhādrōñ, charhiyā.
 Dhuppē tūrdē ñh vē jinhāñ aukhiāñ bāniyāñ

Ohnāñ sāyā baddal hō gayā phir pāni diāñ
 kaiñāñ.
 Thaindē jhōlē rā dē nālē sukhmaniāñ.
 Trae pīr dī bālké Rōshan Shāh té Multānī,
 Trījā Hujrat Kailāñwālā, Mihrōñ bhar javānī.
 Chhinwēñ kaiyōr charh sī nāl Dādu Bhāgū
 giyāñ.
 Sabbhō hath bannhākē, phir 'arz sunāi
 Asūñ té téri madul hāñ, Pir ji, tū kyāñ uñāñ
 jānē.
 Chelé sifatāñ jōriāñ, parh nām dhibāñ.
 Pir kahō phir Bālakāñ, tusiñ sabbhō hō mundāc.
 Chār aóc kisi nāñ kañ pārāñ rāndē?
 Sāddē thāñ pakarķē Dānā kināñ mangē?
 Rang sōhiñ ñe nē, jihrā Maulā rangē.
 Paindā álcē itnā jéun khiyālē langhē,
 Kitē kum Khudā dē jihrē hōngē change,
 Pir Nishauréon tui pēyā chauhri sī Gujrañ-
 wālē
 Uhnāñ jākē dassiyā Shām barwālē,
 ñh pār kitthē hai jih dē nāl baihndā suñ dārē.

With prudent judgment the disciple made
 This song. The priest said, 'O Multānī Shāh.
 Let us fear God. Even though our strength
 could lift

A hundred maunds, we must show patience.
 God

Has sent this grief. Let us bear up like men,
 And let the town live prosperously in peace.
 We go to talk with Dānā.' So he bathed,
 And dressed himself to suit the interview.
 A silken girdle donned he on a coat
 Of velvet; vest of white, a silken shawl,
 A turban beautiful. Thus from his house
 He came. They flocked about him. Then he
 called

For's horse, caparisoned in gold — rich shawls
 Were placed for saddle — bridled was the
 steed,
 And Bālā caught the reins. He lightly placed
 His foot in stirrup, laid his hand upon
 The pommel — but in writing who can show
 The grace of Bālā Pir? Eyes could not stand
 His glory — even the sun could not endure
 To look. 'Twas like (the) Dēvallī with its light
 Of many lamps, which this disciple saw —
 He therefore wrote this song. So Bālā rode
 To this great controversy. Wednesday it was
 Of the week, the month of August. They
 who make

A journey in the sun must needs have care.
 A cloud o'ershaded hūn; small drops of rain
 Began to fall, a gentle cool breeze blew
 Refreshing. Happy was he; with him were
 Multānī, Rōshan Shāh, and Hazrat of
 Kailāñwālā — doughty wight was he
 By grace of God, for ninety-nine crores
 Of soldier angels, Dadu Bhagu too,
 The bards, did follow him. With folded hands
 They made petition to him thus, 'O priest,
 We are your helpers, be assured.' This song
 A true disciple made. O read and seek
 With reverent heart the Name. The priest
 but said :

'O children mine, all young you are, untried;
 If one receive a wound who then shall share
 His pain? My capture and not yours.
 Will please this Dānā. Only hues that are
 God made

Are beautiful.' The journey, though 'twas long,
 Was quickly made. Whate'er the Lord does
 must

Uhnán pēi siphāhi shara' dē, lē gayé sirkārē.
Chaulhrē uthón uthiyā hath hathán tē mārē.
Chelē sīstān jōriān paṛh nám chitārē.

Jitnā tappā Sainsāriān diān ghōriān sab
mangwāiān,
Muñh kandhēdliān dékké uttē kāshāiān pōrliān,
Chayhē rikdī lat dē hath vāgdiān chdiyān.
Ghōriān jāt valāiyati bhar lén kāldiān.
Atāvē dē mundh jdkē wārhān mil āyān.
Chaudhrī ottē jdkē mur dē duhāiān
Chaudhrī puchchē pīr nū Tēri ki sī saldh,
Ačōn tū anpuchchiyāl jāndā sdi khwāh ma
khwāh.
Assin tān jaṭ gōwār hān kōi bē nawā.
Dhāiān pānūlē gunnhē dīc dā gāh.
Ihō sāddh karm hai, pīr ji, dhaklé dā rāh.
Main tē baddhā jāndā tōr Dillī dī rāh.
Sipāhi akhān chōudhrī kyān paindēn saurā
Othē aīdā kam nahiū kōi lammā chaurā.
Ajōi mur drēgā, nahiū dār Nishanurā.
Othē muslē dē bāt hai ki matlab térd?
Pīr akhē chāudhrī tu kachchī khā layi
Dānā khāltē pawēgā térd pīnd ujāri,
Kahnā bhānnādē lūn nūn rich dharkē thāly,
Allah dā kam vēkh khān na kar tū kāhī.

Chaudhrī akhē pīr nū varh nālē challé,
Panj sai mōrī ghōri hai kar pavēgi hallé.
Vārh pichhān nū mor sān mērā vas na challé.
Tē khāli jē main mur giyā ki karāngā pallé

Be good. The priest had left Naushera when
The headman came from distant Gujrānwāl.
Shān, village watchman, went and told him
all.

'Where is,' he cried, 'the priest that used
to sit

And talk with you within the rest-house here?'.
'The minions of the law have seized him, Sir,
And taken him away to judge him.' Up
The headman sprang and struck one palm in
grief

Against the other. The disciple made
This song, and thinks upon the Name. Forth-
with

From all the land the Sainsāris' mares were
brought,

And bridled all and saddled, so forth rode
The Sainsāris, firm grasping with their hands
The reins. The mares were good, of Afghan
breed

And swift. So near Atāwā met the bands.
With threats the headman faced the captors
of

The priest, and to the priest, he said, 'Why
did

You go and leave us? Say, what were your
plans?

And why, if forced to go, you told me not?

All rough and ignorant are we, but fear

We know not, No. We bruize our flour when
you

Do knead it, and we knead our rice when you
Do thrash it. This our way. O priest; our
law

Is force.' The priest replied, 'A prisoner I
Bound hence for Dilli.' Quoth the soldiers,
'Sir,

Be patient. No great business calls him there;
To-day he will return — it is not far
From your Naushera. Only here we have
A slight dispute about religion. For you
There is no business there.' The priest
said, 'Take,

My friend, no foolish step, for Dana will
Become your enemy, and ruin your home.
Why break a lump of salt in earthen plate?
Wait on the Lord, nor e'er impatient be.'

To whom the headman, 'We our band retain.
Five hundred horsemen have I, fighting men,
Without them what can I? And if I go
Without you to my village, what will then

*Ik siphâkâ daurke mur Dânâ kôl jâé,
Jitnâ hâl hawâl sî sabh âkh sunâé,
Pir pahîlê pahar bâl hai, mur jawân hô jâé.
Digar nâl zaif hai, buddhâ sadhâé.
Dihârâ langhdâ ik sî traé umar hundâé
Nâlé sâyâ baddalâé, phir kanîâ pâin.
Aggê téri marsî jô izan farmâin.
Shirkân bâj â jâ, ih bhalâ hai, bhûti,
Râh Môhammud yâr dâ Rabb âp baniyâ.
Zamin té âsmân kahndé Rabbe âp banâyâ.
Na phir sâyâ baddalâé? Na kanîâ paé?
Jân garbebandâ bâlikâ? Baddal châr dikhâi?
Jân lêayâ ilm Bangâlô, pêya umar vaqâé.
Lôk âhndé auliyâ hai, Dânâ azmâé.
Kârigar sab shahr dé, Dânâ mangwâé,
Shahr dé vich bâoli othê lô jâé.*

*Bhariân ohdiââ pauriââ baneré bhanwâé,
Koi ambar kâgatââ Dânâ rangwâé,
Utté satté râni dé bhûr kakh na châé,
Rukh qâbâ nûn sâmhûâ, mirâb bañâé.
Kandhââ labbaï pakiââ, pûnî phirwâé.
Jitnâ âshig Rabb dé Dânâ châ likhwâé.
Hukm Dânâ qâsi dâ phir koi na möré,
Masit duâllé hûnjiyé, ittââ té rôré.
Keli phar kasturîââ Dânâ cha rôrhé.
Jihârâ langhâ koldôn oh daurâ jâé.
Bâlikâ dhindé pstr nûn, sun murshid mérâ,
Imminâbâd dis pêyâ, huñ é âgnayâ néré.
Dô gharjââ nûn machangé sab jhagré té jhéré,
Putîâ vas mulvâniââ, hô jân chauphéré.
Parhâ hôe Qurân dé, rirâiyatââ né jehré,
Qurân té kitâbââ dé, pâr ji, maslî haïn ukhéré.
Sâddâ lahû-khushk hô gayâ, addâ addi béré.
Sannâ khôl sunâ khâun, ki pallé tére.
Ikkâ sachchâ nâm hai, sahaiñsi ndin.
Rabb dittâ sî jor Har Nâshak tâin,
Usé apnâ âp jupâ légyâ, nikké, vaddé tâin,
Ohnûn thammân vichhôn bauriâ, Rabb jâtâ tâin.*

My people say? A soldier ran to tell
The tidings of the day to Dânâ, how
That coming this same priest was but a boy,
And, strange, at noon he was full grown, and
then
When evening fell an old old man was he.
And people called him Old Man — just a day
Had seen the changes three. And on the way
A cloud o'ershadowed him, and rain came
down
Refreshing. 'Do your will; you may;
command.
But do not spiteful be. It will not serve.
Muhammad's soul, God's friend, was made by
God
Himself. This heaven and earth proclaim.
But how
Did never cloud o'ershadow him, nor rain
From heaven refresh him?' 'Nay,' said
Dânâ, 'Nay.
A babe is he who's newly born. The clouds,
How could he summon clouds? As for his
form,
He may have learnt in Bengal arts for this.
The people say he is a man of God.
I'll try him.' So he summoned artisans
And led them to a well within the town,
And gave them orders to fill up the steps.
To raze the higher part, and even it
Close with the ground; to dye great spreading
sheets
Of paper, which he laid on the well mouth.
So thin it would not bear a straw's weight.
Then
A paper mosque he made around it, with
Its mihrâb towards the Qâba, and its walls
So brick-like painted, and white-washed, with
names
Of God's most faithful written upon it. For
The will of Dânâ must be done, and none
Dared disobey. He caused his men to sweep
The court, remove all dust, and handfuls sweet
Of fresh *kasturî*³⁶ throw, that passers by
Might tempted be to enter. To the priest
A follower said, 'O hear us, teacher mine.
In sight is Imminabad, quite near; soon will
Disputes arise. The *nullas* will with zeal
Surround us. The Qurân they know. They
know

*Oh aukhā vēlā assān tō, Rabb baurē sahaj
• subhdīn,
Bālikē dīhdē pīr nūn, tū Bālā pīr sadānd,
Atīkhīn pahriñ rōz tū darghē jānd.
Kalma parhēn Oh Ik dā, kam karēn kamdīn.
Gullān karēn Janāb ndl, sānnū azmānū ?
Lōi bhagat Kabir dē ghor sālhū ā,
Ghar ann na sujjē paññān, bhukhē trihāe,
Lōi nē déh gahne chatkē chha sādh rajāe,
Orak qarza déunā, baniyē kōl jāe,
Agge baiñlā baniyā phullān chhēj eichhās.
Lōi dhil na rakhiyā chārh chhēj jāe.
Ihdī kāhlī Rabb nē shitābī jāe.
Sainat kar gayā Dhaul nūn, dharti hildē.
Baniyē dē man vassiyā muñh mammā pās.
Tē Lōi rāngān baurē Rabb dhil na lāe,
Imminābād shahr dē dis pēyē munārē,
Āl lōk hamākē ziyārat dē mārē,
Bhanniān jān kōvārīān var māngānhārē
Var dēo pīrā bandē laggān bahut piyārē.
Pīr murddān dittīān har arz natārē.*

*Chelē siflāi jorīān, purh nām chitārē.
Jitnō qāsi mu'tbar Dānē lēyē sadās,
Sabbhō jākē bah gayē masit dē duällē,
Hēth bichhātlyān shurranjsān galichē nē dālē,
Sāmhē hōkē bah gayē pīr dēkhān dē mārē.
Qāsi kīl masit dē baiñhē mall maidān,
Matā pakkyā qāsiān Shāh Sanjalwalī makān.*

Traditions also -- intricate and deep
Their doctrines are -- our blood is dried for
fear --

We tremble. Tell us plainly if you have
The gift of superhuman power.' Said he,
' I have the One True Name -- which has in
the world

A thousand different forms. God gave great
power

To great Har Nāshak, him who caused all men
To worship him in place of God. Polād
Obeyed him not. He bound him fast in
chains;

From red hot pillars God released him. God
Was then believed in, and even now He will
In this great trouble aid us in His own
Good time.' Then the disciple, ' Bālā priest
Art thou. Thou goest to the house of God
Once every third hour of the day. One God
Alone thou worshipeft and wonders dost.
The Most High is thy friend : thou triest us
To prove us true. Once on a time the Sādhs
To Lōi came, the wife of Saint Kabir.
She had no food or water in the house
And they were hungry, thirsty all, so she
To feed them sold herself, and then at last,
As debtors must, she went to pay, and he,
The Bāniyā creditor already had
With flowers prepared his bed, but Lōi quick
Ascending straight the couch, God heard her
prayer.

And made a sign to Dhaul to shake the earth.
He touched the Bāniyā's heart, who like a
child

Began to suck her breasts. As God helped her,
He will not then delay to succour me.'
The towers of Imminābād were now in sight,
The people came in crowds to see the priest.
The maids to get good husbands made request,
' O priest, a blessing seek we -- husbands good
Whom we may love.' He granted their
requests

As they preferred them one by one. These
songs

Of praise the true disciple made ; he reads,
And still he glorifies the Name. Resume
We Dānā's story. Priests and lawyers all
Sat round the mosque on rugs and carpets
spread

All in the open field, a great concourse,
Desiring they to see the priest. The saint

Tainūn sārī khabar hai, zemīn tē āsmān.
 Piri ihār vēkh dē phir karkē dhiyān,
 Sandalvālī pir dā jā karē didār,
 Rabb tēriān qudratān tu apār apār,
 Ih miyānōn bāhar hai sān chayhi talwār,
 Tē Dānē dē karm hīnē hō gayé karmān ditī sū
 hār.
 Qāzī Sandalrālī nūn lēkē, bahū durāddē.
 Ki kuchh īyā rēkhkē, das aggē sāddē,
 Jhūthā makr pīr dā ki dirā jāgē,
 Bahū hathiyār lūrīgā ki aggē bhāgē,
 Sandalwālī dkhād phir nāl īmān,
 Jhūthā maiñ nahīn ākhndā, jañd chhad jahān,
 Ih khambānwālā sup jē, uḍd chayhiyā āsmān.

Kauñ bañigād māndā, kauñ patārī pāñ.
 Akhē mērī lag jāñ, ni bañō aiyān.
 Sulām kar dē sir o pā, tā kor dē dān.
 Qāzī qassī hā pīyā, roj mathe ghattā,
 Tērē jāhē durindē ghalligā phir chēr uchakkē,
 Tā kī Imminābād dē tukrī hāñ chakhhā.
 Sach nahīn tā dkhād, phir hāt hoi zāhīr,
 Māñā gurīb fayīr jī tukrī mang khāndā hāñ
 chār,
 Bhārēñ kaddh chhad khāñ shakrōn bāhar rāv,
 Vāng bātērē taroph dēñ buñ jāl taiyār,
 Matī lagge dāñkē na jhugē jute,
 Qāzī kāra akāhāñ, pīr nāl oh pūthī.
 Sharā tuñh nahīn sanayhiyā kgāñ chhattrī
 bāñkē?
 Sharā ottāñ sir rāyāl, pēñ puttr nū puchehā.
 Māñādār khāñwālēñāñ chhotre nahīn parwān.
 Hārāñ akhē mardāñ nāñ phīr kull jañān.
 Shams Tabrez pīr si phīr vich Multān.
 Sharāwālī usdī ulfī kholl lōhāñ,
 Piñ jō akhēñ Dāññā, chīzāñ chār harāñ.
 Khāudhāñ mar jāgī, mauhrā ik harāñ.

Shāh Sandal they addressed, 'Thou knowest all,
 In earth and heaven. Try this man's right to be
 A priest by insight spiritual.' He went,
 And seeing the priest he cried, 'O Lord how strange
 And wonderful Thy works! This is a sword
 Outside its scabbard, whetted, ready drawn;
 The fate of Dānā now is sealed; 'tis clear
 That fortune is against him.' Leading then
 Aside Saint Sandal all the lawyers wise
 Interrogated him, 'What hast thou seen?
 How can the lamp of falsehood of this priest
 Keep on to burn? Say, will he fight or flee?'
 But Sandalwālī said, 'No lie speak I.
 As sure as death is sure, he is in truth
 A winged serpent. He can fly aloft
 And touch the sky. There's none can charm
 him
 And dump him in a basket. My counsel hear,
 Be not like children — yield obeisance meet,
 And give him gifts.' The Qāzī straight
 grew wroth.
 He said, 'Away with such as you, you thief,
 You rogue! For nought you eat your share
 of food
 In Imminābād. You lie. You seek to save
 This priest from shame!' But Sandalwālī
 said,
 'Tis plain. I am a poor *fāqīr*; I beg
 My four poor bits of bread from door to door.
 Expel me if you will, but know that like
 A quail you're fluttering — the net is spread,
 And ready for you.' So the Qāzī did
 Not dare to meet the priest in argument,
 But trifled with him, saying, 'You have no law.
 Why did you slaughter sheep? Men give
 their lives
 To uphold the law; a father for it will
 Behead his son. And those that eat the dead
 Must not kill rams. The dead, as all men
 know,
 Are food unclean. Even Shams Tabrez the
 priest
 In far Multān was hanged and slayed, because
 The law abiding willed it.' 'Dānā,' said the
 priest,
 'Four things unlawful are; poison that kills,

Dujjā paisā dhā dā, tr̄kyā gusa harām,
 Tē murdār khūkē mukarnā chauthā tū harām,
 Panjwaqt namāz guzārdāl bah andar parhdā,
 Taīdāsh karēn Qurān dī kitābdān parhdā
 Murdār akhiān naaz jō āub us wal qadam nahīn
 dhardā,
 Wāz karēn Rabb dā munh thān kalma parhdā.
 Dānād, kulma parhdā munh thān tuddh Rabb
 nahīn yād,
 Murdār atthē pahar khūkē lēindā rakēn swād.
 Sira khādēn sātē dā vaddā bhar rikāb,
 Murda dabbañ tān dēnndēn jē lē lēnd askāt.
 Ih farmāda Rabb dā murdādā nūn kadān kadi
 lagī zakāt.
 Kēhri gallōn Dānād, murdār thān hōnā tū pdk?
 Iqānē nū pata lug gayā murdār dā tōlā lish
 kānā.
 Chihreñ dā pīr hai, kōi bard saiyanā.
 Gallān karē Janāb dīdā, vēkhō Rabb dā bhānā.
 Parhiyā kisi masit na, na vaid sujānā.
 Pīr dkhād, Dānād, hath Rabb dē bāzī,
 Zātān Rabb nahīn rījīdā, bhagatān tē rāzī.
 Aīdā aīdā maulārī, kitthē khāngādā tuśāddā,
 Pichhōn dassān khōlkē, qirāfāt tuśāddā.

Tarkhānān dē gharān kādhkē tuśān ih paik
 kambari sāzī.
 Chēlē sifstān jōriān kar himmat bāzī.
 Dānē dkhāyāl pīr nūn, "Pardāndār hō jaīn
 Gusa bardā hardān hai, mat kuchh qahr kardān
 Mihne décēn sīrē dē, paikambarān nūn
 tarkhān bāndēn.
 Tainān tān chhañ sān, patā lākē dikhān
 Ālar Hindā lōk sī, nit nām dhihāwē,
 Qasab karē tarkhān dā, thādkur nit bañdāwē,
 Shahr vich khar vēchāl, nit rōzī pāwē,
 Ohdā putr Ibrāhim sī, ik din bēchan jāwē.
 Tāngān rassā ghatikē iħur bāzār lē jāwē,
 Qimat lēdāwē dēoħħi, lāħ kħaħ lēdāwē
 Ihħu aggé paikambari kħi parh sunnāwē.
 Chēlē sifstān jōriān parh nām sunnāwē.
 Chaudān tabay jħoħkē Rabb āp bāndē.

A price paid for a daughter when she weds,
 An angry outburst, and the use of food
 Unlawful. Carrion you eat and straight
 Deny, for five times in a day you pray,
 You read ; you search your old Qurān ; you
 read
 Your books, and will not even look towards
 A creature dead. You preach ; the *kulma* too
 You oft repeat, but only from the lips ;
 Heart of godliness you know not. Carrion
 Is sweet to you the whole day long. You love
 The taste of food that's given the seventh day
 past
 A burial — a full dish you devour, nay
 Interment you forbid unless the fee
 Is paid. Is this God's will ? Who forced a
 tax
 Upon the dead ? Is this not proved to be
 To eat the dead ? Speak Dānā ! Dānā
 learned
 What real carrion is — he saw the priest
 Was wise, and in his heart he said, ' He speaks
 Of godly things — how wonderful the ways
 Of God are. See this man has never
 learned
 In mosque, or been to school to any wise
 Philosopher ! ' Dānā,' the priest said,
 ' Learn
 That he whom God gives victory will win,
 He hates our castes, and worship true he
 loves.
 Great teachers ye, but where are seen your
 shrines.
 I tell your errors, those that lived before
 Your prophet, made them idols false just like
 Your carpenters. That's where your pro
 phetship
 Arose.' The true disciple without fear
 Composed this song. Said Dana to the priest,
 ' Begone ! Excite me not to sin, for rage
 Is sin. You taunt me with the gift of food,
 My right to the interment of the dead.
 You call the prophets carpenters. You must
 Full satisfaction give.' The priest replied,
 ' Adar, a Hindu, once addressed the Name.
 A carpenter was he, his work was sale
 Of idols, which he made and hawked about
 The streets. His son was Ibrāhim, who went
 One day to sell his idols. He tied a rope
 To the idol's leg, which dangled from his
 arm,

Khwādhish pabi paikambar di muñh thiñ
farmādē
Oh dā rāh rēhā rich kutab dē, duniyād tē
pichchōn dē
Paikambar raddē tussān thiñ kōi parh sunādē,
Dānād, na zamin āsmān sī na qalam siyāhī
Ādam paidā karn di Rabb khwādhish pādī.

Hayād hukam firshtēdān, mitti aīrādī.
Agl challī phir Rabb di mihān gō bāndī,
Sēhūd but bāi qnyād, chihra bandā nahin.
Aggē pāk Janāb dē, unhdān arz sunādī.
Allah Ta'lla ākhīyād phir apni zabānī
Pānī rallōn vēkhō lkhān kar shishī nishānī.
Pānī firshtēdān dīkhīyād Bālā pīr di peshānī
Rāzī firshtē hō gayā, kam hōe asānī.
Chuhṛā aggōn milān dī ih pakki nishānī.
Paikambar rāqīdā pēyād ākhndā ēn, phir apni
zabānī.
Nindiyād karēn paikambarān haīn ummat
nishānī,
Jinhān dittē aggē Rabb dē putr qurbānī.
Kar kujhē qiblē ; sāmīkān kadhī kard miyānīn.
Allah dñābā bhējīyā kiti mihrbānī.”
Pīr jī dkhī, “Dānād, hai burā imānwālād.
Jān tān masla ākhnān, rich rakhnālād
Traikai dharke tōliyād Rabb nē sidq paikam-
barā dā sārād,
Paikambar akhiān bathiān, putr lago sū piyārād.
Kāhdā rah gayād Rabb dā oh bhagat piyārā ?
Chelē sīstān jīyān kai 'ayl niyārā,

Bālā nūrī pīr sī Lal Beg dē autār.
Rahndā taraf Kashmir di kōi rich ujār.

As to the market place he carried it.
The price rose twofold and the boy made
more

Of profit than his father. Tell me now
Was ever greater saint than Ibrāhīm?
The true disciple has compiled this song
To praise the Name. The fourteen spheres
God made,

One half the earth, one half the heavens. He
made

Them all in wisdom — so the prophet wished
God said and it was done. The prophet's
soul

Was then in Polar star so high. It came
To the world. A greater prophet let us name
Than yours. O Dānā, neither earth nor
heaven

Existed then — nor pen nor ink was there
When God made Adam. Angels at his word
Brought earth, and fashioned it : the face
they could

Not make. Therefore to God himself they
went

With a petition. Then the Most High God
Spake thus himself, ‘Look into water pure
And steady look.’ They saw great Bala's face.
With joy the work was all completed. This
Is why, when anything that's great must needs
Be done, a Chuhṛā's face is omen good.

You call your prophet great, but only great
Because you say it. Said Dānā, ‘You speak
ill

About the prophets who have children still
Among us. Gave they not their sons to God
In sacrifice? Unsheathing knives they gave
Their sons to God with faces Mecca-wards,
But God in mercy sent a ram instead.
The priest said, ‘Dānā, good and faithful,
you

In such discussion keep a window in
The wall. You err. God has with perfect
scales

Weighed prophets' faithfulness; a bandage
On his eyes did Ibrāhīm the prophet place,
Because his son was dear to him. Was this
Done like God's lover true? Ah, no!
‘Twixt right

And wrong the true disciple makes, with care,
A difference. He sings God's praises. Priest
Of light was Bālā, who became Lal Beg
Incarnate. Lived he in Kashmir, among

Dôvè usdâ bâl sâñ, rahiñ mâtâ nâl,
 Nau dâñu pañg dévté Rabb lai layâ nâl.
 Matthê tikkâ lâkâ vêe unhdâ dhâlî,
 Jiné mâtâ pahînkâ dhâti parnâ luâ,
 Dérâ Bâl pâr dê, jâ karn sawâl.
 Tu Bâl pâr bhagat hai, sâddâ vart upâr
 Jô ghar di jâdât si, pâr sabbhâ lai vaggé.
 Shahr vayâ jâkâ rukhâ bâniyâ dê aggé.
 Vechâ nâl liflde hath dâne laggé,
 Pir partiyâ kahâ nâl, ghar jag suraggé.
 Bâlê nuri pâr né chhe chakkî chuhdi
 Pir âhnâdâ kafli nû mérâ sâlh rajdiñ
 Loh Mâli mâtâ dhar ditti, pareâl pakdi.
 Ann pakkâ par dhâr si, rahi kamî na kâlî
 Ab rasâi jiéñâ lô, mérâ Thâkur sâñ.
 Chelé siflân jôriñ, parkh nâm suñdiñ
 Sâlh khâñ nûn d' gryâ karkâ Rabb di âs,
 Rôjî khâñ nûn vekhkâ nâl, riñlhdâ nûñ mds.

Aseñn té Bâl pâr samijhâd sâhi koi Rabb
 dâ dâs.
 (Chelé siflân jôriñ hó bê visrlâs)
 Aseñn té suniyâ sâñ bhagat tu koi Rabb dâ
 bhâdâ.
 Airâ val bahâdôk ki kitôi kârâ.
 Huñ tâñ jâkâ mangdâ, koi râj dirârâ
 Mâs pakkâkâ phulâ kâñ, jag kar khâñ sârâ.
 Sâlh challé ruskâ kaun manduñhârâ.
 Chelé siflân jôriñ kar 'aql niyârâ.
 Bâl dâ nuri pâr si manduwan jâñ
 Miliyâ jâkâ sadhuñ lammé qadam chalâ,
 Miliyâ jâ ujâr vich us arz sunâi,
 Bhukhâ duniyâ dhâr hai, phir vich lukdi.
 Mérâ kunkâ chalé chhañkâ ki dil vich di.
 Chelé siflân jôriñ, parkh nâm suñdiñ
 Sâlh aggân partikâ phir suhan sunâi,
 Dô têrâ ghar bâl nû châr dâghé pâñ
 Jé sat vârî khwâlhish hai tâñ mör le jâñ.
 Jé Rabb piyârâ tuñ nûn tâñ bâl khôvâñ.
 Pir mandukâ sâdhârûn mur ghar val dyâ,
 Bâlak dôvè khedde bâhurâñ mangwâdâ.

The ruins there. Two sons he had, Mahin
 Their mother lived with them. Nine genii
 And angels five God took with Him. They
 had
 The sacred marks upon their foreheads —
 Threads
 And rosaries they had, and garments used
 By holy men. All in this guise they came
 To Bâlmik's house. They said, 'A priest of
 God
 Art thou, O Bâlâ, give us food our fast
 To break.' The priest took all his house-
 hold goods
 And sold them in the town to purchase corn
 Enough to satisfy them. Home he came,
 And set six mills agoing. 'Kafli, see,'
 Said he, 'the men of God be satisfied.'
 Then Mother Mahin cooked their food upon
 The fire. Enough there was and more. 'Now
 come,'
 Said Bâlâ, 'dine, ye men of God, my friends.'
 This song the true disciple made — tell forth
 The glory of the Name. Those godly men
 Sat soon to dine, with hope in God. 'It is
 But bread,' they cried, 'There is no flesh,
 We thought
 That Bâlâ was a servant of the Lord.'
 (Without a fear the true disciple sings.)
 'We heard thou wert a mighty man of God.
 And hast thou entertained us with such food
 As this is? What is this that thou hast
 done?
 At some king's door we might have begged
 for alms.
 Cook flesh and feed us, make a sacrifice
 Complete.' They rose dissatisfied. Who
 could
 Restraine them? Reason's eyes had then the
 true
 Disciple when he made this song. A priest
 Of light was Bâlâ, therefore ran he quick
 To plead with them. He met them in the
 wilds
 And made request. 'There are a many men
 That wander in the world. Why did you not
 Taste my poor offering: what thought kept
 back
 Your favour?' The disciple framed this
 song.
 They answered him, 'Thou hast two sons at
 home,

Pâni garm karâké phir jhôl nuhdé,
 Kar kuthé Allah sâmhîc Shâh kard challâ.
 Mahin mâtâd kôl rékhdi, jis gôl khidâ,
 Naiñâñ nîr na phuñiyâ na gairat khâdâ.
 Bâlkâ hain Rabb dâ, ohdâ lêkhe lâdâ.
 Chéle sifân jôriâñ park nam suñdâ.
 Larké châr chârke dêyâñ dñ dharâñ
 Lûn visâr dôdkhâñ vich marchâñ pâiyâñ
 Jâñ dêgâñ sdn ridikhâñ châ hêphâñ lâiyâñ
 Aô rasoi jiéun lô, mérâ Thâkur sârâñ.
 Gurzâñ sâddiâñ chuk lâ, chal khâiyé chhândâ
 Rahdâri dâ thâñ hai, mat kôi chuk lêjândâ.
 Chor hôwé aggâñ pichhâñ man packhôtândâ.
 Ghar apâñ sambhâlyé kañ chôr sadândâ.
 Pir sâddé nû Dâñdâ, Rabb âp azmândâ
 Chéle sifân jôriâñ park nâm suñândâ.
 Gurz ik maiñ pakarké lê chalnâñ dêré,
 Jâñ maiñ itthe baithâñ tuhadâ pâs valâré,
 Kis khôdâ Rabb nû puttâñ dê bérâ,
 Chéle sifân jôriâñ park nâm radhâré.

Gurzâñ sâddiâñ chaulah chuk ek si vârâ,
 Chukké junâl nûn vêkhsî phir parjâ slârî,
 Jog sapûran hâwégi gal hâwégi niyârî
 Sôbhâ téri hâwégi khulq Allah slârî.
 Pir gurzâñ karké ikatkhâñ kare nazr dhâyan
 Maiñ nûn pâiyâñ nén chuknâñ ik Rabb dâ
 jârmâñ.
 Ghat bâñ bal chukiâñ chhâti gayâ trâñ
 Nau dâñ panj dôrti vêkh hâw hairâñ
 Is chukkiâñ nê chandâñ, sannâñ ik nahâñ mân

Them dress and boil if thou in truth dost wish
 To take us with thee. Prove thy love to
 God,
 And feed us with thy sons.' The priest
 consents
 And leads them back. The boys were sent
 for from
 Their play: hot water straight was brought;
 the boys
 Were bathed: in sight of God the Shâh
 himself
 Did kill them; Mother Mahin, who had held
 Them sporting in her lap, was standing by,
 Nor ever shed a tear, nor sorrow felt,
 Her sons were God's, His gift. This song
 The true disciple made and of the Name
 He sings. The boys were cut in pieces, and,
 The pans being set on the hearth, they were
 with salt
 And yellow dye, and liquid spices, red
 Hot pepper too, well-cooked, and set before
 The strangers. 'Come, my friends, ye men
 of God,
 And eat,' said Bâla. 'Lift,' said they, 'our
 clubs
 Of iron. We will go to dine. We need
 To careful be, for if some one should steal
 Them, we should grieve, and some one would
 be called
 A thief.' Give heed, O Dâna, thus our
 priest
 Was tested by the Lord himself. To sing
 The Name the true disciple made this song.
 'I can,' said Bâla, 'lift an iron club,
 And home convey it, or to guard your clubs
 I'll sit beside them.' Who has given to God
 The flesh of his own sons to eat? This
 song
 The true disciple, thinking of the Name,
 Has made. 'We have,' said they, 'clubs
 fourteen told,
 Uplift them all, the world will see thy might,
 Thy sacrifice will be complete; thy griefs
 Will end. All men will praise thee.' So he
 made
 A bundle of the iron clubs, and said,
 'Lift them I must. 'Tis God commands.'
 He put
 His hands about them, then with effort strong

THE INSCRIPTION ON THE PIPRAHWA VASE.

BY A. BAETH, MEMBRE DE L'INSTITUT.

(Translated from the French by G. Tamson, M.A., Ph.D.; Göttingen.)

[THE original article, of which a translation with the author's permission is given here, appeared in the *Journal des Savants* for October, 1906, p. 541 ff. M. Barth, who some eight years ago, almost simultaneously with the late Professor Bühler, first translated the Piprahwa vase inscription, has examined in it the interpretations which were afterwards given of that interesting document by other eminent scholars; and a translation of his paper will be sure to be welcome to all to whom the French Journal is not readily accessible. Those who are interested in the matter must be aware that the discussion on the meaning of the inscription has been carried on by my friend Dr. Fleet, in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for 1907, p. 105 ff. — F. K.]

THE Academy of Inscriptions was the first to be made acquainted with this short but interesting document.¹ I had the honour of laying it before that body² more than eight years ago, when the steatite vase on which it is engraved had just been discovered. The vase was found under a large Stifpa, near the hamlet of Piprahwa, at the north-eastern extremity of the district of Basti, still in [542] British territory, but only about half a mile from the Nepāl frontier. The following is the text, which I reproduce as I then received it from Dr. Führer through M. Foucher, and as it was accepted till quite recently. I add the translation that Bühler³ and myself gave of it immediately, almost at the same time and independently of each other:—

yanaam
iyam salilanidhane budhasa bhagavate saki sukutibhatinam sabhaginiikanam saputa-dalanam.*

"This receptacle of relics of the blessed Buddha (*is the pious gift*) of the Sūkyas, the brothers of Sukīrti (*or* Sukīrti and his brothers⁵), jointly with their sisters, their sons and their wives."

This short inscription, of which more careful fac-similes that came in soon after had left not a single letter doubtful, and the sense of which also seems at first sight sufficiently clear, has since that time continually occupied the specialists and even been brought before a larger public; for, the daily press deigned to be interested in "the tomb of Buddha," and all that has been written on the subject would fill a volume. Yet, as all these controversies presented only solutions that, in my opinion, could not be accepted, and did not bring forward a single new fact, I for my part did not wish to re-open the discussion. But now a new fact has been disclosed, against all expectation. One of the scholars that have rendered the greatest services to Indian epigraphy, Dr. Fleet, has rectified the order in which the inscription should be read; and from the result thus obtained — a result which, in my opinion, strengthens rather than weakens the position taken up by Bühler and myself from the beginning — he has drawn a different interpretation and far-reaching considerations which his great authority, as well as the minute learning and the confident tone with which he has produced them, [543] might cause to be accepted as established facts. I have, therefore, thought it my duty to take up the whole question again and in some detail. I do not, however, intend to

¹ This article reproduces a lecture delivered before the *Académie des Inscriptions* at its meeting of 15th June 1906.

² *Comptes rendus de l'Académie*, 1898, pp. 146 and 231.

³ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1898, p. 387 ff.

⁴ The two syllables *yanaam* are engraved above the line. Of course, the words are not separated in the original, which forms a single continuous line.

⁵ Three interpretations are possible: the two given above and "the Sukīrti brothers." In support of the second one I know of no other example in epigraphy. For the third we have the case of "the three Vasubandhu brothers," but it is only given in documents derived from China, in which misunderstandings may always be suspected. Thus, the first one remains, of which also there is no exactly similar instance, but which is supported by the analogous use of the metronymic replacing the name. It is at the same time the most natural one, and, upon the whole, the one I deem preferable. It must be assumed that the donors thought themselves sufficiently indicated by what was probably their common surname. — [Compare now also Prof. Hultzsch in *Ep. Ind.* Vol. VIII. p. 317, note 1. — F. K.]

draw up the bibliography of it, which would be too great a trial of the reader's patience. Of the numerous opinions expressed I shall examine only the principal ones, those that are the most characteristic and really original.

The first objection — first, if not in order of time, at least by the authority of him who raised it — came from Professor Rhys Davids.⁶ The word *sukitti*, which corresponds to the Sanskrit *sukṛti* and means "glorious, illustrious," instead of being the name of some unknown person, would in his opinion here denote the Buddha himself, and the Stūpa of Piprahwa would be the identical one that, according to the ancient account preserved in the *Mahāparinibbāna-Sutta*, the Sākyas of Kapilavastu, — here "the brethren of the Illustrious One," that is to say, the men of his clan, — had raised immediately after the Master's death over their share of his ashes. The Stūpa of Piprahwa, which is only about eight miles south-west of Rummindēi, the site of the ancient park of Lumbinī, the birth-place of the Buddha, was certainly, if not at Kapilavastu itself, in close proximity to that ancient city, the exact position of which has still to be determined. On the other hand, Professor Rhys Davids has learnedly demonstrated — and on this point I entirely agree with him — that we must not take too literally the legends that show us king Aśoka breaking open (with the exception of a single one, that of Rāmagrāma, which is not that of Piprahwa) the eight Stūpas among which the relics were said to have originally been divided, and distributing their contents among 84,000 new Stūpas, miraculously constructed by himself in one day at the four corners of his empire. The explanation, therefore, is a very attractive one; it is, at the same time, so natural that it must have presented itself to the minds of all who have dealt with the inscription. And, in fact, Professor Rhys Davids is not the first to whom this idea occurred: from various quarters and immediately after the discovery, it was brought forward in Indian newspapers. Nor have I any doubt that it was considered by Böhler, and at any rate I myself thought of it. If, nevertheless, we both of us set it aside, it may be supposed that we had our reasons for doing so.

Among those reasons I will not reckon the objection raised by Professor Rhys Davids himself, namely, that *sukṛti* is not a current epithet of the Buddha. The fact is that hitherto it has not been noted as such either in Pāli, or in Sanskrit, or in the Prākṛit of the inscriptions; nor is it found among the 81 appellations collected from the *Mahāyutpatti*, nor among the 58 in the shorter list published by [544] Minayev. But we might readily admit that, after having expressly mentioned the Buddha, the author of the inscription should afterwards have referred to him by a simple laudatory epithet. Nor do I attach any importance to the fact that neither to Fa-hian, nor to Hiuen-tsiang, was any Stūpa shown containing relics of the Buddha, either at Kapilavastu itself or in its neighbourhood. But the two following considerations appear less easy to be set aside:

In the first place there is the writing, which is so perfectly identical with that of the inscriptions of Aśoka engraved in the same characters that it seems impossible to separate the two by an interval of more than two centuries. Böhler, who with good reason was ever on the look-out for any facts that might prove an early use of writing in India, simply declared that he considered the inscription to be anterior to Aśoka; but he died, without telling us by how much or why. I suppose that his sole reason was the absence of any notation of the long vowel. But, in addition to the fact that this notation is practised with a certain amount of laxity in the authentic inscriptions of the king⁷ — (it is well known that in the other system of writing which reads from right to left it has never been in use) — it is entirely absent from one of the inscriptions of Rāmgāh-Hill,⁸ which no one has yet desired to date before Aśoka, and it is equally absent from the copper-plate inscription of Sōhgaurā,⁹ with one single exception. And it is this very exception that, as it would

⁶ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1901, p. 397 ff.

⁷ For example in that of Rummindēi. *Comptes rendus de l'Académie des Inscriptions*, 1897, p. 258.

⁸ *Corpus Inscr. Ind.* I. Pl. XV, *Ind. Ant.* II. p. 245. Cf. A. Boyer, *Journ. Asiatique*, III. (1904), p. 485, and E. Pischel, *Sitzungsberichte der Berlin Academy*, May 1906, p. 491.

⁹ *Proceedings As. Soc. Bengal*, 1894, p. 54. — [Now see also *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1907, p. 509 ff. — Ed.]

seem, ought to give us a hint as to what was the real state of matters. The simplest explanation clearly is to see in the general absence of the long vowel the result of an intentional simplification, and to regard the exceptional occurrence of it in the plate as a mere slip of the writer or engraver who at the very end and in this one case only reverted to a practice that came familiar to him, not, as Dr. Fleet wishes, as a sign of the still uncertain use of a newly introduced notation. In our inscription, on the other hand, there is no similar inadvertency; here the simplification is a consistent one, and is moreover justified in this kind of graffiti, where the characters, slender and somewhat cursive, are traced distinctly but very slightly, as if cut with a knife, but yet without presenting either in detail or in their general aspect any trace of those modifications that usually reveal a difference in time. It is certainly rash to judge of the age of a document [545] from simple paleographic analogies. But when, as is the case here, there is a complete identity, not only as to the component parts, but also as to the style, with memorials of the same origin, hesitation is no longer permissible. It would require an incontrovertible proof to make us separate our inscription from the neighbouring ones of Nigliva and Rummindēī by two centuries or more.

This argument concerns only the age assigned by Professor Rhys Davids to the inscription. The following one touches the very core of his interpretation, namely, the description of the Sākyas as "brethren of the Buddha." In Sanskrit, as well as in Pāli, the word that here occurs in the Prākṛit form of *bhati* properly signifies "brother," and in the present case, where it is immediately followed by the words for "sister, son, wife," there is, *a priori*, every probability that it has been employed, like these, in its proper sense. In certain cases it can also be used, by extension, for a very near relative, such as a cousin. Now we do not know of any "brothers" of the Buddha,¹⁰ and the cousins whom we know he had have nothing to do with the matter in hand. For more distant degrees of relationship we have *jñāti*, *rāsiya*, *bandhu*, *sajōtra*, and others, but never *bhrātri*; at most, this word might be employed in such a sense in direct address, but in that case with a shade of familiarity which would be absolutely out of place here. Even spiritual brotherhood does not admit the use of this term; we find *Buddhaputras*, *Sākyaputras*, "sons of the Buddha, of the Sākyā," but the religious language knows of no "brethren of the Buddha." When ascetics meet, they address each other as "venerable one," or with *āyushmat* (equivalent to "may you live long"), never as "brother" and when a monk accosts a nun and calls her *bhagini*, "sister," it is in a very different sense, so as distinctly to mark the purity of their relations. All the more would pious laymen have scrupled to use, in an authentic document, the familiar term of "brother" in connection with Buddha Bhagavat, "the Saint, the Blessed Buddha," the exalted being who in the oldest books of the sect is called "the Master of gods and men." Even for the period contemporaneous with that of the Buddha the supposition appears to me improbable, and I may add at once that it would be still more so if the inscription were of a later date. Professor Rhys Davids asks himself if the sole reason of the sceptics, who feel doubts as to his demonstration, might perhaps be that "it is too good to be true." And, indeed, there is something in this, but there is something else besides.

Professor Pischel has arrived at the same conclusion as Professor Rhys Davids, [546] but by another way.¹¹ He objects to the word expressing the idea of gift or of pious act being understood, although the case frequently occurs, perhaps in one out of every three similar documents,¹² and even though in the present case the word need not really be understood at all. It is so, in fact, only for us, in consequence of the requirements of our languages; in the original it is sufficiently expressed by *nidhāna*, "receptacle, repository," this *nidhāna*

¹⁰ Tradition ascribes to him a half-brother, Nanda, who became a monk.

¹¹ *Allgemeine Zeitung*, Beilage, 7 Jan. 1902; *Zeitschrift der deutschen morg. Gesellschaft*, LVI. (1902), p. 157 f. : *Sitzungsberichte* of the Berlin Academy, July 1903, p. 710, and May 1905, p. 526.

¹² A quite similar ellipsis is the rule in inscriptions on coins and seals, where the name of the king or of the owner is simply put in the genitive, without a governing word.

being that of the Buddha whose relics it contains, as well as that of the Sākyas, whose work it is. Professor Pischel, nevertheless, seeks for this superfluous word, and finds it in *sukiti*, which, according to him, stands for the Sanskrit *sukṛiti*, "pious foundation." No one will deny either the sense of the Sanskrit word or the possibility of the Prākṛit equivalent, although according to the analogies of the Pāli and of the Māgadhi of the inscriptions one would rather have expected *sukati* or *sukāpi*. But all the same the expression is found nowhere in the numerous inscriptions of that period, which are nearly all deeds of gift or of consecration and in which stylistic formulas abound; so we find in them *dāna*, *dānamukha*, *dēyadhamma*, *dhammadēya*, *dhamma*, but nothing resembling *sukriti*. However, passing by these objections, which certainly make one suspicious, we have the translation: "This receptacle of the relics of the blessed Buddha is the pious foundation of the Sākyas, of the brothers with their sisters, with their children and their wives." In this translation we at once feel the halting character in the original of the construction proposed by Professor Pischel. **The genitive *bhatinam* stands in the air.** We are not "the Sākyā brothers," any more than we are "the French brothers" or "the German brothers;" we are "the brothers of somebody." It is necessary that this genitive, striding not only over *sukiti* but also over *sakyanam*, should go on to attach itself to *bulhasa bhagavate*, where it has not even a grammatical connection, — a kind of verbal gymnastics perhaps admissible in the artificial style of the poets, but one which would be surprising in this language of the inscriptions which, though often elliptical and involved, is always direct. For surely this is how Prof. Pischel takes the matter: these Sākyas are the brothers, that is to say the distant relatives of the Buddha; and as he is accustomed to speak out plainly, he asserts as an established fact that the Stūpa is "the very tomb of the Buddha," and that the inscription, the most ancient hitherto found [547] in India, was engraved immediately, or shortly, after his death, exactly in the year 480 B. C. After what has been stated above, namely, that there is little suitability in this fraternal relationship and that it is practically impossible to date the writing so far back, I hardly need add that Professor Pischel's interpretation appears inadmissible to me.

Professor Sylvain Lévi, too, has turned his attention to this patient, so obstinate in not allowing himself to be cured.¹³ Pursuing the course of investigation started by Professor Pischel, he also sets upon the word *sukiti*, but he makes it an adjective corresponding to the Sanskrit *sukṛitin*, "meritorious, pious," and qualifying "the brothers." From the point of view of the dictionary, nothing could be more legitimate; what is much less so is the joining together, in a compound, of this adjective with *bhatinam*. For, in this language of the oldest inscriptions, an adjective which is simply used as an epithet does not ordinarily compound with the substantive it qualifies, unless the two together constitute a standing expression. These "Sākyas, pious brothers," then, are naturally the brothers of the Buddha, which produces another difficulty to which I need not return again. I shall only remark that Professor Lévi, who points out the "awkwardness" of Professor Pischel's construction, proposes another which also is not very good, for with him, too, *bhatinam* is separated in a most untoward fashion from the word by which it is really or logically governed. Professor Lévi gives us the choice of two interpretations. According to one we should have the **relics of the Buddha consecrated by the Sākyas, his pious brothers**, together with their families. This, on the whole, is the conclusion of Professor Rhys Davids, with a less easy construction, and I think I have explained why I cannot accept it. In one point, however, a single one, Professor Lévi has improved it: he has clearly seen the difficulty of dating back this writing to the time of the Buddha, and he has not failed to warn us against the robust faith that allowed Professor Pischel to set it aside. He therefore supposes that the inscription merely recalls a more ancient consecration, and that it was probably cut on the occasion of

¹³ *Journal des Savants*, 1905, p. 510 ff.

a reconstruction of the Stūpa, such as tradition ascribes to Asoka, and, who can tell ?, perhaps by order of the king himself. Out of discretion, in which I have little faith, the promoter of the new consecration would have withheld his name. The improvement is a welcome one ; but all the other difficulties continue to exist : one of them, the epithet of brothers bestowed on the Sūkyas, happens to be even increased, as this qualification was no longer conceivable at a time when the Buddha, in the eyes of his followers, was invested with all his superhuman dignity.

According to the second interpretation, which Professor Lévi prefers, [548] we should no longer have to deal with the relics of the Buddha, but with those of the Sākyas, his pious brothers, who, in the well-known legend, are massacred by Virūḍhaka, together with their wives and little children. The monument, no doubt erected afterwards, as the writing seems clearly to indicate, would perhaps be the Stūpa mentioned by Fa-hian, or one of the numerous Stūpas seen by Iliuen-tsiang on the field of the massacre. The explanation is certainly ingenious ; yet I doubt if it will bear examination, on account of the many difficulties it raises. There is, first, the construction, which, this time, is decidedly defective : with the meaning proposed, *sukitibhutinam* would have to come before *sakiyamān* and immediately after *budhasa bhagārata*. Then there is the absence of all mention of the promoter or promoters of the consecration. The researches in the Stūpa have brought to light no trace of it ; it ought therefore to be found here. On reliquaries this absence only occurs where the inscription, a very short one, is a mere kind of label.¹⁴ For the moment, at least, I know of no other example of it in a formula so fully developed as this one. And the fact is easily explained. The recording of such names was certainly not a case of mere ostentation, on objects destined to be buried deep underground and never again to see the light of day. When we see how on the reliquary of Bhāttiprōlu, for instance,¹⁵ which presents so striking an analogy with ours, there is a long enumeration of names not only of the promoters of the foundation but of all those who took even the least part in it, — and, I will add, when we see how in our own case also, if the inscription is understood as it ought to be, the brothers of Sukirti associate in their work their whole house, — we are bound to reflect that there was in this something more than a gratification of vanity, and that a mystic efficacy was attributed to the recording of such names. The invention of the “pious brothers” does not compensate us for this deficiency.

There still remains the erection of the Stūpa in honour of those Sākyas and the consecration of their relics. Professor Lévi calls it a canonisation, and so it would be, but a strange one. These Sākyas of the legend are by no means the innocent victims that Professor Lévi presents to us. On three occasions, we are told, the Buddha averted from them the vengeance that they had brought upon themselves by their arrogance and bad faith ; on the fourth time, he calmly allowed their fate to overtake them. In general, and in spite of forced eulogistic amplifications, tradition does not deal tenderly with the Sākyas : it represents them as proud, obstinate, and quarrelsome ; it by no means hides the fact that the Buddha had no reason, exactly, [549] to be satisfied with his people, and that, in his case too, the proverb was verified that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. That afterwards people should have been moved to pity by this catastrophe, real or not so, of Kapilavastu, and that Stūpas should have been erected in honour of the victims so as to indicate the traditional locality of the massacre, is most natural. The Chinese pilgrims saw these Stūpas, and the fact that in recent times Dr. Führer took upon himself to invent them anew and to manufacture for each of them a nice epitaph in Pāli, is not a reason for doubting their naïf testimony. But this is a long way from the existence of a worship of relics. For, what we find at Piprahwa is neither a tomb nor a simple commemorative monument ; it is a veritable repository of relics.¹⁶ Even without any inscription, the objects discovered there would prove this,¹⁶ namely, some pieces of bone mixed with *maṅgalas*, ornaments in gold, gold beads, pearls, small trinkets and images, &c., all that is usually found in similar cases. And these relics must have been

¹⁴ As on those of Sōnari ; Cunningham, *Bhilā Topes*, p. 317.

¹⁵ Archaeological Surv. of India, Imp. Series, XV. For the inscriptions, Bühl, *Wien. Zeitschr.*, VI. p. 148, and *Epigr. Ind.* II. p. 326.

¹⁶ See the Report of Mr. Poppe, *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1898, p. 573 ff. Cf. *Archaeol. Surv. of India, Imp. Series*, XXVI. I ; Pl. XIII, XXVII, XXVIII.

of the very first order, for the Stūpa is one of large dimensions ; even now, washed as it has been for so many centuries by the diluvial rains of that region, it presents a structure of considerable bulk, and excavations to a depth of 28 feet were necessary to reach the sacred repository consisting of steatite vases, two of which were large urns of the finest finish, and of a precious crystal casket of admirable workmanship. That this should have been done for laymen — to the number of 9,990 myriads according to the statement of Hiuen-tsiaang — who never passed for saints, who, still for Fa-hian,¹⁷ were only śrōtañpannas, simple candidates for sanctity and such only *in articulo mortis*, appears to me, of all suppositions, the most improbable.

Such was the state of matters when, by a simple remark, Dr. Fleet put things in their proper light.¹⁸ He informed us that, hitherto, we had all of us misread the inscription : that it does not begin with *iyan salilanidhane*. To prove this, he had only to draw our attention to the fact that it must necessarily end with *sakiyānam*, the last two syllables of which are engraved above the line. The inscription is written in a circle round the neck of the vase,¹⁹ and, as the circle was completed before the inscription, the engraver was forced to add the end by placing it above the line. This is clearness itself. That it was not [550] perceived sooner, is owing in the first place to the apparent exactness of the first copies, and next to the fact that the faulty arrangement they gave raised no important difficulties. The copies which Bühler and myself had at first received, indeed, presented the inscription expanded into one or two lines ; we did know, it is true, that it was written in a circle, like most epigraphs on reliquaries ; but it was not till later that we learned that this circle was quite complete, and then the matter had taken its bent. For my own part, I might even plead an additional lame excuse : in my first copy the text began not with *iyan*, but with the puzzling reading *yam* ; the *i* had been taken for a flourish and represented as such in the copy, and in my turn I was naturally bound to see in it one of those symbols often placed at the head of this kind of documents.

However this may be, Dr. Fleet's correction, though late in the day, is none the less certain ; and what definitely proves it is that it removes the last anomalies and difficulties that might still have remained in the inscription. We have in fact now the following translation in telegraphic style : —

" Of the brothers of Sukīrti, with sisters, with sons and wives, — this receptacle of relics of the blessed Buddha of the Sākyas."

Here, everything is in order : the string of genitives, which might have given rise to objections in the first arrangement, is distributed in an irreproachable manner : first, the donors or founders ; then, the nature and object of the foundation, which is the normal construction ; equally normal, as M. Semart reminds us by referring to numerous instances,²⁰ is the genitive plural at the end, *sakiyānam*, to indicate the tribe or sect ; applied to the Buddha, it is a development of expressions like *Sākyamuni*, *Sākyavishnu*, "the hermit, the lion of the Sākyas." So the first interpretation, which Bühler and myself gave, has been confirmed, with the exception that the promoters of the consecration are no longer described as Sākyas. In their own time they were no doubt great personages ; but, as in the case of so many others, we know nothing of them but their name. The detail, however, is not without importance ; for it is not very probable that, at the period indicated by the writing, Sākyā should still have existed as an ethnical designation.

Atel, at the same time, there is an end of the other interpretations that I have just examined. The one first affected is still that of Professor Rhys Davids ; but [551] it, too, is affected, and deeply ; for *sukīti*, having again become decidedly a proper name, but now coming at the beginning, and being no longer an epithet used as a reminder, can no longer indicate the Buddha. Still more impossible are Professor Pischel's "pious foundation of the brothers," and Professor Lévi's "pious brothers," who would no longer be connected with anything. Except as a previously adopted

¹⁷ Translation by Legge, p. 67.

¹⁸ Journ. Roy. As. Soc. 1905, p. 680 ff.

¹⁹ See the reproduction I gave of it, after a copy by the hand of Dr. Führer, *Comptes rendus de l'Académie des Inscriptions*, 1878, p. 232. In this reproduction the outlines of the letters are accurate, but the strokes are too thick.

conclusion, there can be no longer any question either of "the tomb of Buddha," erected shortly after his death, or of relics of the Sākyas massacred during his life-time. These interpretations fall to the ground so completely that I might even have been dispensed from discussing them, if Dr. Fleet himself had not forced me to do so by his attempt to re-establish them, at least partly, by a new interpretation, in my opinion as untenable as the others. As it would have been necessary, in any case, to combat them, it was as well to do so in the order in which they were brought forward.

Dr. Fleet accepts, in effect, Professor Rhys Davids' now so improbable interpretation of *sukhi*¹ as a designation of the Buddha; from Professor Lévi he takes over the latter's general conclusion that we have to deal with the relics of the victims of the massacre. But then the *sakyanānā* at the end can no longer be an ethnical name, as "the Sākyas of the Buddha" would have no sense in any language. So he makes it an adjective, representing it as from the Sanskrit *svaktya*, "suus, proprius," with the meaning of "relations, kinsmen," which the word really has; and he thus obtains the following translation² which I reproduce while preserving as much as possible the order of words of the original:—

"Of the brethren of the Well-famed One, with (*their*) sisters, with (*their*) children and wives, this deposit of (*their*) relies — of the kinsmen of Buddha, the Blessed One."

I shall not return to the weak points, already sufficiently discussed, which this interpretation has in common with the previous ones; I shall examine only those that are peculiar to it, the construction by which it has been obtained, and the manner in which it disposes of the ethnical *sakya*.

And first as to the construction. By merely casting a glance at the above literal version, we notice at once that it is a strange one; that the first part of the inscription and the last one, which are in apposition to each other, are awkwardly separated by the medial clause, the mention of the reliquary. Neither in the Indian dialect nor in English is this clause in its place; in English this place would be at the beginning; in Indian it would be at the end. [552] And what shall we say of the tautology of the whole wording? After having indicated "the brethren of the Well-famed One," was it necessary to add that these brethren were kinsmen? And is it not as if the authors of the inscription had themselves felt the want of precision of the first designation? But then why should they have chosen it? This ancient epigraphic language, anxious to say what is necessary, and nothing but what is necessary, does not usually express itself in this redundant manner.

It will be seen that to bring to trial Dr. Fleet's construction is at the same time to bring to trial his interpretation of *sakya*. I really do not know what he has against this ethnical term. In Sanskrit we find it under the form of *Sākya*; in Pāli we have *Sakka*, *Sakya*, *Sākiya*; the Prākṛits of the inscriptions³ show us *Saku*, *Sakya*, and here *Sakiya* which probably is not to be corrected into *Sukiya*. Of these forms, of which Dr. Fleet has drawn up a very useful list,²² none is suspicious; they are all in conformity with what we are taught by innumerable analogies of the phonetic or simply orthographic variations of these idioms; moreover, they all enter into phrases which correspond without the least discrepancy. Why, then, should we expel this term here, where it fits so well, for the benefit of a substitute which the lexicon undoubtedly furnishes, but which fits so badly? Is it, perhaps, because the tradition gives various and fantastic etymologies of it? We should be carried a long way in following this track. If I correctly understand Dr. Fleet, — for his theory is somewhat complicated and is not easily summed up in a few words, — he does not deny the existence of a nearly similar ethnical term, but he will have it that all the forms in which the name occurs in epigraphy, and, with a single exception, in Pāli literature, arise from a misunderstanding, and should be referred back to the possessive adjective *srakiya*. By dint of calling the members of the community or of the clan of the founder *Budhāsya srakiyāḥ*, "the kinsmen of Buddha," they would finally have been called simply the *seakiyāḥ*. The hypothesis is ingenious, but I doubt if it will find many supporters. At least instances of the use of this prolific phrase ought to be produced, and hitherto, as far as I know, none has been cited, except the one in this very inscription understood as Dr. Fleet understands it.

²¹ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1903, p. 149 ff. Dr. Fleet did not all at once arrive at this translation; another one will be found (*ibid.* 1905, p. 680), with the same interpretation of *sakya*, which is still more improbable. I shall say nothing of it, as Dr. Fleet appears to have abandoned it himself.

²² *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1905, p. 643 ff.

Yet on this frail basis Dr. Fleet would build an entire chronological edifice. In our inscription, which, moreover, does not mark the long vowel — (I have already stated what should be thought of this omission), — *sakiya* would still be taken in its original sense; [553] the inscription must, therefore, be anterior, by at least a full century, to that on the pillar of Aśoka at Rummindēi (the middle of the 3rd century B. C.), in which the notation of the long vowel is established and in which the designation of the Buddha as *Sakyamuni*, “the hermit of the Sākyas,” shows that the possessive adjective has had time to change into an ethnical term. The inscription would, therefore, be far more ancient than any yet found in India. Dr. Fleet does not venture, positively, any further than about half way between the reign of Aśoka and the date generally accepted for the death of the Buddha: for he is too experienced an epigraphist to carry back this writing, without more ado, to the very time of the *nirrāṇa*. Yet he allows us to perform the rest of the journey at our own risk. On the other hand, he does not disguise his hope that, thanks to the light the document has now thrown on the true history of the name of the Sākyas, a methodical investigation into the use of the various forms of this name may lead to important results in connection with the chronology of the books of the Pāli canon. We may wish that such an investigation may be made; but we must give a warning against too hasty conclusions being drawn from it.

One word still as to the construction proposed by Dr. Fleet. I have already referred to the strangeness of it; I must add that this, but not the other anomalies of the redaction, would be more or less attenuated if the inscription were in verse. Now, quite recently²³ Mr. Thomas thought he actually recognised in it a very irregular Āryā stanza, which Dr. Fleet afterwards proposed to scan as an Upagīti [or Udgīti] almost as irregular. It is always difficult to recognise an isolated Āryā, especially when it presents anomalies as great as would be the case here. But the fact is that in Pāli and mixed Sanskrit some are found which are hardly better, and that, if such a one were met with among the verses of the *Therīyāthās*, for example, to which Mr. Thomas refers, it would really have to be accepted as an Āryā. It is true that, in that case, there would remain the expedient, which we have not here, of suspecting the manuscript tradition. Without believing it very probable, I will, therefore, not absolutely reject the suggestion; but I wish to point out that it would in no way prejudice the meaning to be given to the word *sakiyunam*. Whether the latter really corresponds to a Sanskrit Sākya or to a Sanskrit *sakṛtya*, it would still have its first syllable short; for, long ago Professor Jacobi has shown²⁴ that, if Pāli and Prākṛit necessarily shorten the vowel in position, Pāli often and Prākṛit still oftener do not restore the long quantity when position has been removed.

[554] In conclusion, I therefore believe, with M. Senart,²⁵ with whom I am happy to be in entire agreement, that we may admit the following as a definitive translation of our inscription:—

“This receptacle of relies of the blessed Buddha of the Sākyas (*is the pious gift*) of the brothers of Sukirti, jointly with their sisters, with their sons and their wives.”

In short, we must be resigned: the inscription teaches us none of the sensational novelties that some interpreters have thought they found in it; it does not afford us any testimony contemporary with the Buddha, whom it leaves in his vague and legendary twilight, and whose “tomb” it will not allow us to visit; it in no way tends, even indirectly, either to strengthen or to weaken the accounts of the distribution of the ashes, or of their removal by Aśoka, or of the destruction of Kapilavastu and the Sākyas; nor does it supply us with materials for constructing a chronological system; it simply makes us acquainted, together with the name of an unknown personage, no doubt some local *rājā*, with the existence (after so many others, teeth, frontal bone, alms-bowl, hair, even the very shadow) of new relies of the great reformer, relies probably more ancient, and which we may, if so inclined, suppose more authentic, than any others. This is little; but a negative result is better than illusory data.

The relies are now at Bangkok, where, after so many centuries of oblivion, they once more serve for the edification of the faithful.

²³ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1906, p. 452.

²⁴ *Zeitschr. f. vergleich. Sprachf.*, XXIII. p. 594, and XXV. p. 292.

²⁵ *Journ. Asiatique*, VII. (1906), p. 136.

**THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL)
IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE.**

1654—1670.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 105.)

THE iudge answerd (ye Ld brought on tryall before him), we must iudg according to Law w^{ch} condemns this fact. I tooke my iurney after this to Spawhawne [Ispahan], w^{ch} is 50 Leags. This Ld was sent to Spawhawne & Confest all before Shaw Sollymon [Shāh Sulaimān] Kingo & his iustices, & I saw him beheaded. He might [have] beeue sauued but was willinge to die. This was end Aug 1668.²⁵

Att Spawhawne, ye court of King Sollymon, Em^r of Pertia,²⁶ I did lodge at y Compagnys howse; 3 dutchmen, 4 frenchmen, Kinge Sollymons Sarvts, wth ye padreys caime to see me, I haueing leit^rs out of India. We were verry merry at ye English howse. The first 2 days I was in ye city we kept wthin doores, the Kinge haueinge made a Crooke [*qūruq*]²⁷ wth his Weomen & if any mankinde aboue Elleaven yeaeres old be abroad dureing the tyme of the Crook he is kild, [whether in the] City or Contrey for 2 leagues, for Notis is given ye day before he make ye Crooke. Its only to be merry wth his weomen, w^{ch} ride in all manner of habbits as they best fancy for Mirth. This was told me by ye Wife of a Engl surgion, One of them before she married.

The 3^d day, about 3 clock in ye afternoone, ye Crook broke vp, y Kings 2^d or adviser, Sheth Alley Cowley Cawne²⁸ [Sayyid 'Alī Quli Khān], sent for me & demanded if I belonged to ye Company. I sd I was a poore Subiect of my King. What, sd he, is not ye Cap^t of ye company come, meaning Mr flowers. I told him he would come in 4 or 5 days. Newes caime ye King satt out. He rose in hast to goe to Court. I took my leane. He said, you must goe before ye Kinge. I went & made my Obeasience after ye Industan Manner & phraise, being in that habbit, Sollam Alley [*As-salām alaikum*]. He S^d, Allegan Solam [*alaikum as-salām*], y^{ts} yo^u are welcom. Wheere, S^d ye King, haue yo^u lernt yt phraise being an Engl man, & laught. I said, I had served ye Magull Oram Zebb. S^d ye K., he is my enemy, soc yo^u are welcom from him: ye Kinge out of his gate showed me some of his great Gunns w^{ch} lay disorderly, And two Mortars w^{ch} none in his Court knew how to vse. I told him I would charge them & show him ye vse of them. S^d he, are they to be discharge[d] wth stone shot. I S^d, wth a shell. S^d he, pray show me this, w^{ch} I did, y^o King giveing ord^r to ye Nasa [*nāzir*],²⁹ w^{ch} is Mr of all his Artillary, I should haue what desired. I cast 2 shells. In 4 dayes tyme I had them redy Coted

²⁵ ? 1669. See note 19 on p. 108, ante.

²⁶ Shāh Sulaimān reigned from 1666—1694.

²⁷ "Kourouk signifies a Prohibition to all Men and Boys above seven years of age, upon forfeiture of Life, to be seen in any place where the Kings Wives were to pass, if he were in their company. All the w^{ys} are hung on both sides with such stuff of which they make their Tents, to prevent the Women from being seen. And notice is given to all the Men to retire home at such an Hour; besides that, the Guards at two Leagues distance round about, were ready to prevent any one from coming near the Places so canyast in . . . It is said, that during the five Months from the Coronation of the King till the year 1078 of the Hegira, which answers the Spring of our 1667, the King commanded no less than sixty-two Kourouks, going abroad with his Wives every time, and visiting the Places round about Ispahan." — Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 77, ed. 1691.

²⁸ For an account of "Hali-Kouli-Kaan's" restoration to favour on the accession of Shāh Sulaimān and of the various offices conferred on him, see Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 79 f., ed. 1691. See also Tavernier, *Persian Travels*, Book V. ch. VIII. p. 218, ed. 1684.

²⁹ "The Nazir or Seer: Superintendent General of all the Royal Domestics; and who also takes particular care of the Treasuries, Furniture, Buildings, Manufactures, Magazines, Stores and Servants." — Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 13, ed. 1691.

over all wth ye Carridges. The Kinge plact himself On a Hill wheere seats weere mad for y^t purposs, And his Ladys wthin a Roome wheere they might see. The Kinge caime after nearer & demanded what should be don wth them, if A marke was to be set to shote at. I S^d, bringe men or sheepe, & y^e Execution would show how to reveng himselfe On his enimis. Sheope weere brought, And one of y^e Shells fitted y^e way we call hen & Chickens, w^{ch} shell does y^e greatest Execution & made the kinge Amazed seinge it flie, & s^d, it flies in the aire ; it will doe noe Execution.

I returned answer by y^e L^d that brought yt word from ye Kinge, yo^u shall psently se wth Execution it will doe. It flew at y^e hight 244 Minutes & fell amonoge y^e sheepe & kild 250 besides wt land. Immediatly y^e King sent me a horss & rich furniture (the same horse & furniture was that day led before him), & said, Bireala [baraku'llāh], Well done.

The other shell fell amonoge An other flock 230 paces of. The height it assended was 43 Minuts & fell & kild 132 sheepe. The kinge was very Joyfull of this, for the Mortars his Grandfather had taken from y^e turks, he driveing them out of Pertia.³⁰

He calld me to him & bid me sit downe. I begd his pdon, being hote, weary & black, & desired leue to refresh my selfe. I tooke leane, y^e ff [French] & Dutch accompaning me to y English howse. He Sent for me againe & I had the honor to eate & drinke wth him & weere very merry wth Musique & Danceing weomen (one of these weomen toss vp 7 : 8 : or 12 balls & keepe them all in play aboue ground), & had wth elce desireable. The Kinge desired me Serve him. I sd I could not, my King had Comanded me home. S^d he, yo^r kinge is my Brother & what service yo^u doe me, he wilbe well pleased wth it. He vrged it noe more, but s^d, lets be merry, & drank 3 small Gobletts One after an other, standing vp to y^e King of England his Brother. I was to pledg out of a Golden ladell³¹ qt [containing] a pinte & $\frac{1}{2}$, and was to drinke 3 of them, w^{ch} I did, & all y^e xpians theire, Abondance of L^ds & other Courteers by ; & his weomen see vs, but we not them, from aboue. The Kinge danet amonoge vs & some of y Danceing weomen.³² Y^e King would set his hands a side & laugh heartily, saying, spare me not, when tugg was or Cushings flyinge, I am at this tyme as one of you ; oure wyne mad vs equall. But none of his L^ds drank a drop. This was in Supper tyme, dishes standing & tost downe. But they & the Carpetts then spred weere taken away & fresh Carpetts brought. After yt, he Commanded one of his frenche sarvants to play on y^e violin, And drinke in that tyme was plentifull wth y^e franks ; y^e Kinge did not drinke as we weere obliged as to y^e Quantitie.³³ Verry merry we weere, & y^e King verry pleasant & iocouse. This french man yt plaid comes vp to y^e Kinge 3 sevall tymes & tells him such a Nobleman was fitt to be his Gēn^{ll}. The king bid him sit downe, Sayinge, I know how to make Gēnalls. This french man, Drunke, vrged it againe ; Soe y^e Kinge Commanded him be ript vp & given to y^e Doggs, w^{ch} is y^e Death for offend^g in that Contrey, & others out of Christendome. But y^e King gane some privat notis yt he should Only be carried into an other Roome & stript, & soe stood naked for 3 howers, w^{ch} tyme we past in Merth, & must not y^e french man. The Kinge, seing vs farr enough in Drinke & Nodinge, caime and shoke me by y^e Shoulder, & S^d, rise vp, its tyme to goe home. Wheeres yo^r Brother, & brought me his Clothes, & s^d, carrie them to him. This was about 2 Clock in y^e Morninge.

³⁰ Sulaimān's grandfather was Shāh Safi, 1029—1642. He did not drive the Turks out of Persia. On the contrary, Murad IV. recaptured Bagdad from the Persians, and its possession was confirmed to the Turks by a peace made between the two nations in 1630.

³¹ See Tavernier, *Persian Travels*, Book IV. ch. XVII. p. 181, for a description of the Golden ladle in which he pledged Shāh Abbās.

³² For the way in which Sulaimān gave himself up to drinking and dissipation, see Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, pp. 77, 78, 87, 88, 123, 129, ed. 1601.

³³ Chardin, writing of events in 1669, says, "the young Prince had forborn wine all the last year, by reason of an Inflammation in his Throat occasion'd by his hard drinking."— *The Coronation of Solyman III.* p. 130, ed. 1601.

Two days after, we were sent for, & Mr flower being come home from Cammerroon [Gombroon], [who] had a present for the Kinge from the Company,³⁴ went wth me. Y^e Kinge askt me what I had brought from India rare, & s^d, theirs few travellers by land but bring rarities wth them. I S^d, Only my person. S^d y^e King, we haue seene many french, but few Engl travell home by land, & y^e french bring not only theire persons. I then told him I had a Stone [Bezoar] would Expell poyson. Y^e Kinge desired to see it. I showed it; he sleighted it, sayinge this is but a stone, what vertue can theire be in it. I S^d, giue me w^t poyson you can, & then y^e vertue will be showne.

One of his Capons [eunuchs] brought a Glasse of poyson. Mr flowers then left me wth a looke as if he would [have] kild me.

One of y^e Kings Cheife Docters gaue it to me. I dranke it, y^e Kinge first desireing me sit at a distance & s^d, freinde, if y^u kill y^r selfe I haue noe hand in it; haue a care.

I cald for a Basin. A Jarr of gold was brought. I then tooke my poyson stone & put it into a glasse of wyne qt [containing] $\frac{1}{4}$ of a pinte & kept y^e stone in y^e wyne a quarter of an hower or more. S^d the Kinge, his Nobles & Docter by, when I had dranke, He stumbles not at it. S^d the Docter, he hath as much as would kill Ten Ollyfants; he cannot live; Its the wyne makes him soe Curagious. With that I drank of my wyne & put y^e stone into a little warme water (y^e quantity I had dranke of wyne), & drank it. Immeadiatly I fell vommittinge. S^d the Kinge, now hes deade. I vommitted $\frac{3}{4}$ of an hower; y^t don, I tooke water & washt my mouth and face & cald for a glass wyne. Now s^d y^e Kinge, I se y^t stone hath vertue. Not, S^d the Docter, for a Kingdome would I doe soe much. I must, S^d y^e Kinge, haue y^e Stone, & what it Cost or y^u will haue for it, I will give y^u; But first purged me on my Oath w^t it cost me. I, on my Oath, told him it cost me 3000 Ropees, w^{ch} is 337^b; 10^a Engl monoy.³⁵ He then said, ask a Gift. (M^{dd}. This was but a peece of A Stone.) In then comes my Cozen flowers.³⁶ S^d the Kinge, y^r freind is not deade. S^d Mr flowers to me, now y^u haue a good occation if y^u vallew my hono^r or the Company, Ask y^e Arreeres at Commerroon w^{ch} weere for 4 yeares. I was silent. S^d he Kinge, aske. I askt y^e arreares. Y^e Kinge granted it, & caused theo Accompts to be stated, w^{ch} caime to Two lack of Abasses, w^{ch} is about 50000 fifty Thowsand pounds Engl money.³⁷

When y^e Ld^s gaue y^e Kinge this acc^t, The Kinge S^d to me, had y^u not better [have] asked for y^r selfe. A smaller thinge would [have] contented y^u, But my word is past, & y^r granted.³⁸ But will, not y^u, y^r word beinge granted, be willinge to serve me. I replied, wth all my heart, but I must obey my Kinge. Give, S^d he, it vnder y^r & Mr flowers hand, if y^u come not, y^u will furnish me wth 3 as good men. Mr flower past it vnder his hand.

The King gaue me a Serpaw [*saropā*], that is Sash, cote & Girdle worth 300 Dollars.

³⁴ This was Flower's second visit to Ispahan. In 1666, at the time of the Coronation of Shāh Sulaimān, he was sent by the President of Surat to the Persian Court. He had orders to keep an eye on the Dutch deputation and their "great present; to attend their motion and observe att Court, and leuar what their busines is, as also by his personale appearance checke the liberty which they would otherwise take in abusing you our Masters and the nation."—General Letter from Surat to the Court, *Factory Records, Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2. On the occasion spoken of in the text, Flower arrived at Ispahan on the 9th Aug. 1690. Writing to Surat on the 5th Sept. (*Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 105), Flower remarks that "The King with his Court lately retired to one of his Gardens with purpose after 8 or 10 dayes stay to proceed towards Gundeman (not far from Bussora) being Jealous for the Turks who are masters of it." Flower gives an account of his interview with the "Ettamor Dowlett" on the 3rd Sept. and of the minister's promise to "Acquaint the King with our Complaints," but does not say that he had any personal interview with the King, nor does he allude to Campbell. For Flower's first embassy to the Persian Court, see Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 66, ed. 1691.

³⁵ i. e., at 2s. 8d. the rupee.

³⁶ I have not been able to trace the relationship between Campbell and Flower. See note 19 on p. 103, ante, where Flower writes of Campbell as of a stranger.

³⁷ The author's calculation cannot be right. Sir Thos. Herbert in 1677 rates the Abassi at 1s. 4d. This would make the two lac amount to £13,333 6s. 8d.

³⁸ The records of the time make no allusion to any such concession by Shāh Sulaimān.

The Snowes beinge then in pertia, in y^e end of y^e Month August, & soe Extreame y^t, in or way to Spawhawne, my Sarv^t lost his toes, w^{ch} wth extremity of cold rotted of. Soe left him wth M^r fowers, he being my Slau^c (my other Hamstring^d in my voyage to Proster John^{ss} [and] haneing wife & Children at Bagganogare [Bhūgnagar, Hyderabad, Deccan], I gane y^e vallew of 60^{lb} to carrie him home. He would not [have] left me but I Considered his wife & Children, soe pted [parted].

Leavinge Spawhawne y^e first day September 1668,⁴⁰ I wth my slau^c, a black, A french Padre & 2 Dymond Marchants of Paris, One Monsier Jordan a protestant, & Monsier Rasin^{ss} Roman Catholic, tooke o^r Jurney homewards, Beinge Accompanied out of y^e Citty wth all y^e Engl french & Dutche, 2 Leagues, & after returned.

My Kinsman, M^r flower,^{ss} knoweinge in part what Charge I had wth me, S^d to me, Woe is me y^t I cannot pswaid y^a against this iurney; y^u vndertake it against my will. Doe not y^u know Sr Humphrey Cooke, who y^u Conveyed out of India,^{ss} how he was served. He, imbraceinge me, told me, tho I caime not saife home to England, my service don to y^e Company & for his hono^r, w^{ch} y^u know Cozen y^u haue vnder my hand, shall be made good to yo^r father, Or vnkle Whitty; Soe we parted. The 2 dymond March^{ts}, I, My Sarv^t, & y^e Padrey I brought from Surratt in India, whose naime is Farro Capusena [Capuchin Brother]. The next towne from Spawhawne was 60 Leagues cald Pannuloo;⁴⁴ in 5 days wee Arrived theire, all in helth.

Theire we consulted whether we should goe by y^e way of Bagdatt Or Towreys [Tauris, Tabriz]. S^d y^e Dymond March^{ts}, we desire for Bagdatt but haue a great Charge; Towreys is the surer way. We agreed to goe by Towreys, and all went wth y^e Coffla or Caravan, w^{ch} consisted of 40000 feigtinge men, y^e whole (horsses, Cammells, & asses), 100 000.

The next great Towne from Pannuloo to Towreys was 80 Leagues of, cald⁴⁵ We, 8 horsensem, wth sarv^t, left y^e Coffeloe & caime to Radie [? Rai close to Teherān], a verrio great Citty, in 9 days tyme; Thence for Towreys. In the way was noe Citty, only villages & Serays. Y^e distance was 172 Leagues, w^{ch} we went in 28 days, all comeing to Towreys in helth. Four days before we got to Towreys, theire was a french Docter y^t had cut 3 slaves for y^e Gouerner to make Coides [Khwāja, Coja, Eunuch] or Efnukes [in modern Greek] them to p̄sent to y^e Emperror of Pertia his Maister, Shaw Sollyman Kinge.

But y^e Condition of y^e Padreys or fryers in those parts, as elce yhere out Chrissen-dome, if not in, is y^t noe Man, how good an artist soever, should live wheere they are, they p̄tending to all arts, & by that meanes get into places & make prosolites.

A french Padrey in y^t city went to y^e Gouerner & told him he could cut Cheaper & safer then y^e Docter. The Gou^t had giuen y^e Docter 40 Tomaines,⁴⁶ w^{ch} y^e padrey knew. Y^e padrey was feced, wth y^e Docter knoweing, Left y^e Citty, takeing 2 Sarv^t, & 2 Mules, & tooke his way towards Simyrna, w^{ch} is cald in y^e pertian tongue, Cashmeer [Ismīr], & weere in the way buried in y^e Sands.

^{ss} See Vol. XXXV, p. 177.

⁴⁰ Campbell must surely mean 1669. See the note on his departure from Gombroon, *ante*, p. 103.

⁴¹ Monsieur Raisin was known both to Tavernier and Chardin, "Monsieur Raisin of Lyons, a Person of Very good Repute, and my Companion in my former Travels, embarkt himself once more in this sort of Trade; and though we differ'd in our Religion, Yet for all that we liv'd Peaceably and in Unity together." — Chardin, *Travels into Persia*, p. 2, ed. 1691. See also *Tavernier*, Ball's edition, Vol. II, p. 304.

⁴² See *ante*, p. 127, note 35. On Flower's return to Gombroon he fell under the displeasure of the authorities at Surat on account of the involved condition of his affairs. He eventually satisfied the Company's demands on him, and, though he lost his appointment at Gombroon, he was, in July, 1671, ordered to "succeed in the Custom house of Mayhim if Mr. Barton dies" — *Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 104, and *Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2.

⁴³ I can find no verification of this story. See the note on Sir Humphrey Cooke, *ante*, p. 103, note 16.

⁴⁴ Pannuloo may be the modern Kashan, but it is difficult to trace the route followed by Campbell.

⁴⁵ Hintus in the MS. here. The town meant may be Kum or Kasvin.

⁴⁶ Fryer, in 1677, gives the value of a tomaun as £3 6s. 8d. See *Hobson-Jobson*, s. v. Tomaun.

The Padre Cutt 4; all Dyed. Newes beinge carried of it, y^e padrey Kild himselfe, w^{ch} thing brought a pindice [prejudice] to all frenchmen in y^e City.

Next day caime a Coffeloe from Cashmeer [Smyrna], y^t said they mett a Xpian, 2 Sarvants, 2 Mules, wth a horsesse (w^{ch} was starved) by them, and all deade. The Gouerner, when Monsier Jordan & Rasin⁴⁷ went before him, told vs the aboue relation, demanding w^t we s^e weere. They s^d, they weere fr [French] men. I s^d, I was an Engl man. S^d he, all french men are Haram Zadds [*haramzāda*], Deceivers. For Engl men I haue not to say of them, never haueing anie tryall of them.

Must not, S^d he to y^e ffr. men, yo^r Padrey be cald to Acc. for y^e men hes kild & himselfe, besides he, being to y^u as our Casa [*qāṣf*] is to vs, cannot answer it to God.

I am, S^d y^e Gon^r, not see sorrie for him and y^e Slaves As for the Docter, y^t Goodman, who by his meanes I slighted, and is now lost.

Wee tooke our leaves & went to y^e Serbie, But y^e Padreys of that place invited vs to theire Convent, w^{ch} Monsier Jordan & Rasin did refuse by reason of y^e Gou^rs language.

4 Dayes wee staid in the Seraie; every day the Gour sent vs 6 dishes of Meate. Our Coffelo [*kāfila*, caravan] beinge gatherd to a heade, & redy to goe, we went to y^e Gour to take leave & p̄sented him wth some small gifts; but he refused them, & S^d, when y^u come this way againe, bringe me some Europe token. Soe we parted; & went thence wth y^e Coffloe 23 Leagues before wee caime into y^e sands. 17 Days we travalled in y^e Sands wth great losse of Men & Cattle, viz: Cammells, horses, and Asses. In all y^e 17 days, wee weere not hable to see o^r horss lenth before vs, or One an other, Or to open o^r mouths or eies; but when we would eat or Drinke, y^e Sand got in like to Choake vs; yet we had Muffellers Over our faces.

They Stringe 100 Cammells together to follow One after an other, And every 100 haue a man On y^e formost Cammell wth a howse in w^{ch} he sits In, y^e howse Coverd both day and night, And in it Is a light & a Compass to guid y^e Cammell y^e way, for y^e sands drive soe wth y^e wind, its not possible to see.

Wee haneinge 1 monts Jurney more to goe ere we should be Cleere of y^e Sands, and o^r Cattell died soe as wee weere forst to put two loads on One Back, I said, letts turne back, And, Consultinge wth y^e eminentest Marchant, an Arminyon, & y^e 2 fr^{:men}, Judged it best to hyer a guidlo to pilote vs o^r way an other way Towards Neneveigh [Nineveh], w^{ch} was a nearer way; & Leauinge y^e Coffloe, we could goe in One day 3 times as farr as wth it. 15 Arminyon Marchants (horssemen), y^e 2 fr^{:men}, my selfe, and o^r sarvants went, giveingo 11 Dollars a heade for Pilot money.

Wee had 140 Leagues to Nenoveigh, neither pile gras, water or Ought elce in o^r way for refreshment but what we carried wth us. Our Guyde brought vs to Neneveigh in 23 days all verry weary. We staid theire 7 Days, and in that tyme refresht o^rselues verry well.

From Nenevey we went to Cornway in 12 Days, w^{ch}, at 20 Mile a day, I gess to be about 75 Leagues.

From Corneway we went to Kirkway [Kirkuk], y^e fr^{:men} & I then only in Company; we went it in 7 Days, w^{ch} is about 60 Leagues.

From Kirkeway to Bagdatt, 120 Leagues, in 13 Days. We arrived in Bagdatt in helth, but left o^r Boyes in Kirkway & tooke fresh horsses there, o^r Boys to follow to Bagdatt.

We had but beene 4 days theire, when y^e 2 ffrench Marchants feel sick, it beinge soe hote, y^t wth y^e Brees of y^e Sunn, it kild the Natives; & Many I saw, as white as Engl men, kild immediatly & turnd as black as a Coale.

⁴⁷ See ante, note 42 on p. 128.

I my selfe beinge at noone in the Sunn, a hote breese hath taken me & skind my face. Those yt weere scoreth wth y^e Sunn, was of y^e Bashaws [Pāshā's] Soldiers, wth lay wthout y^e Citty, for y^e Bashaws of Bagdatt, Kirkway & Neneve weere goeing wth theire Armies in y^e Grand Senior^s service agst Bassora, now in y^e hands of y^e Arrabs. This was in february thus hott, & in Spawhawne in August soe Cold as my Sarv^t in Pertia had his toes rotted of.

Mdd I went to old Babylon w^{ch} is 12 Leagues from Bagdatt, and assended the Tower, & plumd it wth a line I carried for y^t purposse, & its iust 60 fathom from y^e top to y^e earth ; but theires a great depth of earth aboue y^e foundation, wth depth is not knowne ; its ^{as} foote broade at top. They are every day loading a way from it stones to Bagdat or new Babylon.

In Bagdatt I staid 23 Days, And On y^e 4th Day of february I tooke my Jurney for Aleppo, And in the way, the first great Citty was Hanna [Anah], A Citty wthin a ffort in y^e Middle of a River [the Euphrates] w^{ch} goes to Bossara, The River Tygrisse & it joyneing theire to gether, And on each side of the River a Citty, And is distant from Babylon 130 Leagues. This Hanna is in y^e Wildernes of Arrabia.

The french Padrey hyred a guide in Bagdatt, & had security by his wife & 4 Children & an Arrabian Marchant that this guide should bring vs saife to Aleppo & bringe vs every 2 days wheere we should haue water. All was On my charge, And I would not haue patience to tarrie till y^e Coffelo went. We tooke wth vs noe more then One days water, My Company beinge with my selfe, The padre & his servant, My Slaue, the padreys horss & sary^{ts} Mule. My horsses & slauess Mule. All of vs beinge wthout water 2 days, I questioned y^e Guide, & he gaue me Crosse language : Soe I shott a pistoll at him to scare him, but after drubbd him wth my stick. Y^e Padre desired me, for Gods sake, to let him alone, Now we are in y^e wildernes & know not whether to turn o^r selves. I was vexed, being rdy to Chonk, Bound y^e Gayds hands behind him, thretned him & cald him naimes, and said, if wee die, we will ell die together. This was about 7 Leagues short of Hanna. Wthin 2 Leagues of y^e place y^t I bound him he Cried, Aga [Aghā, my Lord], water. Give me, Sd he, my life & I will shew y^a water. We had not rid a league & halfe, but he lights & S^d, heeres water, y^t Well impossible to be found but by y^e guide, for it was not a yard over, and Turft as if It had beeene firme ground. These Gaides Conseale y^e water, they getting theire liveinge for Conducting travellrs & releiveinge them wth water in y^t Jarney throw the Wildernes of Arrabia. The Guide drew out a line he brought for that purposse, and a sheeps skin, [and] tyd y^t 4 Corners to gether [for] y^e Buckett. The line was 60 fathom Longe & wold but iust reach y^e Water. I, Jealons [afraid] y^e Rogue would run away, I bound him againe. The Padrey & my slauc neere, both sick for want [of] water. But, refrest a little, we mounted, & psonly I spied 7 horssmen, w^{ch} caime vp boldly wthin 500 paces of vs, On wth I fyred a pistoll. They then retreated back. The guide then addrest him to y^e Padrey to make his peace wth me for his liberty. Sweareing by his beard, his god & Mahommett, he would not run away. On y^t I unbound him, & we weere 5 days in gettinge to Hanna [Anah], y^e Padre & my Slaue sick, wth was y^e cause.

By perswation of y^e Guide we past aboue Hanna a leugne and a halfe On purposse to sau^e or head money. We past the Towne and caime to a river 5 Engl miles beyond it, & theire sat downe & refresh^t o^r selves. Sd the Guide, heere are Rognes. S^d I, all Arrabs are Rogues. Before we could mount, caime 28 horsses and carried vs back to Hanna on foote, for that we had past y^e Citty indeav^ring to sau^e or head money. It Cost me 144 Dollars & all y^e excuses I could make to y^e Gouerner. We staid at Hanna ^{"days."}

We had not left ye towne 2 Leagues but 7 horssmen caime ridinge after me. I Sd to y^e guide, who are these. He S^d, Haram [haramzāda], Rogues & Robbers. Sd I, will yⁿ stand to

me. Yes, S^d he, if y^u will let me haue One of y^o pistolls. S^d I, noe, y^u haue bow & arrowes, & if I see y^u stand not to it, thou shalt be y^e first Ile kill, tho I die afterwards.

The guide answered (We seinge them Exercize theiro lances), I was 4 yeares agoe Guide to Six Xpians, 4 dymond Marchts and two Padrees who went this way, & by fyering a pistoll, w^{ch} wounded an Arrabb in the thigh, was y^e cause they all lost theire lives by hauncing theire heads cut of. This is a great trewth & told me by y^e padreys at Babylon, who advized me by noe meanes resist if we mett anie [bandits]. And would [have] had me left my Armes & other things of Concernemt. I S^d I had not anie. Said y^e two ffrench Dymond Marchants I left theire Sick, espetally monseir Jordan, Wee know he hath a Charge⁵⁰ & One Dymond w^{ch} we haue beeene all about & [?for] or Kinge, & could never attaine to it. Except he left it at Spawhawne, we are sure he had it.⁵¹ The padreys did vrge me againe, & S^d, what ever I left wth them should be safe Conveyed to me to what place I pleased; but by noe meanes doe y^u travell wthout y^e Coffeloe wth a Charge. I denied y^t I had ought. S^d they, if y^u haue, it wilbe y^e cause of y^e loss of y^o owne life & Company.

The 7 horssmen Caimē vp againe. They had only lances; I wthstood them, haveing a cace of pistolls, bow & arrowes & a Cutlace. Y^e Padre cried, for godsake hanc a care wth y^u doe; if we resist not they will not kill vs. I was angry, & S^d, if he would not feight, I would kill him. He S^d it was not his Religion to feight. The Guide & he then run into y^e enemy. The enemy Cried, surrender y^o selfe & you shall haue noe harme. I would not. Y^e Padre cald to me, y^u had better Surrender; if y^u doe not, y^u will loose y^o life; I haue saved mine. I told him, in y^e Portugall tonge, I had some Consernm^ts about me.

I left him wth y^e Rogues & past forwards, faceing about evorie Minute for y^e lenth of an Engl Mile. They followed me, & when they se they could not pvnile, they returned y^e padre & Guide. My horss beinge weary wth faceing them too & againe, I went a League further, & by a river side refresht of selves; on thother side of vs was a Bogg, and but One way to come to vs, soe as One Man was as good as 20 in an other place.

My Guide S^d, these weere noe rogues but only tried wth xyians weere; they had noe Sadles On theire horsses.

After 8 howers stay, y^e Padrey haueing got a napp, S^d to me, those weere Rogues, & my heart [mis]gives me they will follow vs; what y^u haue, berry heere or give me. I had sent y^e Guide to get grasse for or horsses, for, in y^e Wilderness of Arrabia, is grass in most places vp to y^e Belly, but noe rode but wth Deere make or Wyld Beasts.

While yo Guide was gon, I tooke out my things out of ye Padd of my Sadle & gaue ye padrey some, & some I kept my selfe. When y^e Padre see them, he Cried & S^d, these wilbe y^e Death of vs both. He had :—

- . 3 Dymond stringes wth Crosses
- 2 Stones y^t Expell poyson [bezoor]
- 2 Great Dymonds
- a Blood Stone
- a greene stone
- 120 Saphers
- 4 Dymond Ringes
- 3 speciall Rubies

Kept by my selfe, vizt — a great dymond wth Kings arms on it, 8 other great Dymonds.

In y^e meane tyme comes y^e Guide wth grasse, &, packing vp y^e things those I had in a little purs, [I] ty'd them about my members. About an hower after, we see 14 horsse men, 7 of them

⁵⁰ This does not agree with Campbell's condition of destitution as described by Flower. See note 19 on p. 103, ante.

⁵¹ For the diamond with the King of England's arms engraved on it, see ante, Vol. XXXV. p. 133.

y^t had beeene wth me in y^e Morninge. This was 3 Clock in y^e afternoone. We see them before they could see vs. S^d ye padre, we are betraid. I askt y^e gide who these weere. He S^d, men goeinge to y^e next great towne, soldiers. Y^u lie, y^u Roogne, s^d y^e padre; y^u haue betraid vs.

I was at a stand, consideringe what to Doe best. Y^e Guide S^d, lets goe. Noe, S^d y^e padre, lets stay heere till night. Did not y^u, S^d y^e Guide, agree wth me in Babylon, w^{ch} I hanc given security to performe, & y^u are to march when I say goe & to stay when I say stay. I replied, will y^u beare vs harmless. He s^d, yes I will. Wth y^t he went out, p[re]tending to see if y^e way was Cleere & staid from vs of an hower, & returninge, he bridled of horses & S^d, vp, y^e way is cleere. We had not rid a League, but we spied y^e 14 horsmen in ambush in a valley. They let vs pass till we caime to y^e top of y^e hill, & then spred them selves. 4 caime One way, 4 An other, 4 the 3^d & 2 more, all w^{ch} Compassed vs about. I had made my bridle fast to my horse legg & made my bow & arrowes redy, but they caime poothering soe fast, y^t all theire lances was about me in a trice, & S^d, we haue now got Gunnis, fyre if y^u darr, for if y^u either fyre or shoot arrow, y^u are a deadman, & y^e rest.

The Padre cried, do not shoothe. In y^e meane tyme, they struck in wth me & stript me Naked, all sauie my boots, w^{ch} sauied me some thinge. They weere all muffeld vp; I could only see theire eies. Some few Dollers I had about my Midle, w^{ch} they p[re]sently eased me of, And, starke Naked, made me lead my horse to a valley. I went not fast enough, Soe One gaue me a bush wth y^e butt end of his lance, w^{ch} put me on my Nose. In that fall he spied y^e pursse & Snatcht it away; I was affraid all had gon together. Beinge in y^e Valley, made me sit a side till they parted my things, v[er]it. My wearinge Clothes & Lynnen, 3 Serpaws [stropā, dress of honour], One Prester John gaue me, One Oram Zebb y^e Magull from his owne boddie, & One Shaw Sollymon King of Pertia,⁵² wth other things of Vallew. The Rogue Guide, after Devded, Cast lotts who should haue this & who that Share. Besides these, there was 3 of his Mattoes Great seales y^e Magull gaue me, being had On y^e occation before Exprest.

They caused likewise y^e Padrey to be stript, & set downe likewise, & set us both downe to cut of o[r] heads. S^d y^e Guide, my wife & Children is pawne for y^e padre;⁵³ Cut of y^e head of y^e other. They gaue y^e Padrey his Coate againe, Settinge me by my selfe wth a lance at my back & 2 swords Over my heade, sayinge, take yor leave of y^e world. I desired them suffer me to say a few prayers, w^{ch} they did, & in that tyme they tooke Councell, And mutined amoung themselues. 3 went one way, & s^d they would goe & complaine; 3 followed them to bring them back. He w^{ch} tooke my Jewells from my members, said, Is it not enough we haue taken his goods, but we must take his life; Theires a God. They made me come to them, & fall downe & Kiss every One of theire feete, & say they had don well in takeing away w^t I had, & to say God blesse them for it, And houe me a Cammeel Coate, showinge vs the way. I would [have] gon ffor Babylon but they would not let vs goe that way.

Wee had not gon an Engl Myle, but two of them caime after vs, & comeinge vp to vs, demanded my slave (w^{ch} was a Black as Those Arrabs are), & tooke him and My Mule, sayinge he was not to travell that way.

Wee travelled all that night, & next day, weary, haueing neither mans meate nor horss-meate, And haueinge lost our way, we caime to a den at whose mouth lay about 20 dead sheepe. It was about 3 Clock in y^e afternoone. S^d y^e Guide, wee are all vndon, iudgeinge it a Denn of Lyons Or Tygers; But we see noothinge to hurt vs. Att 12 Clock at night, we, redy to die and our horsses quite tyred, we caime to a River cald Olson, w^{ch} runs into Tygris. Then weere wee from anie inhabitant 9 (Nine) days journey & had noe p[re]visions. By Gods providence caime downe the River Men vpon Rafts of Wood wth tents vpon them, Goinge for Bossera. Wee were afraid, but o[r] nessessey sent y^e Guide, who spooke Arrabb, to haile them, The whilst y^e

⁵² See ante, p. 127.

⁵³ See ante, p. 130.

Padre & I sculkt. The Guide got of them 40 Cakes of bread, Cost 2 Dollers, wh^{ch} served vs to an old City cald Tyabe [Taiyibeh, Taiba]. We travelled 14 days, day and Night, ere we could reach it, and judge it from Hanna 130 Leagues, for ye Certan Leagues in that Contrey is not knowne, but they recken days iurney accordinge as they & horses are habell.

When wee caime to Tyabe, theire weere we heart broken, haueing neither meate, money, nor freinds, And must pay head money, 10 Dollers a heade. ffor want of it, we weere put in preson & weere 3 Days theire, but they sent vs meate, & cared for or horsses. The 4th day caime A merchant from Aleppo, And crimed to vs, & askt me w^t I was. I sⁱ a Christian. S^d he, theire are of That Cast seuerall, As Ittall [Italians], Spanyards, ffr : [French] and others, of w^{ch} are y^u. I S^d, An English man. S^d he, give me a note vnder yo^r hand & I will give y^u yo^r Money y^u desire, w^{ch} was 24 Dollars, & take it Att Aleppo. I tooke yo^r Money & gaue ye Note as he desired. Wee p^d or (paid our) heade money And tooke Our Jurney ffrom Tyab towards Aleppo, esteemed 40 Leagues or 4 days Jurney. Its all a hard sand. In the Midest of or way Mett vs a partie of Arrabs, w^{ch} fyred at vs before we caime w^tin shot of them. W^e sent a yong man, w^{ch} caime from Tyab wth vs (yo^r Marchants sarvt yt lent me yo^r money). He returning, S^d, they are Rogues, y^u haue nothing to loose but yo^r horsses, & if y^u will give me 2 Dolls a man, I will secure them. We did, by parroll.

These Arrabbs had taken a Caffeloe of 16 or 17 Cammells and some 20 small assenegers⁵⁴ of their owne Contrey mens. Wee askt the reason why they robbd theirne neighbors. He saide, there was an Arrabb Kinge in the Hills y^e the Marchants had agreed to give him soe much pr^e Cammell for fre passage, but had not pformed: Soe he made bold wth y^e first he mett. Its common to agree thus in those parts for every carrier, wth ye Arrabbs that lie in his way, sfor they say, when Jacob had gott all the blessings, Esau caime & askt; soe his father told him he had given Jacob all & he must take what he could get. They owne them selues of that race, and Soe soone as vp in y^e morninge, doe pray a good prize may come in theirne way, as we doe for our dayly breade, & take it wth as much fredome as if really it had beeene sent them.

The first towne we caime at from Tyab was Sallaminity, Two Leagues from Aleppo.⁵⁵ We rested theire a night. S^d I to ye Padre, now we are out of all Dainger. But yo^e people where we lay had sent to ye Kinge of the Arrabbs, not far from them, and told him for ⁵⁶ Dollers they would Deliver two Xpians into his hands. We had not gon a league but we Overtook a drove of Ladet Oxen. S^d ye Guide, come lets put on; Now wee are out of Dainger. We put a head of these Carriers or markett people, Arrabbs too, and p̄sently I espied twenty (20) horssmen cominge easily downe a hill. When they see vs get a head, beinge 4 horssmen, They caime poweringe downe vpon vs. S^d I to ye Guide, who are these. S^d he, Rogues. We made all spedee back we could, to gett amongst the Oxen, But they were vpon vs. I left my horsse and [ran] into the thronge of ye Carriers, & gott behinde an Old Arrabb weoman for shelter. She Cald them Rogues, and railed at them for hindering travellers, but Carried I was to theire Kinge, but did not part wth my Old Arrabb weoman. Comeinge before him, ye Kinge askt what I was. I said, a pooreman, Robd comeinge from Babilou. Well, S^d he, thou lookest like noe richman. He caused ye weoman, by whome I held by, to serch me. Fyndeinge noethinge, S^d he, my luck is nought, yt I mett not wth y^u before y^u were Robt, And askt me wheere I had yt horsse. The weoman S^d, he is mine. I haue lett him ride, he beinge foot sore. He S^d in Arrabb, Gome Gidde [*yumi jiddah*]⁵⁷ wh^{ch} is get y^u gon, y^u Cuckold. Att last we p̄ted, & I gane ye poore weoman a Dollar, w^{ch} made ye teares start out of her eies for joy of it.

At 12 Clock the ¹⁸ day of August 1669 I caime into y^e Consulls In Aleppo, Rich. Bell⁵⁹
then at Dinner wth him, & saw in w^t a Ragged & weather beaten Condition I caime therer in;
And of or [? after] Examittion of or Guide, whose life I had offerd me by y^e Caddie [*qāzī*] in

91. *Aeolus* (Part.) A young ass.

This place does not appear in the modern maps.

of Assunção (Port.), & you
see History here in the MS.

⁵⁶ Hiatus here in the MS.
⁵⁷ Qūmī jiddah, vulgarly pronounced *gūmī giddah* = get up grandmother, and was addressed to the old woman. Although he signs as the author of the MS.

⁶⁰ Hiatus here in the MS.
⁶¹ Qūmī jiddah, vulgarly pronounced *yūmī giddah* = get up grandmother, and was addressed to the old woman who always took care of the children. Although he figures as the author of the MS.

As Hinton in the MS. here.

⁶⁹ This is the first mention of him, although he figures as the author of the MS.

Alleppo, but reserved him to bring out ye things I was rob'd of, I deposited him into the hands of Consull Delakoy [De Lannoy]⁶⁰ & parson Frampton,⁶¹ wth whome I left full power to aekt on my behalfe, [they] ptending great kindenesse, not only for my sake, but theire Deere frend, Mr. John [? Stephen] flowers at Spawhawne.

The Padrey I had brought out of India wth me, 3 dayes after I had beene in Aleppo, caime to see me, & askt me when he might waite On the Consull & Minister. I askt, & gaue him a tyme, but was in hopes, when I see him, he had saued some thinge & was come to bring me them; for, from the tyme I was Robd, he never told me he had Saved ought, nor did I aske him; But he see me weape frequently & tooke notis of my heavy & disquieted spirrit, but gaue me not y^e least hopes to expect ought I had given him; Soe y^t wt I had, I was to thanke my Bootes for.

But the next day comes The Padrey, wth ye Padrey Gouernedore of y^e Scotiety of ye fathers ffrench in Aleppo, And askt me if it were seasonable to vizitt ye Consull and Minister. I carried them Ir, & left them All together. S^d the Padre Gouernedore, One of y^r nation, now in y^r howse, hath beeue at Greate Charges wth this ffather of or^s, And to show to y^u or honesty And thanks for his charge & Loue, We come to give him what is his, he trusting or padrey (& he hath saved them for him), & tooke theire leaue, leaveing the jewells on the table.

I was cald in, & noe sooner in the roome, I se what I knew well, & laid at first dash my hands On them. S^d ye Consull & minister, y^u said y^u weere Rob^d. Heeres more than anie K^t in England hath. Besides we haue advice Mr flowers hath returned to y^r father for y^u 2700 pounds,⁶² w^{ch} if y^u had noe more, is enough for anie honestman to live well on. Yes s^d I, I was robbd, w^{ch} the padre witnessed & swore to, as before related.

I began to put vp my Jewells. S^d ye Consull & Minr, If y^u please, we will lay them by for y^u, w^{ch} I refused. Then, s^d the Minister, theires a stone y^e Consull thinks wilbe a fitt psent to his wife in England, & would by it. I said it was at his service; but, said he, he will not haue it a gift, but will buy it; make y^r price. S^d I, it cost me in India 2000 Ropées,⁶³ besides y^e hazard y^u know & loss I haue had in getinge it bether; But he shall haue it as it Cost me first penny. They told me out 100 Lyon Dollars, w^{ch} is 20^b English money. I looked coldly on it. Come, s^d ye Consull, I will put him to it 50 Dollars more. I was ill pleased. S^d then the parson, can y^u denie the Consull; he is yr freinde & canbe serviceable to y^u, & y^u haue enough and more. Yes, S^d the Consull, besides what Mr flowers hath writh. (Harry; bring my papers) S^d the Consull, he hath 20^b pr an [per annum] his father gave him, & 50^b pr an left him by his vnkle Whitty; And soe bated me, y^t I was whedled out of my Jewells.

They gaue me 60^b for what was worth 290^b, & gaue me a Bill payable by One Mr Chillingworth at Legorne, w^{ch} he could not pay; But I haue both theire hands & seals for it. And this theire vnkindness to me in ye tyme of my Anguish for my loss hath disobliged me, & I haue revoked ye trust I gave them, & put it into the hands of Mr John Shepperd, March^t in Aleppo, by writeing, the 2^d Jany 1669.⁶⁴

Dated from Roome [Rome], & witnessed by

Rich. Bell & Joseph Kent

in

Roome.

(End of Part I.)

⁶⁰ Benjamin De Lannoy was Consul for the Levant Co. at Aleppo at this time.

⁶¹ Robert Frampton was appointed as Chaplain at Aleppo on the 30th August 1655. He held the post till 1670. He was the seventh to fill the office, and was chosen for his "extraordinary merit." He paid a visit to England in 1666, when he gave an account of the abuses suffered by the English at Aleppo. After his final return from the East, he became Bishop of Gloucester. In 1691 he resigned his see as a non-juror, and died in retirement in 1708. For a fuller account, see *A Biographical Sketch of the Chaplains of the Levant Company*, by J. B. Pearson.

⁶² If Campbell were really as destitute as Flower describes him to be (see note 19 on p. 103, ante), it is difficult to understand how he could have acquired so much property in a few months.

⁶³ i. e., £225, reckoning the rupee at 2s. 2d.

⁶⁴ i. e., 1669-70.

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Concluded from p. 116.)

*Ih sattdn zemidn dñ bhdr hai, satté hain
demdn,
Pichhe chukédn Hazrat Sháh sdñ, oh bard
jawdn.
Us gôdédn tikar andidn sab tñt goyd somdn.
Kumb kurn Daiñsar ajéhē jinhdn di chotí
dhur demdn,
Ih dhan Bálâ pér bhagat hai dargdh-é-parwán
Pir jô gurzdn chukké lug aggi paindd
Tdn us swamî mörkó mur ghar nún andé,
Suamî mangé dachhnd, bhajan nahin khandé,
Na unhdn lugí bhruch hai, na andur jandé,
Khndik kikar khdiyé tudh hatted kití
Sakkd nahin auladl dñ, gal buri dh kití.*

*Assdn té khhd si hasdchdn, gall óhd kiti
Bdlak tú juvd lai jih bhagti dh kiti.
Na main kití bhagti na koi kamdi
Mérâ slhdh traé hath vit hai, Rabb dhand: ldi.
Tú bærd bhagat mahdn bali haé, pur azmat ldi.
Tú Machh agasón ldi lait dñ dh mak kaldi.
Tú Ndmé bhagat nún hawéón mde gaé jawdi,
Sip saldmán dhariyd, biptd kajwadi.
Dhanakh dharé eir sehré Sidé Rám maldi,
Tuddhén Ráñs Drópti dikkidn kajwadi
Tú jag gébn Baldév dñ, taín dñ vadiydi,
Daiñsar kd sir kajiyd Rám nén Laink lutdi,
Tú rdt Bhavisar kajiyd hóchón sant sahdi,*

He lifted them. The genii and gods
Did wonder. 'Fourteen clubs,' they cried,
amazed,
'He's lifted; one's enough for us. They weigh
Seven earths and seven heavens. Once
Hazrat Sháh,
The strong, did lift them, but even he could
lift
Them only to his knees; then his great
strength
Did fail him. Dhainsur, tall as heaven, could
show
Such power, and only he. But Bálâ, priest
Of God beloved, is great.' The priest
marched on
In front, and so he brought the saints back
to
His house. They ask for *dachnd, sadhu's*
fee.
They seek not food, they are not hungry,
nay,
They even refuse the house to enter, saying,
'How can we eat thy food? Thou'st murder
done.
Thy sons thou lovedst not; we but jested;
wrong
Thou'st done. Raise now thy sons to life, if
thou
Hast worshipped God.' The priest made
answer,
'I have earned no merit. But three cubits
and
A half my body is; and even so
It full of trouble is, God given.' They said,
'Thou art a mighty saint, with honours
crowned.'
The priest replied, 'O God, thou once didst
send
The fish, and from the heavens the bow:
Thou didst

Téri châr jugdâh vadidî hai châr Vêdd gawdi.
Nânak, Angad, Amar Dâs, ral bhagat kamâdi,
Têg Bahâdur, Gurû Govind Singh daswîn
badshâhi,

Itnêdi bhaqatdâh baurêdi vâtri mérâ di,
Ihdé pardé kajnâ phir hô sahâdi.
Bâlak, na zamîn âsmân si na kalan siydhâ,
Térâ rûh réhâ vich sîp dê, téri umar vihdâni,

Na tûn khâddhâ ann sî, na pitâ pâni.
Tâni nâm mérâ jop lîyâ kar amrit bâni.
Tâni qazdî hêyâ maiñ vadqdâ ãni,
Bâlak tû jagdî li, phir sutté jâni.
Dachhind maiñ lê lénâ tdn rôti khâni.
Chelé sifldâ jörîdâ parh amrit bâni.
Dôdn jîdâ nûn pakar lî chal vech bâzâr,
Jân koi gâhak saulâdô koi dassé kâr,
Dachhind pûrâ korn nûn barobar mât,
Nâlé sâldhâni vîkh lîyâ sab hâl harâl,
Râjî hoké khâ lîyâ bah vart ô pâr.
Chelé sifldâ jörîdâ parh nâm chatâr,
Sâdh râzi hoké ôh baithé ãn.
Bâlak dôvâ ãnké kôl khaloté ãn.
Sâdh bâlak vechké hô réhâ hairân.
Ih barâ bhagat mahân bali hai phir vich jahân.
Khâlg Ullâh sâri vechké, hô gurji qurbân,
Qurbânî hundî istarah, kar emanâj boyân.
Chelé akhâ, Dâniâ, ih jag hî parwân.

Help Nâmâ once, thy servant, and didst
raise

The cow to life again. And Balmik's shell
Salaamed thee — Balmik thon didst take
from out

It. Janak once adorned fair Sîtâ's head
With flowers. Thou once didst send her
Râm to be

Her husband. Drôpti too thou veildst, all
To hide her nakedness. Thon wentest once
A guest when sacrifice Baldéo made.
The glory thine. The head of Dhainsur
thou

Didst lop, and helpedst Râm to plunder once
Ceylon. Bhavisar too thon stayedst a night
With. Helper always thou art to thine
own.

In every age thy glory is. The Vêds
Give witness. Nânak, Angad, Amar Dâs,
United all to worship thee, and Têgh
Bahâdur, Gurû Govind Singh, the tenth
Great leader of the Sikhs, were all by thee
Assisted. My turn comes: 'tis thou that
can,

Save me from all disgrace: now help thou
me.'

God said, 'O Bâlâ, when there was no
earth,

Nor heaven, nor pen, nor ink, thy soul then
lived

In pearly shell for many ages. Food
Thou atest not, nor didst drink of water cold
A draught, but with sweet words thou oft
didst take

My Name. I owe a debt to thee which I
Will pay. Now raise thy sons believing
them

Asleep. My fee I'll take, and then I'll dine.'
In language sweet the true disciple made
This song. The priest caught up his sons,
and straight

To the market place to sell them, or to hire
Them out to work, that he might have a fee
To give the holy ones in fall. They saw,
They understood; they broke their fast and
dined.

The true disciple has compiled the songs

Kahō, Dānēd, paikambar Rabbē dū bañdē?

*Lā nazdik bañdkē Rabb pās bahāt,
Ihnān paikambarān nāl Rabb bhādi chārē pāt,
Mūsāl rāti varjiyāl Rabb sad khāwāt.
Aisē aile dursh nō paikambarān lāt.
Kauñ risdān kurangā, ammān dē jdē.
Pir ākhēl, Dānēd, hain Mussalmān,
Wāz karēn Rabb dā tére vih nañān imān,
Mahmānī Mūsāl varjiyāl Rabb na kitā hai
parwān.*

*Ckhe mahinē ann paklākē phir hōr pokān.
Nūri jhubbā pahiñkē, Rabb nañgān jān,
Sariyā manqāl dēlāi paikambar, magrōn dhakkē
lān.
Magrōn maggari Rabb nān, phir saldañ jān.
Sariyā manqāl vikhā dittā sub tuñ gayā mān.
Gaddi ann bālākē, phir nañdi lājān.
Khālā ann jē machchhiñ gāyā samajh
jākān.
Hoñā jag sapāran nā, rich dargāh parwān.
Chilē sifidā jāñidā sub khōl bāyan.*

*Shahr Dhanésar vich sī, ik pāndā bhārā.
Pustak jad ū vlohdā, dissē arsh mundārā
Shahri lōg uhnān ākhdi jōtashī bhārā.*

*Dān nahēn ū chukdā uhnān Rām piyārā.
Jān ghar ē dwe pāndhā dalilān kardā.
Kalēja mērdā khālā, jadlān muñiñ mardā.
Aivēn vich chikhān dū chātā sat mardā*

Of praise. Now read — adore the Name:
Were pleased

Those holy ones. They sat, they ate, and near
Them close the brothers stood to their sur-
prise.

‘A mighty devotee is this,’ they said,
‘And full of power in the world.’ The
people saw,

And loved. This Dānā was, confess, a good
And proper sort of sacrifice. This sort,
The Chela says, is acceptable. Say,
O Dānā, did not God the prophets make ?
God made them his own friends, and seated
them

Beside Him. Moses once invited God
To dine. He went to call him. Such great
things
The prophets did. Who are their equals ?
None.

There is no mother now to bear such sons
As they were. ‘Dānā,’ said the priest, ‘thou
callst

Thyself a Muslim, preachest God, but faith
In thee there is not. Moses called the Lord
To dine. In vain he called. Moses cooked
For full six months, when God, enrobed in
light,

A pauper came to beg, but Moses thrust
Him from the door bestowing on him one
Burnt cake. Soon after Moses went to call
His guest, but there, when showed the cake
which he

Had given the pauper, greatly shamed was he
And carted all his fresh made cakes to feed
The fishes in the river. This the whole
World understood. The sacrifice was not
Accepted.’ Thus the true disciple gave
In song a full account.

There lived one time
A Hindu teacher in Dhanesar town
Who read wise books, and had great love.
He was

A great astrologer, received no alms,
And loved great Rām. One day from thought.
he said,
‘My liver eat when death comes ; do not let
It burn upon the funeral pile — who eats

Jihṛā khdegā kalējā pāndhā hāi ghar dā.
 Jān ghar dāvē pāndhā ih saldh paklē,
 Pāndhā bhārā hōwēgā, jō kalējā khde.
 Suinkē gallān Jastrī nit kannin pādē.
 Tē rēlā hath Bhagwān dē jihmū Rām dawdē,
 Gaiē na khuṭē jōstiyē, d̄ punnā kdl.,
 Vēhī nē jind kaddh lēi, slās niklē sō nāl.
 Peṭ chāk kar lō nē kalējā bhāl,
 Chhikkē uttē rukhiyē vich kaj rumāl,
 Mūnhhāne suchchē oh tur payē ohādā karn
 shishkār,
 Chēlē siflān jōrān pārē nām chitār.
 Jastrī us gal nān nit pōi puklārē.
 Us kalējā chhikkēon lāh lēyā mūnh rakh dō
 bārē,
 Bāhar shahrēn tur goyi mūnh rakh ujdrē.
 Chētā kāi ghar ē dīnkē, mat mainūn mārē.
 Jastrī turkē pahautiā jākē banbās.

Ik lohk tapiyā tap kuruā si kitā niwās.
 Tapīdān kōl Jastrī gayi vār o vār
 Chhō mahimē labbhiyā Bālē pīr dē darbār.
 Jastrī Bālē pīr de jā sāmhiā baithi.
 Tā mōrdā hai bāp ji, main tārī hān bēji.
 Pīr jā ākhē Jastrīyē, phir sun tā heti
 Bahinā sāhī dharma hui, phir karmān seti
 Chahṛēdā dā main pīr hān, tā Brahman bēji,

Jarm pīyārā, pīr ji, jīhṛā Rabb nān bhāwā,
 Main tapiyā dī vēkkē kull subhhō sārē.
 Dunoṇā dī vich tapi aē, pāndhā mulrānī,
 Lākān nān das tārdā āp dīzakh jānē.
 Narak dī vich tapi hān, pāndhā mulrānī,
 Mūnh labbhiyāt hai bhālkē phir chhāq nāhīn
 jānā.
 Pīr jā ākhē Jastrīyē, sun bibi rāni,
 Jā kuchh Bhagwān likhiyā amrit kar jāniñ,
 Dittā Bhagwān dā khākē, bah uner langhānī¹
 Māl sādīdā chār khān vich jāh bahānī,
 Jastrī kailān chārdi, kāi barī aiyānī,
 Kailān jākē chugidān vich jāh niwānī.
 Sārā din ih chārdi pīyāndi si pāni,
 Dērē dāvē pīr dī, jād raiū rihānī.
 Suinkē gallān pīr diān rāzi bah bāni,

My liver will succeed me.' This he told To all. 'Whoever will be teacher great Must eat my liver.' Jastrī often heard And well remembered it. She thought, In God's

Good time some one will have it. Death approached The old astrologer, his breath grew short, The angel of grim death took out his life, He ceased to breathe, — they opened him, they took

His liver out — they hung it in a bag Suspended from the roof and hidden in A handkerchief. Then fasting, at the dawn Of day they burned him. The disciple sang These praises. Read and think about the Name.

But Jastrī well remembering his last Bequest, took down the liver, swallowed quick Two parts, and went towards the desert, for She feared the people of the house. A lad Of holy men were in the wild, 'mong whom She lived. She went among them till at last When full six months had passed, she found herself

With Bālā face to face. 'Thy daughter I, My father thou,' she said. The priest replied, 'My daughter, hear. It is not right that thou Shouldst sit with me a Chahṛā priest, and thou A Brāhmaṇ's daughter. Go seek thou, my child.'

Another. But she said, 'That caste, O priest, Is good that God loves. I have seen them all, Hindu and Muslim priests that lead to heaven And go to hell themselves — yes there there are

Both pāndās and mulrānīs; I have found And will not leave thee.' 'Jastrī,' said the priest,

'My gentle queen, what God decrees, be sure, Is living water; eat what He provides. Here live, and tend our herds within this wild.'

A child she was. She tended his black kine In pastures low. All day she herded, and, At even she led them to the water. Then At night she heard the words of Bālā with

Déré bahndé rát nân karé nâm kahđiń.
 Jastrí sâdhni lôk hai, Pîr Bâlî târi,
 Duniyâl uhnâń yâl nahin, maín vihâr hân ki
 kovâri,
 Yâl nahin uhnâń vêrvé, na jân piyâri.
 Jastrí hó gayi sâdhni, kôi Bhagwân né târi.
 Ik din kuilidîn chârđi, pêi râh dê nâl,
 Bhanné jandé lôk né, kôi beshumâr,
 Na kâi sâthi ik dâ na kâi dujjâl nâl,
 Khalotî Jastrí vekhdî, aj kî hanvâl?
 Phir Jastrí aggé pér dê, û arj gujâri,
 Bhanné jândi, bâp ji, aj duniyâl sâri,
 Râl nahin kâi vekhdâ, puc jân ujâri.
 Aggón nahin maiñ puchhed, sharmâdâ dî mâri.
 Phir Jastrí nân pár dasdâ, sibh khôl bayâń,
 Bhalkâ mâtâl kumb dâ vaddâ ashndn.
 Vich jiddé phir nahatédn pâp sarirâń jân,
 Ehi mâtâl kumb dâ, lôg bhanni jân.

Jastrí âhndi pár nân chalâ chaliyé asin,
 Ajhâ nahâdân such dâ chalâ nahâciyé osin
 Râjî hoké tör bâp ji, ârdâ rât ujjo hi
 Sunki gallâ Jastrí, hó tuyâr khâlötî,
 Kumb nahâdân Jastrijé, phir ik palkârâ.
 Us râl kâi nihd lâwé, ôh dharm dôvârâ,
 Utte bâhûnâl thâkarâń phir ik yalkârâ
 Us râl kâi nihd lâwé, phir karndâ wâlâ.
 Jâ râl yâl hai mâtâl paingâl sârâ.
 Cholâ siflân jôriâń, kar'aql nihârâ.
 Jastrí âhndi bîr nân, kar manâń richâr,
 Thâkarâń dâ bâhû di nahin mainâ sâr,
 Ajhâ nahâdân such dâ, chal mainâń târ.
 Cholâ siflân jôriâń, parh udâm chitâr.

Sonâ pahr din charhiyâ, Thâkarâń dâ bâhû dâ
 vârî,
 Maiñ pâni bhar lâdeangâl ik gaqâl khari
 Tâ gharâ hâ bakhâ nihd wîn, pâi pâp utâriń
 Jâ tâ rich ujâr dâ, pêi kuilidîn chârđi,
 Ik Bâhmanâl bâl umar si, déhi kushâl sutând,
 Lôkâń uhnâń akhiyâ, Bâhmanâl hó sityând,

Great reverence. She sat within his hut
 And heard strange stories of the Name. A
 saint
 Is Jastrî. Bâlâ blessed her. She the world
 Forgot, nor cared to be a wedded wife,
 Nor cared for life itself — a nun she was.
 God blessed her. Caring for her cows one day
 She saw great crowds of people run, and
 wondering
 She asked the priest, 'O father, all the world
 Is hastening to the jungle, shunning quite
 The road. No questions dared I ask.' The
 priest
 Explained, 'We have to-morrow morn the
 great
 Kumb-mâlâ, when they bathe in Ganges
 stream.
 At season opportune a bath one takes
 In Ganges water washes all one's sins
 Away. This is Kumb-mâlâ. People run
 To it.' Said Jastrî, 'Let us also go
 And bathe, or else send me, my father, I
 Will straight return to-night.' He gave her
 leave,
 And Jastrî in the twinkling of an eye
 Will bathe before the world. All such as
 bathe
 At such an hour are meet for heaven. The
 gods
 Will sit a moment at the river's mouth
 And happy he who bathes at such a time.
 If you such fortune have, go all the way.
 With wisdom has the true disciple made
 These songs. Said Jastrî to the priest, 'Thou
 knowest
 The time when gods sit; if indeed to bathe
 Ensures such blessing, help me to obtain
 It.' The disciple made these songs to sing
 And praise the Name. The priest said, 'When
 one
 And one full quarter of the morning watch
 That sees the sun has passed the gods sit. Stay
 At home. A basin full I'll give thee. Bathe.
 It is enough to wash your sins away.
 Then herd your cows again.' A Brâhman
 was,
 Who once became a leper. People said,
 'O Brahman, wisdom learn, to-morrow is
 The bathing day.' So he prepared his flour,
 And grain, and when they asked him whether he
 Was going, 'To the Ganges,' said he, 'I

Bhalke mēlā kumb dā, tū ḍhā jāndā,
 Pallē kharch pātīgā ḍātē dādā,
 Puchhan uhnān līgā jad, Ahnādā maiā Gangā¹
 jāndā,
 Chelē siflān jāyidā, mangē fuzl rabbāndā,
 Bāhmān rākhān ghuskē pāi gayā nijādā,
 Ohdē lēkh matthē dē khul gāyē, kitī mastak
 yārī,
 Agāj Jastri vich ujāj dē, pēt kailidān chādrē.
 Puchchiyād Jastri, Bāhminād, tērī dēhī hāi
 bhārī,
 Jerm dittā si māpēdān, dukh Rabb chā lādā,
 Bāhē pānī parālubhat, tainūn dīn milāyādā,
 Nikkē caḍdē bhhār nē, phir subbhō rikkādā,
 Bhādībādā sōcānādā jinhān bālak jādā,
 Maiā chaligā nahādān kumb dē, Rabb kōrh
 yārādā.
 Kumb nahānādā Bhemādā, phir hai nahiān vēlā,
 Tainān īthē jāndiān hājā: ku rēlā,
 Piechān nān moy jā lāhān, ghor jā savērā,
 Lārdāh barsi dō sē, phir ihā vēlā.
 Bāhmān maiā undhē sān, dukh Rabb chā lāyādā,
 Dānā pāidē parālubhat, tainūn dīn milāyādā,
 Bāhmān hāth chohā jāyādā, phir
 Hāth jāyē kharā lāgāyādā, sir quāmān tē
 tāyādā.
 Mihē ā jayā man Jastri, dīl tarśān āyādā,
 I īlē sāddi chal khān, jekar pīr ī āyādā.
 Jāndā Bāhmān rāhi nān Jastri yā ligā bāndhādā,
 Jāndā Hir pattān ton mīpkē, ghar Rāngādā dāndā.
 Jāndā sassi pattān mallyādā, ghar Punnuā dāndā.
 Jāndā Sihāt dubbi nīr vich, nit' ashq satāndā.
 Jāndā Rōdē mārdān khudhādān khāyē kurīlāndā
 Jāndā nā mayar Baloch dē khāndā si jāndā,
 Jastri ēkhālī pīr nā, Tainān korm rabbāndā,
 Thā Bāhmān hei undhē, dēhī kushth satāndā.
 Mārēdā kāgādā dā, ahndā maiā Gangā jāndā
 Pālī kāgādā sodh hī jādā, ik jay hai shahidā.
 Pālī īlē dīl tarśāgāyādā, man sā gāyādā mihr,
 Ikīl pālī pānī dā, sānnān trēhāyādā nān dhēr,
 Gāyādā jāl tā safkē, hāth pīndī pher,
 Pālī īlē bāryādā nahān lāndā dēr.
 Pālī īlē akhē Jastriyā, chāyāhē vēkh
 chāyāphērī.
 Gāyādā jāl tā suj dēn, ik hāth pīndī phērē,
 Ikīl ikhādā phir kāyē, ghor jāi sāniā,
 Bāhmān īlē tāq Jastri yāh pārdā mēlē,

Must go.' The true disciple has composed
 These songs — he seeks God's grace. The
 Brahman lost
 His way, but fate marked on his forehead
 helped
 Him — fortune him befriended. Jastri fed
 Her cows in the jungle. 'Why,' she asked,
 'look you
 So swollen?' He said, 'My parents gave me
 birth,
 But God has smitten me. My bread, and fate's
 Gift, water, brought me here to you. I have
 Both elder brothers and some younger too.
 But I am outcast am. My sisters have
 Fair children. Now I go to bathe on this
 Great Kumb day, that my leprosy my God
 May cure.' 'O Brahman, now there is no
 time
 To bathe in Kumb. Go home, and twelve
 short years
 Will bring the blessed time again.' 'A poor
 And hapless Brahman I! God sent this ill.
 A water and my fate have brought
 Me here.' The Brahman stood with folded
 hands
 Before her ; placed his head upon her feet.
 She pitied him. 'Come to the hut,' she
 cried.
 'The priest may now have come from Ganges
 stream.'
 She captured him as Hir did Ranja when
 She made him leave the boat-bridge on the
 stream;
 As Sassi sat on the bridge and brought
 again
 Her Punnu ; just as Sohni for her love
 Was drowned, being sick of love ; as Roda
 cried,
 Being beaten. He ran after the Baloch.
 And Jastri said, 'O priest, God-blessed art
 thou.
 This Brahman, leprous, goes to wash himself
 In Ganges stream. If he is cured indeed
 A Shahi sacrifice we see.' The priest
 Was moved—a basinful of water was
 A stream for thirsty souls. 'The Ganges
 stream
 Pour on thy body ; rub thyself.' The priest
 Great Balā helps, and lingers not. He said
 'O Jastri, find a pond and straightway throw
 The Ganges water in, and in it let

Jastri utthē pōāiyād hathdān tē pānī,
Ih bi shagun tadōn dā, phir jug kahānī,
Rizq mōhdrān chukidān, phir dānē pānī.
Chēlā dkhē Jastri, Bāhman lō jānī.
Chappri vēkhi Jastri, bhanni tē gahrī,
Gangā jal us sātīyā, tubhē Bāhman mārī,
Óhdī kiyān suddh hogayī, jēun lāl angiyārī.
Dujjī tubhī mārkē, phir dalil guzārī,
Mārē lēkh mathē tē khul gaē, phir mastak
sārī.
Ih mērd Bhagwān hāi, kōi kishan autārī,
Muñh uttē hath pherkē, Bāhman tūbhi triyat
mārē.
Jastri mang lain dī dil rish dalil guzārī,
Us bchhalein pānī sātīyā, lāl sū tārī,
Bāhman puchchē Jastriyē, Vidyā hāi, kōvārī?
Bāhman dkhē Jastriyē nāl mārē jānī
Pāriñ kiyān pākē hāmēl handdān,
Nath, qāndiñā, arsi, sir chauñk chā pānī.
Nāl mārē tar pāi, Bāhman lālā
Jangāl vich baiñkē, aithé kī bandēn?

Trēvar lai lai pat dā bhārī chā lānī,
Jastri dkhē, Bāhman dā, ih gal hai kārī,
Main charinān lagī hān pīr di, mārī pāi gayī
pāri.
Na trēvar lānī pat dā, main nān changī hai
bhārī.
Na dōlī charhnā shagan dē, na khānī chārī.
Tū jālkar hōi Bāhmanī, main hānī hān
chāhī.
Chēlē sifstān jōñān, karkā munjūrī.
Bāhman aggē pīr dā, kisi arzō.
Tussi jangal andur hō rahē, n hān tabbar kāi.
Ghar tuhādī Jastri, kithān pāidā hoi.

Him bathe, and whole return.' So Jastri,
just
As Hindu priests on Ganges' banks are used
To do, poured water on his hands. From
thence
The custom rose in the world. 'Twas then her
bread
And water took their rise. The *chela* says,
'O Jastri, thee the Brāhmaṇ will take clean
Away.' The pond that Jastri found was full
Of mud and stagnant water, so he poured
The Ganges water in, and forthwith dived.
His body grew like burning coal, quite whole.
A second time he dived and in his heart
Conceived a thought. 'Fate's impress on my
brow
Has helped me — now my fortune's clear—the
priest
Is like a God to me—he is for me
Krishn incarnate.' Once again he rubbed
His face in his hands, and dived a third time.
Now
He firm resolved to ask fair Jastri. Then
He splashed and swam, and said, 'O Jastri, say
Are you a virgin or a wedded wife?
Come, Jastri, come with me — I'll give you
gifts,
Feet ornaments and necklace you shall have,
A nose ring, ear-rings, thumb ring, golden
crown,
All these, and you will be a Brāhmaṇ's wife.
What have you here in this wild jungle? Put
You off your plaid, and you shall have a gown
Of silk.' But Jastri said, 'O Brāhmaṇ
this
Can never be, for I have humbly sat
At this priest's feet, and he has blessed me. I
Care nought for silken clothes. I love my
plaid.
I care not for a palanquin, how good
So e'er the omens be. Rich food is not
My choice. Go wed a Brāhmaṇ girl. I am
A Chuhṛī.' With great pains these songs
were made.
The Brāhmaṇ humbly made request before
The priest. 'The jungle is your home; you
have

Chelé siflān jōrīdn kurdā arzōi.

*Maīn phir jaddi Bahmān hān, na Dām nā
Nāi,*

*Tere būhē tē dānké, maīn sēvā hai lāi,
Jastrī mainūn chā dē, gaēt mandī sahī,
Jē phir Jastrī na dē ēn, mardān kālārī khādī.
Pir jō dkhē, Jastī iyē, vēkh Bāhman bēnārd,
Huṇ jhāldā dūkh nūn, huṇ mangdā viḍh,
Nāl ihdē phir tur paō, sir khān na chāṛhd,
Vas mérē phir kuchh nahīn, magar andōn ilā
Jastrī aggē pir dē, lā baihī chārd,*

*Kyūn rāh bhulānd haqq dā, kī karnd kārd.
Magar mérē pai gēōn, Bāhmanānd gawārd,
Rannān phirnā bħdādā, ajē huṇ sāēn duk
hiydrā.
Bālē pir Jastrī nūn, ik gal sunīdī,
Sūd sī sat vanti, ghar Rām viāhī dī,
Harichand lārān lē lēidān, pari arshān tōn dī.
Lōi bhagat kabir dē ghar viāhī dī,
Kubjan dē ghar kāhn hōyā, Bashdēr viāhī.
Jis Bābā Nāñk jammiyā, dhan hai oh nāi,
Kithān vadhe pirmathī, gal bañdi nahīn,
Chelé siflān jōrīdn, pañh nām sunīdī.
Chup kar gayi Jastrī, ayā sharmān dā vēlā,
Bāhman dē nāl jāl khān, dān dēūn changērd.
Jad nau nēcē pāni roggiya sī, armānī ghērā
Tēri kūṭiyād sukki rihi sī, pāni nahīn ghaṭiyād
phērā.
Tu bi sukhī rēhā sāhēn, karm kīd changērd.
Dēotēdn kīlān mang lēd, chand, suraj, zamin
hai tōrd.
Oh dān dē khān, mang khān changērd.
Chelé siflān jōrīdn, kar 'aql vadherd.
Bālē pir us vēlē siklaump kardī,*

Chand grahn kā dān dittā phir Jastrī tān.

No wife; how could fair Jastrī be to you
A daughter? This the true disciple makes
These songs with lowly heart. 'A Brāhmaṇ I,
No bard or barber, I sit at your doors
A suppliant — give her to me, a boon.
Or else I will with knife relentless take
My life.' The priest said, 'Jastrī, look at
this

Weak Brāhmaṇ—but a moment gone he was
A sorry leper, now he wants to wed.
Go with him — let him not for your sake do
Himself an injury. And blame me not,
For you yourself did bring him.' Jastrī then
Began to make excuse in presence of
The priest. 'Why send me hence away
out of

God's way? Why should I take this step? Oh
why,

O Brāhmaṇ, have you followed me? But now
A leper, you come women to pursue.'

The priest to Jastrī said, 'A virgin pure
Was Sita. Harichand did marry her
To Ram, the fairies in attendance. Once
Too Loī fair became the wife of saint
Kabir. Kubjan gave birth to Kahn, the wife
Of Bashdev was she. Blessed was the one
Who bore great Baba Nanak. Thus the world
Was peopled.' The disciple made these songs,
Then sing and glorify the Name. So still
Was Jastrī, bashful grown. 'Go,' said the
priest,

'This Brāhmaṇ wed. I'll give you dowry
large.'

She said, 'When once a flood full nine spears
deep

O'erspread the earth, the sky was dark with
clouds,

Then thy house only stood as dry as dust
When all the world was flooded. Then didst
get

A blessing from the gods — the moon and
sun

Are witnesses. That blessing give to me.
The privilege of begging, which is good.'
The true disciple has compiled these songs
With wisdom. Bālā gave to Jastrī right
To alms and gifts at every eclipse

Béđá tére viohán hówégd, nám Védvád dhúrdhán
Chand grahn ming khângé, rôz qiyâmat tâin
Saddé dûn ditté, Dânéù, aj déda aiyânsidh
idhán,
Jhûkhé maslé karké, kiot Mussalmán nûn
sunâdiñ.
Dâné ñkhé pîr nûn, Mussalmán hó jâdiñ,
Musalli karðn palk vich, shartdâ karvâdiñ,
Kalma parhé Muhammad dû, mâmia hó jâdiñ.
Mazhab Ádam dû siddiyé, bhishti jâdiñ,
Pîr jô ñkhé, Dânéù, sun ñddi bdt,
Na kadi rôsa rakhiyâ, na parhí namâz,
Na 'Ádam dê mashab dê vich haûn, na kalmé
dé sâth,
Piohchâñ dassdâ khôlké, sârt qurâjdt.
Bévô 'Ádam lêd sî, vich bishishdâ vâs,
Us dâna khâddhâ kainak dû, pêt bharvâs.
Órak mailâ dûnd, ih bhairi bâsh,
Hukm kitâ Rabb bhsd nûn, us lêd sâ khâsh.
Us té sharâ chalâi paikambardâ, mailé té kitâ
na rierâs.
Kikur khâddhî, Dânéù, bhéâl, paikam bardâ
pâlk,
Das, kadôñ tû réhd sâñ vich bishishdâ rât ?

Kihî ôthé dîthi sâhî, ik Rabb dî zât ?
Us dâ kalma parhângé, karké ikld's.
Chéle siftdâ jörâdiñ hó bê vasvâs.
Jé té sharâ chalâi paikambardâ, ôh chiz nahiñ
makrûhdâ,
Mussalmán khâduni phir nâl rardit,
Paikambar jihri kar gaé, phir kull hikdit,
Aessâñ turnd usilâ, phir nâl hiddit.
Pîr jô ñkhéù, Dânéù, paikambardâ dî sabh
jhûkh kahâñ,
Bhéâl nahiñ sî maiâ chaddiyâ, tâñ nahiñ sî
khâñ.
Shartdâ lñd, déô istreñ didhâ, ñhndé Rabb dî
farmâñ,
Chaudah tabak kahndéô, nau qutb rabbâñ,
Phir kikur dôhtré mar gayé, phir bâjôñ pâñ,
Chéle siftdâ jörâdiñ parhé amrit bâni.
Na rôza na ashâmi, na hajj id guzâri.

Of the moon, and said, 'My child, from thee
 will spring
 A people called Vêdvâs, who till the day
 Of Resurrection will take alms, the moon
 Eclipsed. O Dânâ, know that Vêdvâs take
 Due gifts, this blessing being the cause.
 Repeat
 False teaching to some Mussalmân.' 'Be-
 come,'
 Retorted Dânâ, 'Mussalmân yourself.
 Musalli I can make you in a trice.
 The way I know — repeat the *kalima*
 Of our Muhammad ; be among the true
 The faithful. This is Ádam's faith, that will
 Bring you to heaven.' The priest replied,
 'Fasts we
 Have never kept, nor offered Muslim prayer,
 We know not Adam, nor the *kalima*
 Shall I to you your history tell ? Know then
 Your father Adam lived in Paradise.
 Where once of greed he ate a grain of wheat.
 That in him caused corruption, which the
 sheep
 At God's command did eat. All refuse is,
 Therefore, forbidden. But the sheep you
 eat,
 And it is all unclean. When did you spend
 A night in Paradise ? What caste was there ?
 His *kalima* I'll speak with all my heart
 Who came from thence.' The true disciple
 made
 These songs, being free from care. Dânâ
 replied,
 'The law allows us ; we will eat such things
 As history approves. The prophets gave
 A perfect law — we follow them.' Then
 said
 The priest, 'O Dânâ, false are all the tales
 That are of prophets told : the sheep did not
 Abstain from food forbidden. For your wives
 You gamble, saying, God bade you. Fourteen
 parts
 You say the world contains, with nine great
 poles
 And all Muhammad's. Why then sadly died
 His daughter's children without water ?'
 See

Na 'Ádam dé mazhab di lór hai na kamlé
dís várí,
Tú bî khólké das khán, apñi gur parnálí,
Chéle sítán jöríán Rabb púj sawári.
Pír jí dákhdá, Dáná, sun sláddián bátán,
Bárá 'Ádam thín hóidá ní, phír sabbhó zádtán
. Mayrón uttpati hót hai Brahmá thín jéun
shákhán,

Main jug chhatti röhá sdn vich jal bhimb dé
rládán.
Úthé kalmá parhiyá us ék dñ, dujjá kóhryá
ákhán,
Chéle sítán jöríán, khól sachchián bátán.
Chandri Rám Chand tod ákhiyá, sun Dáná
qází,
Gillá kar lí manik nál, ní kariá dírází.
Pichché Dilli dñ tókt hñ, chugattí Gází,
Úthóu tíkar jónágá, chahg ghójánh tází,
Dáná ákhé, Chónther, phír tó ki jdáná,
Añ pikkidh khaké, pír rohén parohádch,
Singhán lassi píké, hal tó pýá vâhán,
Is prikanbar di shard náh, assi jánatá
mulvájé,
Déri Dás Khatri kóu mdyá dhári,
Us parvarish kútí pír dí, kóu b'shunári,
Paisá áhdá rartlá, Khatri hith pasári.
Parhé dé réch khuljóké us arz gazdri.
Sun tñ, Dáná qázíyá, mat téri mñri
Assdá té ihá, rékh lí, andiyá sári
Assi jó Hindú lók hán, patthar náu sérén,
Rójí dñndé hán khán náh, lí píthró, jéóná,
Tiká mathé láké sáraj náh sérén.

The true disciple made in language sweet
These songs, and sings them. 'Fasts we
keep not, nor
Do we keep Hindu days, nor go pilgrims
To Mecca, nor keep festival like you,
Nor Adam's faith we follow, nor repeat
The *kalima*. Speak of your own quite plain.,
The true disciple has composed these songs,
God victory gives. The priest said, 'Dáná,
hear
My true defence. From Adam sprang the
castes,
And after him like branches people grew
Of Brahmá. None else has there been. For
six
And thirty ages floated I in deep
Dark water, where I the creed did say
Of him who is the Only One. Whom then
Can I call equal to him?' None. These
songs
The true disciple made, and vindicates
The truth. Then outspake Chaudri Rám
Chand, 'Hear,
Thou, Dáná, teacher of the law, speak as
Thou pleasest. Use no force: in Delhi
rules
A brave Chugatta. I will swiftly ride
To him.' Said Dáná, 'What knowest thou,
my friend,
To eat eight loaves, and sleep in the shade, or
drink
Curd water, or go plough the fields. The law
We doctors only know' A Khatri was
Rich Dévi Das, who showed much kindness
to
The priest. So rich he was that other men
Did borrow from him. This man standing
up
Amidst the crowd said, 'Dáná, doctor of
The law, you have become a fool. We saw
The priest's strange powers, although I am
Hindu
And worship stones, and offer bread and
say
To idols, 'Eat ;' the sun we worship, see
The marks upon our brows. We doff our
clothes

Lîrê duallbin lâhké nahâvôn tê dhôvôn,
Devô Dô akhiyâ, Hindû mérô nân,
Marin kadi nahin gal chhayâ, hûn chhapândâ
nâhdân.
Divô bhariyâ pâni dô, vich batti ih pâi,
Divô dô chhadq bâlké, gal sachohi ih tâi,
Divô jékar na bâliyâ sharâ jhûphâ hai tâi,
Dânâ ikuâthê kar léyé sârê mulvâni.
Vaddâl âj qâzidân, dâ tuferdân jâne.
'Alim fâzil manvî ravaiyatâi wâlê,
Sabbhô jâké bah gayé, phir divé dê duwâllé,
Oh dê heth dharn Qurân bi, kitâbân vârn.
'Inndu tuainnd kullôhâ,' parhn, munh thiñ
parhké pukdran.
Fazl Ilâhi mangdê, parh sahisdi mâran,
Divô pâni dâ baiddâ nahin, hath kannâñ nû
mâran,
Jhûphé qâzi hô gayé, phir hath na hâran,
Bhûncén jhûthâ hâjâi, paé randâ é mâran,
Dânâ qâzi akhiyâ, Divô Pîr Shâh bâlé
Khalotî hâi khalqat hai, phir subh duâllé,
Sabbhô mathâ têkangé, râl qâzi sârê,

Phir sir ô pâ dêangé, lâ jâc duâllé,
Bâlî nûrî pîr nê Nâm Dhâri saddé,
Dâdu Bhaggû giânî, aggé hath nê baddhé,
Chôp rabhdû sâkké, Pîr Bâlî aggé,
Nâm jappo khâi Dhâddhiô, phir divô jâgé.
Bâlî nûrî pîr nê phir nârd râhyâ,
Pîrâl bhariyâ pâni dâ Pîr Shâh jagdyâ
Ôhulîn Allah lajjân rakhidân âp madad si dyâ.
Lâl khâñ dâ pôtrâl Pîr Dhagânâ jâdyâ.
Dânâ qâzî akhiyâ, Tû sârê pûrâ.
Vich masitî chal bahi khâñ kauñ tainûn âhndâ
Châkra,
Tû divâ pâni dâ bâliyâ kam kitô pûrâ,
Asin tân tére chéle hâñ, tâ pîr hai pûrâ.
Suñké pîr masit di dargâh jâc,
Jâ kharâ dargâh vich, jâ arz suñdi,
Lakh rupiyâ lâké qâzî masit banwâl,
Oh dê ôtté parda pâké, mérî maut sâ bandâ,
Tudhâ pardé kajñê mur hô sahâi
Châlê sifâtân jörâdân var Durgâ mât.
Allah akhâ, Bâlî, tû pîr hai bhâlî.

And washing don them. Hindu I, I speak
The truth and fear not. Here a lamp filled full
Of water stands — a wick I place in it.
O doctor, light it by a miracle.
We then shall know you true : unless you can
Your boasted law is proved a lie.' He called
The teachers all, did Dânâ, and he sat
With all the learned men around the lamp.
The book Qurân they placed beneath it, then
They ranged their books about it, while they
said,
'Inndu tuainnd kullôhâ,' and breathed
Upon the lamp. They asked God's grace, they
threw
Their verses at the lamp, but all in vain ;
It would not burn, and they were ashamed
indeed,
But still they kept their spite, and made a
noise
In anger. Dânâ said, 'Let the Pîr Shâh light
The lamp. The whole assemblage will bow
down
Their heads before him, and a robe we'll
give
Of honour, which he'll wear and go.' The
priest
Great Bâlî, priest of light, sent for those that
Revere the Name, and Dâdu, I'haggû, who
Proclaim the truth, stood up with folded hands.
They warmed their wooden drum and sat
before
Great Bâlî, priest. 'O sing,' cried Bâlî, 'sing :
Sing hymns in praise of that great Name. The
lamp
Shall lighted be.' So Bâlî, priest of light,
Did shout, and lo, the lamp with water filled
Burst into flame, and Bâlî's fame was saved,
By God who helped him. This was grandson to
Lâl Khâñ, the son of Pîr Dhagânâ. 'Thou,'
Cried Dânâ Qâzî, 'art a doughty weight.
Sit in the mosque. Thou art no Chuhra, thou !
A wonder thou hast done — disciples we
Are henceforth. Thou art a saint.' When the
priest
But heard the name of mosque he went into
God's presence, where he standing made
request,
'This Qâzî hero has made a mosque that
cost
A lâkh of silver, and a curtain he
Has curiously contrived to kill me. Come,

Bhangarē lē lē quib dē té uddan khatolā,
 Seal karūn masit dā na rakhiā raulā,
 Rabb kisi nahiā vekhiyā, māssā ki tōld,
 Bälā ákhé Rabb nūn, dē pak pakān,
 Nál mérē tur puō, phir hokē suoh nám.
 Jadou masit varengā lén aggān vekh,
 Maiān sáminé hō khalavānja faqirān dē bhókkh,
 Rabb bañayé, Balou, tére uchchē lékh,
 Térā sáni nahin kōl, hō dē haiy anek,
 Bälā pár partké masit val jéch,
 Aggē khalotā Rabb sī, oh-le sáminé jāin.
 Mathā téki Rabb nūn Sháh sés návān,
 Chéle sijdān jórān parh nám suinān.
 Bälā pár masit vich, báh arzān kardā,
 Nálé pár kuhuvnālā nálé Rabb thán dardā
 Panj waqt namidz guzdrdā bah andar parhalā,
 Mang duāl Rabb thón pár pair báhar sī dharlā.
 Pár masitn nikliyā, hō aggē nállān changā
 Kandhān díggān gírraki, khān hō gáyd nangā.
 Shahr sárā sī vekhdā, lāl dil dī sangā.

Ia'nat dínlé Dáné qázi nūn, kam kítā nahin su
 changā.
 Pár masitn nikalké, phir báhar áyā,
 Dáné qázi dil rich, hōr shugal jayágā,
 Pár rósh jác kháké sir ë pá mangwáyā,
 Jhnún ján na déáñā, pár kadká nahin áyā,
 Kárigar sab shahr dí Dáné mangwáé,
 Ghéo átē khang dē chá dhér lagáé,
 Kassán dumbe bakré Sháh jab ghar áé,
 Andrassé kachaurián karah báinwáé,
 Ghéo maidé móké, pakwáé kadlé,
 Básbutti té mushkhanáy, cháwal mangwáé,
 Tarké lagayān puldó nán khushbóé jde,
 Chéle sijdān jórān parh nám suináe,

And help me, save me from dishonour.'

The

Disciple has composed these songs, by help
 Of Durgā, goddess eloquent. God said,
 'O Bälā, thou art simple, take for me
 Strange vehicles unseen, and flying beds,
 And move about the mosque unharmed. Let
 not

This thing remain disputed. None has seen
 God, nor does any know what weight or
 size

He is.' So Bälā said to God, 'Give bread,
 Even holy bread to me, and with me be
 A true Name.' 'When I enter look on me :
 I in the garb of holy man will stand
 Before thee. God made for thee, Bälā, fate,
 Good fortune. Second hast thou none, al-
 though

Pirs there are a many.' Bälā Pır returned
 And straight advanced towards the mosque.
 God there

Was standing. Bälā went to Him, and bowed
 His head. The true disciple has composed
 These hymns, and reads them to proclaim the
 Name.

Within the mosque our Bälā sat and prayed
 To God. A priest was he and reverent.
 Five times he prayed, and then appeared un-
 hurt

Without the door, when crash the *mosjid*
 walls

Fell flat ; the well lay there exposed to view
 Of all the world. The whole town saw and
 stared.

They cursed the Qází Dáná, saying, 'Thou
 Hast meanly done.' But Bälā stood before
 Them in the open. Dáná planned again.
 'We'll feed the priest,' he said, and sent for
 him

A robe of honour. 'We'll not let him go.
 We'll say he never came.' And so he called
 The cooks most skilful of the town and loads
 Of ghi and flour prepared, and said, 'I will
 Kill rams and goats when Bälā comes to be
 My guest.' So cakes and rice and all things
 good

He had — the flavour spread afar. These
 songs

The true disciple made, and sings them for
 The Name. So Dáná thought, 'This priest
 shall not

Dâne qâzî dil vich dailî daurâî,
Pir aivân tur na jaân, phir bâz azmâdâî,
Ghar de kuttî billî ôh zabh karâde,
Kimiyâl khûb baîdyâ, phir sômpî udâ,
Ihnâî ghê rich bhunâî, pâni mul na pâni
Rinnâî khûb baûlke, muñhâî parda na hatdin
Ik khâlî Bâlî pîr nê, sannâ dujî pâni.
Chelâ sijdâî jorlân parh nâm sunidâî.
Kuttî billî sunikâ pîr dargâh jâc
Ja kharâî dargâh vich, ja arz sunidâî,
Kuttî billî rîkh löt charh riidhî hâi,
Pir paikambar auliyâ nahâî khândâ kât,
Muñh bismillah parshkâ, hath chuk pâni thâl,
Kuttî billî uñhêgi, hukum mérâ dê nâl,
Paikhôn kuttî uñhêgi, phir billî udâ,
Kâhl karkâ chuk leîn thâl utûn rumâl,
Bâlî pîr Rabb nûn, ik gal sunidâî,
Ik zinâî utrî us yârrî châhî
Uhnâî Rabb mwâdiâî dittiâî, us bîtâ jâi.
Gholâ putt jawâî hî pêyâ, buddhi kdj rachâî,
Mél mandal us sadliyâ, gholki bajwâî.
Janj riidiyâ hî pêi, udâ turiyâ nâi,
Aggê râh rich jândâî ik nali si ûi,
Janj pâr longh gayi, mâllah Ite mullahi.
Janj pakuti jâlkâ, unhâî dârâ bahâî,
Té paîsâ dhâlâ partiyâ, râh changi âi,
Doli riidiyâ hî pêi, nîl tur pêi dâî.

Ajjê râh rich jândâî, ôhô nadî ûi,
Sauñ janj doli dub gayi, phir bâlhar na ûi,
Bârâh varhâ rôndâ rakhî phir Rabb as
pahunchâi.
Jân Bâlî pîr nû saddâ karâo, aggê farsh
birhâinâ.
Nafrân jâlkâ Shâh nûn kihâ, rôsi khâl nurhând
Aggê Shâh dé sârd tôte, zikr karâ subhâna,
Hukam kitô Shâh Rôshan tâli, Samajhê
kaisl khând?
Amar Ilâhi vâchi âyâ, moyâ tuldh jâwâna
Dâne khudâi dharâ kamâiyâ, Rabb nê mul na
bhând.
Jai khânu uttôn parda lahiyâ, høyâ khel rab-
bâna.
Kuttî billî zinda hî gayi, chummâ qadâm
shahâna.
Manj utte gayâ baishâ uddâ ud asmândâ,
Ilâthan Dândâ karâ salâmdâ dur høyâ habvâna.

Without good trial go.' He killed and hashed His cat and dog, and gave them to be cooked By the village barber, saying, ' Fry it well, And put no water in. The lid do not Lift off, and Bâlâ will partake.' The true Disciple made these songs. Proclaim them for

The Name. The priest in due course heard about'

The dog and cat, and going into God's Most holy presence said, ' I saw the dog And cat which they have cooked. Priests, prophets, saints,

Have never eaten food like this.' God said, ' Whenever thou shalt put thy hand within The dish, say ' In God's Name,' and cat and dog Will rise at my command, the dog and then The cat. But quick the dish uncover.' So He told to God a story. ' Once there was A woman, who to God gave one-eleventh Of all her income. Gifted he her with A son, who in due time was married. Then The drums were beat, and the party with The barber took their way. A stream they crossed.

The boatmen got their fee, the journey full Was made, and all and sundry dues being paid Homewards they came, the barber's wife herself

Being with them, but midway across the stream The bride with palanquin, and all the rest Were drowned and lost. The mother wept for twelve

Long years, and God restored them.' Dânâ called

For Bâlâ, spread a carpet for him, sent His servants with a message, ' Come, my lord.' A parrot white did shout loud praise to God, But Bâlâ Shâh said to Shâh Rôshan, ' Dost Thou know what sort of food this is?' then came

A heavenly message, ' Thou shalt raise the dead,

For Dânâ has deceived thee. God doth like Him not.' The dog and cat were presently About the feet of Bâlâ, licking them, And Bâlâ on his cot rose to mid heaven.

*Dharti upar manjū dyd, nēōn nēōn karē salāmān
 Dānā sūrā pārd kahulā, dīthā, sai nazrānā,
 Sai sūrē mānā agje dīthā, karkē gayē salāmān
 Gurū Nānak nān phar andar dīthā, chakki
 pakar shamhāna.*

*Shāh Daulā chhap langhālā maiñ tkān, munda
 mayar bhajānd.*

Tainān sūrma Rabb bāñdyā, bakhshē méri jāndā

*Rāzi hō Shāh nazrān lēiān, dyd, vich makānā
 Sāmiān Shāh di shukar bajdyā, shurm rakhi
 Rahmāna,*

*Vich nishāni jhanidā layā, nālē gōr zandānā,
 Randē vān pakarū pīrā, mushkil karn asānā.
 Ail akhārē Bālē kitē, dīthā jumol jañānā.*

*Maiñ angāñhārā nām jupandā, khair Jandbōn
 pāndā.*

Oh ih ik sach Nām dhani.

Then Dānā bowed, his pride was broken; and 'Asūrā' said he, giving gifts. He said, 'I many holy men have seen, who me Much honoured; Bābā Nanak made I grind My corn; Shāh Daulā fled; the boys I made Eject him; thee alone has God made great. Oh spare my life.' The Shāh accepted all His gifts, and homewards went; his followers thanked

Great God, who saved him from dishonour.

Raised

He his fair flag, and made his grave where all The people go to pray for help in pain. Such wonders Bālā did — the whole world saw.

A sinner I repeat the Name. From heaven Give gifts. There is one Name, Eternal, True.

ARCHAEOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET.

BY THE REV. A. H. FRANCKE.

Supplementary Note.

In the Plates attached I exhibit three photographs by Dr. E. Neve of Srinagar, Kashmir, which are of special interest, as the objects represented have never before been depicted for the information of scholars. Two are from Alchi Monastery near Saspola (*ante*, Vol. XXXV. p. 325) and the third from Khalatse.

Alchi Monastery.

Plate I. shows a portion of the gallery with its trefoiled arch and wood-carvings, Plate II., fig. 1, shows a portion of the interior. The fresco of the monk behind the statue of Buddha is said to be a portrait of Lotsava Rinchen bZangpo.

Dogra Fort near Khalatse.

Plate II., fig. 2, represents the most ancient inscription on stone (whitened before photographing for clearness) in Ladakh according to Dr. J. P. Vogel. It is situated a few yards below the Dogra Fort at Khalatse. The characters are Indian Brahmi of the Maurya period. Dr. Vogel reads them to represent the word Bharad[v]ayasa. (See *Annual Progress Report, Archaeological Survey*, pp. 31-32.)

ARCHEOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET.

Plate I.



Gallery of the Monastery at Alchi-mikhar near Saspola



Fig. 1. Interior of the Monastery at Alehi-mkhar near Saspola.



Fig. 2. Ancient Inscription at Khalatse, Ladakh.

ON THE NAVABAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMAGUPTA OR P.

BY THE LATE PROFESSOR G. BÜHLER, O.F.E., LL.D., AND DR. TH. Z.

(Translated from the German by May S. Burgess.)

I. — The Manuscript.¹

THE following short account of a hitherto unknown Mahākāvya is based on one
 This manuscript belongs to the little known collection of James Tod,
 Library of the Royal Asiatic Society in London, and is numbered 113. It consists
 and a number of blank palm-leaves, with two to four lines on the page, in old Nagari.
 two first, with the two last leaves, have been completed by a later hand, apparently because the MS. had
 been injured at the beginning and end. The date of the MS., if it ever was given, has not been
 copied by the writer of the 185 pages. It may be presumed, however, that the MS. is of great age
 from the fact that the numbering of the single leaves is carried out on the right side by means
 of the usual figures, and on the left by letters: compare Kielhorn, *Report on the Search for Sanskrit MSS.* (Bombay, 1881), p. viii ff. Besides, manuscripts, such as the one under consideration, have
 been so often described, — e. g., by Kielhorn in the report just quoted — that further description
 would be superfluous.

The manuscript is, on the whole, very well preserved. Only on a few pages is the writing
 blurred and indistinct. Leaf 82 is broken and part lost. Corrections on the margins of the leaves,
 as also completions of verses or parts of verses, are often carried out in Śāradā writing.

If the manuscript shows errors and defects — the text is not as a whole quite so correct as one
 could wish, — it is at least complete, and in this respect, in the meantime, unique. It is, indeed,
 still possible that in India complete manuscripts of the *Narashasādākharita* may be found. Still,
 with each year that becomes less probable. Manuscripts which have become known up till now are
 incomplete. This is also true of the two manuscripts, which, according to Burnell (*A Classified
 Index to the Sanskrit MSS. in the palace at Tanjore*, p. 163 a), are found in Tanjor. While the
 work of Padmagupta (Parimala) consists of 18 sargas, these manuscripts only contain 17 sargas.
 Besides, as one of them is not inked, and the other (written about 1650), imperfect and much injured,
 it may be taken for granted that the manuscript material at Tanjor would not be sufficient for an
 analysis or even for an edition of the work, — for the rest, the title of the Kāvya is, according to
 Burnell, *Sahasādākharita*, and the name of the author, Parimala Kalidasa (').

Also the manuscript, which the publishers of the *Subhāditālī*, Messrs. Peterson and
 Durgāprasada, have brought out, was imperfect.² The "fragment" includes "several sargas" and
 extends at least to the sixth sarga, as may be gathered from the account of the scholars just
 mentioned. The beginning of the work, however, is assuredly not preserved in this fragment,
 otherwise Peterson and Durgāprasada would doubtless have drawn up a more exact chronology of
 Padmagupta than that given in the words. "In his *Narashasādākharita* Parimala or Padmagupta
 refers to Kālidāsa, somewhere between whom and Kshemendra he is therefore to be put. His Kāvya
 is in praise of a king of Avanti" (*Subhāditālī*, Introd. p. 53). Further, it is shown below
 that the date of Padmagupta may be fixed as precisely as possible in the literary history of India.

¹ This paper appeared in the *Sitzungsberichts* of the Wien Imp. Akademie of Sciences for 1888, in the
 Phil.-hist. Class. (Bd. CXVI, Hft. 1, S. 583—630). The first 20 pages of the German are by Dr. Zachariae, and
 the last 27 by Dr. Bühlér.

² Conf. *Subhāditālī* of Vallabhadeva (Bombay, 1886), Introd., p. 57 ff. Here also in Peterson's small
 pamphlet, the *Auchityādākura* of Kshemendra (Bombay, 1885), p. 25 ff., is found collected all that is known
 concerning the poet Padmagupta and his works.

II.—The Author, his time, and his work.

The name of the author is **Padmagupta**: so he is called in the colophon to the first sarga of the *Navasāhasrākharita* in the manuscript before us, in the first of the four tail verses which are attached to the poem: —

*Etad vriti brahamuladyuti Padmaguptah
sri Sindhu djanripati shartam babandha³ H*

in the *Dāśarāma* (ed. Hill, p. 96), and in the *Suhṛdayālī* under No. 168, another name — and as it appears the more usual name — or Padmagupta, is **Parimala**. He is almost always called so in the sarga signatures of the manuscript before us, also, for example, in the *Gāṇarātnamahodālti*, p. 117.

Padmagupta's father was called **Mrigāṅkagupta**, as given in the colophon to the first sarga.

The period of Padmagupta is easily fixed. Padmagupta composed the *Mahākavya Navasāhasrākharita*, which treats of the winning of the snake-king's daughter **Sasiprabhā** (*Sasiprabhādabbhā*), for the glorification of his patron king **Sindurāja alias Navasāhasrāka**. This is clearly and distinctly expressed in the concluding vers of the poem — compare the passage quoted. Who was this king Sindurāja however? Where did he rule? This point is explained for us in the first sarga, especially in these two vers: —

*Sarasvatīkalpa'at uikandim
vindāmāhe vāpatrādālōrah ।
yūvī prasādātēvamanyamutra
karunachirne pathē samāhāmāh ॥ 6 ॥
dhāmā vāsurīmā pāchī mudrā⁴
malāttā vāmā vāpatrādālōrah ।
vāgīvāmā lāvābhāthavāya
bhānūtā tāmā sampātā Sindurādāh ॥ 7 ॥*

Padmagupta was therefore court poet to **Vākpatirājadeva**, a friend of poets (*kāribāidhara*), and after his death, court poet to **Sindurāja**, who is called a younger brother (*anujānāmā*) of Vākpatirāja. Now we proceed to find Sindurāja described as **Avantipati**, **Malavaminakotana**, **Paramāravāṁsaketu**, &c., thus it appears quite certain that, in Vākpatirāja and Sindurāja, we have two well-known kings of **Ma'ava**, belonging to the dynasty of the **Paramārās**. The time of the rule of these kings is ascertained pretty closely from inscriptions,⁵ and from that the date of Padmagupta may be fixed. The period of the literary activity of Padmagupta falls in the last quarter of the tenth and the beginning of the eleventh century A. D.⁶

⁵ This story of the celebrated king Sindurāja, which is beautiful as a full-blown white lotus, Padmagupta has composed.

* We praise the one incomparable root of the wishing tree of the Sarasvatī, king Vākpatirāja, by whose grace we also wander in the path trodden by the poet-princes.

The seal which Vākpatirāja put upon my song when he entered heaven (by his death), the place and allowan of a court poet I lost, and ceased to compose poetry. Now Sindurāja, brother of that friend of poets, freed me.

⁶ *Conf. Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI, p. 43 ff., especially p. 51 ff. and Vol. XIV, p. 159 ff. Boenzenberger's *Beiträge zur Kultur- und Litteraturgeschichte Indiens*, IV, 71 ff. Sindurāja was the son of Sivaka (as mentioned in the *Nāgasāsilāvanda* 8. 77, 11. 85. 19. 59) and father of the renowned Pihāla of Dhāra.

Padmagupta is first correctly fixed by Ziegert in the article *Sanskrit vichchhitti, Cosmetic, a supposition* in *Die Beiträge zur Kultur- und Litteraturgeschichte Indiens*, XIII, 91, Ann. 2. It points out also that Padmagupta was a contemporary (if not an intimate fellow-countryman) of Dhanajīla, the author of the *Paryālachchhi* On Pāṇini's *Prātiśākhya* IV, 50 ff. and in the *Sitzungsberichten der Philosophisch-Literar. Akad. der Wissenschaften zu Berlin*, 1902, p. 78 ff.

This is almost all we can extract from the *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita* respecting Padmagupta. It may be mentioned that, according to his own statement in the fourth concluding verse, he composed his poem at the command of king Sindhubrāhma, not from poetic pride (*dīnāiva hetur na kavitradarpaḥ*). In the colophon to the whole work, the author is called a *kritikari*, a clever poet — a title which was held as specially honourable.⁷

As regards the title of the Kāvya *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita* it must be remembered that there is another work of this name not yet discovered : Sriharsha is also known to have composed a *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita*.⁸

It may be accepted without dispute that Padmagupta wrote other works besides the *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita*. There has even been expressed a conjecture as to the contents of a lost poem by Padmagupta. Kshemendra, in the *Auchityalāmukdra* namely, quotes a number of verses under the name of Parimala, which, it may be remarked, do not appear in the *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita*. From these verses Peterson has concluded that "the theme of the (lost) poem was that expedition into Gujarāt despatched by Tailapa under a general of the name of Barapa," against Mularāja, the founder of the Chaulukya dynasty of Anahilapattana, who for some time was hard pressed, though, according to the Gujarāt chroniclers, the general was eventually defeated with slaughter. "The striking verse in the *Kāryaprakāśa*⁹: *Rājan rājasutā na pathayati mām* (p. 450, Calcutta Ed. 1876) wears every appearance of being from the same work, for which we should be on the outlook" (The *Auchityalam* of Kshemendra, p. 26). Peterson's conjecture may be looked upon as a good one, in so far at least as there is nothing against it from a chronological point of view. Tailapa, king of Kalyāna and Parimala, were contemporaries. One only wishes that Parimala's lost poem could be found.

III. — Quotation from the *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita*.

As the time of Padmagupta can be pretty exactly fixed, it will be of interest to find out, on the one hand, which poets he names in his Kāvya; on the other hand, by which authors verses from the *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita* are quoted.

Unfortunately Padmagupta very seldom mentions earlier poets, and only those whom we know were earlier than the end of the tenth century. They are the following :— Kālidāsa, 1, 5, 2, 92; Guṇḍhyā, the author of the *Bṛihatkathā*, 7, 64, in a play on words (*śrutā guṇḍhyasya bṛihatkathā tava*); finally Bāpa and Mayūra in a verse, which, in some degree, recalls the well-known verse of Rājaśekhara — *aho prabhāeo rāgyderyāḥ*.¹⁰

sa chiravarnavichchhittihāriyoravarantśvaraḥ ।

• Sri Harsha eva saṅghatām chakre bānamayūrayoḥ ॥

The place has been described in detail by Zachariae in a sketch on Sanskrit *vichchitti*¹¹ in Bezzemberger's Supplements, XIII, 100.

⁷ Conf. *Vikramāṅkadevacharita*, 18, 101, and also Jacobi in the *Literaturblatt für Orientalische Philologie*, III., 68.

⁸ Conf. *Naishadacharita* 22, 151; *Vikramāṅkadevacharita*, ed. Bühlert., Introd., p. 2.

⁹ In the Calcutta edition of 1866, p. 292, the verse is quoted with variations also in the *Sarasvatīkanṭhabharaṇa*, ed. Boroobah, p. 255, in which is added: *atrānayoktibhaṇyā sāṅgīkṛitīmāyurasvī narapateḥ kaśchit pratihām vāṇayati* (p. 256). — Incidentally attention is directed to the verse *Vāśishthaiḥ Sarasvatīk*, p. 849, 17, upon which Aufrecht has already remarked in the Catalogue, p. 497 n.

¹⁰ Quoted for example in the *Subhāṣitāvali*, Introd., p. 86.

¹¹ Here a correction and addition is acknowledged. The expression *vartavichchitti* means with regard to the arrow of king Sindhubrāhma "putting together of letters," arrangement of syllables. The arrows of the king were marked with his name — The rare Sanskrit word *vichchitti* is also used in *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita*, 17, 19.

Jāṇḍī samūlām subhaṭṭipaltraiḥ
sahāraśāḥ śonitaśīka[rā]rdrāḥ
uttāvaraśvalatālarintā-
vichchittim ūhub kar.karṇatālāb ॥

We must give greater attention to the quotations which are to be found in grammatical, rhetorical, and other writings of India under the name of Padmagupta or Parimala. A number of such quotations have been already collected by Peterson and Durgaprasāda in the introduction to the *Subhāshitarāti*, p. 51 ff. These quotations will now have to be gone through with the greatest possible avoidance of unnecessary repetitions.

The phrase *namo namah kādayarasāya tasmai* in *Subhāshitarāti*, No. 168, is taken from the introduction to the *Narasāhasāṅkacharita*, Sarga I., v. 13. The verse *chitravartiny api nrīpe*, which Dhanika quotes in the commentary to the *Daśarūpa*, II. 37 (compare Hall's publication, Preface, p. 36 n.; Petersburg Dictionary, Supplement under Padmagupta), occurs *Navasāh.*, 6, 42. This is the only verse which Peterson and Durgaprasāda have found in the fragments accessible to them. All other verses, which have been quoted by these scholars chiefly from the *Auchityavichāra-charchā* of Kshemendra, as belonging to the Parimala, do not appear in the *Narasāhasāṅkacharita*, and must therefore, in so far as we do not accept another Parimala beside our *Parimalāparanāmā Padmaguptah*, be derived from lost poems of Padmagupta's. One thing is still to be remarked that the strophe *adhdhikshin no Laikeśu* can hardly belong to Parimala. In the work or works where it is ascribed to Parimala there is probably an error. It is to be remembered that the fourth Pāda of the strophe (*Hanumantam, &c.*) is quoted by Ujjvaladatta (at *Un* I., 11, p. 6, 10, ed. Aufrecht) under the designation *brihatprayoga*. This expression means¹² something like "renowned example," "classical example." Is it to be accepted that Ujjvaladatta — or his authority — has honoured a passage from a work of Parimala's with this designation?

In a systematic examination of certain classes of literature quite a number of quotations might perhaps be pointed out, either given under the name of Padmagupta (Parimala) or anonymous. There are indeed often verses quoted without naming the author. We can here furnish only a small supplement to the groups in the *Subhāshitarāti* (above referred to). Parimala is quoted¹³ (which Peterson and Durgaprasāda have overlooked) also in Vardhamāna's *Ganaratnamahodadhi* (p. 117, 7, ed. Eggeling): *chāpo dhanuh | yathā Parimalasya.*

*Vipakṣlahṛidbhāngakrīd̄ nīḍantān
bhrātākhayd̄ knāchitayollasantyd̄ ।
ndkāramātrena parañtapaṣya
yasyānurakṣī krigayāpi chāpah ॥*

= *Navasāh.*, I. 74; *yasya*, i. e., Śinharājasya, The *Narasāhasāṅkacharita* is quoted anonymously four times in the tenth Ullasa of the *Kṛgāprakāśa*, p. 323, 2 (in the publication by Maheśa Chandra Nyāyaratna, Calcutta, 1866).

*Bhimbaushṭha era rājaste tenri pūram-adrisyata ।
alhend̄ hīdagey-esa māgasācākṣi lakshyate ॥*

= *Navasāh.*, 6, 60; Böhtlingk, *Indische Sprüche*, No. 4461. The verse serves as an example for the figure *paryāga*.

Kāvyapr., p. 335, 7, 11, are given as examples for the figure *vishama* —

*śirishōlopi mṛidraṅgt̄ keeyam-dyatalochand̄ ।
ayān̄ kṛa cha kakūlāgnikrikāśo mudanānalaḥ ॥*

= *Navasāh.*, 16, 28, where the third Pāda begins with *esha kṛa cha*; and ...

¹² On the meaning of *prayoga* accepted above, conf. the commentary to *Ganaratnamahodadhi*, I. 8; Zachariae, *Beiträge zur ind. Lexicographie*, p. 75, note 1. The lexicographers explain *prayoga* by *nīḍarāṇa*. — Böhtlingk takes *brihatprayoga* for the title of a work. Aufrecht seems to look upon *brihat* as an abbreviation of *Brihatkāthā*; (conf. the Pet. Dictionary under *Brihatprayoga*).

¹³ Pointed out by Zachariae, *Gottinger Gelehrte Anzeigen*, 1880, p. 922.

sudyah karasparśam-avāpya ohitram
 rāṇe rāṇe yasya kripdārekhā !
 tamālanīlā śaradindupāṇdu
 yasas-trilokydbharanām prasute ! !

= Navasah. I. 60 (with immaterial variations). The first of these verses is found besides in the *Alamkaravimartini* of Jayaratha (Deccan Coll. MS. No. 23, fol. 166 b) according to Pischel, *Gott. Gel. Anzeigen*, 1884, p. 511; the second in the *Sahityadarpana*,¹⁴ under No. 720. Both verses are, to all appearance, copied from Jayadeva¹⁵ in his *Chandrālakū*, V. 85, 86 :

kveyān śirishamrīlvajigī kva tāvān-madanajvaraḥ ||
 kṛtiṁ prasute dhavalāḥ śyāmā tava kripāṇkā ||

(in Jībānandā's publication (Calcutta, 1874). Finally the *Kāvya-prakāśa*, p. 339, 9, is quoted as an example for the figure *ekāvalī*).

purāṇi yasyām savardānganāni
 vārdīganā rūpapuraskritdigyā !
 rūpāḥ samunmilitasalvildsa-
 m-astram vilāshā kusumānyudhasya ||

from the description of the town Ujjayinī, Navasdh. I. 21 (*purāṇi yasyām savardānganāni*, MS.).

No single passage from the *Navasdhāsāṅkacharita* is quoted in the *Sarasvatīkanṭhdhbharana*. This is rather remarkable, for Bhojadeva, the recognised author of the *Sarasvatīkanṭhdhbharana*,¹⁶ must have known the court-poet of his uncle (Vākpati) and of his father (Sindhurāja). The possibility that the verse *Vāsishthaiḥ Sarasvatīk*, p. 349, belongs to a lost work by Parimala has already been pointed out, p. 151, note 9.

If, on the other hand, verses by Parimala are seldom quoted in Anthologies, it may be understood from this, that his poem is poor in fine phrases and maxims (*subhdshita*).

IV. — The *Navasahasankacharita*.

The *Mahākāvya* of Padmagupta contains 18 Sargas, which, as in other poems of this class, bear special names. In the manuscript under notice all these names are not given completely. So far as they are preserved they will be given below.

The total number of the strophes is roughly 1525. With reference to the investigations by Jacobi¹⁷ as to the use of the metres in the *Mahākāvyas* we ought, at least, to give the measures Padmagupta has used. The chief metres are : in 1, 9, 14, 17 sarga, *Upajātī*; in 2, 6, 11, 16, *Anushṭubh*; in 8, *Pushpitāgrā*; in 4, 7, 13, *Vaiśastha*; in 5, *Aupachchhanasika*; in 8, *Rathoddhātā*; in 10, *Mañjubhṛtī*; in 12, *Vaitaliya*; in 15, *Udgātā*; in 18, *Vasantatilakā*. Besides this, in the closing verses of single sargas, the following are used as side metres :—*Praharehiṇī Mandākerāntā*, *Mallinī*, *Vanamīlā*, *Sārdulavikrīdita* *Sālinī*, *Sikkharīni*, *Sragdhārā*, *Hariṇī*. Thus 19 metres are used in the *Navasdhāsāṅkucharita*, that is, exactly as many as in the epics of Kālidāsa. It is also to be noticed that Padmagupta is free from all metrical tricks.

¹⁴ In the English translation, p. 416 f., Hīs (i. e., Sindhurāja's) sword, wonderful to say, dark as it is like the Tamāla tree, in every battle having obtained contact with his hand, engenders at the very moment a fame, white as the autumnal moon glorifying the triple world.

¹⁵ Pischel's assertion (Rudrata's *Śringāratilaku*, p. 8, 17) that Jayadeva, with one exception only, uses his own examples, must be somewhat qualified.

¹⁶ Bhojāḥ *Sarasvatīkanṭhdhbharanākārtī*, *Ganaratnamahodadhi*, p. 2, 11.

¹⁷ Conf. Die Epen Kālidāsa's, p. 185 ff. Verhandl. des 5^{ten} Int. Orient. Congresses, II. 2, und Zeitschrift des deut. morgenl. Gesellschaft, 88, 615.

Three or more verses, which, according to the meaning, form a unity, are expressed as such by the expressions *kalāpaka*,¹⁸ *kulaka*, *tilaka*, and *samdānitaka*. The last two of these expressions have been till now used but sparingly; besides, their use does not always agree with the rules of the Indian theorists. Thus *samdānitaka* as a rule is used in order to combine two verses, through which one and the same sentence runs, while this expression, for example, according to the *Sāhityadarpana*, No. 558, serves to join three verses.¹⁹ If in sarga 14, 79—85, seven verses, is called a *tilaka*,²⁰ this is apparently merely a slip of the pen for *kulaka*.

Padmagupta's language is, on the whole, pure, simple, and easily understood. In individual cases the want of a commentary is pressingly felt.

The story which Padmagupta relates in his *Navasāhasrākācharita* with the peculiar breadth of the Mahākāvyas, has, without doubt, a historical background. Not only the hero of the poem, king Sindhurāja, did really exist; the other people too, who appear in the poem as Nāgas, Vidyādhāras, Asuras, &c., have played a part as comrades or enemies of the king. Meanwhile it will be difficult to fix the true names and positions of the historical characters which appear in Padmagupta and must be left to others (conf. below, p. 171).

The following analysis of the poem is given in brief. It will merely be a sketch. The endless speeches and long-winded descriptions, which fill up a great part of the poem, without essentially affecting the narrative, will not, as a rule, be taken account of.

First is an index of the characters (speaking or acting) which appear in the *Navasāhasrākācharita*:—

Sindhurāja alias Navasāhasrāka, king of Mālava.
Yatobhāṭa alias Rāmāṅgada, his minister.
Sāṅkhapala, a king of the Nāgas.
Sasiprabhā, his daughter.
Anāṅgavatī,
Kalāvati,
Mālyavatī,
Pāṭala, } Friends of Sasiprabhā.
Narmadā (Revā), the goddess of the river of the same name.
Vāñku, a Muni (Maharshi).
Ratnachūḍa, a young snake-demon.
Sasikanda, a king of the Vidyādhāras.
Mālatī, his wife.
Vajrāñkusa, a king of the Asuras.
Vīsvāñkusa, his son.

V.—Analysis of the Poem.

The first sarga bears the title *nagarinārendravarṇanam*. The town, that is, **Ujjayini**, is described, vv. 16—55. The rest of the sarga is dedicated to the *narendravarṇanam*. The king is called **Sindhurāja**. Other names of the king are, **Navasāhasrāka** and **Kumāranārāyaṇa**. Of these

¹⁸ Without doubt these names of Sloka-connections are referred to in the *Trikāndāśeṣa* III, 2, 23, under *kalāpakaciseshakau*, &c., which, like so many other statements in this Lexicon, has been misunderstood (see Zachariae in Bezzemberger's *Beiträge*, X. 122 ff.). In the Petersburg Dictionary under *Kalāpaka* we meet with the meaning "sacred marks on the forehead."

¹⁹ Yet the younger Vāghbata teaches in his *Ālankāratilaka*: *ekena chhandaś muktakam | dvābhyaḥ yugmanī samdānitakanā cha | tribhūr vīseshakam | chaturbhīḥ kalāpakaṁ | dvādaśāntaiḥ kulakam*. India Office MSS. No. 2548.

²⁰ *Tilaka*, really "brow ornament, cast mark," is like the word of the same meaning *vīseshaka* according to the *Mañkhaśāśva*, a.v. *trīśloki* (*trīślokyām kṛishṇalavāṇye tilakām klemni chāstriyām*). Conf. Zachariae, *Beiträge zur indischen Léxicographie*, p. 72.

names Padmagupta uses the first pretty often (also Navinasâhasânka, 6, 11, 11, 102); the second never. The usual designations of Sindharâja are, besides, **Avantisvara** (1, 15) **Paramaramahîbhrit** (2, 51) **Malavarâja** (3, 19). The minister and constant companion of the king is called **Yasobhâta**, or *apareña nâmam*, **Ramângada**. At the close of the Sarga Dhârâ is mentioned as "the other town" (*ayard puri*) of the king, as the "capital of his race."²¹

The real narrative begins with the second sarga (*chitramrigâvalokanam*). The king is engaged in hunting on the Vindhya mountains (vv. 1—32). Here he catches sight of a spotted antelope, which bears a golden chain round its neck, and excites the king's highest curiosity. It withdraws into the thicket, but is wounded by an arrow shot by the pursuing king. The arrow, which the king has shot, is inscribed with his name (*svundmadheyachihna*, as the arrow of Âyus in the *Vikramorâsiya*). The king is dissuaded from the further pursuit of the fleeing antelope by the advice of his minister. King and minister spend the night at a lotus-pond, and start next morning to seek for the wounded antelope.

Third sarga (hâraldbha): the king vainly endeavours to find the spotted antelope. On the other hand he discovers a swan (*sitachchhula*), which bears a string of pearls (*târahâra*) in its beak. The king is successful in obtaining possession of this string of pearls, as the swan alights at a lotus-pond and lets fall the heavy pearls. The king in this way receives the first news of his future wife. Characters (*akshardâñjî tatîh*), found on the pearls, disclose to him the name of the owner; it is the ornament of **Sasiprabhâ**, which has fallen into his hands. The king is seized by a longing for the unknown.

In the fourth sarga (*Pâtalâvalokanam*) a new vision is granted to the king. He observes a young maiden, who wanders in the wood, apparently trying to find something which is lost.

We find out who this maiden is in the fifth sarga,²² in which she gives a detailed account of herself and also of Sasiprabhâ in a long speech (vv. 2—57). The speaker is a snake-maiden called **Pâtalâ**, a daughter of the snake-demon **Hema**. She belongs to Sasiprabhâ's retinue and holds the office of fan-holder (*sitachâmaradhârâne niyuktâ*). — **Sasiprabhâ**, who, on account of her adroitness at the game of ball, also bears the name of **Asuga**, is a daughter of the demon-prince **Sankhapala**. She loves to wander around on the mountains — on the Haraśaila (Kailâsa), on the Malaya mountains, on the Himâchala. One day as she was wandering on a spur of the Vindhya, named **Kusumâvachûla**, her pet animal, her *kelimriga* (antelope, kept for her amusement), ran away. This is the "spotted antelope," which the king, while hunting on the Vindhyas, pursued and wounded with an arrow. While the king spends the night at the lotus-pond, **Sasiprabhâ** rests on a sand-bank of the river **Sasânkasati** (i. e., the Narmadâ, or Revâ). The wounded antelope, which she and her friends seek for in vain, is seen by the snake-king's daughter next morning standing beside her couch. On the arrow, which is sticking in the wound, she reads the name of the marksman, "**Navasâhasânka**." Immediately the love-god enters her heart. Meanwhile a swan — the same, whose acquaintance we have just made in the third sarga — steals the string of pearls, which has slipped from the couch of Sasiprabhâ. He takes the pearls for a lotus-root (*mrinâlasânkâ*). The snake-maidens in the retinue of Sasiprabhâ, among whom is Pâtalâ herself, are sent out to seek for the robber of the ornament.

How the king has come into possession of this ornament and thus discovered the name of Sasiprabhâ is now told.

In a second speech (vv. 69—78) Pâtalâ advises the king to go himself to the river Revâ and there to meet Sasiprabhâ. So the king sets out led by the snake-maiden Pâtalâ.

²¹ *kularâgadhanî*; Dhârâ is also thus expressed, 18, 59.

²² Possibly the name of the fifth sarga is: *Pâtalâsanibhâshanam*. The title is wanting in the colophon of the manuscript.

In the sixth sarga (*narendradarśanam*) we are introduced to the love-sick Saśiprabhā surrounded by her friends. She is deep in contemplation of the royal arrow, which bears the inscription:

Navinasāhasūṅkasya kāmadevākṛter-ayam ।
Mālavaikamrigāṅkasya Sindhurājasya sāyakah ॥

Saśiprabhā asks her friends, who this Sindhurāja may be, who is designated in such a manner as a (new or second) Sāhasānka. She is answered by Mālyavati, the daughter of a Siddha, whom the king had once seen at Ujjayinī at the feast of Mahākāla (*Mahākālaparvati*). She gives information about the king, and sketches a picture of him on a stone. This likeness is not such as to lessen the love-sickness of Saśiprabhā.²³ The words also of Anāngavati, another friend, are prompted too much by timidity and hesitation, for the snake-king's daughter to hope for a union with her beloved. On the other hand, Kalāvati, the daughter of a king of the Kinnaras, gives her encouragement. King Sindhurāja is certainly somewhere in the neighbourhood. The friends, who have been sent into the wood to seek the swan, would meet the king. Kalāvati closes (v. 94):

sthirā bhava nrīpeṇa tvam-īha samyogam-āpsyasi ।
yathā kaṇvāśrame pūrvain duḥshyantena śakuntalā ॥

Scarcely has Kalāvati finished, when Pāṭalā appears, and with her king Sindhurāja.

The seventh sarga (*phāṇīrdyasyutāsaṁbhāśayam*) describes the meeting of the king with the snake-king's daughter. Besides the king, his minister Ramāngada and Mālyavati are represented also as speaking. Saśiprabhā, who sits silent while the king is speaking, betrays, by a sign, her partiality for him.

Eighth sarga (*nāgaloḍvata*). Saśiprabhā disappears, together with her friends. She is carried away by invisible snakes to the snake-town Bhogaṇavati in the underworld. The way, which Saśiprabhā has taken, is pointed out to the king, by Revā, by the mouth of the Sārasa bird. In accordance with this direction, the king flings himself into the stream of the river, with the intention of following Saśiprabhā. He says nothing of his intention to his minister, as he is afraid he might hinder him from his rash deed (*esha vighnam iva sāhasotsare kalpayishyati mama*). The minister, however, follows, when he sees what danger his master is about to put himself into. The king passes over the river, in spite of all hindrances which meet him. On the other side he reaches a golden palace. In the court-yard of this palace he is about to lay himself down on a golden Mādhaviranke to rest, when a beautifully attired woman steps out of the palace. A parrot calls to the astonished king: the Narmadā is actually standing before him and wishes to extend hospitality to him.

The ninth sarga²⁴ contains the *Narmalāsaṁbhāśayam*, the conversation between the king and the Narmadā. The river-goddess gives the king news about Saśiprabhā, completing what Pāṭalā has told him, and discloses to him under what conditions he may gain possession of his beloved (v. 35—65): When Saśiprabhā was born, the house gods declared that the daughter of the snake-king, who has been given signs of good omen, will at one time become the wife of a ruler of the middle world, and accomplish the death of Asura Vajrāñkuta, a mighty enemy of the snakes (*upāgateyam nīlāṅgadātī Vajrāñkuśaya*). Whereupon there was great joy in the snake-world. After Saśiprabhā was grown up, her father, pressed by the gods Siddhas and Mahoragas, fixed at a gathering the conditions (the price, *sūkṣmaśāstha* 16, 88) under which he would give the hand of his daughter to a suitor; “In the pond, beside the well-watched pleasure-house of Vajrāñkuta grows a lotus with golden flowers. He who makes these golden flowers into ear ornaments for my daughter,

²³ In this connection, Padmagupta's verse quoted by Dhanika appears. *Dāsorāpa* II. 37, on the king (Sindhurāja) represented in the picture.

²⁴ The first seven verses of this sarga, beginning on page 82, are, according to the remarks above, on page 149, only partially preserved.

she shall be his wife. Up till now no one had fulfilled this condition. Narmadā affirms, however, that king Sindhurāja has been set apart by fate to kill the Asura, to obtain the golden lotus flowers and thus to win the hand of Saśiprabhā. Narmadā further narrates that at a distance of 50 *gavyāti* lies the town Ratnāvatī built by the skilled Mayā. This is the chief town of the Asura prince Vajrāṅkuśa. There the king is to go. Finally Narmadā prophesies to him that the Muni Vañku will appear to him on the way to Ratnāvatī. After this announcement the river goddess placed her own bracelet on the king's arm, spoke a blessing and disappeared.

The tenth sarga (*Ratnachūdasanupreshayam*) begins with a conversation between the king and minister, who is of no further importance in the narrative.²⁵ The minister wishes to undertake the expedition against Asura Vajrāṅkuśa alone; the king, however, will not consent to this. Then the parrot, which we have already met with at the end of the eighth sarga, appears again and relates: he is a snake-youth (*nāgadāraka*) called Ratnachūda from the race of the Saṅkachūda. A disciple of the Muni Kantha had cursed him once and changed him into a parrot. Softened by his petitions, the Muni had declared to him, that he should resume his form again if king Navasāhasāṅka should entrust him with a message to Saśiprabhā. — The king acceded willingly to the desire of Ratnachūda and sent him with a love message to the snake-town (Bhogavatī).

Eleventh sarga (*Vaṅkumaharshilarśanam*), the king and minister proceed on the way pointed out by Narmadā. In this way they reach the grove of the Muni Vañku. He greets them, treats them hospitably and asks the race and name of the king (that one such stood before him he had recognised at once), and the object of the journey into the nether world. Upon this Ramāṅgada takes up the conversation (vv. 49—112) and gives Vañku the desired information. In this he goes far back; he relates the origin of the Paramāra dynasty — beginning with a description of the holy mountain Arbuda (vv. 49—63) and gives the line of kings from Paramāra to Sindhurāja. The Muni declares himself satisfied and prophesies a successful ending to the undertaking of the king. Upon the request of the Muni to stay a little in the ascetic grove the king takes his place on a seat ornamented with precious stones.

Twelfth sarga (*phayirājusutāśrapmasumāgama*). The king, overcome by sleep, sees Saśiprabhā in a dream as she wanders in his pleasure grove at his side wearing the golden lotus flowers. The poet puts into the king's mouth a long address to Saśiprabhā (vv. 16—65).

In the thirteenth sarga (*Vidyādharālhibasandyama*) the story is continued. After the king awakes he converses with the Muni Vañku about the affairs of the upper and under world. Just as he is about to break off and take farewell of the Muni, he sees a monkey standing before him, who is carrying a pomegranate, of a pale red colour like the cheek of an intoxicated Kerala woman.²⁶ The monkey offers the fruit to the king; the king is about to take it, but lets it fall to the ground, out of it falls a multitude of sparkling gems. The king, as much astonished as rejoiced, makes the monkey a present of the bracelet, which he himself had received from the river goddess Revā. Immediately the monkey takes the form of a man and bows before the Muni, the king, and his minister, and to the question of the Muni, who he was? and how he became a monkey? relates the following: I am called Saśikhandā: my father is Sikhaṇḍaketu, a prince of the Vidyādharas. My dwelling is in the mountain Saśikānta. Once a rumour was spread, that a representation of Vishnu made of sapphire had risen out of the sea. The curious women of the town streamed out to see the wonder. My wife also, called Malati, overcome by curiosity, persuaded me to accompany her. So I leapt up with her into the air. Immediately the sea presented itself to our gaze. While I hovered over the sea on the blue cloudway my wife lost her head-parting jewel (*simantanaṇi*).

²⁵ Verses 14—29 enumerate the princes and peoples, who (ostensibly) were conquered by Sindhurāja. The following are mentioned: the Prince of the Hūnas and Kosalas: the inhabitants of Vāgada and Lāṭa: the Muralas.

²⁶ madhumattakeralikapolarat: cf. Kādambarī, ed. Peterson (1st ed.), p. 195; Malatimadhaba, ed. Bhāṇḍarkar, p. 115, 8.

The jewel fell into the sea; I endeavoured to get it up, and the sea shut me off by a great wave (*tarāṅgahastenakariva*) from return to the air and drew me with a great roaring into the depths of the nether world. As I wandered about in astonishment here, I saw a maiden, who carried the jewel in her hand, and was about to enter an ascetic grove. As the maiden, in spite of my repeated entreaties, would not give up my wife's diadem, I wrenched from her neck "little jewel ornaments"²⁷ in the form of foot-prints of the love-god upon which the Makara was carved." At the maiden's cries a Muni appeared, cursed me, and, as a punishment for my monkey-like trick, changed me into a monkey. Later the Muni was softened and decreed that I should again receive my former shape on the day when the son of **Sujaka** (*i. e.*, Sindhurāja) should lay the bracelet of Narmada in my hand before the eyes of the Muni Vāiku.—Thus to-day, in thy grove, after I have spent a thousand years as a monkey in the nether world, the curse has fallen from me by the king's act.

The grateful Vidyālhara prince Saśikandā caused his troops to appear in order that they might help the king in his progress against the Asura Vajrāṇkuśa.

Fourteenth sarga (*Pāṭalagāngāvagāhanam*). The king departs from Vāiku's grove with his comrade's army. The king's war chariot is lifted into the air by Saśikandā's magic. In a long speech addressed to the king (vv. 7—76) the minister Ramāṅgada describes the progress of the army. First a wood²⁸ is reached, then the Trimūrtigagā (the Gaṅga). On the shore of the Gaṅga Saśikandā causes a halt to be made and camp pitched, and the king enters a pleasure-house, which had been built for him of crystal.

In the **fifteenth sarga**²⁹ love plays — especially the *jalakrīḍa* — are described as in the eighth sarga of the *Sisupāllaradha*.

Sixteenth sarga (*kanakāravindayprārthīnam*). Pāṭalā appears and hands to the king (who enquires after the health of Saśiprabhā and her friends) a love letter (*anāigalekha*) from Saśiprabhā, written by Mālyavati. After Ramāṅgada has read out this letter, the king sends Pāṭalā into the snake-town with the message that he will soon come himself and hand over the lotus flowers. The king proceeds now with the army of the Vidyādhara. On the way he meets the snake army under the leadership of Ratnachūla, who in the meanwhile after he had delivered the message to Saśiprabha, had taken his own form again. Both armies make a halt in a wood before Ratnavati. The minister Ramāṅgada is now sent to Asura Vajrāṇkuśa in order to effect the delivery of the golden lotus flower in an amicable manner (*sāmnd*). Ramāṅgada has to return without having effected his object. The allied armies surround the town Ratnavati.

The **seventeenth sarga**³⁰ contains the description of the battle between the Asuras, who break out of Ratnavati, the Nagas and Vidyādhara. The allied armies win the battle. **Viśvāṇkuśa**, son of Vajrāṇkuśa, kills the minister Ramāṅgada; king Sindhurāja himself kills Vajrāṇkuśa. The town Ratnavati is overcome; the snake-youth Ratnachūla is made governor over the kingdom of the Asura princes. The king takes possession of the golden lotus flower and proceeds toward Bhogavatī.

Eighteenth sarga (*Saśiprabhālābha*) Saṅkhapāla comes to meet the king and hands him a gift of honour. Sindhurāja makes his entry into Bhogavatī amid expressions of astonishment and joy on the part of the inhabitants. His glance first falls upon a holy place (*tūṇam manimandiram*) of Siva³¹ under the name of **Sri-Haṭakeśvara**. He enters, offers gifts of flowers, and gives

²⁷ *makardhikite manmatharatanayāduke*. The translation is according to a proposal of Bühler's.

²⁸ The entertainments in the wood are described, vv. 27—76. Conf. *Moghakdeya*, Sarga VII.

²⁹ The title of this sarga is in the manuscript: *Pāṭalagāngāvagāhanam*, as also that of the 14th. The true title might be *jalakrīḍāvaryanam*.

³⁰ The title — something like *yudhāvaryanam* — is wanting in the manuscript.

³¹ The devo **Haṭakeśvarakhyā** is also mentioned in the description of the snake-town Bhogavatī, sarga 5, v. 12 ff.

praise to Siva. In the same place, is also the spotted antelope, which the king has once seen in the Vindhya mountain. Brought by Ratnachuda, at the command of her father, Saśiprabhā appears, in wedding dress, accompanied by Pāṭalā and her other friends. The king, at Mālyavati's request, hands the golden lotus-flower to Saśiprabhā. He has hardly done this when the spotted antelope is changed into a man, who bears a golden staff in his hand (*sahemavetrah*). The king asks, who he is, and why he has been changed into an animal? The staff-bearer relates the following: I, the doorkeeper of your father Śi-Harshadeva (*i.e.*, Siyaka) was once cursed by the Muni Mriganda because I refused admittance to him at the door. On the day on which king Navasahasanka should give the golden lotus-flower to the daughter of the snake-prince I should regain my former shape.

The marriage of Sindhurāja and Saśiprabhā takes place in the orthodox manner. Sankhapāla makes the king a present of a crystal Sivalinga made by Tvashtri. This linga — so Sankhapāla relates — Vyāsa once received from the *puruṣamunī* (*i.e.*, Siva); then it came into the possession of Adikavi;³² Adikavi presented it to the exalted Maharsi Kapila; and Kapila finally gave it to the snake-prince.

At the end of the marriage festivities king Sindhurāja, accompanied by Saśikanda and Ratnachuda, proceeds first to Ujjayini, then to Dhārā, "the chief town of his race." He entertained his guests according to rank, and dismissed them to their homes; Saśikanda returned to the mountain Saśikānta, Ratnachuda went to Ratnavati, the chief town of his newly-won kingdom.

VI. — The Historical Events from the Navasahasankacharita.

For no period of Mâlva's history are there so many different sources, as for that of the Paramâra kings of the tenth or eleventh century. Besides a not unimportant number of inscriptions, which fix the succession of the kings completely and determine approximately the length of the reigns of most of them, many isolated chronological notes are found in the works of Brahman and Jaina authors, as well as detailed biographical descriptions of individual governors, especially Muñja's and Bhoja's. The fifteenth and last extract of the first Prâkâśa in Merutunga's *Prabandhachintâmaṇi* (completed on full moon day of the month Vaisâkha, Vikrama-samvat 1362, or in April 1306) is dedicated to the former. The life of the latter follows immediately and fills the greater part of the second Prâkâśa. The same prince has been described in two later works, the *Bhojuprabandha* and the *Bhojacharita*, which have been long known and quoted in Europe, as well as edited in India. Under these circumstances, it might well be believed, that Padmagupta-Paramala's *Navasahasankacharita* cannot add much that is new or important to the history of the Paramâras. In spite of this the contrary is the case. Padmagupta's narrative completes and extends the information about the inscriptions, and shows more plainly than these, that the historian cannot trust to the *Prabandhas* and *Charitas*, and can only make use of them with great caution. The *Prabandhas* are founded exclusively on the traditions of the bards and the Jaina monasteries, in which Muñja and also his nephew very soon became mythical personalities. Whoever seeks to combine the statements of the inscriptions, with the narratives of the *Prabandhas* will find a mixture of truth and fiction, in which the contradictions are apparent.

The extract of the *Narasâhasândîkacharita*, which is of the greatest importance to the history of the Paramâras, is to be found in sarga XI, 64—102, and, according to a photograph³³ of sheet 106a—109a of the London manuscript, is trans literated thus: —

Atisvâdhinâivâraphalamûlasumitkuśam ।
munis-tapovanam chakre tatrekshvâkupurohitâḥ ॥ 64 ॥

³² *tasmât kîlakavipânilâlî jagîma* MS.; Adikavi (=Vâlmîki) is a supposition of Bühl's.

³³ Communicated by Zachariae along with an imperfect inscription found by himself. It was known to him for several years, but circumstances delayed the publication.

hṛitvā tasyaikadā dhenuḥ kāmasūrgādhisūnunā ।
 Kārtavīryārjuneneva Janadagner-anjyata ॥ 65 ॥
 sthūlaśrudhārāsaṁtānasnapitastanavalkalā ।
 amarshapāvakasyābhūd-bhartuḥ saṁidarundhati ॥ 66 ॥
 athātharyavidām ādyah samantrām ābutim dādau ।
 vikasadvikatajvālājatile jātavedasi ॥ 67 ॥
 tataḥ kṣhaṇāt-sakodaṇḍalā kirīti kāñchanāṅgadaḥ ।
 ujjagāmāṅgītāḥ kopi sa-hemakavachah punān ॥ 68 ॥
 dāraṇī saṁtanuaseneva viśvāmitreṇā sā hṛitā ।
 tenānīye muner-dhenur-dinaśrīriva bhānuṇā ॥ 69 ॥
 tatas-tāpasakanyābhīrūmāndāśrulavāṇikitaḥ ।
 kapolalā pāṇiparyāṇkāt-sādhupūjyād-apāsyata ॥ 70 ॥
 Paramāra iti prāpāt-sa muner-nāma chārthavat ।
 mīlitānyānripachchhattamādhipatyām cha bhūtale ॥ 71 ॥
 pravartitātivistīrṇasaptatantuparamīparah ।
 purūṇakūrmāśeshān yaś-chakārāmbhoniḍheḥ payaḥ ॥ 72 ॥
 sthāpitair-nāṇipōtheshu muktā-prālambamālibhiḥ ।
 bhūr-iyām yaṭyanā yena hemayūpāir-apūryata ॥ 73 ॥
 praśāntachittā saṁtāne chireṇā na-śucibhīshi ।
 amōchayatāstadaityena yenershyākalahaṇā Sachū ॥ 74 ॥
 vaṁśāḥ pravavṛite tasmād-ādirājān-māṇorīva ।
 nītāḥ suvrittair-gurutānū nūpāir-muktāphalaīr-iva ॥ 75 ॥
 tasnānūpītūpratīpī nūrvāpītākarānaḥjāḥ ।
 Upendra iti saṁjānē rājā sūryendu-sāmībhah ॥ 76 ॥
 sadā-gatiप्रavṛittenā Sītāchchhāvītāhetunā ।
 Hanūnuteva yaśasā yasyālaṅghyata sāgarāḥ ॥ 77 ॥
 saṅkītendreṇā dadhatā pūṭām-avābhīrīthās-tanū ।
 akāri yaṭyanā yena hemayūpāṇītā mālik ॥ 78 ॥
 atyachchheduṣonūdgachchhadaiśulekātānāngibhiḥ ।
 dīrghair yasyātīmāriṇām iñhśvāsnī-chamarāyitām ॥ 79 ॥
 tasnānūgate nārendreshu tadany-eshu gateshu cha ।
 tatra Vākpaṭīrājākhyāḥ pārthivendur-aśīyata ॥ 80 ॥
 dīrghēpa chakshushā lakshmiṇī bheje kuvalayasya yaḥ ।
 nāriṇāmā dīrghānūdām doshūṇī satīrakeṇā cha ॥ 81 ॥
 Sīthilīkṛitajīvāsā yasmin-koporūpanām ibhīvī ।
 nūryūḥ śrāmī stābelhāni na dhanūshī matīnū nūpāḥ ॥ 82 ॥
 Vaṭīśīmā iti prāpāt-jāmā tasmātījanātīpāḥ ।
 kīrūbhīr-yasya kūndendu-iśādābhīḥ saṭāyitām ॥ 83 ॥

Verse 65 — *āṇjanīneva*, *u* — MS.

.. 65 — *sthūlaśru* — MS.

.. 76 — *māṇorīva* — MS. The syllables *pāṇiparyāṇkāt-sādhupūjyād* are added on the margin in Śāradā characters; *dhu* and *jī* are indistinct; the correction given above is not certain.

.. 73 — *nāsucibhīshi* — MS.

.. 75 — *rājā*, and *gurāṇī* — MS.

.. 76 — The syllables in brackets are wanting in the MS. and are conjectural.

.. 75 — The last syllable of *saṅkītendreṇā* is indistinct.

.. 80 — *āṇjākhyā* — MS.

.. 81 — *disatīnādā* — MS.

.. 82 — *śrāmī* *rātīm* — MS.

.. 83 — *visadābhīḥ* — MS.

paulopīramaqusyeva yasya chāpe vilōkite ।
 chakitalih sarasiva kshmā rājahāmair-amuchyata ॥ 84 ॥
 Sri-Siyaka iti kshetraṁ yasasām-adubhūt-tataḥ ।
 Dilipapratimāḥ prithvīśuktumukṭphalam nṛipah ॥ 85 ॥
 Lakshmīr-Adhokshayasyeśa sāsinauer-iwāmbikā ।
 Vadajetyabhaṇḍadevi kalatram yasya bhūr-iva ॥ 86 ॥
 akhaṇḍanamāṁsalenāpya prajāpuṇyān-mahodayaṁ ।
 kalisaṁtamasām yena vyaniyata nṛipenjunā ॥ 87 ॥
 vāsīkṛitākshamālō yaḥ kshamāmatyāyatām dadhat ।
 rājūśramam alaṁchakre rājarshikuśachīvaraḥ ॥ 88 ॥
 snutajyotsnādaridreṇa vāsbpīhyena mukhendunā ।
 śāśāṁsur-vijayam yasya Rađupātīpatistriyāḥ ॥ 89 ॥
 akaikukūṇamakeyūrauṇamāṇpuramānekhalam ।
 Hūnāvarōdham vaidhvayadikshādhānam vyadhatta yaḥ ॥ 90 ॥
 ayam netrōtsavas-tasmāj-jajñe devapitṛipriyāḥ ।
 jagattamōjāḥ netrād-atreriya niśākaraḥ ॥ 91 ॥
 Śrimadutpalarājōbhūd-agrajōsyāgraṇīḥ satām ।
 Sugarūpātyadattābhiliparikhāyāḥ patir-bhuyāḥ ॥ 92 ॥
 atīte Vikramāditye gateṣṭam Sātavāhane ।
 kavīmitre viśārātao yasmin-devī Sarasvatī ॥ 93 ॥
 ebakrire vedhasā nūnaṁ nirvāyāaudāryaśālināḥ ।
 te chintāmaṇayō yasya nirmāṇe paramāṇavāḥ ॥ 94 ॥
 yaśobhir-induśuchibhir-yasyāchēbhataravācījāḥ ।
 apīryateyām brahmāṇḍaśuktir-muktāphalair iva ॥ 95 ॥
 śriyām nilābjakāntyā yaḥ prāṇyibhīḥ dādau drīṣā ।
 arātibhyaś-cha sahasā jahre nistrīṁsakthayā ॥ 96 ॥
 aṁsaḥ savatkālagranthīḥ sajaṭāpallavām śīraḥ ।
 chakre yen-āhitastrīpūm-akshasūtrānkitaḥ karāḥ ॥ 97 ॥
 purāni kālakramāt-tena prasthitenāmbikāpateḥ ।
 mauryākīpūnīkavatyasya prīthvī dōshī nivesitā ॥ 98 ॥
 praśāsti parītō viśvam-Ujjayinām puri sthitāḥ ।
 ayam Yāyāti-Māndhārti-Duḥshyanta-Bharatopamah ॥ 99 ॥
 • anenāstah kapōleshu pāṇḍīmā ripuṇōshitām ।
 samābhṛityaiva tadbhārtiyāsāś bahuśālinā ॥ 100 ॥
 • sadā samakarasyāya Lakshmīkulagṛihasya cha ।
 Sindharāja iti vyaktam nāma durgādhādher-iva ॥ 101 ॥
 anena vibhāṇyatra yatsāhasāntānyataḥ ।
 Navīnasāhasāñkōyam viragosbīhīshu gīyate ॥ 102 ॥

Verse 84.—*chakita*. — MS.

„ „ 88 — *daṭhan* — MS. The manuscript has prima manu, — *rājābhramalaṁchakre*. A Śāradā śrō stands over the deleted *bhra*, and a Śāradā mā under *tash*.

„ „ 90 — The first syllable of *ādītānā* is uncertain, before it stands plainly *ātikshyā*.

„ „ 92 — *tpalabhātī*; *grajōsyāgrajī* — MS. The correction (as Ziebarde proposes) is proved to be correct by Kshemendra's and Dīnikā's accounts. See below, pp. 163-169, *parikhāyā* — MS.

„ „ 94 — *niruṇḍī* — MS.

„ „ 98 — *ya prāṇayī* — MS.

„ „ 98 — *pīṭhī* or *pīṭekhī* cōshī *nīvesitā* — MS.

„ „ 99 — *mujayārāgāḥ* — MS. *Ujjayani* is perhaps the correct form of the name.

„ „ 100 — The MS. seems to require *sāmābhṛityaveta*; *yaśāḥ* — MS.

„ „ 101 — *gāmañkeeyāsya* — MS. The *ya* of the second *syā* is written below in Śāradā character.

„ „ 102 — Behind this verse stands a sign which looks exactly like the numeral 80 of the Aksharapalli, and is probably meant to indicate that the portion on the Paramāra kings is concluded.

Translation.

64. There (on Mount Arbuda) the wise house-priest of the Ikshvâku made a sage's grove rich in wild rice, fruits, roots, firewood and Kuśa-grass.³⁴
65. His wish-granting cow was once stolen and carried away by the son of Gâdhi, as was that of Jamadagni, Arjuna,³⁵ of Kṛitavîrya's offspring.
66. Arundhati, upon whose bosom the silk garment was bathed with streams of tears, became a log, on account of her husband's wrath.
67. Thereupon the first of the judges of the Ātharvâna songs,³⁶ with holy sayings, threw an offering into the fire, which, kindling up with broad flames, seemed to bear an ascetic's hair braid.
68. Quickly a man sprang out of the fire, with bow and crown and golden armour.³⁷
69. By him, the cow of the wise man, led away by Viśvâmitra, is brought back, as the sun brings back the light of day, which has been led away by the thick darkness.
70. Then the grove-maidens took the check, wet with tears of joy, from the supporting hand which is worshipped by the devout.
71. He received from the prophet the fitting name of **Paramâra** — killer of the enemy — and a ruler's power over the globe, before whom all the parasols of all other kings were shut.
72. (From him), who, bringing a multitude of great offerings, only left the ancient tortoise,³⁸ —
73. (From him) the sacrificer, by whom this earth was filled with golden altar staves, which, resting on foundations of precious stones, were ornamented with wreaths of pearl-strings,³⁹ —
74. (From him), by whom, when he conquered the Daityas, Sa-hi was freed at last, with a heart at rest from jealous wrangling with the race of impure splendour,⁴⁰ —
75. From him, who resembled the ancient King Mann, sprang a race, who obtained high esteem by virtuous kings, like beautifully rounded pearls.⁴¹

³⁴ A temple of Vasi-bhûti, which, through local tradition, is closely connected with the holy mountain, is still found on the south side of Abu or Arbuda. The inscriptions in its vicinity prove that it was kept up by the princes of Chandrâvati. To the right of the temple stands the statue of a warrior, which, according to a tradition, represents the mythical Paramâra. See J. Tod, *Travels in Western India*, p. 116 ff.

³⁵ The story of the theft of the Kamathenu and its recovery differs widely here and in the narratives of the bards of Râjputâñk and Gujerat, from the classical, and is, of course, merely a local representation.

³⁶ Vasi-bhûti is naturally a better judge of the *Ātharvâca*, the great collection of charms and incantations than the Parashita.

³⁷ On the origin of the Paramâras, who, according to the various modern bardic traditions in the *Agnikundâ*, sprang from Mount Abu, and belonged to the Agnikundas. See also J. Tod, *Annals of Râjasthân*, Vol. I, p. 88 ff., and specially p. 16 (Madras ed. V). The account in the Nagpur Prâvâstî, verse 13 (*Zeitsch f. d. Kunde des Morganlands*, Bd. VII, 191) and that in Somesvara's Prâvâstî, verse 32 (*Kirtikannada*, App. I, p. 4) agrees exactly with Padmagupta's.

³⁸ I. e., he killed all other inhabitants of the ocean by his horse-sacrifices and other *Sattras*, which required an incredible amount of slaughter. Only the tortoise upon which the earth rests, was left.

³⁹ On the golden, i. e., gold-plated stakes for the sacrifice, see J. Tod, *Annals of Râjasthân*, Vol. I, pp. 71-72, and specially note 1 on the latter page.

⁴⁰ Probably this merely means that the Paramâra exterminated the Daityas, "the race of impure lustre," and so placed Savitri, troubled about Indra's lordship.

⁴¹ The poet, as often happens in other works, plays on the word *suvittâ*, "virtuous" and "beautifully rounded." Possibly a second play of words is intended with *casava* race and "bamboo rod." Thus the end of the verse might be translated: a race (and that, therefore) resembles a bamboo rod, which is made valuable by beautifully rounded pearls. Referring to the Indian belief, that pearls grow in the bamboo rod.

76. Into this race a king was born named **Upendra**, who, although of great power, still lightened the burden of taxes and therefore was like the sun and the moon, of which the former is endowed with great heat and the latter cools the fire of his beams.⁴²
77. His fame, which always spread further, and which was the subject of the song of Sītā, reached over the ocean and (therefore) resembled the (monkey) Hanuman who always moves about restlessly, who sprang over the ocean in order to comfort Sītā.⁴³
78. This sacrificer, before whom Indra was afraid,⁴⁴ whose body was made holy by sacrificial baths, decked the earth with golden altar staves.
79. The sighs of his enemies' wives, the rays of light from whose glistening teeth broke into waves, cooled him like fans.⁴⁵
80. When he and other rulers of men besides him were departed, there was born into this race a moon among the princes called **Vakpatirāja**.
81. His almond-shaped eyes shared with the water-lily her beauty, and his ornamented arm, which afforded ecstasy to women, caressed the Fortuna of the globe.⁴⁶
82. When the earth trembled before his anger, the princes, whose hope of life sank, bowed their proud heads, they drew not their stiff bows.
83. From him sprang a king, **Vairisimha** by name, a lion to his enemies; his fame, bright as jasmine and like the moon, was as a name to him.

⁴² The frequent play of words with *pratāpa*, 'heat' and 'power,' also with *kara*, 'ray' and 'tax,' naturally do not escape Padmagupta.

⁴³ The words *seligatīpravīta* and *slochekhvasitahetu* have double meanings. The first has no difficulty. A really fitting explanation for the second as an adjective to *gaīas*, is found, it seems, only when, on the other hand, Sītā is regarded as a proper name and *achechhvasita* as synonym of *udīna*, "a song of the pouring out of the heart." *Uchchhyas*, literally "to breathe out," appears elsewhere also in this interchangeable meaning. A poetess Sītā, or Sītā appears in the Bhoja legend. For traces of her, and especially the words ascribed to her in the *Bhojprabandha*, see Pischel, "the poetess Sītā," in the *Festgesang zu Böhlingsk.*, p. 92, 94. In the *Prabandhachintāmani*, completed in 1306 A. D., is mentioned a *Silāyapūti*, *rādhānī*, the contents of which are shortly as follows: "In the time of Bhoja there lived in his capital the mistress of a cookshop (*randhāni*) Sītā by name. A pilgrim, for whom she cooked, died from taking Kāngani oil. She determined to kill herself by drinking the same. Instead of dying, however, she became very clever. She then studied the sciences a little and went with her young and beautiful daughter Vijayā to court. Sītā greeted the king with the verse:—

śūryān satrakulakshayāvadhi yaśo brahmāṇḍabhatāvadhi
tyāgastarkukavāchchhitāvadhiśiti kshemā sūmadrāvadhiḥ
śradhdhā parvataputrika-patiṇḍalavāṇidvāprajāmavadye
śrimābhōjamālīputre nivacādhibhiḥ śesho gupanīm gāvādhiḥ

The merry (*vinodapriya*) king then challenged the beautiful Vijayā to the *kuchvarṇana*. She answered with a corresponding couplet to the above:—

Umāhāśibhāvādhibhujalatāmūlāvadhibhiḥ saṁbhavo
vistāro hṛdayāvadhibhiḥ kamalīn sūtrāvadhibhiḥ saṁbatibhiḥ
varṇāḥ svaryakathāvadhibhiḥ katiñatā vajrakarakṣmaṇavadhibhiḥ⁴⁷
stanavāgyāḥ kuchamāṇḍule yadi parame kavayamastavādī ॥

Then the king gave Vijayā an *ardhakantī* or *suratāya*, &c., upon which, without hesitation, she composed the second half *anushangi*, &c. The king was then ashamed of himself (as he had cause to be). Merutunga adds: *atra bahu vaktarayān qasāmiparayā jñeyam* ॥ Neither the *Bhojprabandha*, nor the *Prabandhachintāmani*, nor the verses attributed to Sītā can be quoted as a proof that the poetess lived at Bhoja's court. The *Prabandhachintāmani* is also purely legendary in this part. On the other hand, it may certainly be expected, that there was a poetess Sītā as all the characters appearing in Merutunga are historical.

" Indra feared the king, because he offered so many sacrifices and on the 100th would have driven him from the throne.

" According to Indian custom (see, for example, *Gandharaka*, 696-697) the wives of the conquered princes must render slave service to the conqueror and fan him with Yink's tails. While such prisoners stood behind Upendra they performed their task not with the Chauris, but with their deep sighs. Meanwhile they opened and shut their lips continually and thus caused waves in the beams, which emanated from their flashing teeth.

" *Kuvalaya* is used twice, and is to be translated the first time by "waterlily," the second by "globe" (*ku-bhū*) (*Zuchariae*). The star on the king's arm is on the bangle.

84. When the kingly swans saw the bow of this prince, who was like Paulomi's husband, they forsook the land, as the regal swans forsook the pond, when they saw Indra's rainbow.⁴⁷
85. From him sprang a king, **Sri-Siyaka** by name, a field of fame, a pearl from the mussel of earth, who was like Dilipa.
86. As Adhokshaya's Lakshmi, as the moon crowned god's Ambikā, so was the queen **Vadaja** — this ruler's wife — like the earth.⁴⁸
87. This strong man, a moon among the princes, who, on account of the piety of his subjects, attained to perfect happiness, banished the thick darkness of the Kali age.⁴⁹
88. This king set up a retreat, subdued his thoughts, practising great patience, was clothed in the grass robe of a royal sage.
89. With countenance like the moon, covered with tears, from which the sparkle of laughter is missing, the wives of the Lord of **Radupati** proclaimed his victory.
90. He made the harem of the Hūna princes, from whom the bracelet, the sprangle, the foot-ring, and the girdle were taken, into the dwelling-place for the consecration of widowhood.
91. As the moon from the eye of Atri, so sprang from him this delight of the eyes, a favourite of the gods and his parents, who banished darkness from the world.⁵⁰
92. His elder brother was the illustrious **Utpalarāja**, a leader of the band of nobles, the lord of the earth, who surrounded Sagara's sons with the ocean as with a grave.⁵¹
93. After **Vikramāditya** was departed, after **Sātavāhana** had gone home, the goddess Sarasvati reposed beside this poet-friend.⁵²
94. In the creation of this truly generous (prince) the creator actually used desire-granting jewels as particles.
95. The shell of the universe was filled with his fame, which, of splendour pure as the moon, sprang from his flashing sword (and therefore) resembled pearls, which, pure as the moon, spring from the clearest water.⁵³
96. With the glance (of his eye) which sparkled like the blue water-lily, he gave his friends happiness and suddenly he robbed his enemies with the flash of his sword, which glanced like the water-lily.⁵⁴
97. He fastened the knots of the grass robe upon the shoulder of his enemies' wives, wound ascetic plaits round the head, and wreathed the hand with roses.⁵⁵

⁴⁷ When the rainy season comes the Rājaharisas go north.

⁴⁸ The first two comparisons are compliments to the king and his wife, who are compared with Vishnu and Siva, as also with Lakshmi and Pārvatī. When it is also said, that Vadaja "is like the earth," Siyaka's wife, it is to be remembered that, according to the Indian style of expression, the earth is invariably the first wife of each king.

⁴⁹ Ārya is divided into 5 + ārya (1).

⁵⁰ This "delight of the eyes," is the ruling prince Sindharāja (Zachariae).

⁵¹ Or Utpalarāja. See below, p. 168.

⁵² By Vikramāditya is meant the author of the era of 57-56 B.C., who is also mentioned as ruler of Ujjain (Zachariae). The Sātavāhana, who is meant here, is Hāla, the compiler of the *Gāthākoshā*.

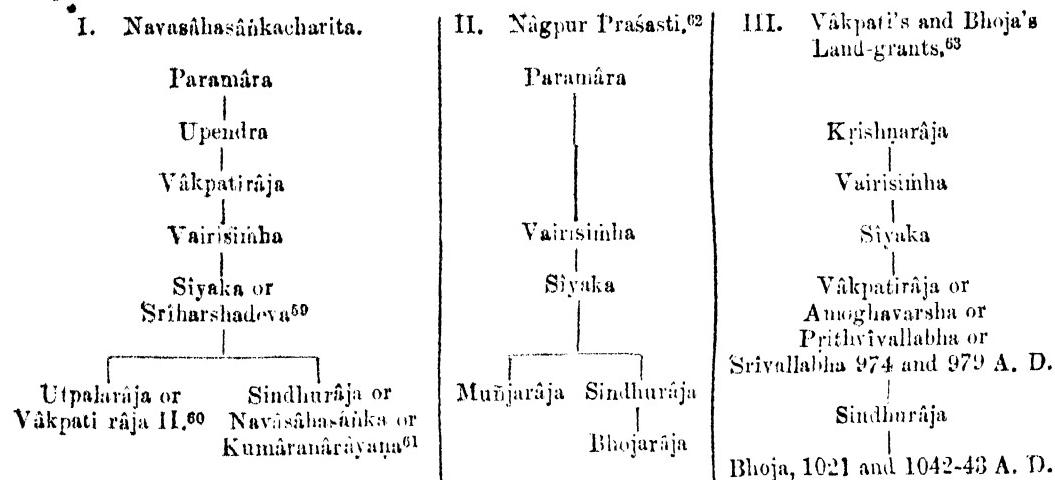
⁵³ The composite, *archekharakshrijāti*, is to be divided the first time into *archekha-tara-vāri-jāti*, i.e., *sphurakharajāti*; the second time into *archekharakshrijāti*, i.e., *alyantabuddhajātī*. According to the Indian legend, the pearl mussels come to the surface of the sea and open on the day of the Mānik-Thāti. If it is raining, then each raindrop becomes a pearl.

⁵⁴ *Nijālikāditya* belongs to *dīśī* as well as to *nistrimālakshayā* and must therefore be twice translated.

⁵⁵ The meaning is that the king pursued his enemies into the wood and forced them to live as hermits. Pallava has here the meaning given in the Kośas (*vistara*).

98. Through him, who, in course of time, departed to the town of the husband of Ambikā, was the earth laid in the arm of this (our present lord) who is represented by the striped bow.⁵⁶
99. Residing in the town of Ujjayinī, he rules all around, he who was descended from (the ancient rulers) Yuyāsti, Māndhātri, Duḥshyanta and Bharata.
100. Through this (hero) was the white colour laid with a strong arm upon the cheeks of the wives of his enemies after he robbed their husbands of their fame.⁵⁷
101. It is easy to be understood (that) the name of this (prince) who always possesses Makaras, and is the ancestral dwelling of Lakshmī, is like that of the milk-ocean Sindhurāja—‘sea king.’⁵⁸
102. Because here (on earth) he accomplished hundreds of brave deeds, he will therefore be sung at the festivals of heroes as the new Sāhasānka.

The preceding extract and the previous single notices quoted from other parts of the *Navasāhasānkacharita* result in the following genealogical tree of the Paramāra kings of Dhārā and Ujjain, who might at once, on account of the notices contained in the published inscriptions, be compared:—



⁵⁶ I. e., after Utpalarāja died, the now ruling king Sindhurāja became his successor.

⁵⁷ According to Indian expression fame is “white.” The king takes his enemies’ fame and so wins a white colour, which he puts on the cheeks of the wives of his enemies which become white with sorrow and anxiety.

⁵⁸ The king possesses always Makaras, i. e., armies formed in the Makara Order (*Manu*, VII. 187; *Kāmaṇḍaki Nitīśāra*) just as the ocean is full of sea-monsters called Makara, i. e., sharks. Fortune is always on his side as was the case with his fathers; he is thus the heir of Lakshmī. As the goddess of fortune, Lakshmī, rose out of the Milk-ocean at the stirring of the Nectar, this is therefore also his inheritance.

⁵⁹ See above, p. 159.

⁶⁰ See above, p. 134.

⁶¹ See above, p. 154.

⁶² The inscription was at first badly published, with a very imperfect facsimile by Bāl Gaṅgādhar Śāstrī in the *Jour. Bombay B. R. As. Soc.*, I. p. 259. The second publication of it by Lassen in the *Zeitsch. f. d. Kunde des Morgenl.*, VIII. p. 104 ff., is much better; it is made from a transcript of the copy found in Sāṭārī on a copperplate. This is now no longer sufficient for present requirements and a new copy is much to be desired. Lassen calls Siyaka’s younger son Sriharshadeva and he remarks (*loc. cit.* p. 311 [211], note 25) that this is distinctly the reading in his copy, while that of the facsimile in the *Bombay Journal* can no longer be read with any certainty. It is quite correct that the letters in the latter are defaced. The name looks like (p. 274, No. 15) *gr̥itīnārāja*. Mr. J. F. Fleet, who possesses a paper impression of the inscription, kindly informs me that the original has *sri-Sindhurāja*. The form *Simharāja* is no doubt owing to the copyists of Lassen’s transcription having made an unlucky conjecture as *pandits* often do.

⁶³ The oldest Śāsana of king Vākpatirāja is published by Dr. F. E. Wall, *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.*, XXX. p. 195 ff., and with a facsimile by N. J. Keltane in *Ind. Ant.*, VI, p. 48 ff. The later of the same king by Dr. Rajendralal Mitra in *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.*, XIX, p. 475 ff., and by Dr. Kielhorn, *Ind. Ant.*, XIV. 159 ff. Bhoja’s gift is published by Keltane, *loc. cit.* p. 53, with a facsimile.

The origin of the **Paramāras**, placed by the tradition of the bards, which reflects the above-quoted verses xi. 64, 72, in the holy mountain Ābū-Arbuda, the most southern arm of the Arāvali chain, which rises on the boundary of Rājputānā and Gujarāt and in the grey far-off time when the great feud between the head Brāhmaṇ Vasishtha and the Kshatriya intruder Viśvāmitra was fought out. The bards also relate much of the early developed power of the **Paramāras**, of their manifold ramifications, and their great kingdom in Western and Southern India.⁶⁴ There is, however, no sure trace of them in Indian history,⁶⁵ before the appearance of the dynasty of Mālvā. The **Paramāras** first come into power in the town of Dhārā, which lies in the western part of the province, and from there they conquered the east of Mālvā with the capital Ujjain. This proves with more certainty than the tradition of the bards that Padmāgepta repeatedly (p. 159, above) calls Dhārā the family residence of the **Paramāras**. The period of the first development of their power cannot be fixed with certainty. It must, however, have been about 800 A. D. as will be shown further on.

As the Purāṇas of Mālvā believe in the legend of the birth of their eponymous hero on Ābū, this may lead to the supposition that they came from the north-west. The old Fort of Achalgadh on Ābū, and the town of Chandravati south of Ābū, have been for centuries in the possession of a Paramāra family, who rendered homage to the Chaulukyas of Anhilvād from the eleventh century. Somesvara's Pragasti of Vikrama Samvat 1287, recounts an older line, **Dhūmaraja**, **Dhandhuka**, **Druvabhatta**, and others, also a later, and entirely historical one which consists of Rāmadeva, Yatodhavala, Dhāravarsha, Prahlādana, Somasimha and Krishnaraja. The last six kings may be recognised from other works and ruled between 1150 and 1231 A. D. This connection between the **Paramāras** and Mount Ābū makes clear that it and nothing else had been the foundation of the legend of the rise of Paramāra from the Agnikūḍa there. Now, as the **Paramāras** of Dhārā possess the same legend, it is easy to suppose that they are a branch of the ruling race of Achalgadh and Chandravati.

Upendra.

The first king **Upendra** sung by Pālmugupta was not the immediate predecessor of the next named Vākpatirāja I. Between them reigned other prince. The plural shows that there must have been three. On no consideration may the reign of **Upendra** be placed later than about the year 800 A. D. As the first king, for whose reign we possess several fixed dates, Vākpatirāja II., died as will be shown further on, between 934 and 937, the date of his first land-grant is the year 974. As his brother Sindhurāja reigned sometime after him, then the beginning of his own

⁶⁴ J. Tod, *Annals of Rajasthān*, Vol. I, pp. 83-84.

⁶⁵ Lassen, *Ind. Alterthüser*, III, p. 822, thinks that Ptolemaeus mentions the **Paramāras** under the name **Povaroi** and adds, "Their name in the form *com-* nearer to the oldest (*Praumāra*) than to that of the present time **Punwar** or **Powar** of whom we get the second name **Pawarārak**, i.e. *Howard* of the Fort of Powar, the name of Champanir, the old capital of a hill tract in north Gujarāt." The identification of **Povaroi** with **Paramāra** is, however, doubtful, as the first word means a people, the second a Kshatriya family, which, so far as is known, has given its name to no district in India. Thus it is to be remarked that the present Powar or Punar certainly give themselves out as **Paramāras**, since a member of this family rules Dhārā, the modern Dhar. They are, however, Marāthas and not Rājputs. Their genealogical claims are certainly officially recognised, but native scholars in Mālvā never speak of the story of the relation ship of His Highness the Mahārāja Anandādāo with the Māth rāja Bhoja without a meaning smile and do not believe in it. The grounds against the derivation are — 1st that Povar or Pawar do not agree well in sound with Paramāra; 2nd, that in Rājputānā and Mālvā the real successors of the **Paramāras** call themselves **Paramāras**, not Powars. The Powars settled in Mālvā and Bundelkhānd might all be successors or relations of the Marātha Jeerwan Rāja Powar, who received the title of king of Dhār in 1549 (cont. Malleson, *Native States of India*, p. 207). Finally, as regards the name of Powarārak, this is a result of the Christopher method of transcription. The mountain fort which it is Lassen thinks, identical with Champanir, and lies, not in northern, but in middle Gujarāt, is called in Gurātī **Pavārārak** and in Sanskrit, according to an inscription of Samvat 1525 (*Ind. Ant.*, Vol. VI, p. 1 ff.) **Pavāra**, i.e. the Fort of the Pavaka, perhaps "the fire." The name has nothing to do with the **Paramāras**, who have never, so far as I know, possessed Pāvāgadh.

⁶⁶ *Kirtikāvya*, App. pp. 40, 131, and K. Forbes, *Rāja Mālvā*, pp. 216-211.

reign must have fallen about the year 970. Between Vākpatirāja II. and Vākpatirāja I. are two generations, and between the latter and Upendra at least three reigns. If one reckons 25 years to a generation, then there are 150 years between the beginning of the reign of Vākpatirāja II. and the end of Upendra's. Of course it is not to be supposed that there is any degree of certainty in this statement, as the number of the kings omitted may be much greater. But it is the latest that is possible. Padmagupta's verses concerning Upendra assert merely that he diligently attended to the *Srauta* sacrifices and was a great warrior. If the translation of verse 77 is correct, a poetess Sītā, who perhaps lived at his court, sang of him (see note 43, p. 163).

Dr. F. E. Hall⁶⁷ and Sir A. Cunningham⁶⁸ identify Upendra with Krishnarāja, the first king in the inscriptions of Vākpatirāja II. The supposition is natural, as Krishṇa and Upendra are synonymous. It may also be correct, though Krishnarāja stands immediately before Vairisimha, the third king in Padmagupta's list. The text of the inscription merely says that each of the kings mentioned "thought respectfully of the feet" (of the before-mentioned). Usually this phrase is used in connection with an immediate predecessor. There are, however, cases in which it is used in connection with a king further removed.⁶⁹ Those who reject Hall's identification must agree that the next king in Padmagupta's list likewise bore the name of Krishnarāja, which also is not impossible.

Vākpatirāja I.

Padmagupta's description of this king is purely conventional. According to what has been already said, the beginning of his reign falls about 895 A. D. His name seems also to appear in an Udayapur inscription. Dr. F. E. Hall does not recognise the existence of two Vākpatirājas. He says, however, *loc. cit.*: "Vākpati had issue in Vairisimha, and Vairisimha had a son Harsha." This only applies to Vākpatirāja I.

Vairisimha.

Of this king we only hear that he was his predecessor's son. His reign may have begun about 920.

Siyaka.

Matters improve somewhat with Vairisimha's son, who, according to *Navas.* XI. 85 and the inscriptions, also called Siyaka, according to *Navas.* XVIII. 40 (p. 155) Sri Harshadeva. As regards the first name till now unmentioned, it may be remarked that Siyaka stands for Simhaka. In the tertiary Prākrits of Western India, in place of the Sanskrit *sīmha* in a proper name, either *singh* or *si* is used. Thus, for Amarsimha both Amarsingh and Amarśi are found; for Padmasimha, Padmasingh or more often Padamsi; for Narasimha, very often Narsi. In the present case, this explanation is proved by the fact that Merutunga in the *Mūñjaprabandha* calls the father of Muñja and Simdhala, Simhabhaṭa.⁷⁰ This was doubtless the original Sanskrit name of the king. Siyaka is a half Prākrit pet-name. The second name Harsha or Harshadeva appears in the unedited Udayapur Inscription and also in other Sanskrit works.⁷¹

⁶⁷ *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.* Vol. XXXI. p. 114, note. Dr. Hall seems to have found the names in the inscriptions from Udayapur mentioned there. He incorrectly calls him "the grandfather of Bhoja's grandfather."

⁶⁸ *Archaeol. Rep.* Vol. X. p. 84, note 1.

⁶⁹ See *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI, pp. 184 and 194, where it says, that Durlabha of Aphilyād thought of the feet of Chāmunda, while his immediate predecessor was his brother Vallabha.

⁷⁰ See also K. Forbes, *Rās Māla*, 2nd ed., p. 64.

⁷¹ Conf. below, p. 168. What is said here about the identity of Siyaka and Harshadeva, as also that of Utpalarāja and Vākpatirāja, rests chiefly on Zachariae's communications. He has made these discoveries and gathered the notices belonging to them.

Padmagupta describes **Siyaka-Harshadeva** first as a royal philosopher doing homage to quietism and asceticism and then as a warlike ruler. It will be necessary to reverse the order, and take for granted that Siyaka, like so many Indian kings, after an active life, turned his attention to the achievement of *Moksha*, without, at the same time, perhaps, retiring from his position as ruler. His warlike achievements were the conquering of the "Lord of **Rādūpāti**,"⁷² and the killing of a Hūna prince. Who these kings or chiefs were, and where they ruled, has not as yet been ascertained. As to the Hūna, who is mentioned very often in the inscriptions, it may be remarked that the earlier favourite identification of them with the white Huns is not tenable. It is quite correct, as Dr. F. E. Hall remarks,⁷³ that the Hūnas, or more usually Hūṇas, mentioned in the inscriptions of the middle period were an Indian Kshatriya family. In bardic lists they are counted among the Rājput races, and the accounts of their alliance with the Kulachuris show that they are counted as such. These facts naturally do not preclude the possibility that the Hūna Kshatriyas sprang originally from Huns. As the Kshatriyas have adopted foreign elements in a remarkable manner. **Siyaka's** wife was called **Vādāja**.

Vākpatirāja II.

Like many other Indian princes,⁷⁴ Siyaka's eldest son⁷⁵ bore many names and was called **Vākpatirāja**, **Utpalarāja**, **Muñja**, **Amoghavarsha**, **Prīthvivallabha** and **Srivallabha**. The first two names are found in Padmagupta (p. 150, above), and, according to the suggested alteration in XI. 92, they are also to be found in Kshemendra and Vallabha. The former quotes the well-known verse, *ahau rd̄ h̄bre*, in his *Auchityavichdracharchā*, and ascribes it to the esteemed **Utpalarāja** (*śrimāl utpalard̄jasya*), while the *Subhāshitācāli* of the latter names **Vākpatirāja**, son of the esteemed Harshadeva, as author.⁷⁶ Padmagupta's account leaves no doubt that Vākpatirāja is the son of the esteemed Harshadeva, Vākpatirāja II. of Mālva, nor that Kshemendra means the same prince. Because the person mentioned by Kshemendra bears the title *śrimat* and *deva*, only a king can be meant, and, as according to the *Nacashāradākavacharita*, XI. 92, **Vākpatirāja**, the son of Harshadeva-Siyaka, had another bearing with Utpala, thus, in view of Vallabha's remark, the above conclusion is unavoidable. Another case in which Vākpatirāja II. is called Utpalarāja is mentioned further on. That **Vākpatirāja II.** is identical with **Muñja**, Dr. F. E. Hall recognised and repeatedly expressed⁷⁷ in the *Bengal Journal A. Soc.*, XXX. p. 114, note, and *Dāśarāpa*, p. 2, note. The proofs for it are : (1) the genealogical tree given above, where Muñja appears in the place of Vākpatirāja; (2) the fact that Dhanika, in the commentary to the *Dāśarāpa*, p. 184 and 186 (ed. Hall), ascribes one and the same verse "to the esteemed King Vākpatirāja" and "to the esteemed Muñja." However strange such a method of quotation may seem to us, it is quite usual among the Indians, who thought nothing of mentioning a many-titled man under two or more of his names. Finally, the identity of **Vākpatirāja-Amoghavarsha** of the land-grants with Padmagupta's Vākpatirāja II. is made quite clear by the list of reigns.

All that Padmagupta says of **Vākpatirāja II.**, apart from conventional phrases, is, that he had a liking for poetry and poets, was extraordinarily generous and warlike. Twice, I. 7 (p. 150, above) and XI. 93-94, he calls him emphatically a friend of poets, and says, I. 6, that he was led by him to

⁷² This may be a town or a country (conf. *Anabilapātaka* and *Medapātaka* or *Mevāḍ*).

⁷³ *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.*, XXX, p. 117, note 11, and *Jour. Am. Or. Soc.*, VI, p. 52.

⁷⁴ See, for example, the genealogical tree of the Rishtrakūṭas of Manyakhēṭa, *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI. p. 72, and the table in Fleet's *Topography of the Kanara District*, pp. 92-93.

⁷⁵ The statement of the legends in Moretunga and others that he was a foundling seems to me untenable.

⁷⁶ Peterson, *Jour. Bengal. B. R. As. Soc.*, XVI, p. 139. Peterson's views there expressed are probably more correct than those in the *Sarkārācāli*, p. 115, according to which only the one verse, No. 3414, should belong to Vākpatirāja.

⁷⁷ This view was accepted without hesitation by A. Cunningham, *Archæol. Rep.* Vol. X. p. 84, note 4.

tread the poets' path. From accounts gathered from other sources we may complete his statements. Vākpatirāja II helped other writers besides Padmagupta. Among these are the two sons of Vishnu, Dhanañjaya and Dhanika, the first of whom composed the *Daśarūpa*, while the latter commented upon it. Dr. F. E. Hall does well to express himself carefully and say : "it may be suggested, that Dhanika — one of his (Dhanañjaya's) commentators and possibly his own brother — was living about the middle of the tenth century."⁷⁸ Now, however, since it is clear that Vākpatirāja, Muñja, and Utapalarāja are names for one and the same person, all doubt as to the age of the two authors disappears, the one of whom, according to his own words, was famous for his wit at the court of king Muñja, and the other describes himself as *mahdsādhyapdla* of the great and esteemed king Utpalarāja.⁷⁹ In the time of Vākpatirāja II, also falls the activity of the lexicographer and poet Dhanapala, whom the *Prabandhas* erroneously make a contemporary and favourite of Bhoja.⁸⁰ The date of his Prākrit *Kosha*, Vikrama Samvat 1029, i. e., 972-3 A. D., makes this very apparent. Likewise Halayudha, the commentator of Pingala, according to his own statement (*Subhāshitāvalī*, p. 115), lived under the rule of this prince. Vākpatirāja's own activity in poetry is shown, not only by the numerous verses ascribed to him in the *Prabandhas* but more certainly by the quotations in the anthologies, among which the one mentioned above in Kshemendra deserves special consideration, as Kshemendra writes about 50 years after his time.

If Padmagupta speaks merely in ordinary terms of the warlike undertakings of his first patron, doubtless the reason is that the sad death of Vākpatirāja made it seem unsuitable to describe the latter in detail. His words,⁸¹ "The seal which Vākpatirāja put upon my song as he mounted to heaven, is now broken by Sindhurāja, the younger brother of that friend of poets," shew distinctly that the fate of his first master had affected him deeply. It is therefore not to be wondered at that he does not allow himself to go into details. From the inscriptions and the *Prabandhas* one gathers that Vākpatirāja was at war with his eastern and southern neighbours. The unedited inscription mentioned by Dr. F. E. Hall tells of a successful war against one Yuvardaja of Chedi, the father of Kokalla II, during which he is supposed to have taken the capital of the Haibayas, Tripura.⁸² Dhanapala's account probably refers to him, that he wrote his work when the king of Dhāra had plundered Manyakheta. As in the introduction to the edition of the Pāiyalaehchlī is shewn the capital of the Rāthors of Manekir or Malkhed must be Manyakheṭa, and the conquered enemy was the last prince of that race, Karka III, called Kakkala or Amoghavarsha. Vākpatirāja II doubtless helped to accomplish the fall of the Southern Rāthor kingdom. He remained also the enemy of the real destroyer of it, Chālukya Tailapa II of Kalyana, who entered upon the possession of the inheritance of the Rāthors. Sixteen times, says Merutunga,⁸³ did Muñja conquer Tailapa before he undertook his final march against him, and therefore scorned him. Although the number may be an exaggeration, and the Paramāra's fortune in war not always favourable, still so much is certain that Vākpatirāja Muñja waged war with Tailapa II for a considerable time. At last he was unsuccessful, suffered a decided defeat, and lost his life in the south. The *Prabandhas* give Muñja Vākpatirāja's last march in detail. They assert that he undertook it against the advice of his minister Budrāditya, was taken prisoner by

⁷⁸ *Daśarūpa*, p. 2.

⁷⁹ *Daśarūpa*, End, and H. H. Wilson, *Hindu Theatre*, p. xx. (ed. Rost). That given by H. H. Wilson, and in a notice appearing in one of Dr. Hall's MSS. is wanting in the publication; notwithstanding its at first apparently inexplicable character, it is, however, entirely credible. Such historical notices are often left out in the MSS. The extract from the *Bṛihatkāthāmañjari* of Kshemendra, inserted at the end of the first *Prakāśa*, is, of course, an interpolation. It does not appear in all manuscripts.

⁸⁰ See above, p. 150, note 6.

⁸¹ See above, p. 150.

⁸² Jour. Beng. As. Soc. Vol. XXX. p. 114, note, and Cunningham, *Archæol. Rep.* Vol. X. p. 85.

⁸³ *Sapathkāśāṇapūrītakām nishidhya tām purā shoḍhā virjitamityarajñatayā paśyannatirekavāśūttām sarilām utkiryā skandhāvāraṇe nivesayāmāsa* || (from the *Muñjaprabandha*).

Tailapa, and sometime afterwards, when he made an attempt to escape, was first treated shamefully, and at length hanged on a tree.⁸⁴ The narrative is adorned with so many touching scenes, and so many verses, which the imprisoned king is said to have composed, under different circumstances, that its legendary character is unmistakable. The details are therefore not to be depended on. But that Tailapa II killed Vākpatirāja-Muñja is correct, as two Chālukya inscriptions mention this famous deed.⁸⁵ Also Rudrāditya was, as Lassen has remarked, really Vākpatirāja's minister, as he is mentioned in his Sāsana of 979 A. D. The fact that Vākpatirāja was killed by Tailapa II makes it possible, with the assistance of a note in a Jaina work, to fix the time at which his march took place and his reign concluded, within a limited period. Amitagati completed his *Subhāshitaratnasāmīdhā*, Vikrama Samvat 1050 or 993-94 A. D., during the reign of king Muñja, and Tailapa II died shortly before or in the Saka year 919, i. e., 997-98 A. D., which is the first year of his successor. Muñja's death, therefore, occurred in one of the three years 994 to 996.⁸⁶ The beginning of his reign lies before Vikrama Samvat 1031 or 974 A. D.: the date of his oldest land-grant must not, as has been remarked, be far removed from the same.

Sindhurāja.

According to the accounts of the *Prabandhas*, bitter enmity existed between Vākpatirāja-Muñja and his brother Sindhurāja, to whom they apply the pet-name Sindhula or Sindhala. Sindhurāja had to flee from Mālvā, and lived long as a fugitive "in the town of Kāsahraḍa" in Gujarāt. Later he returned to his home, and was at first received kindly by his brother, but was afterwards blinded by him and confined in a wooden cage. During his imprisonment his son Bhoja was born to him, whom Muñja, alarmed by the prophecy that he would be his successor, endeavoured to kill. Bhoja, however, was enabled to obtain a reprieve from his executioner and, by a letter, so to change the king's opinion that he chose him as his successor to the throne. After Muñja's decease, Bhoja was anointed as king.⁸⁷ Padmagupta's poem completely discredits this narrative, which excludes Sindhurāja from the throne and proves what must also be concluded from Bhoja's land-grant of 1021-22 A. D. that he ruled over Mālvā for sometime. The only grain of truth which the *Prabandhas* may contain is perhaps that for a time the brothers quarreled. The condition of things cannot have been serious. As otherwise, Padmagupta, who had served under Vākpatirāja, would not have been a favourite of Sindhurāja's. In support of this there is the poet's utterance in verse 98, that Vākpatirāja "when he departed to the town of the Lord of the Ambikā, laid the earth on Sindhurāja's arm." Taken literally this means, that Vākpatirāja on his death-bed appointed his brother as his successor. It may perhaps be accepted, therefore, that Sindhurāja, whether immediately before Vākpatirāja's fateful expedition or still earlier, had attained to the dignity of *yuvarāja*.

⁸⁴ See K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, pp. 65-66, and Lassen, *Ind. Alterthumsk.* III. p. 840. The above accounts are found in Merutunga. Respecting his death it says:—

Indra Muñja pṛṣṭham kāya māranāścambanayā māni mārayiṣyatha | vrikshākākhātalambarāt . . .
tulam tari Muñjam nihalaya tauchchiro rūgāngane śūlikāprotah kṛitā dadhiviliptam kārayan-nijam-amar ghan
vrapoṣha iti

⁸⁵ J. Fleet, *Dynasties of the Kanarese Districts*, p. 49.

⁸⁶ Dr. R. G. Bhāupātkar, *Report on the Search for Sanskrit MSS.*, 1882-3, p. 45, has accepted this chronology. He places the beginning of the Vikrama era, however, in the year 56 B. C., which does not suit for Mālvā, as is clearly shown from the dates in Vākpatirāja's second land-grant. There, it is said, the gift was made V. S. 1026. Kārttika-pūrṇimā, at the time of an eclipse of the moon, which took place on Nov. 6, 979 A.D., while the Sāsana was composed, V. S. 1025, Chaitra badi 9. The Vikrama year in Mālvā began, according to this, not in Kārttika Sudhi I, but in Chaitra Sudhi I, and the calculation went by the northern *Purnimānta* system; see also *Ind. Ant.* Vol. XIV. p. 159, and especially note 2.

⁸⁷ See also K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, p. 64. Forbes identifies Kāsahraḍa with Kāsiudra-Pālaḍi at Ahmedābād.

According to the poem, **Sindhurāja** bore the surnames of **Kumārānārayana**⁸⁸ and **Navasahasrika**, "because he undertook hundreds of hazardous enterprises (*sūhasa*)."⁸⁹ Several of these bold deeds are enumerated. A number of princes and peoples, whom Sindhurāja is said to have conquered, are presented in X. 14—20.⁹⁰ Among the names mentioned are found a prince of the **Hūnas** of the same race as he, with whom Siyaka waged war, and a prince of the **Kosalas**. Further is mentioned the subjection of the inhabitants of Vāgada, of the eastern part of the province of Kachchh,⁹¹ of Lāṭa, middle and southern Gujarāt, and the **Muralas**, of a people in Southern India, that is perhaps identical with the **Keralas**, the inhabitants of Malabār. The word of an Indian court-poet, when he speaks of his lord's victories, must not be put in gold scales. Every Indian hero must have made his *dīgvijayayātrā*, "his march to the conquest of the world," and must have been successful. When the actual facts did not give material enough, poetic fancy was ready to fill up the gaps: though expeditions against the **Hūna**, against Vāgad, which belonged to the kingdom of the **Chaulukya** of Añhilvāḍ, and against Lāṭa where ruled the dynasty of **Bārapa**, also conquered by the Chaulukyas, were not at all unlikely. So far as the relation between the **Chaulukyas** and the **Paramāras** is concerned, it was always bad. The Jaina *Prabandhas* relate that the cause of the strife was an insult offered to the second Chaulukya King Chāmunda. When the latter had retired from the throne in favour of his son, 1010-11 A. D., he made a pilgrimage to Benares. On his entrance into the country of Mālvā, the king caused his parasol and the other signs of his rank to be taken away. He was forced to let the insult pass: on his return, however, he commanded his son to take revenge. Thus began the enmity between Mālvā and Gujarāt, which lasted till the destruction of both kingdoms by the Muhammadans.⁹² This narrative sounds rather incredible. Still the long feud between the two states, which brought first one and then the other to the brink of destruction, is an indisputable fact. Its ground probably lay not in a chance occurrence, but in the old race-hatred between the Paramāras and the Chaulukyas or Chālukyas and the necessity of expansion of both neighbouring kingdoms. Thus Padmagupta's report of a certain temporary conquest of Vāgad is quite credible. Also it is quite possible that Sindhurāja waged a successful war against his neighbour in the south-west, the king of Lāṭa. Bārapa and his family also belonged to the Chaulukyas and in nearer relationship to Tailapa II. On the other hand, it is difficult to understand how Sindhurāja could overcome the **Muralas**, if by these the **Keralas** are to be understood. If it may be understood, however, that Padmagupta — as often occurs with Sanskrit poets — uses the expression inexactly and means some inhabitants of Dravidian India, nothing can be said against his statement. For, from the *Vikramāñkadevarācharita* it is certain that the struggle of the Paramāras of Mālvā with the Chālukyas of Kalyāna continued after Muñja's death.⁹³ It is therefore not at all improbable that Sindhurāja undertook an expedition to the south. Of the war with **Kosala** nothing trustworthy can be said. It may only be remarked that the kingdom of Kosala spoken of embraced parts of the Central Provinces of to-day and Berar.⁹⁴

The story from the personal history of Sindhurāja, which represents the true object of Padmagupta's work, is unfortunately surrounded with so thick a mythological covering that it is impossible, without the help of accounts containing only sober facts, to give particular details with certainty. Those who are familiar with the court poet's method of description and the Indian inclination to change historical events of the most recent past, for purely poetical reasons, into myths will not doubt for a moment that Padmagupta's seemingly fanciful legend rests throughout upon a historical basis. Analogies in other poems are not rare. Take, for example, Bilhaṇa's

⁸⁸ See above, p. 155.

⁸⁹ See above, p. 157, note 25.

⁹⁰ *Conf. Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI, 9, 184.

⁹¹ K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, p. 52. Merutunga asserts that the king of Mālvā referred to was Muñja. Hemachandra is not guilty of this anachronism in the *Dvīḍārayakosha*: he gives, however, no names.

⁹² *Vikramāñkadevarācharita*, p. 27.

⁹³ See Sir A. Cunningham, *Anc. Geog.* p. 519 ff.

Vikramāñkadevacharita, the god Siva appears regularly when the poet's hero and patron **Vikramāditya-Tribhuvanamalla** comes into combat with the moral law. The latter's birth also is a gift promised by Siva personally and it is celebrated by showers of blossoms and sound of trumpets. Finally, in the description of Vikramāditya's courtship, his chosen **Chandaladevi** is never mentioned by her true family name as a **Silahara** princess, but always called **Vidyādhari**⁹⁴ in conformity with the mythological tradition. Very similar mythological representations are to be found in the parts of the **Dvyāśrayakosha**, which **Hemachandra** dedicates to his lord and patron **Jayasimha Siddharāja**,⁹⁵ as also in **Somesvara**'s report of the events which caused his *yajamana*, **Viradhabala** of **Dholka**, to found an independent kingdom.⁹⁶ To these examples from works of the 11th, 12th and 13th centuries, we may add one from an inscription which belongs at latest to the second century of our era. The **Andhra** king, **Pulumayi**, asserts in perfect earnest in his great deed of gift, in Nasik cave-inscription No. 15, that his father, Gotamīputra Sātakamui I., won a battle in which "the wind-god, the bird-man Garuda, the Siddhas, Yakshas, Rākshasas, Vidyādharas, Bhūtas and Gandharvas, as also sun, moon, and stars, took part."⁹⁷ Besides these analogies, we may add to the above-expressed opinion that here and there perfectly prosaic details appear in Padmagupta's poems. For example, when one hears that the town of the demon-prince Vajrāñkuśa lay 50 *gṛyātis*, i. e., about 100 *kos* or 150—200 English miles distant from the Narmadā, one gets the impression that the poet speaks of an actually known town, not of an imaginary picture of one. As regards the explanation of the story, only one point can be held as certain, namely, that the Naga-princess Sasiprabha was not a snake-goddess but the daughter of a king or chief from the far-spread race of the **Nāga-Kshatriyas**. The existence of **Nāga-kings** in Rājputānā and Central India is accredited by inscriptions,⁹⁸ and their successors must certainly have remained long in these regions. To venture further on this point is not advisable, while we have no assistance from inscriptions. It may, however, still be mentioned that the Maharshi **Vaṇku** appearing in the narrative corresponds with the geographical name **Vaṇku** in the Nāgpur-Prāṣasti, verse 54. Lassen erroneously reads **Vaṇkshu**, and believes that the river Oxus is meant. The minister **Yatobhata-Ramāṅgada** is also of course a historical personality.

Although so much in Padmagupta's accounts of the history of Sindhubāja is dark and indistinct, still it gives us the fact that the latter reigned for some time. Years must have passed after he mounted the throne, before the **Navasahasrāñkacharita** was written, and the composition of it cannot be placed earlier than the first decade of the 11th century. Hence it is necessary to place the beginning of Bhoja's reign further down than is usually done. Various synchronisms demand this, and lead to the supposition that Bhoja was not a grown man in the lifetime of Muñja,⁹⁹ as he only mounted the thrown towards the end of the second decade of the eleventh century. Unfortunately we have only two dates of the time of his reign, that of his land-grant, Vikrama Samvat 1078, Chaitra sudi 14, which probably corresponds to 30th March 1021, and that of his *Karanya* of the *Rājāmrigiṭika*, Saka Samvat 964 or 1042-43.¹⁰⁰ At any rate, the legends of the wicked uncle Muñja, which disfigure Forbes' and Lassen's work, and which, until quite recently, always reappeared, may now be considered as abolished.

Of the earlier history of Mālvā, Padmagupta merely mentions that the friend of poets, **Vikramāditya** of Ujjayinī, formerly ruled there. This notice shows at least that the Vikrama legend was developed in Mālvā in the same way as it was narrated in the Jaina *Prabandhas* of the 13th and 14th centuries.

⁹⁴ See *Vikramāñkadevacharita*, pp. 28-29, 37-39, note 1.

⁹⁵ *Ind. Ant.*, Vol. IV. 235, 265.

⁹⁶ *Kṛtikarṇa* b. II. 76-107, and *Ind. Ant.*, Vol. VI. p. 129.

⁹⁷ Burgess, *Accwab. Rep. West India*, Vol. IV. pp. 109-110. Siri Pulumayi is mentioned by Ptolemaeus under the name of Siri-Pata.

⁹⁸ See *Ind. Ant.*, Vol. XIV. p. 75, and Sir A. Cunningham, *Arch. Rep.* II. 810.

⁹⁹ It is indeed improbable that Bhoja, at the time when Padmagupta wrote, had reached manhood. Had he been a Yavārīja there would not have been wanting a compliment for him.

¹⁰⁰ The date in a copy of the Jesalmir MS. is : *Saka tevarthunanda 0.*

**THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL)
IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE.**

1654—1670.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 134.)

Appendix to John Campbell's Narrative.

Additional Note on Thomas Pratt.⁶⁵

THOMAS PRATT was not actually in the Company's service, but was employed by the Agent at Hugli as a representative of the English at Dacca. In the Hugli Consultation Book,⁶⁶ under date 9th November, 1663, there is the following entry with regard to Pratt and the expenses he incurred at Dacca :—

A Noate of w^t demanded by Thomas Pratt Pr. Month for his expences in servants wages diett & his owne salary.

| | | | | | | |
|--|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|------------|
| For 10 peones P ^c M ^o | ... | ... | ... | .. | ... | 21 |
| For 20 pikes [paik] & a mangi [māñjī] | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 34. 15. |
| For 4 pikes more | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 6 |
| A Cooke Buttler Hagman | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 10. 20. 1. |
| To my diett | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 30 |
| To a writer | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 5 |
| To 6 Caharrs [kahār] | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 12. 15. |
| a washerman mussallye (masālchi) | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 4 |
| Hollencore [hālālkōr] | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 2 |
| To my owne M ^o salary | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 40 |
| For extraordinary expences at y ^e Durbar... | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | 10 |

This is y^e Calculation wth I present to yr vewe, how you will accept of it knowe not, but this much I desire you would take notice of, yt I will freely give any man 50 Rups pr m^o more to boare my monthly expences. In w^t nature y^e Dutch live here is not unknown to some Englishmen theare, yet theire busiesse hath not gone better forward in y^e Durbarr nor they betur respected hitherto, although theire expences hath beene 4 times as much; and likewise pray Consider when any great more [Moor], y^e Dutch, or any P^cson of quallity come, whether it is a small expence to give them entartaynement, for I have here no investments yt I can eace an Acco: by Charging it upon another but every expence must appear in its owne shape. Y^r servant, Thomas Pratt.

Early in 1664, Pratt became embroiled in a quarrel at Dacca. The account of the occurrence was evidently written to Surat, but the reply only is extant, dated 19 May 1664⁶⁷ :— “Wee are Sorry to read y^e Vnhappy accident yt befell Thomas Prat, hee did very rashly to give the occasion, but when hee was besett round wee know not w^t a man may bee provokt to doe, especially w^a his life is engagd, woe are pswald to thinke y^e Nabob may bee reconciled when hee shall take into Consideration the Cruell attempt made upon him by fyreing the house about his Eares.” In July of the same year Pratt was still in disgrace, for, in a Consultation at Hugli on the 11th of the Month, we read⁶⁸ that the determination of the 9th. June to stop Thomas Pratt's wages of 180 rs. a month was confirmed “until he shall give satisfaction for w^t laid to his charge or that we find thereby that we may lose the Nabobs favour by wth our Masters business may receive a greater prejudice.”

⁶⁵ See page 135.

⁶⁶ Factory Records, Hugli, No. 1.

⁶⁷ Factory Records, Surat, No. 104.

⁶⁸ Factory Records, Hugli, No. 1.

⁶⁹ Factory Records, Hugli, No. 1.

A year later, Pratt was still at Dacca. In July, he wrote to the Agent, Mr. Blake, at Hugh,⁶⁹ with regard to the mental state of Mr. Marsh, the Company's servant at Dacca. Pratt declared himself unable to restrain Marsh and desired that someone might be sent to look after him. In September of the same year, the Council at Hugh wrote to the Directors in England,⁷⁰ "Thomas Pratt remains at Dacca to prefer our complaints and to endeavour redresses."

The later career and end of Thomas Pratt is given by Munroe and the details have been supplied me by Mr. Irvine. Pratt had been employed by Mir Jumla to build and equip boats for him, but he was suspected by Daud Khan Quieshi, the Governor of Dacca, who sent to seize him. Pratt fled on his would-be captors, and then escaped by his back door to his ship in the river and embarked for Arakan.

Here he intrigued with the King of Arakan and planned an attack on Bengal. Daud Khan sent a letter to Pratt, couched in friendly terms, and arranged that it should fall into the hands of the Arakan King. Suspecting treachery, the King removed Pratt's goods from his ship, bound his crew and then sent him and his ship to the bottom.

[II.—Narrative of Richard Bell.]

*An acco^t of y^e Voyage & Travells of Rich. Bell from Lisbon to Jerusalem & other places
in aⁿ 1669.*

May 23^d 1669 I tooke boate from Liss [Lisbon] to goe aboard y^e Ship Mary and Martha, Capt^t Dyer Bates⁷¹ Comander, his stireth 30 Guns, 50 Saylers, then Ridesing in the bay Wagers [Ouris] v^g Pisse Darcis Paço d'Areco]⁷²

We Weighed anchor at Tewesday at 4 Cloek after none, y^e wnde faire & a fresh gaile, soe as we arrived at Tangier⁷³ y^e 31 day, & came to anker before v^e towne at 4 Cloek in the morninge.

In Tangier⁷⁴ little r markable saue y^e Mould [Mole], wh^{ch} is not in litle tyme like to be finished for what wth some years labor & great Cost was built, is a greate part washt downe, & more like [t]ol[e] every day, wthout b^ritter ursts b^r imployed. Many good howses are wthin ye walls. It lies on y^e side of a hill, wthout y^e walls therins a howse and garden built and planted by Coll Alsup,⁷⁵ who then had a tenement [tenant] in it, wh^o sold beeere, wyne & Sallets. It [is] Calde White Hill in Africⁱ. We thank y^e King of Englands helth in it, & at 4 Cloek in y^e afternoone went aboard, & y^e wnde faire, we weighed, Capt^t, Cod of Yarmouth and a ship of Bristol in or Company both bound for Genoa.

In o^r way to Messina, y^e being 3^o in t^e port we were to touch at, we past y^e Islands of Maj & Minyork [Majorca and Minorca] & by y^e Island Sardina [Sardinia], of w^{ch} lay becalmd 47 sail of nech Men war & vntellers foun^t for the rebelle of Candia. In Sardenia is

⁷⁰ O. C. 660

⁷¹ O. C. 3000

⁷¹ Capt Dyer Bates is mentioned in the *Calendar of State Papers Domestic Series*, 1 Sept 1670, as commander of the *Mary and Martha*. Civil List Reg. in the Lib. of the p 101, calls him Capt Dyer Roles.

⁷² Paço d'Areco a town on the north bank of the Tagus, near the mouth, 9½ miles from Lisbon. Mr. Ferguson says that big Wagors⁷⁶ may present the Bay of Oporto this town being 1½ miles beyond Paço d'Areco.

⁷³ Then a fort h^{ad} ssosion

⁷⁴ In 1592 Tangier was made part of the duchy of Catherine of Braganza, wife of Charles II. A fine mole was contructed, but it was expensive to improve the harbour. The works were destroyed in 1681 and the place was left to the Moors.

⁷⁵ Comp. *Peljs Diary*, Wheatley's ed Vol VIII p 235, 'Sir H. Cholmley talking . . . of Tangier matters, took it from some reports . . . of some decay to the Mole, and a breach made thereto by the sea t^e a great v^g lu

⁷⁶ A Mr. Al^l the King's brewer and contractor for victualling of Tangier died 27 July 1664. See *Peljs Diary*, Wheatley's ed Vol IV pt 174, 176, 178, 188, 195, 198. Perhaps the "Coll Alsup" mentioned by Bell was a son of "the King's brewer".

y^e herba wh^t if a man eate he dies laffing.⁷⁷ On y^e day June, we were becalmd amonc^g y^e burnings [Lipari] Ilelands for 2 dayes. They are called, 1 Strambelo [Stromboli] 2 Vulcan [Vulcano], 3rd Vulcanello. We, y^e 8th day, had a fresh gale, wh^t past vs betwixt y^e poynts of Silla and Charibd[is], the one On y^e Isleland of Scicillia, thother On y^e Callabria, y^e Popes Contrey. And, in two howers after, Moored o^r ships before Messena, & had prattick⁷⁸ in 2 howers after.

This Messena is y^e 2^d Citty in y^e greate Isleland of Scicillia. At y^e tyme of o^r being⁷⁹ theire, came 16 Gallies of y^e popes & Maltezes, & 8 days after caime 14 Gallys of y^e ffrench; all weighed, & weere for the relife of Candia.⁸⁰

Messena hath y^e fairest mould [Mole] of anie place in Xpiandome, and its most of it naturall. The Key, cald y^e Marreene [Marina], is a very faire one, & On it, for neare a mile, stately howses, all vniiforme, faccing y^e Sea, wh^t it bounds, soe as y^u may step ot y^e Key into a ship of 300 Tuns, theire being water to make hit swim wth hit full Ladeng. Seuerall faire Castles, Convents, Monasterries & Churches are in it, As also faire Conduits & beautifull streets.

The Manfacter is silke, y^a greatest quantity made wthin 4 or 5 Miles about ye Towne wh^t I se drawne from y^e Cod [Cocoon] into skeynes, wh^t is an art verly Curious to vnderstand y^e well doeing of it.

From Messena wth Mr John Morgan, Mr James Stannier & Capt. Bates, we imbarke in a fletuke⁸⁰ wh^t we hyred to Carrie vs to y^e Cittie of Cattonia [Catania], 25 Leagues by Sea from Messena.

In o^r way we see Regnum [Reggio, in Italy] y^e plat S^t Paull preached at, on y^e Callabi[1]a side, & S^t Paulls piller erected in memory of him. We past 3 leagu^s further on y^e Callabra cost, wh^t is y^e popes Contrey, well peopled, & gool buildings & trutfull, tho verly Mountainous. We after boardesto y^e Scicillian coast, on wh^t are seuerall small Castles fronting y^e Sea, & soe are theire on y^e Callabria, all to pvent y^e landing of y^t Turke, wh^t vex often those pts & steale away y^e xpians. Tho Hilly, yet verly frutfull for Ollives & corne.

In y^e mornings & Evenings we see troop^s of Weomen, Guls & boyes descend^t the hills, wh^t are verry steepe, to fetch water, wh^t they beare on their heads in earthen pitchers from ye springs at y^e foote of y^e steepe hills, theire habbit verry mean.

Arriveinge at Cattonia, y^e 3^d Christe Citty of Scicillia, we viewed the towne, left almost empty of inhabbtants by reason of y^e Eruption of Mount Etna als Mongebell [als Mont-Bella],⁸¹ wh^t Sharrie or Mettell [Scoria or lava] wh^t it vommit^s as a stremme from a river in many Channells, haue run downe y^e wall of y^e City in Seueral places, & run downe about 30 dwelling howses in y^t Citty, 4 or 5 churches, 2 or 3 Monasterries and Nunaries, & surrounded the Citty on 3 parts & a larg^e Caſt^{le} wth out y^e walls, raisinge it selfe in some places aboue y^e Surface of y^e earth 10, 20 and 30 y^lls high, y^e breedth in some places 7 Eng^l miles at Cattonia (wh^t lies on y^e Sea 2 Miles), & its Channells when I [was] there led into y^e sea 2 Miles

⁷⁷ The author is apparently referring to the *Cannabis sativa*, hemp plant, which Campbell would know in India as Bhang.

⁷⁸ Pratique — Permit — granted to a ship to enter a port

⁷⁹ Candia was besieged by the Turks in 1667, and, after a most heroic defence by the Venetians, who lost 30,000 killed and wounded, was forced to surrender in 1679.

⁸⁰ Fletuke, a small vessel, used chiefly in the Mediterranean for coasting voyages

⁸¹ Compare Lithgow, *Painfull Pencillations*, 1. 390, “that called now Monte Bello or Gibello, signifying a faire, Mountaine.” The eruption of Etna in 1699 is the most violent on record. Twenty-thousand persons are said to have perished.

bredth & then had fild vp y^e chā [channel] in 6 & 7 fathom water, & raised it selfe in some places 5 & 6 fathom aboue y^e surface y^e water ; Makinge y^e Sea soe hott in y^t depth as I could not suffer my hand in it.

We hyred horsses & 6 soldiers to gard vs, for its a dangerous Contrey for anie to travell in, to Conduct vs to y^e foote of Mongebell, wherore this eruption was, it being 14 Miles from Cattania, and we went all the way alonge the Mettle [lava] it had throwne out. Att y^e foote of this Hill, a little aboue y^e vent, is 2 hills a quarter of a Mile in hight, all Ashes throwne vp by Mongebell since y^e Erruption. It was soe terrible to looke in at y^e vent or hole wth first this metle past out at, as I trembled to see it & durst not stay. Its 20 yds longe and 10 yds brod, all of such a flaine as cannot be greater Imagined. Its 10 or 15 yds lower then y^e surface of y^e earth formerly it had run over.

In or way to it we rid over topps howses & trees & townes & ways not formerly passable, but now levelled wth y^e abondance of Ashes wth Mongebell vommitts Out ; for 15 & 20 Miles it hath don this.

The people, in senerall townes wth were Coverd, were getinge out theire howshold stuff, & in seūail vineyds bareing theire vines, wth they told vs woud y^e next yeare bear y^e better for it, for it enriches theire land much & makes y^e barren ground fruitfull.

In Cattania & senerall other towas were written Ovor theire Doores Santa Agothia [Agatha] et Santa Marea [Maria] flogo [fucoco] noli me tangere;⁸² y^e people had left theire howses. The Metle it runs is of 2 sorts, both wth I haue, & alsoe a paper full of the Ashes.

After 3 days we imbarqued for Messena, in w^{ch} Citty I lodged at the howse of Mr. Parker Merchant & by him Mr. Wilkinson, Mr. Morgan & Mr. Hill, Mr Stannier & Mr. Meade (all Engl), was kindly treated.

The Day of June we weighed Anchor for Scanderroone⁸³ in Turkey, y^e wind faire, and sailed by y^e west end of Candia, vnder wth land lay 10 saile of Turks men warr belonging to Argier [Algiers], wth hal beene in y^e Service of y^e grand Senior ag Candia, And gaue vs chace from 10 in y^e Morninge till 7 at night, at w^{ch} hower we could not avoid speakeing wth them. They Commanded vs hoyce out of boate. Of Capt possetively told them he woud not. We were all in redinesse, or yards slunge, and everyman to his quarters, resolved to die or sinke by them. They Chased vs wth french Cullers [colours], but when they haled vs, put out theire Swallowtailes.

When they see we woud not hoyce out of boate, theire Admirall boyced out his & sent his Leavetennant aboard to Comd or Capt [command our captain] aboard him, but Capt. Bates would not, nor anie other in y^e ship. At last we indged it fit to send [some one] & all refusing, I⁸⁴ went. Many questions he asket by y^e ruinagado English,⁸⁵ but I answered as I thought good. At last it hapned soe well that insteole of being in y^e bottom of y^e sea, or Carring water in Argeir,⁸⁶ the one of w^{ch} we se noe way to avoyd, all y^e 10 sayle being Come vp, we got Cleere, & arrived saife at Silena⁸⁷ in Cyprisse.

⁸² The author has mixed up Latin and Italian in his quotation.

⁸³ Scanderoon, or Alexandretta, the port of Aleppo.

⁸⁴ Apparently, Richard Bell.

⁸⁵ The writer evidently means that the Turkish ships had on board renegade Englishmen in their service.

⁸⁶ i. e., made to work as slaves in Algiers.

⁸⁷ Silena, on the east of Cyprus. — cf. Dr. Pococke's *Travels in the East* in Pinkerton's *Voyages*, Vol. X. p. 580.

Being becalmed, lay theire a day, in wth tyme caime vp to vs Capt Morrisse Comand^r of y^e *Prewedence* from Scanderroone bound for St John De Aera, wth 3 passengers One Mr ffras: [Francis] Hemsworth, One Mr . . . Blunt, M^r Sa: Godscall, all 3 intending for Jerusalem. I then left Capt. Bates and imbarqued in Capt. Morrisse, it beinge ye 26 day of June 1669.

We arrived at St Jn^d de Aera y^e 29 June, & were received at the Chamber of Senor Antonia De Antonia Consull of y^t place in y^e Cane [Khan, Sarai], & mett theire Mr Hunt & Senior Francisco Consull, formerly at Trippiloe [Tripoli] a Jennerous [generous] pson. Theire was alsoe Captain Midleton Comd^r. of y^e Margerett, who had a banderetta^{ss} given him by y^e Padre Guardian of Jerusalem, who entertained vs respectfully aboard.

30th of June, wee hyred horsses & a Jannasary & 2 Arrabbs to gide vs for Nazareth. We got to it that night at 12 Clock And were received at y^e Convent, w^{ch} consists of 5 franciskians, 1 The padre guardi^a, 2 Joseph, 3 Petro, 4 Nicolo, 5 Martene.^{ss} Padre Nicolo accompaned vs in all or Jurney to tyberious [Tiberias] & Mount Taber wth y^e Janaserry & 3 Arrabbs.

At Nazareth, we se y^e howse of yo Virgin Mary on w^{ch} seemes to haue beeene built a spacious Chyrch, s^d by Quene Hellena y^e Mother of Constantine ye Emperrour.^{ss} 2d the place wherre y^e Angell appeared to hir at prayer; in the same place now is a Chappell vnder ground,^{ss} 3, the fountaine of St Peeter; 4, the Senagog of yo Jewes; 5 the stone on w^{ch} o^r Savior and his Apostles vsed to eate; 6 y^e howse of Joseph.^{ss} Noc thinge else in Nazareth observable, Sause they make in it about Two pounds and a halfe of Silk in it in Twelve months.

Betwixt Cana & The Blessed mount is a valley about 5 Engl miles in lenth & 2 in bredth, in w^{ch} valley it was y^e desiples plukt the ears of Corne. Its verry rich earth, but for want [of] tilling only thistles grow, w^{ch} are as hight as a man On horssback.

July 1st 1669. Wee parted from Nazareth for the sea of Tyberious. On the way, about 3 Miles from Nazareth, stands y^e ruins of y^e Metropilis of Gallile, formerly calld Cana, Wheere we drinke out of y^e same fountaine out of w^{ch} Caime y^e water was made wyne at y^e Wedding by o^r Savio^r. Alsoe y^e ruins of y^e howse was showne vs in w^{ch} the Merracle was don.^{ss}

Seaven Miles from Cana is y^e Mount of blessings, On y^e top of w^{ch} seemes to haue beeene a chappell built in Remembrance of o^r Savio^rs sermon^{ss} & y^e Merracle of y^e 5 loaves & 2 fishes, w^{ch} fed y^e Multitude at y^e bottom of y^t hill 2 miles from y^e top. 3 miles further is the sea of Gallile, & in ye way my horss fell & brused my knee. This sea beares 3 severall names from the 3 severall Contreys border on it, vizt 1, y^e Sea of Gallile; 2, y^e Lake of Genazareth; 3, y^e Sea of Tyberious. The Sea of Gallile, for y^t it borders on it; the Lake of Genazereth, for y^t Genazereth borders on y^e east of it, downe w^{ch} hill ran y^e herd of Swine; The Sea of Tyberious, from the Citty Tyberious, w^{ch} stands on y^e west side of it. On y^e east is y^e Desert of Arrabia.

^{ss}i. e., a Bannerette, a small silk banner.

^{ss} Compare Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem at Easter*, 1697, ed. 1st 10, p. 151, "Nazareth . . . At this place are as it were immured, seven or eight Latin fathers, who live a life truly mortified, being perpetually in fear of the Arabs, who are absolute lords of the country." Compare also Chiswell, *Journey to Jerusalem*, in 1697, Add. MS. 10623, "18th April . . . Nazareth . . . The Convent here is a small and very mean Building, and the Poor Fathers who are six or seven in Number, lead a Life truly mortified being frequently molested and constantly in fear of the Arabs who take from them what they please, and abuse them besides — also their Lodgings were so nasty and full of Virmin, their Victuals so Ordinary, and Wine sower, that our stay here was very uneasy."

^{ss} See Maundrell, *Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 151.

^{ss} See Pooocke, *Travels in the East*, p. 455.

^{ss} See Maundrell, *Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 152.

^{ss} See Pooocke, *Travels in the East*, p. 457 f.

The Citty Saphet [Saphet]⁹⁴ is seene from Tyberious, it being On a hill shewes it selfe verry plaine] tho 20 Miles of the Hill vnder wch is Damaskus is also plainly seene from thence, tho it be esteemed 50 Engl miles or 2 days iurney.

In ye Citty Tyberious, wch is 3 parts incompost [encompassed] wth a wall sleight but shows new,⁹⁵ y^e 4th wth ye sea, in all its compass about an Engl Mile And hath Only One little gate in wch y^e enter. In this Citty is a Church cald ye Church of St Peeter, some part standing as of Old⁹⁶, But vsel Only for Catle to shelter themselves from ye Sunn in the heate of the day. In this Citty is of all Ages & Sexes about y^e number of 50 psons but not a howse wthin y^e walls of ye Citty, Only ruins⁹⁷ in y^e walls of wch they live & dwell. The people speak Arrabb, theirre habbit wild & poore like ye Contrey about them, wch affords noething worth mentioninge, not yt the soyle is not good, but the people Idle. We had for or food while we staid a night & a day, Milk, Cake & Honney.

In former tyme, 25 years since, was a boate on ye Sea of Tyberious, wch belonged to some Jewes wth privilidge to fish, payng 30 Dollers yearly to ye Bashaw of Saphett, wch boate tooke fish & furnished all ye Contrey round about, but the Bashaw raised it to 200 Dollrs, soe ye boate was taken away & it never fished in since to this day. We see abundance of fish play neare ye shore, for some part of ye runs of a great howse runs into ye water 20 yds.

A quarter of a Mile wthout ye now wall of Tyberious is a natural hot bath, soe hot I could not goe into it till moderated wth Cold water,⁹⁸ its wthin a stones cast of ye Sea of Tyberious, vnder a great hill. & It seemes as if the Old Citty wall had Compast it, by ye ruins of many buildings & an old wall runs beyond it.

2^d July 1669. Wee parted from the Citty Tyberious to Nazereth. In ye way wee viewed two Cunes [Khāns or Castles places in that rule contrey for Marchis, to lodge themselves, Goods & Cammells in safe from Robbers. The later is cald Inoch Nu tow Jar [*Al-lukandatul-tujjar*],⁹⁹ this is wthin a days Jorney of the place wheere Josephs Bretheren sold him to ye Ishmalites.¹⁰⁰ This Came hath its name from a fountaine was where it stands.

A mile beyond this, at ye foote of Mount Taber, we killd a yong boar, & rosted it and & eat it On ye top of Mount Taber. On ye verry top of this Mount is ye ruins of 3 Churches, in One of wch ar seue y^e 3 tabernacles Queene Helen built in memory of ye savior¹⁰¹ transfiguration.¹⁰² From the top of this Mount wch is two miles high, in or ascent we se, 1st Ender, wheere K. Saull went to ye witch, 2nd, the plaines of Jezia ll, 3rd, Mount hermon, 4, the place wheere ye widdowes son was carried to burnall [Naan] & raised to life; 5th Mount Gilboa; 6, the sea of Jordan; 7, the sea of Galilee, And at ye bottom of this hill is ye plaine wheere Cisera was discomfeted [the plaine of Esdraelon] & ye place where ye blood of ye slaine ran into ye sea of Galilee; 9, ye Mth terranian sea. At ye west end of this Mountaine is ye village of Debora,¹⁰³ And a Church, in wch ye 9 Apostles rested when ye savior¹⁰⁴ went up the mount wth ye other 3.¹⁰⁵

3^d July. Wee departed from Nazereth at 11 Clock at night, & ye 4 July we, at 5 in ye morning arrived at St Jn de Acre. The Charge of this Jorney Cost each man 13 Lyon Dollars¹⁰⁶ besides his gifts.

⁹⁴ See Mauroli *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 155. ⁹⁵ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 459.

⁹⁶ The inn of the merchants - the Commercial Inn.

⁹⁷ See Mauroli *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 156.

⁹⁸ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 456.

⁹⁹ A Dutch coin bearing the figure of a lion.

5th July 1669. Att 7 Clock at night we imbarqued in a feluke we hyred for Joppa, wheere we arrived the 6 day at 3 Clock in ye afternoone. In ye way we see Cesaria Phillipi, but durst not goe ashore for ye Arrabbs w^{ch} are theire & take Copher¹⁰⁰ 3 Dollers pr man.

In Joppa is a ruined castle & Symon the tanners howse,¹ now a place wheere wyne is sold. Theires a great trade theire, it beinge the port for Jerusalem. Much Cake sope, ffalladoes² & Cotten Lynnen w^{te} & blew is sold theire Cheap.³

7th July 1669. We departed from Joppa to Ramah in ye Phillistines Contrey, w^{ch} is 10 Miles from Joppa, & all ye way throw a greate plaine & fertile Contrey. In ye way was 100 tents of Arrabbs together wth theire fammiles, Cattle & Cammells. When they haue eaten that part bare, they remoue further in to fresh pasture.

We arrived at Ramah at 9 in ye morninge, & at 10 Clock at night we mounted horss for Jerusalem. In Ramah is much tobacco planted, & its a great towne, & hath faire Moskeys in it. Theirs a Convent w^{ch} does receive all franks w^{ch} belongs to Jerusalem, wheere we arrived the 8th July 1669 at 7 Clock in the Morninge, spending that day in the Ceremoneys of the Convent, Cal^d Lyon Convent, The Padrey Guardian washinge or feete,⁴ & after wth Candles in or hands, went in p^session [procession] about ye howse and church in it, wheere we ended yt day wth devotion.⁵ Our entrance was at ye gate calld ye gate of Damaskus. We were receid by ye Druggaman [Dragoman] & ye Cadillies [cadil, qālib] officer; the former conducted vs to ye Convent,⁵ w^{ch} is wheere was ye howse of S^t John ye Evangelist.⁵

9th Beinge fryday, in the morninge we were accompanied out Towne wth fratre Thomas⁶ throw ye gate of Bethlen. On ye west side wth ye towne is a small castle built by ye Pesans⁷ in w^{ch} is a guarde of Turks soldiers. Passing southward, neare ye Citty wall, is ye Valley of Goshennon, & in ye Midle theire of, theire seemes to haue beeue a pool!, w^{ch} is s^d to be that wheere Barsheba [Bathsheba] was seen by David bathing hir selfe, & dwelt by it, beinge vnder & neare Mount Zion, wheere was ye pallas of king David & Over looks ye Pooll.⁸ A little further is the potters feild bought wth ye 30 ps silver Judas returned.⁹ On w^{ch} small peice ground is a building levells it wth adioyneing rock. At ye top of w^{ch} rock are 3 holes, throw w^{ch} are let downe the bodies of ye deade into a vall about 20 yds deepe, w^{ch} earth is of such nature, it consumes the flesh in 24 howers after put in.⁹

(To be continued.)

¹⁰⁰ *Kharārah*, a premium for defence, a tax for safe passage. Compare Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 4, "Caphars are certain duties which travellers are obliged to pay at several passes upon the road, to officers who attend in their appointed stations to receive them."

¹ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 407.

² Mr. Ferguson suggests that this word may be the Spanish *follados*, an ancient kind of trousers, very baggy, and that possibly the kind worn by Arabs is intended. On the other hand, "Falladoes," may be the Turkish *feraye*, a cloak worn out of doors by women.

³ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 407.

⁴ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 415.

⁵ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, pp. 411, 413, 415.

⁶ Compare Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 414, "it is the office of one of the lay-brothers to take care of them [European pilgrims] . . . the lay-brother . . . goes always out with them."

⁷ Compare Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 412, "The castle, which is now called the tower of David . . . is said to have been built by the Pisans in the time of the holy war." See also Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 35.

⁸ See Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 136.

⁹ Compare Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 136, "One moiety of it [the Potters Field] is taken up by a square fabric twelve yards high, built for a charnel house. The corpes are let down into it from the top, there being fire holes left open for that purpose. Looking down through these holes, we could see many bodies under several degrees of decay; from which it may be conjectured, that this grave does not make that quick dispatch with the corpes committed to it which is commonly reported. See also Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 424.

BOOK-NOTICE.

BUCH DES BAGAWAN, DER KÖNIGSGESCHICHTE. DIE GESCHICHTE DER MON-KÖNIGE IN HINTERINDIEN NACH EINER PALMILATT-MANUSKRIFT AUS DEM MON ÜBERSETZT, MIT EINFÜHRUNG UND NOTEN VERSEHEN, VON P. W. SCHMIDT, S.V.D. Vienna, 1903. (Reprinted from the *Sitzungsberichte der Akademie der Wissenschaften*.)

PATER W. SCHMIDT's researches into the Mon-Khmer dialects are well known. In 1904 appeared his *Grundzüge einer Lautlehre der Khasi-Sprache*, and in the following year his *Grundzüge einer Lautlehre der Mon-Khmer Sprachen*. In these works he so carried on the enquiries begun by Logan and Forbes and placed on a scientific footing by Kuhn, that we have now a definite knowledge as to the mutual relationship of the various members of the group.

It will be observed that the works to which reference has just been made deal only with one aspect of the subject, — the *Lautlehre*, Phonetics. Pater Schmidt was quite aware that even more important from a philological point of view would be a comparative study of the laws of the word-formation, in its widest sense, of these languages. But for this purpose trustworthy texts of two or three of the principal forms of speech were an absolute necessity, and while such were forthcoming for Khmer, for the other leading tongue Mon, nothing was available beyond three short fables in the Haswell-Stevens Grammar and a few translations from English of doubtful value. Pater Schmidt was therefore compelled to refrain from carrying his researches further till, through the kindness of that accomplished authority on Malacca languages, Mr. C. O. Blagden, he came into possession of the manuscript of the work, the name of which heads this notice. It is partly a life of the Buddha and partly a history of the Mon Kingdom from the middle of the 12th to the middle of the 18th century, A.D., mostly written in the Mon language. He lost no time in editing it, both in the native and in the Roman character, and has supplied in addition a valuable Introduction, Translation, and notes. In Appendixes, he gives lists of words which do not appear in any Mon vocabularies hitherto published. These words amount to a considerable number, and as he has succeeded in ascertaining the meanings of most of them, the Appendixes form a substantial addition to Mon lexicography.

In the Introduction, besides the necessary particulars concerning the manuscript, Pater Schmidt gives an abstract of its contents and a summary of the information available about other Mon MSS. at present known to exist. Forehammer in 1880 made a list of 53 Mon MSS. which are said to be now in the Bernard Free Library in Rangoon, and besides these there are a few catalogued in European collections. Owing to the Mon character being practically the same as the Burmese, these last have usually been classed as belonging to that language, — scholars in Mon being so rare in the West, that apparently no one has yet been found capable of reading them. Now that attention has been drawn to the fact, it is possible that other works in the same language may be found in European libraries, similarly hidden under a Burmese classification.

While we can most heartily congratulate Pater Schmidt on being privileged to introduce Mon literature so successfully to British students, it is not easy to repress a feeling of patriotic envy that the first serious attempt at dealing with an important Oriental language, spoken by nearly 175,000 British subjects, should have appeared in Vienna, and not in London or Rangoon. One resource there is, and I hope it will be soon adopted. This is to translate Pater Schmidt's excellent work as quickly as possible so that it may become accessible to scholars in India who are not acquainted with the German language.

GEORGE A. GALERSON.

READERS of the *Indian Antiquary*, who interest themselves in Iranian studies, will be glad to learn that Professor Bartholomae has issued a supplement to his monumental *Altiranisches Wörterbuch* which appeared in 1904. It appears under the title of *Zum altiranischen Wörterbuch Nacharbeiten und Vorarbeiten*, and is published at Strasburg by Karl J. Trübner.

The book, which contains about three hundred pages, includes not only additions and corrections to the main work, but also replies to critiques and a special *excursus* of 68 pages devoted to a consideration of the vowels and vowel signs in the Iranian manuscripts lately discovered in Turfan.

It is hardly necessary to say that the importance of the subjects dealt with, and the eminence of the writer, render the book indispensable to all students of Old Iranian literature.

G. A. G.

**A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE
LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.**

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

Preface.

SOME years ago, I published *ante*, Vol. XXVIII. (1900), pp. 197 ff., 225 ff., a **Theory of Universal Grammar** as applied to a Group of Savage Languages, and in Vol. XXXI. (1902), pp. 165 ff., this theory was successfully applied by Mr. Sydney Ray for the elucidation of a short statement in sixteen unrelated and morphologically distinct languages. While compiling Vol. III. of the *Report* on the Census of India, 1901, Andaman and Nicobar Islands, I had an opportunity of applying it in detail to the languages of the inhabitants of those islands. In 1904 I had another opportunity of revising the Theory in a lecture to the British Association at Cambridge. I now publish the Theory as revised on that occasion, and its application to systematic grammars of the languages of the Andamanese and the Nicobarese. In this matter I have had the advantage of the assistance of Mr. E. H. Man, the greatest expert on the subject.

The following abstract of the ideas elaborated in the succeeding pages may be of use to the reader.

During the last 30 years the careful record of "savage" languages has been frequently undertaken, and a serious difficulty has arisen, owing to the accepted European system of grammar, which is based on a system originally evolved for the explanation of highly inflected languages only, whereas in many, if not in most, "savage" languages, inflexion is absent or present only in a rudimentary form. The European system has therefore been found to be unsuited for that purpose. During attempts to provide a suitable system a Theory of Universal Grammar was evolved.

The root idea is that, as speech is a convention devised by the human brain for inter-communication between human beings, there must be fundamental natural laws by which it is governed, however various the phenomena of those laws may be.

The Theory starts with a consideration of the sentence, *i. e.*, the expression of a complete meaning, as the unit of all speech, and then seeks to discover the natural laws of speech by a consideration of the internal and external development of the sentence.

In explaining internal development, the sentence is ultimately divided into words, considered as components of its natural main divisions, in the light of their respective functions. This leads logically to a clear definition of grammatical terms.

From the consideration of the functions of words the Theory passes to that of the methods by which they are made to fulfil their functions. It shows how words can be divided into classes according to function and explains their transfer from class to class. This leads to an explanation of connected words and shows how the forms of words grow out of their functions. The growth of the forms is next considered, involving an explanation of roots, stems, and radical and functional affixes. This explanation shows that the affixes determine the forms of words. This is followed by a consideration of the methods by which the affixes affect the forms.

The sentence, *i. e.*, the unit of speech, is then considered as being itself a component of something greater, *i. e.*, of a language. This consideration of its external development leads to the

explanation of syntactical and formative languages, the two great divisions into which all languages naturally fall, *i. e.*, those which depend on the position of the words, and those which depend on the forms of the words in a sentence, to express complete meaning.

Syntactical languages are then shown to divide themselves into analytical, or those which depend for comprehension mainly on the position of the words, and into tonic, or those which combine tone with position for the same purpose. So also formative languages are shown to divide themselves into agglutinative and synthetic, according as the affixes are attached without or with alteration. Formative languages are further divided into premutative, intromutative or postmutative, according to the position of the affixes.

The Theory further explains that, owing to a fundamental Law of Nature, no language can have ever been left to develop itself alone, and how this leads to the phenomenon of **connected languages** and thus to groups and families of languages. It also explains how, again according to a Law of Nature, no language has ever developed in one direction only or without subjection to outside influences, leading to the natural explanations of the **genius**, or peculiar constitution, that each language possesses.

It is believed that every language must conform to some part or other of the Theory and it can be shown that children and untutored adults in learning a language act on the instinctive assumption of the existence of such a Theory. Assuming the Theory to exist and to be correctly stated, it is of great practical importance as leading to the quick, accurate and thorough, because natural, acquirement of a new language.

In brief, the Theory is based on the one phenomenon which must of necessity be constant in every variety of speech, *viz.*, the expression of a complete meaning or technically the sentence. Words are then described as components of the sentence, firstly as to the functions performed by them and next as to the means whereby they fulfil their functions. Lastly, languages are considered according to their methods of composing sentences and words.

Phonology and orthography, *i. e.*, pronunciation, spelling, and alphabets, are not considered, as these belong to other branches of the development of the human mind.

I.

The Theory of Universal Grammar.

(a) The Theory.

The existing European system of Grammar is an old growth based on ancient Greek and Latin Grammars, which embodied the results of a system originally evolved for recording the observed laws of highly synthetic or inflected languages. It is naturally engrained in all European scholars. The objection to it for general use and to my mind the overwhelming objection, is that it is in essentials unsuited to a very large number of languages, which are not synthetic or inflected, or at any rate have synthesis or inflection present only in a rudimentary form. It is entirely unsuited, for instance, for recording English, and in order to use it for that purpose, terms suitable for describing Greek and Latin have to be forced to new and unsuitable uses.

As regards the civilised and deeply studied languages, scholars and students have naturally become so imbued with the ancient system, that it is hardly to be expected that they can be induced to adopt any new or radically different system, and it is not now proposed to appeal to them to change that which is so well established. It is rather sought to find a way of recording on a uniform system the languages of savages nowadays so frequently reported, and, owing to the lack of a suitable and settled method, much too often on a haphazard plan, to the detriment of their successful handling.

Thirty years ago this subject was forcibly brought to the present author's notice when trying to represent, with Mr. E. H. Man, the purely "savage" language of the Andaman Islanders, in which work the active and very competent assistance of the late Mr. A. J. Ellis, F. R. S., President of the Philological Society, was secured. Some years later Mr. Ellis, finding the accepted grammatical terms so little suited to the adequate representation of savage speech for scientific readers, stated in his Annual Presidential Address to that Society for 1882, that : — "we require new terms and an entirely new set of grammatical conceptions, which shall not bend an agglutinative language to our inflexional translation." In 1883 he started the author on the present enquiry, and asked if it were not possible "to throw over the inflexional treatment of an uninflected language." Ever since then, as opportunity offered, the enquiry has been taken up and has resulted in the evolution of a **Theory of Universal Grammar**, which is of necessity a plan for the uniform scientific record of all languages, though, for the reason already stated, it is now sought to limit its application to "savage" languages only.

The Theory was applied in part in Portman's *Comparative Grammar of the South Andaman Languages* in 1898 and again in an article on the same languages by the present author in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for 1899, and elaborately and fully in his *Census Report of the Andaman and Nicobar Islands* for 1901, in which the languages of both groups of islands were discussed and explained in full Grammars. The Andamanese Languages are agglutinative and represent the speech of savages of very limited mental development : the Nicobarese Languages are a highly developed analytical form of speech, like English. In both, inflection is only present in a secondary and rudimentary form, as in English. The Theory was also applied in outline by Mr. Sydney Ray in the *Indian Antiquary* for 1902 to sixteen selected languages of every type — synthetic, agglutinative, analytical, syntactical (monosyllabic) — from the most highly civilised and developed to those of the most primitive savages. In the opinion of these writers, the theory succeeds in describing on a uniform plan every language to which it has been applied, as indeed it must succeed in doing, if it be a correct theory.

The very great importance to anthropologists and observers of savage tribes and peoples unknown to Europeans of a uniform scientific system in this matter is so obvious, that no excuse is made for bringing it once more before the readers of this *Journal*.

The root idea of the Theory is, that as speech is a convention devised by the human brain for intercommunication between human beings, there must be some fundamental natural laws by which it is governed, however various the phenomena of those laws may be. The business of the Grammarian is to discover and report the laws. These considerations form the basis of the Theory of Universal Grammar, the practical application of which at the present day must, on account of long formed habits, be limited to a **Plan for Uniformly Recording the Languages of Savages**.

In building up a Theory of Universal Grammar, it is necessary, in order to work out the argument logically, to commence where the accepted Grammars end, viz., at the sentence, defining the sentence as the expression of a complete meaning, and making that the unit of language. This is the fundamental argument. Nothing is an intelligible communication, unless it is complete enough to be understood. It is by observation of the internal and external development of the sentence or complete meaning that the natural laws of speech will be discovered.

A sentence may, clearly, consist of one or more expressions of a meaning or "words," defined as single expressions of a meaning. The difference between a word and a sentence may be shown thus : — "go" is a sentence, as it says all that is necessary ; but "cow" is merely a word, because something must be said about the cow before the communication is complete.

A sentence can also consist of two separate parts — the **subject**, i. e., the matter to be discussed or communicated, and the **predicate**, i. e., the discussion or communication. Thus,

"the badly hurt cow" would be the subject and "died suddenly yesterday" would be the predicate of a sentence.

And when the subject or predicate consists of many words, it must contain principal and additional words. In the sentence already quoted, the words "cow" and "died" are the principal words, and the rest are additional.

This leads to the argument that the **components of a sentence are words**, placed either in the subjective or predicative parts of it, having a relation to each other in that part of **principal and subordinate**. Therefore, because of such relation, **words fulfil functions**. The functions then of the principal words must be to indicate the subject or predicate, and of the subordinate words in the predicative part of the sentence to illustrate the predicate, and in the subjective part to explain the subject or to illustrate that explanation. Thus, in the sentence already discussed, the functions of each word are quite clear. "Cow" indicates the subject and "died" the predicate. "The" and "hurt" explain the sort and condition of the cow, i. e., of the subject. "Badly" illustrates the explanation of the subject by stating how much the cow was hurt. "Suddenly" and "yesterday" illustrate the predicate by stating how and when the cow died.

Again, as the predicate is the discussion or communication on the subject, it is capable of extension or completion by **complementary words**, which form that part of a sentence recognised in the Grammars as "**the object**." Thus, in "the policeman found the dead man," the communication made in the predicate "found" is completed by the complementary words "the dead man," which form the **complement or object**.

These observations complete the first stage of the argument leading to a direct and simple definition of grammatical terms. But speech obviously does not stop here, because mankind speaks with a **purpose**, and the **function of his sentences** is to indicate that purpose, which must be one of the five following in any specified sentence: — (1) affirmation, (2) denial, (3) interrogation, (4) exhortation, (5) information. Now, **purpose can only be indicated in a sentence** by the position, as in English, or by the tones, as in Chinese, of its components; or by variation of their forms, as in Latin; or by the addition of special introductory words, as in most languages. Also it is obvious that when purposes are connected, they can be indicated by **connected sentences**, and that these sentences must be in the relation of **principal and subordinate**. This relation can only be **expressed** by the position of the sentences themselves, as in English; by variation of the forms of their components, as in Tamil, Turkish, and many other languages, or by the addition of special words of reference. In English, subordinate sentences usually follow the principal. When they do not, this rule is recognised by saying that the statement is inverted. The use of special words of reference is shown in such a statement as "I am certain John died on Sunday, because Mary told me so," where "because" is specially added to the subordinate sentence to connect it with the principal sentence.

A **word of reference** must act in one of two ways, either by merely **joining sentences**, or by **substituting itself** in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers. In "I caught the man who ran away," the word of reference "who" connects the subordinate with the principal sentence. "John ran away. He had killed his mother." Here are two connected sentences, the subordinate following the principal and connected with it by the words "he" and "his" substituted for "John" in the principal sentence to which they refer.

Further, as there is a necessary **interrelation between the words in a sentence**, this can only be expressed by the addition of special connecting words, or by variation or correlated variation of form. In "the story about John was told me yesterday," the intimate relation between "story" and "John" is expressed by the connecting word "about." In "descensus Averni," inflexion of one of two intimately related words is used for the same purpose, just as in English the special

connecting word "into" would be used in such a corresponding expression as "descent into Hell." Agreement or concord between adjective and noun, or verb and noun, in the inflected languages has exactly the same object. In the Persian "ism-i-sharif" (noble name), the relation between noun and adjective is expressed by the connecting word "i."

These considerations complete what may be called the second stage of the argument leading to clear definitions of grammatical terms. The argument thereafter becomes more complicated, taking us into the explanation of **elliptical**, i.e., incompletely expressed, **forms of speech**, and into those expansions of sentences known as phrases, clauses and periods. But, to keep our minds fixed only on that part of it which leads to plain grammatical definitions, it may be stated now that **functionally a word must be**, inventing new terms for the purpose, one of the following :—

- (1) **An integer**, or a sentence in itself (imperatives, interjections, pronouns, numerals).
- (2) **An indicator**, or indicative of the subject or complement (object) of a sentence (nouns).
- (3) **An explicator**, or explanatory of its subject or complement (adjective).
- (4) **A predicator**, or indicative of its predicate (verbs).
- (5) **An illustrator**, or illustrative of its predicate or complement, or of the explanation of its subject or complement (adverb, adjective).
- (6) **A connector**, or explanatory of the interrelation of its components (or words, conjunctions, prepositions).
- (7) **An introducer**, or explanatory of its purpose (conjunctions, adverbs).
- (8) **A referent conjuncter**, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by joining them (pronouns, conjunctions).
- (9) **A referent substitute**, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by substitution of itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers (relative pronouns, conjunctions).

These then are the terms it is proposed to use in the explanation of the functions of words, and the arguments out of which they grow. Of course, grammarians will know that all this is **syntax**, and it must now be explained why the Theory makes it necessary to consider it far more important to study function than form or tone, as essential to the correct apprehension of the nature of words, and that **accidence arises properly out of syntax** and not the other way round, as so many of us have been taught.

It is obvious that any given word may fulfil one or more or all the functions of words, and that therefore words may be collected into as many classes as there are functions, any individual word being transferable from one class to another and belonging to as many classes as there are functions which it can fulfil. This is to say, that **words are divisible into classes according to function** as just explained, and that the same word can belong to more than one class, as it does constantly in English. Thus, "the tiger returns to his kill," "Shall we kill the horse ?," "Shall we cross at the bridge higher up, or shall we bridge the river here at once ?" And so on *ad infinitum*. In the above examples the same word has been transferred from the indicator (noun) class to the predicator (verb) class. And the same words in English and many other tongues are constantly nouns, adjectives, verbs or adverbs, simply according to the function they happen to perform for the time being.

The function a word fulfils in any particular sentence can be indicated by its position therein, without and with variation of form, as in English and Latin respectively ; or by its

tone, as in Chinese. And because of this, the form or tone which a word can be made to assume is capable of indicating the class to which it belongs for the nonce. In Chinese the same word can become a noun or verb and so on merely by the tone used in uttering it : tone being to Chinese what inflexion is to Latin. So the Latin stem *domin* by changing its form does all sorts of things and belongs to all sorts of classes. As *domin-us* it is an indicator (noun) : as *domin-or* it is a predicate (verb) : as *domin-ans* it is an explicator (adjective) : as *domin-i* it may be a subordinate noun showing its intimate relation to some other word or it may be simply a noun according to context : as *domin-o* it is, again according to context, an illustrator (adverb) of a verb or a complementary indicator, i.e., a noun governed by a verb, as we have all been taught to say : as *domin-um* it is always a complementary indicator : and so on.

It is further obvious that words transferable from class to class belong primarily to a certain class and secondarily to the others, that a transfer involves the fulfilment of a new function, and that a word in its transferred condition becomes a new word connected with the form fulfilling the primary function, the relation between the forms or tones, i.e., the words so connected, being that of parent and offshoot. Form and tone therefore can indicate the class to which a parent word and its offshoots respectively belong. In English it is not usually difficult to detect primary and secondary function, or parent and offshoot words. Thus, in the case of "bridge" the noun and "bridge" the verb : of "kill" the verb and "kill" the noun, or in the case of "kill" and "killer." In the inflected languages it is never easy, as all the observable forms are probably connected secondary forms of some older lost word. It is not easy to say offhand what should be affixed to *domin* as the form of its primary function. But the principle of the application of every existing inflected form is precisely that above explained.

It is by the above induction that one is led to the argument that form grows out of function, or, to put it in a familiar way, accidence grows out of syntax, because when connected words differ in form they must consist of a principal part or stem, and an additional part or functional affix. The function of the stem is to indicate the meaning of the word, and the function of the functional affix to modify that meaning with reference to the function of the word. This modification can be expressed by indicating the class to which the word belongs, or by indicating its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence. All this is illustrated in the words just quoted. The meaning of those connected words lies in the stem *domin*, and this meaning is modified, and the function in the sentence and relation to its other words of each individual is determined, by affixing *us*, *or*, *ans*, *i*, *o*, *um* and so on.

But the stem itself may consist of an original meaning and thus be a simple stem, or it may contain a modification of an original meaning and so be a compound stem. A compound stem must consist of a principal part or root and additional parts or radical affixes, the function of the root being to indicate the original meaning of the stem, and of the radical affixes to indicate the modifications by which the meaning of the root has been changed into the meaning of the stem. As simple examples may be instanced, the modern English words "form" and "information," of which the former is a simple stem and the latter a compound stem, built up of the root "form" and the radical affixes "in" and "at" and the functional affix "ion." So too the stem *domin* already mentioned is a compound stem with root *dom*, having the sense of "(to be) set," modified into the sense of "mastery" by a radical affix, which has there the form of *in*.

Further, since words fulfil functions and belong to classes, they must possess inherent qualities, which can be indicated by qualitative affixes and by tones. There are many English words, whose modern forms are however chiefly old decayed inflectional forms, which can illustrate

this point. Thus, "bury" is always a verb; so too are "believe," "give," and so on. So also by form *dominari* would always be a verb, and *dominus* a noun.

Thus it is that **affixes** determine the forms of words, bringing into existence what is usually called **etymology or derivation**. They are attachable, separably or inseparably, to roots and stems and words by the well-recognised methods of prefixing, infixing and suffixing, either in their full or in a varied form. It is the method of attaching them by variation of form that brings about **inflection** in all its variety of kind. This is an important point. Affixes are additions to roots or stems. Those to roots are both prefixed and suffixed in most languages and are sometimes fixed into the roots, dividing them into parts, as in Arabic with much inflexion, and more plainly in Nicobarese: *e. g.*, in the latter case *pa-hoa*, to fear; *pa-ma-hoa*, a coward; *d-āk*, to come; *d-am-āk*, a guest. Prefixed affixes to show function are the rule in the South African Languages, infixes in Arabic, suffixed affixes in the European inflected languages.

Such is the line inductive argument naturally takes in order to work out the grammar of any given language or group of languages logically, starting from the base argument that speech is a mode of communication between man and man through the ear by talking, through the eyes by signs, or through the skin by touch, and taking a language to be a variety or special mode of speech. The **grammar**, *i. e.*, the exposition of the laws, of any single language stops at this point and to carry the argument further, as one of course must, is to enter the region of **Comparative Grammar**. In doing so one must start at the same point as before, *viz.*, the sentence, but progress on a different line, because hitherto the effort has been to resolve the unit of language into its components, and now it has to be considered as being itself a component of something greater, *i. e.*, of a language.

To continue the argument. Since a sentence is composed of words placed in a particular order without or with variation of form, its meaning is clearly rendered complete by the combination of the meaning of its components with their position and tones or form or both. Also, since sentences are the units of languages, and words are the components of sentences and languages are varieties of speech, **languages can vary** in the forms and tones of their words, or in the position in which their words are placed in the sentence, or in both. And thus are created **classes of languages**. Again, since the meaning of a sentence may be rendered complete either by the position of its words or by their tones and forms, languages are primarily divisible into **syntactical languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the position of their words; and into **formative languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the forms of their words. These are the two great divisions into which all languages fall. The order of the words and the forms of the words in the sentence determine the particular natural laws to which a language chiefly conforms.

Now, since syntactical languages depend on position, or on position combined with tone, to express complete meaning, they are divisible into **analytical and tonic languages**. Of such English and Chinese are respectively typical examples.

Further, since words are varied in form by the addition of affixes, and since affixes may be attached to words in an altered or unaltered form, formative languages are divisible into **agglutinative languages**, or those that add affixes without alteration, of which Turkish is a good example; and into **synthetic languages**, or those that add affixes with alteration, of which any inflected language serves as an example. And lastly, since affixes may be prefixes, infixes or suffixes, agglutinative and synthetic languages are each divisible into (1) **premutative**, or those that prefix their affixes, like the South African Languages; (2) **intromutative**, or those that infix them, like Arabic; and (3) **postmutative**, or those that suffix them, like Latin, Greek, or Sanskrit.

Thus inductive argument can be carried onwards to a clear and definite apprehension of the birth and growth of the phenomena presented by the varieties of human speech, *i. e.*, by languages.

But, as is the case with every other natural growth, in obedience to a fundamental Law of Nature, no language can ever have been left to develop itself alone, and thus do we get the phenomenon of **connected languages**, which may be defined as those that differ from each other by varying the respective tones, forms and position, but not the meanings, of their words. And since variation of form is affected by the addition of altered or unaltered affixes, connected languages can vary the forms of the affixes without materially varying those of the roots and stems of their words. In this way they become divisible into groups, or those whose stems are common, and into families, or those whose roots are common. On this definition it is possible to gather French, Italian, Spanish, Portuguese and the "Latin" Languages into a Group. Hindi, Hindostani, Bengali, Uriya, Bihari, Panjabi, Marathi and the "Prakritic" Languages could be formed into a Group. Latin, Greek, Persian, Zend, Sanskrit, Pāli, and the Prakrits would belong to a Family.

It is also against natural conditions for any language to develop only in one direction, or without subjection to outside influences, and so it is that we find languages developing on more than one line and belonging strictly to more than one class, but in every such case the language has what is commonly called its **genius or peculiar constitution**, *i. e.*, it belongs primarily to one class and secondarily to the others. This point cannot be too strongly insisted on. No language has ever developed entirely on one line of development, hence the "irregularities" that vex the souls of learners. English is fundamentally analytical, but there are many highly inflected forms and functional inflexion occurs in many instances. There is also intromutation present in such forms as "man, men," "broad, breadth," "know, knew." Such highly inflected languages, too, as Greek and Latin have points in common with analytical languages.

I have long thought and I believe it can be proved that every language must conform to some part or other of the Theory just outlined, and in that case the Theory would be truly, as I have ventured to call it, a Theory of Universal Grammar. That the facts for such a Theory exist in Nature and only await unearthing I have no doubt whatever. Mankind, when untrammeled by teaching, acts on an instinctive assumption of their existence, for **children and adults alike always learn a language in the same way, if left to themselves.** They copy the enunciation of complete sentences from experts in it to start with, learning to divide up and vary the sentences so acquired afterwards, and this is not only the surest but also the quickest way of mastering a foreign tongue correctly. Its natural laws, *i. e.*, its grammar, as stated in books about it, are mastered later on, and in every case where they only are studied there comes about that book-knowledge of the language which is everywhere by instinct acknowledged to be a matter apart from, and in one sense inferior to, the practical or true knowledge. I use the term "true" here, because, unless this is possessed, whatever knowledge may be acquired fails to fulfil its object of finding a new mode of communicating with one's fellow man.

Book-knowledge of a language is only useful for scientific and educational purposes, but if the laws laid down in the set Grammars were to follow closely on the laws instinctively obeyed by untutored man, and to do no violence to what instinct teaches him to be the logical sequence of ideas, the divorce between practical and linguistic knowledge — between knowledge by the ear and knowledge by the eye — would not be so complete as it is nowdays. And not only that, if the laws could be stated in the manner above suggested, they could be more readily grasped and better retained in the memory, and languages could consequently be more quickly, more thoroughly and more easily learned by both children and adults than is now practicable to the ordinary learner. Looked at thus, the matter becomes of the greatest practical importance.

This is what the Theory attempts to achieve : but assuming it to be fundamentally right, and correctly worked out, it should explain the workings of the untutored mind of the savage as exhibited in his speech, although it reverses the accepted order of teaching, alters many long accepted definitions, and while admitting much that is usually taught, it both adds and omits many details, and taken all round is a wide departure from orthodox teaching. How wide the following observations will show. The familiar terminology has been changed in this wise. The old noun, adjective, verb, adverb, preposition and conjunction have become indicator, explicator, predicator, illustrator, connector and referent conjunctor, while interjections and pronouns have become integers and referent substitutes. Certain classes also of the adverbs have become introducers. Gender, number, person, tense, conjunction and declension all disappear in the general description of kinds of inflexion :—the object becomes the complement of the predicate and concord becomes correlated variation.

The Theory is based on the one phenomenon, which must of necessity be constant in every variety of speech, viz., the expression of a complete meaning or technically the sentence. Words are then described as components of the sentence, firstly as to the functions performed by them and next as to the means whereby they can fulfil their functions. Lastly, languages are considered according to their methods of composing sentences and words. Assuming this course of reasoning to be logically correct, it must, when properly worked out, explain every phenomenon of speech ; and when its dry bones have been clothed with the necessary flesh for every possible language by the process of the direct natural development of every detail, a clear and fair explanation of all the phenomena of speech must be logically deducible from the general principles enunciated therein.

The Theory takes no count of two subjects introduced into all formal Grammars for obvious reasons of convenience — phonology and orthography. It has no concern with pronunciation, spelling, and alphabets. These are subjects which do not affect it and belong to other branches of the development of the human mind.

(b) The Course of Grammatical Development.

The Sentence is the Unit of all Speech.

I. — The Sentence and its Components.

- (a) A Sentence is composed of words.
- (b) A Word is the expression of a meaning.
- (c) A Sentence is the expression of a complete meaning.
- (d) Words required to express the meaning of a sentence are (1) integers, (2) indicators, (3) predicators, (4) explicators, (5) illustrators.

II. — The Interrelation and Intimate Relation of the Components.

- (a) Interrelation of components can be expressed by variation in form.
- (b) Intimate relation of components can be expressed by correlated variation in form (agreement).
- (c) Words required to express the interrelation of components are (6) connectors.

III. — The Sentence and its Function.

- (a) The function of a sentence is to express its purpose.
- (b) Words required to express the function of a sentence are (7) introducers.
- (c) The function of a sentence can be expressed by variation of the tones of its components.
- (d) A Tone is a point on a conventional scale of the voice in speaking.

IV.—Expansion of the Sentence into the Period by the substitution of Phrases, Clauses and Connected Sentences for Words.

- (a) A Phrase is the substitute for a Word by the collective expression of a meaning by two or more words.
- (b) A Clause is the substitute for a Word by the collective expression of a complete meaning by two or more words.
- (c) A Period is a Sentence expanded by Clauses or Words.

V.—Interrelation of the Components of the Expanded Sentence or Period.

- (a) Connected Sentences express connected purposes.
- (b) Words required to express the interrelation of connected sentences are (8) referent conjunctors, (9) referent substitutes.

VI.—The Functions of the Components of the Sentence.

- (a) The Essential Components of the Sentence are (1) indicators, (2) explicators, (3) predators, (4) illustrators, (5) complements.
- (b) Complements are indicators or explicators.
- (c) The Optional Components of a Sentence are (1) introducers, (2) referents, (3) connectors.
- (d) Referents are referent conjunctors or referent substitutes.
- (e) An Integer is a sentence in itself.
- (f) An Indicator indicates the subject or complement of the sentence.
- (g) An Explicator explains the subject or complement.
- (h) A Predator indicates the predicate.
- (i) An Illustrator illustrates the predicate or complement or the explanation of the subject or complement.
- (j) A Connector explains the interrelation of the components.
- (k) An Introducer explains the purpose of the sentence.
- (l) A Referent Conjunctor explains the interrelation of connected sentences by joining them.
- (m) A Referent Substitute explains the interrelation of connected sentences by the substitution of itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers.
- (n) The Subject of the sentence is the matter communicated.
- (o) The Predicate of the sentence is the communication made about the subject.
- (p) The Complement of the sentence is the completion of the predicate.

VII.—The Classes of the Components of the Sentence.

- (r) Class indicates the nature of a word.
- (t) Form, tone and position can indicate the class of a word.

VIII.—The Interrelation of the Classes of the Components.

- (a) Connected words indicate their transfer from one class to another.

IX. — The Interrelation of the Functions of the Components.

- (a) The Root indicates the original meaning of a word.
- (b) Affixes comprise prefixes, infixes and suffixes.
- (c) Affixes modify the meaning of a word.
- (d) A Radical Affix modifies the meaning of a root.
- (e) A Simple Stem is the principal part of a word indicating its meaning.
- (f) A Functional Affix modifies the meaning of a stem in relation to its function.
- (g) A Compound Stem comprises a root and its radical affix.
- (h) A Qualifying Affix modifies a word by indicating its nature (inherent qualities) in relation to function or class.
- (i) Connected Words comprise stems and their affixes.
- (j) Inflection is caused by alteration of the form of inseparable affixes.
- (k) Inflected words conform to particular kinds of inflection.
- (l) Tone is a substitute for inflection.

X. — The Position, Form and Tone of the Components.

- (a) The meanings of the components combined with their positions or with their forms or combined with the positions and the forms or tones complete the meaning of the sentence.

XI. — General Development of Languages from the Sentence.

- (a) No Language has ever developed along one line of development only.
- (b) The sentence by the forms or positions of its components or by their forms or tones combined with their positions causes the development of all languages.

XII. — Development of Languages from the Sentence into Classes.

- (a) The positions of the components of the sentence cause the development of Syntactical Languages.
- (b) In Analytical Languages position governs the class.
- (c) In Tonic Languages position combined with tone governs the class.
- (d) The forms of the components of the sentence causes the development of Formative Languages.
- (e) In Agglutinative Languages the affixes developing the forms are attached unaltered.
- (f) In Synthetic Languages the affixes developing the forms are attached altered by inflection.
- (g) In Premutative Languages the affixes developing the forms are prefixed.
- (h) In Intromutative Languages the affixes developing the forms are infixes.
- (i) In Postmutative Languages the affixes developing the forms are suffixed.

XIII. — Development of the Interrelated Classes of Languages from the Sentence.

- (a) Affixes to stems develop Groups of Languages.
- (b) Affixes to roots develop Families of Languages.
- (c) Variation of tone, form or position in Families develops Connected Languages.

(c) Skeleton of the Theory.

Speech is a mode of communication between man and man by expression. Speech may be communicated orally through the ear by talking, optically through the eye by signs, tangibly through the skin by the touch. Languages are varieties of speech.

The units of languages are sentences. A sentence is the expression of a complete meaning.

A sentence may consist of a single expression of a meaning. A single expression of a meaning is a word. A sentence may also consist of many words. When it consists of more than one word, it has two parts. These parts are the subject and the predicate. The subject of a sentence is the matter communicated or discussed in the sentence. The predicate of a sentence is the communication or discussion of that matter in the sentence.

The subject may consist of one word. It may also consist of many words. When it consists of more than one word, there is a principal word and additional words. The predicate may consist of one word. It may also consist of many words. When it consists of more than one word, there is a principal word and additional words. Therefore the components of a sentence are words placed either in the subjective or predicative part of it, having a relation to each other in that part. This relation is that of principal and subordinate.

Since the words composing the parts of a sentence are placed in a position of relation to each other, they fulfil functions. The function of the principal word of the subject is to indicate the matter communicated or discussed by expressing it. The function of the subordinate words of the subject may be to explain that indication, or to illustrate the explanation of it. The function of the principal word of the predicate is to indicate the communication or discussion of the subject by expressing it. The function of the subordinate words of the predicate may be to illustrate that indication, or to complete it. The predicate may be completed by a word explanatory of the subject, or indicative of the complement. Therefore, primarily, the words composing a sentence are either —

- (1) Indicators, or indicative of the subject.
- (2) Explicators, or explanatory of the subject.
- (3) Predicators, or indicative of the predicate.
- (4) Illustrators, or illustrative of the predicate, or of the explanation of the subject.
- (5) Complements, or complementary of the predicator.

And complements are either indicators or explicators. Therefore also complementary indicators may be explained by explicators, and this explanation may be illustrated by illustrators. And complementary explicators may be illustrated by illustrators.

But, since speech is a mode of communication between man and man, mankind speaks with a purpose. The function of sentences is to indicate the purpose of speech. The purpose of speech is either (1) affirmation, (2) denial, (3) interrogation, (4) exhortation, or (5) information. Purpose may be indicated in a sentence by the position of its components, by the tones of its components, by variation of the forms of its components, and by the addition of introductory words to express it or introducers.

Also, since the function of sentences is to indicate the purpose of speech, connected purposes may be indicated by connected sentences. The relation of connected sentences to each other is that of principal and subordinate. This relation may be expressed by the position of the connected sentences, by variation of the tones or forms of their components, or by the addition of referent words expressing it or referents. A referent word may express the interrelation of connected sentences by conjoining them, or by substituting itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers. Referents are therefore conjunctors or substitutes.

Also, since the words composing the parts of a sentence are placed in a position of relation to each other, this relation may be expressed in the sentence by the addition of connecting words expressing it or connectors, or by variation of the forms of the words themselves.

Also, since predicates are specially connected with indicators, explicators with indicators, illustrators and complements with predicates, and referent substitutes with their principals, there is an intimate relation between predicate and indicator, indicator and explicator, illustrator and predicate, predicate and complement, referent substitute and principal. This intimate relation may be expressed by the addition of connecting words to express it, or by correlated variation in the forms of the specially connected words or by their relative position or by their relative tones.

Since speech is a mode of communication between man and man by expression, that communication may be made complete without complete expression. Speech may, therefore, be partly expressed, or be partly left unexpressed. And since speech may be partly left unexpressed, referent words may refer to the unexpressed portions, and words may be related to unexpressed words or correlated to them. Referent substitutes may, therefore, indicate the subject of a sentence.

Again, many words may be used collectively to express the meaning of one word. The collective expression of a single meaning by two or more words is a phrase. The relation of a phrase to the word it represents is that of original and substitute. A phrase, therefore, fulfils the function of its original.

Since a phrase is composed of words used collectively to represent a single expression of a meaning, that meaning may be complete in itself. Therefore a phrase may be a sentence. A sentence substituted for a word is a clause. A clause, therefore, fulfils the function of its original.

Since clauses represent words, a sentence may be composed of clauses, or partly of clauses and partly of words. A sentence composed of clauses, or partly of clauses and partly of words, is a period.

Therefore a word is functionally either —

- (1) A sentence in itself or an integer,
- (2) An essential component of a sentence, or
- (3) An optional component of a sentence.

The essential components of a sentence are (1) indicators, (2) explicators, (3) predicates, (4) illustrators, (5) complements. And complements are either indicators or explicators.

The optional components of a sentence are (1) introducers, (2) referents, (3) connectors. And referents are either referent conjunctors or referent substitutes.

To recapitulate: Functionally a word is either —

- (1) An integer, or a sentence in itself.
- (2) An indicator, or indicative of the subject or complement of a sentence.
- (3) An explicator, or explanatory of its subject or complement.
- (4) A predicate, or indicative of its predicate.
- (5) An illustrator, or illustrative of its predicate or complement, or of the explanation of its subject or complement.
- (6) A connector, or explanatory of the interrelation of its components.
- (7) An introducer, or explanatory of its purpose.
- (8) A referent conjunctor, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by joining them.
- (9) A referent substitute, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by substitution of itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers.

An individual word may fulfil all the functions of words, or it may fulfil only one function, or it may fulfil many functions. When a word can fulfil more than one function, the function it fulfils in a particular sentence is indicated by its **position** in the sentence, either without variation of form, or with variation of form or by its **tone**. There are, therefore, **classes of words**.

Since a word may fulfil only one function, there are as many classes as there are functions. Also since a word may fulfil more than one function, it may belong to as many classes as there are functions which it can fulfil. A word may, therefore, be transferable from one class to another; and this transfer may be effected by its **position** in the sentence without variation of form, or with variation of form or by its **tone**. The class to which a word belongs may, therefore, be indicated by its **form** or **tone**.

When a word is transferable from one class to another, it belongs primarily to a certain class and secondarily to other classes. But, since by transfer to another class from the class to which it primarily belongs (with or without variation of form) the word fulfils a **new function**, it becomes a **new word** connected with the original word. The relation between **connected words** is that of parent and offshoot. Since the form of a word may indicate its class, both parent and offshoot may assume the forms of the classes to which they respectively belong.

When connected words differ in form, they consist of a principal part or **stem**, and an additional part or **functional affix**. The function of the stem is to indicate the meaning of the word. The function of the functional affix is to modify that meaning with reference to the function of the word. This **modification** may be effected by indicating the class to which the word belongs, or by indicating its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence.

A stem may be an original meaning or **simple stem**, or it may be a modification of an original meaning or **compound stem**. A compound stem consists of a principal part or root, and additional parts or **radical affixes**. The function of the root is to indicate the original meaning of the stem. The function of the radical affixes is to indicate the **modification** by which the meaning of the root had been changed into the meaning of the stem.

Since words fulfil functions and belong to classes, they possess **inherent qualities**. The inherent qualities of words may be indicated by **qualitative affixes** or by **tones**.

Affixes are, therefore, **functional**, or indicative of the function of the word to which they are affixed, or of its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence; **radical**, or indicative of the modifications of meaning which its root has undergone; **qualitative**, or indicative of its inherent qualities.

Affixes may be —

- (1) **Prefixes**, or prefixed to the root, stem, or word;
- (2) **Infixes**, or fixed into the root, stem, or word;
- (3) **Suffixes**, or suffixed to the root, stem, or word.

Affixes may be attached to roots, stems, or words in their **full form**, or in a **varied form**. When there is variation of form, there is **inflection** or inseparability of the affix from the root, stem, or word. All the functions of affixes can, therefore, be fulfilled by inflection; and **inflected words** may conform to particular **kinds of inflection**.

Since a sentence is composed of words placed in a particular order, with or without variation of form, the meaning of a sentence is rendered complete by the combination of the meaning of its components with their position, with their tones, or with their forms, or partly with their position and partly with their forms or tones.

Since sentences are the units of languages, and words are the components of sentences, and since languages are varieties of speech, languages may vary in the forms of their words, in the tones of their words, in the position in which their words are placed in the sentence, or partly in the forms and tones and partly in the position of their words. There are, therefore, classes of languages.

Since the meaning of a sentence may be rendered complete by the position of its words, by their tones, or by their form, languages are primarily divisible into **syntactical languages**, or, those that express complete meaning by the position and tones of their words; and into **formative languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the position and forms of their words.

Since syntactical languages use either position or position and tone, they are divisible into **analytical languages** and **tonic languages**.

Since words are varied in form by the addition of affixes, and since affixes may be attached to words in an unaltered or altered form, formative languages are divisible into **agglutinative languages**, or those that add affixes without alteration; and into **synthetic languages**, or those that add affixes with alteration.

Since affixes may be prefixes, infixes, or suffixes, agglutinative and synthetic languages are each divisible into (1) **premutative languages**, or those that prefix their affixes; (2) **intromutative languages**, or those that infix their affixes; (3) **postmutative languages**, or those that suffix their affixes.

Languages are, therefore, by class either syntactical or formative. And syntactical languages are either analytical or tonic, and formative languages are either agglutinative or synthetic. And agglutinative and synthetic languages are either premutative, intromutative, or postmutative.

A language may belong entirely to one class, or it may belong to more than one class. When a language belongs to more than one class, it belongs primarily to a particular class, and secondarily to other classes.

Since the meaning of a sentence is rendered complete by the meaning of its words in combination with their forms or position, languages may be **connected languages**, or those that vary the forms, the tones, or the position, without varying the meanings, of their words.

Since variation of form is effected by the addition of affixes in an unaltered form, connected languages may vary the affixes without variation of the roots or stems of their words. Connected languages whose **stems** are common belong to a **group**. Connected languages whose **roots** are common belong to a **family**; and, therefore, all connected languages belonging to a group belong to the same family.

(d) A Brief Exposition of the Theory.

All speech expresses a communication between man and man by talking or by signs. Languages are varieties of speech. The unit of every language is the expression of a complete communication, *i. e.*, the sentence. All sentences are divided into incomplete expressions of communication, *i. e.*, words, and are as naturally multiplied into languages. Thus there is a development both ways from the sentence.

The necessary primary division of every sentence made up of words is into the matter communicated (**subject**) and the communication made about it (**predicate**). The words in each of these divisions are of necessity in the relation of principal and subordinate, which involves the fulfilment of a function by every word.

The function of the principal word of the subject is obviously to indicate the matter communicated and of the subordinate words to explain the indication and illustrate that explanation. Similarly, the principal word of the predicate indicates the communication made and the subordinate words illustrate the indication or complete it.

Therefore, in every language the essential words in a sentence are : —

- (1) indicator, indicating the subject or the complement.
- (2) explicator, explaining that indication.
- (3) predicate, indicating the predicate.
- (4) illustrators, illustrating the predicate or the explicator.

As all speech expresses a communication, it has a purpose, and the functions of the sentences is to express one of the five following purposes : — (1) affirmation, (2) denial, (3) interrogation, (4) exhortation, (5) information. The methods adopted for indicating the purpose of a sentence are (1) placing the components in a particular order, or (2) varying their forms or the tones in which they are spoken, or (3) adding special introductory words. When the purposes of speech are by their nature connected together, this connection is naturally indicated by connected sentences in the relation of principal and subordinate, which is expressed by methods similar to those above noted, *i.e.*, placing them in a particular order, or varying the forms or tones of their components, or adding special referent words of two kinds, (1) simple conjoining words, (2) words substituting themselves in the subordinate sentence for the words in the principal sentence to which they refer.

The relation of the words composing the parts of a sentence is also expressed by the similar methods of adding special connecting words, or of varying the forms or tones of the words ; and so, too, the intimate relation between indicator and predicate, indicator and explicator, illustrator and predicate, predicate and complement, referent substitute and principal, is similarly expressed by special connecting words, by correlated variation of the words in intimate relation, by their relative position, or by the tones used in severally expressing them.

Complete communication can be, and is habitually, in every language, made without a complete expression of it in speech, and so referent words are made to refer to words unexpressed and to be related or correlated to them, and referent substitutes are made to indicate the unexpressed subject or complement of a sentence.

The function of the sentence and the interrelation of the words composing it are therefore in all speech expressed by three methods : position, variation, or addition of special words. Every language adopts one or more or all of these methods.

Therefore, in every language the optional words in a sentence are : —

- (5) connector, explaining the interrelation of the components,
- (6) introducer, explaining its purpose,
- (7) referent conjuncter, joining connected sentences,
- (8) referent substitutes, indicating the interrelation of connected sentences or unexpressed communications.

To the essential and optional components of the sentence must be added (9) the integer, or word that of necessity in every language expresses in itself a complete communication, *i.e.*, is a sentence.

Thus is explainable the natural resolution of the sentence into its component words, but any one word can be, and habitually is, extended to many words, used collectively to express its meaning. Words thus used collectively form a phrase, which is substituted for its original. When a phrase contains in itself a complete meaning, and thus is a sentence substituted for a word, it becomes a clause. Therefore, clauses and phrases are merely expanded words, fulfilling the functions and bearing the relations of the words for which they are substituted in an expanded sentence or period. Therefore also, the period is a true sentence in the sense of being the expression of a complete meaning, and so the unit of every language adopting it.

In all speech, words are made to indicate the functions they fulfil in a sentence by their position in it, with or without using tones, and with or without variation in form, and this habit gives rise of necessity to clauses of words according to function. And as any given word can naturally fulfil more than one function, it becomes as naturally transferable from its own class to another, the transfer

being indicated by position in the sentence with or without variation in form or tone. The class of a word thus indicates its function; and its position, alone or combined with its form or tone, indicates its class.

So when a word is transferred from its original class, it necessarily fulfils a new function and becomes a new word, connected with the original word in the relation of parent and offshoot, each equally of necessity assuming the form or tone of its own class.

The functions of words in a sentence, and consequently their classes, are therefore in all speech expressed by two methods: position or position combined with variation or tone. Every language adopts one or other or both.

When in any language connected words differ in form, they are made to consist of a principal part or stem and an additional part or functional affix. The stem is used for indicating the meaning of the word, and the functional affix for modifying that meaning according to function, by indicating the class to which the word belongs, or its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence.

A simple stem necessarily indicates an original meaning, but a stem can be, and habitually is, used for indicating a modification of an original meaning. It then naturally becomes a compound stem, *i. e.*, made up, by the same method as that above noted, of a principal part or root and of additional parts or radical affixes, each with its own function, the root to indicate the original meaning, and the affix its modification into meaning of the stem.

As all words differing in form or tone of necessity fulfil functions and belong to classes, they must possess a nature, *i. e.*, qualities inherent in themselves, and these, in all languages using such words, are indicated by the addition of qualitative affixes or by the tones in which they are spoken.

Every affix is of necessity fixed in the midst of, or prefixed or suffixed to, a root, stem, or word, the affixing being naturally effected in full or in a varied form. Whenever there is variation of form amounting to material change, there is necessarily inflexion, or inseparability of the affixes. Inflexion can therefore be made to fulfil all the functions of affixes, and inflected words to conform to particular kinds of inflexion, in order to indicate function and class: and as tone can be equally made to indicate the functions and classes of words, it takes the place of inflexion.

Words are therefore made to fulfil their functions merely by the tone in which they are spoken or by an external development effected by affixes, and to express modifications of their original meaning by a similar use of tones or of internal development. In the case of both internal and external development the affixes are prefixes, infixes, or suffixes affixed in full or varied form or by inflexion. All languages, using variation of form for causing the components of sentences, *i. e.*, words, to fulfil their functions, adopt one or other, or all the above methods of effecting the variation.

Therefore in all speech, communication expressed in a sentence is rendered complete by the combination of the meaning of its components with their position, tones or forms, or with position combined with form or tone.

The methods adopted in developing the sentence, *i. e.*, the unit of speech itself, are found to entirely govern those adopted in its further development into a language or variety of speech.

Languages differ naturally in the position of their words in the sentence, or in their forms or tones, or in the combination of position with form or tone. Thus are set up naturally two primary classes of languages:—Syntactical Languages, which express complete communication by the position, and Formative Languages, which express it by the forms of their words.

As position alone or combined with tone can fulfil all the functions of speech, the Syntactical Languages employ one or both of those methods, and thus are created respectively Analytical Languages and Tonic Languages.

Again, in all speech, variety of form is secured by affixes attached to words in an unaltered or an altered form. Formative Languages necessarily therefore divide themselves

into Agglutinative Languages, attaching affixes in an unaltered form, and Synthetic Languages, attaching them in an altered form. These two classes are both further naturally divisible into (1) Premutative, (2) Intromutative, (3) Postmutative Languages, according as they attach affixes as prefixes, infixes or suffixes.

In obedience to a fundamental Law of Nature, no language has ever developed along a single line, and therefore every language belongs of necessity primarily to one of the above classes, and secondarily to others, by partial adoption of their methods.

Languages, varying the form, tones or position, without varying the meanings, of their words, form naturally Connected Languages in the relation of parent and offshoot. Connected Languages, whose stems, *i.e.*, the meanings of whose words, are common to all, form a natural Group of Languages, and those Connected Languages, whose roots, *i.e.*, the original meanings of whose words, are common to all, form a natural Family of Languages. Therefore also of necessity all Connected Languages belonging to a Group belong to the same Family.

As the above method of expounding the Theory involves the use of unfamiliar terms, it is as well to state that the new and the old terms of Grammar roughly, though not exactly, correspond as follows ; it being remembered that the old terms are themselves the outcome, of another tacit Theory, based upon other observations of natural laws or phenomena.

Table of Comparative Grammatical Terms.

| Old. | New. |
|-------------------------------|---|
| Noun. | Indicator. |
| Adjective. | Explicator. |
| Verb. | Predicator. |
| Adverbs of different classes. | { Illustrator. Introducer. |
| Preposition. | |
| Postposition. | Connector. |
| Conjunction. | |
| Interjection. | Integer. |
| Pronoun. | |
| Relative Adverb. | Referent Substitute. |
| Relative Particle. | |
| Gender, Number, Case. | |
| Declension. | |
| Person, Mood, Tense. | Inflection of different kinds. |
| Conjugation. | |
| Concord, Agreement. | { Correlated Variation. Intimate Relation. |
| Government. | |

DIAGRAM I.

Explaining the Lines upon which the Theory is Worked out.

Principle of the Development of the Sentence out of its Components.

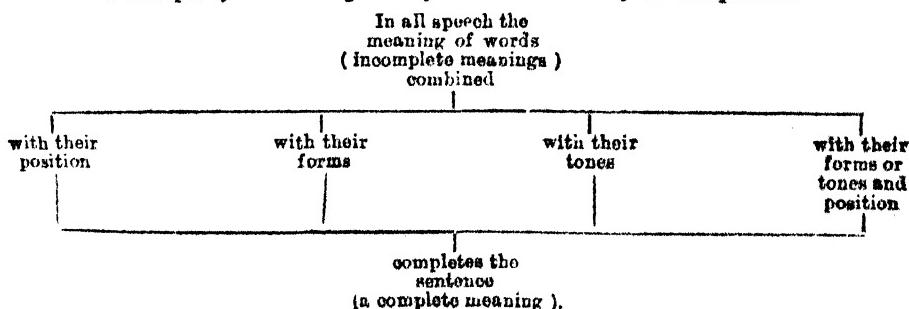
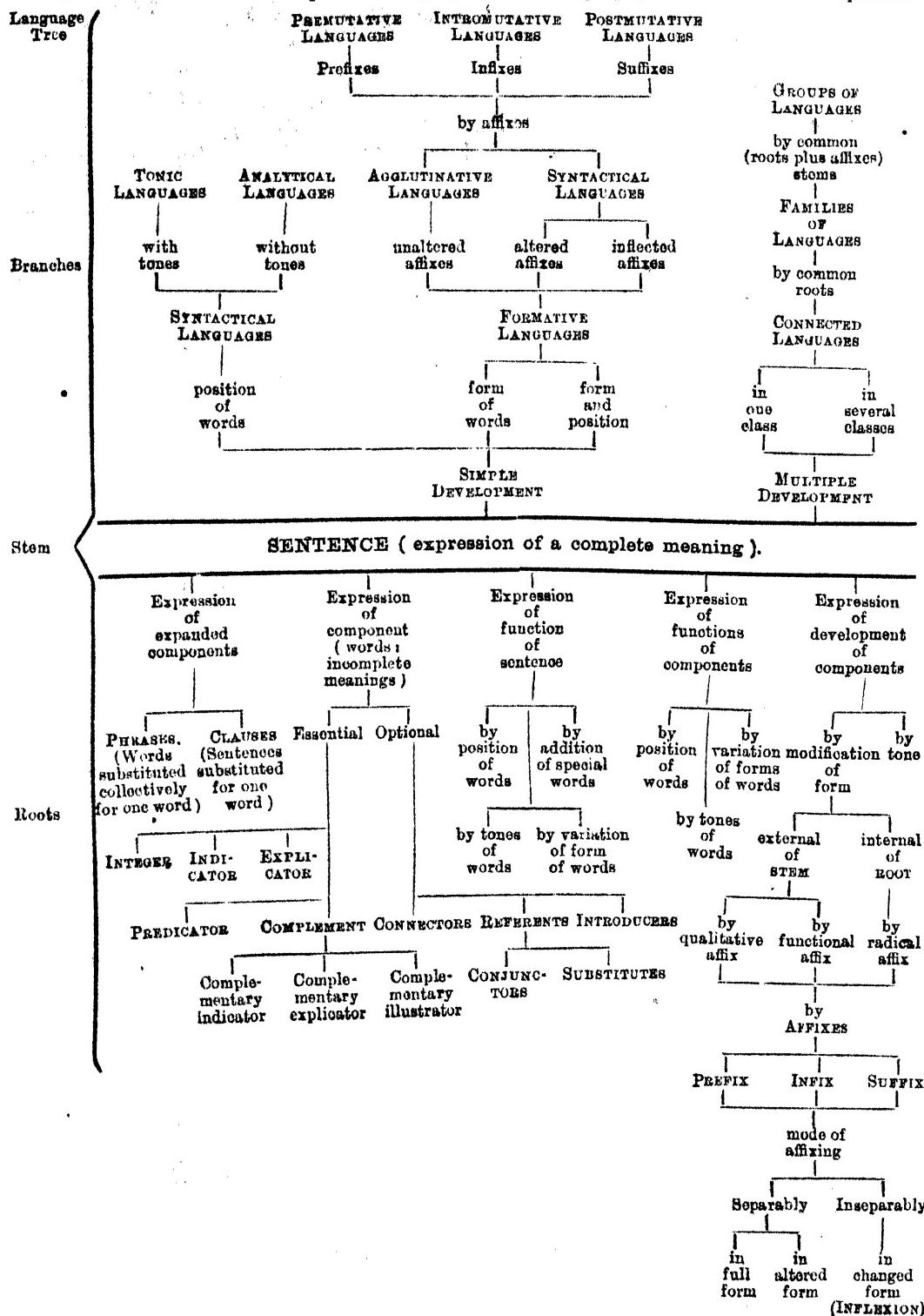


DIAGRAM II.

Development of the Sentence or complete meaning, upwards into languages, downwards into its components.



(e) Methods of Analysing the Sentence
according to the Theory of Universal Grammar.

I. — By its Components.

Definitions and Notes.

1. A sentence is composed of Words.
2. A Word is the expression of a meaning.
3. A Sentence is the expression of a complete meaning.
4. Words required to express the meaning of a sentence are (1) integers, (2) indicators, (3) predators, (4) explicators, (5) illustrators.

Analyses.

1. An Integer completes the Sentence.
2. The Subject and the Predicate make up the Sentence.
3. An Indicator completes the Subject.
4. The principal word (Indicator) and subordinate words make up the Sentence.
5. Illustrators and Explicators make up the subordinate words.
6. The Predator completes the Predicate.
7. The principal word (Predicator) and subordinate words make up the Predicato.
8. Illustrators and the Complement (Object) make up the Predicato.
9. An Indicator or an Explicator completes the Complement.
10. The principal word (Indicator or Explicator) and subordinate words make up the Complement.
11. Illustrators and Explicators make up the subordinate words.

II. — By the Interrelation and Intimate Relation of its Components.

Definitions and Notes.

1. Interrelation of component words is expressed by variation in form.
2. Intimate relation of component words is expressed by correlated variation in form (agreement and government).
3. Words required to express the interrelation of component words are (6) connector.

Analyses.

1. Connected Words complete the Sentence.
2. Component words with variation in form and connectors make up the Sentence.
3. Indicator and Predicator, Indicator and Explicator, Illustrators and Predicator, Predicator and Complement form the Component Words.
4. Correlated Variation in form expresses the intimate relation between Indicator and Predicator, Indicator and Explicator, Illustrators and Predicator, Predicator and Complement.

III. — By its Function.

Definitions and Notes.

1. The function of a sentence is to express its purpose.
2. Words required to express the function of a sentence are (7) Introducers.

Analyses.

1. Affirmation, Denial, Interrogation, Exhortation, or Information, completes the Sentence.
2. The function of the Sentence is either Affirmation, Denial, Interrogation, Exhortation, Information.
3. Words varied in tone or form indicate the function.
4. The position of the words indicates the function.
5. An Introducer indicates the function.

IV.—By its Expanded Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. The Components are expanded by the substitution of Phrases, Clauses and Sentences for Words.
2. A Phrase is the substitute for a word by the collective expression of a meaning by two or more words.
3. A Clause is the substitute for a word by the collective expression of a complete meaning by two or more words.
4. A Period is a sentence expanded by Clauses or Words.

Analyses.

1. Clauses substituted for Words complete the Expanded Sentence or Period.
2. Phrases or Clauses substituted for Words and Words make up the Expanded Sentence or Period.

V.—By the Interrelation of its Expanded Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. Connected Sentences express connected purposes.
2. Words required to express the interrelation of Connected Sentences are (8) Referent Conjunctions, (9) Referent Substitutes.
3. A Tone is a point on a conventional scale of the voice in speaking.

Analyses.

1. Connected Sentences complete the Expanded Sentences or Period.
2. The Principal Sentence and Subordinate Sentences make up the Connected Sentences.
3. Referent Conjunctions indicate the Principal Sentence.
4. Variation of the tone, form and position of the words indicates the Principal Sentence.
5. Variation of the tone, form and position of the words indicates a Subordinate Sentence.
6. In Subordinate Sentences the Subjective part is indicated by referent substitutes with correlated variation in form, with or without variation in form, and with or without tone.
7. In Subordinate Sentences unexpressed communication is indicated by referent conjunctions with correlated variation in form, with or without variation in form, and with or without tone.

VI.—By the Functions of its Components.*Analyses.*

1. Essential and Optional Components make up the Sentence.
2. An Integer completes the Sentence.
3. Indicator, Explicators, Predicator, Illustrators and Complement form the Essential Components.
4. Indicator and Explicators complete the Complement.
5. Indicator, Explicators and Illustrators make up the Complement.
6. Connectors, Introducer, Referent Conjunction, and Referent Substitutes form the Optional Components.

VII.—By the Classes of its Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. The Class indicates the Nature of a Word.
2. The Form indicates the Class of a Word.

Analyses.

1. Fulfilment of function by component words combined with position completes the Sentence.
2. Fulfilment of one, many, or all functions produces the transfer of component words from class to class.
3. Fulfilment of one, many, or all functions indicates the class of a component word.
4. A Component Word, without and with variation of form and with and without tone, by position fulfil one, many, or all functions.

VIII. — By the Interrelation of the Classes of its Components.*Note.*

1. Connected Words indicate their transfer from one class to another.

Analyses.

1. Connected Words in the form of their Primary Class or of their Secondary Classes together with other Component Words make up the Sentence.
2. The Parent Word and Offshoot Words form the Connected Words.
3. Classes of words consist of the Primary Class which forms the Parent Word and of Secondary Classes which form the Offshoot Words.
4. Secondary Classes by fulfilling new functions and by transfer from the Primary Class, with or without variation of form and without or with tone, form the Offshoot Words.

IX. — By the Interrelation of the Functions of its Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. The root indicates the original meaning of a word.
2. Affixes comprise prefixes, infixes, suffixes.
3. Affixes modify the meaning of a word.
4. A radical affix modifies the meaning of a root.
5. A simple stem is the principal part of a Word indicating its meaning.
6. A functional affix modifies the meaning of a stem in relation to its function.
7. A compound stem comprises a root and its radical affix.
8. A qualitative affix modifies a word by indicating its nature (inherent qualities) in relation to function or class.
9. Connected words comprise stems and their functional affixes.
10. Inflection is caused by an alteration in the form of inseparable affixes.
11. Inflected words conform to particular kinds of inflexion.
12. Tone is a substitute for inflexion.

Analyses.

1. Connected words and other component words make up the Sentence.
2. Qualitative Affixes indicate the inherent qualities of classes of connected words.
3. Simple stems and compound stems make up connected words.
4. Functional Affixes, by indicating class, interrelation and correlation, modify simple stems and compound stems.
5. Radical Affixes modify roots into compound stems.
6. Prefixes, Infixes and Suffixes attached separably in full or varied form to root, stem or word form Affixes.
7. Prefixes, Infixes and Suffixes attached inseparably by inflexion (altered form) of one or many kinds to root, stem or word form Affixes.

X. — By the Position, Tone and Form of its Components.*Analyses.*

1. The meaning of the components with position or form completes the Sentence.
2. The meaning of the components with position and form or tone completes the Sentence.

XI. — By General Development into Languages.*Note.*

1. No Language has ever developed along one line of development only.

Analyses.

1. The Sentence by the forms or position of its components creates all Languages.
2. The Sentence by the forms or tones combined with the position of its components creates all Languages.

XII. — By Development into Classes of Languages.*Analyses.*

1. The Sentence by variation of the forms or position of its components creates Classes of Languages.

2. The Sentence by combining variation of the forms and position or of the tones and position of its components creates Classes of Languages.

3. The Classes of Languages comprise the Syntactical and Formative Languages.

4. The position of the components of the sentences create the Syntactical Languages.

5. The forms of the components of the sentences create the Formative Languages.

6. The Syntactical Languages without tones form the Analytical Languages.

7. The Syntactical Languages with tones form the Tonic Languages.

8. Formative Languages by varying the forms of the components of the sentences by means of unaltered affixes form the Agglutinative Languages.

9. Formative Languages by varying the forms of the components of the sentences by means of altered affixes (inflexion) form the Synthetic Languages.

10. Agglutinative and Synthetic Languages by means of prefixed, infixd and suffixed affixes form respectively the Premutative, Intromutative and Postmutative Languages.

11. Syntactical and Formative Languages which are by nature of one Primary Class are Parent Languages.

12. Syntactical and Formative Languages which partially adopt the nature of Secondary Classes are Offshoot Languages.

13. Parent and Offshoot Languages comprise all Languages.

XIII. — By Development with Interrelated Classes of Languages.*Analyses.*

1. The Sentence with or without varied affixes to the stems of its components creates Groups of Languages.

2. The Sentence with or without varied affixes to the roots of the stems creates Families of Languages.

3. The Sentence by variation of the tones, forms or position of its components in Families of Languages but without variation in the meaning of the components creates Connected Languages.

4. Connected Languages by conforming to one Primary Classes or by conforming partially to Secondary Classes comprise all Languages.

(To be continued.)

NOTES ON THE CHINS OF BURMA.

BY THE REV. G. WHITEHEAD.

(Formerly Missionary to the Chins, S. P. G.)

Religion.

THE religion of all the Turanian races has been **Animism or Shamanism**. The general lines of the religion of all the hill-tribes of Burma may be given in brief in the words in which Prof. A. H. Sayce in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*¹ describes the religion of the Sumerians of Babylonia of three thousand years B. C. "According to the Sumerian idea every object and force in nature had its *zi* or 'spirit,' which manifested itself in life and motion. The *zi* was sometimes beneficent, sometimes malignant, but it could be controlled by the incantations and spells which were known to the sorcerer-priests."

The chief objects of worship among the Chins may be divided into three groups : — (i) the **Great Parent** of all ; (ii) the **spirits** who live in earth and sky, who send rain or withhold it, who watch over the village, the rice-fields, the jungle, or some one tree or mountain, &c. ; and (iii) the **penates**, i. e., deceased forefathers, whom they fear rather than love, for while they dread their anger they expect little in the way of blessing from them. The Chins do not worship any images ; nor do they make any carved representations of any of these objects of worship.

The Great Parent of all is regarded as a female, **Mother 'Li**, and they do not think that she has or had any male counterpart. Perhaps one may rather say that they believe that sex does not enter into 'Li's essence. Mother 'Li reigns "on her throne in the heavens," "never growing old and never dying." She created, of her spittle, the earth and the sea and the sky, and brought forth by her power all life, animal and vegetable. She created man and imparted to him all the material and mental and spiritual blessings that he enjoys. All mankind are her children, and she loves them all. She has given to each nation its bounds and language and letters. She is wholly good.

Reasoning, as I imagine, from the analogy of daily life, the teachers or priests have told the Chins that Mother 'Li herself has not existed from all times, but had, as parents and ancestors, **Yin**, **Aw**, **'Keu** and **'Kyén**, who are now dead, and, like other departed spirits, much more apt to trouble the living than to assist them ; — so much so that the names **Yin-Aw** are sometimes used to denote in brief all the spirits (Mother 'Li alone excepted), and that in a very unfavourable sense. It was too much, however, for the Chin mind to go back one step further, and to ask whence Yin and Aw came. They have never really faced the question of the First Cause.

The genesis of the human race in general, and of the Chins in particular, is thus told by the Chin teachers. In the beginning, after Mother 'Li had made the world, she laid a hundred eggs, which she hatched in cotton-wool, and from which sprang a hundred pairs of human beings, the progenitors of the different races of mankind. She laid yet another egg, a little one, which was most beautiful to see, and which she specially cared for. In her affection she did not put this one in cotton-wool, but kept it in an earthen pot, and so it did not hatch. After a while, thinking that the egg was addled, she threw it on to the roof of the house. It fell from the roof into some rubbish under the eaves, and was not broken. Afterwards when the rains came, it was borne down by the water with the rubbish into a stream, and finally lodged in a *yang-lai* (or *gyin-yé*) bush. Here the ashun, or king-crow, spied the egg, and carrying it off, hatched it ; and from this egg came a boy and a girl, the progenitors of the Chin race. It was only a small hamlet of nine or ten houses where the Chin race was hatched ; but as to the race of the people who lived in

¹ Tenth Edition, Vol. XXVI. p. 46.

that hamlet, tradition naturally says nothing. To this day, out of gratitude to the benefactor of their ancestors, the Chins will not kill or eat the king-crow (or the long-tailed edolius) which they will still speak of as their father and mother.

"After the boy and girl were born they were separated. When the boy grew up, as he had no mate, he made a bitch his wife. The Chin girl also grew up by herself, and was carried off by a bear, who placed her in a tree and kept her there. From this captivity she was delivered, by a bee, which came to her and directed her to tie a piece of cotton to his tail, by means of which he guided her to where the male Chin was living in the valley of the river called by the Burmese, the Chindwin. In commemoration of this, when children are born a piece of cotton is tied to their hands. The man wished to make this woman his wife, but the woman objected, because the bee had told her that they were brother and sister. To settle this dispute they went to their Mother 'Li. Her order was that as the man had married a bitch, the bitch should be sacrificed, and the man should then marry the woman; that their sons and daughters should also intermarry, but after that the brother's daughters should marry the sister's sons. Hence arose the Chin customs of offering up a dog to the household spirits and of giving the daughters of brothers in marriage to those brothers' sisters' sons.

"Mother 'Li loved her youngest born son, but before she found him she had already partitioned off the world among her other children, and there was nothing but inhospitable mountain ranges left for the Chin. These she assigned to him, and she gave him also elephants and horses and cattle, and directed his Burman brother to look after his education. This Burman brother, however, turned out to be a very wicked and unscrupulous guardian. He pretended to educate the 'ignorant wild Chin,' but he showed him nothing but the blank side of his slate; so that he never learned a single letter. Before he put him on an elephant, he rubbed the elephant's back with cowhage, which so tickled the poor Chin's bare skin that he refused to have anything to do with such animals in future, and gave them all to his elder brother the Burman. The buffalo, too, the Burman managed to deprive him of. When the Chin tried to ride it, the Burman's wife put herself in the way and got knocked down. The Burman complained to Mother 'Li, who decided that the buffalo should be given over to the Burman in compensation for the injury done. Ultimately of all the animals which had been given to him, goats and fowls and pigs were the only ones which remained in his possession.

"The grasping Burman did not even permit his brother to remain in undisturbed possession of his mountain home. When the boundaries of the different countries were marked out, the Burman took care to mark his with permanent objects, but the Chin set up no marks save some twisted knots of grass. These were burnt up by the jungle fires, and then as the Chin had no marks to show, he was ordered to live wherever the Burman allowed him. Thus his race has never had a country of its own, and wanders still over the mountain ranges of Burma.

"The origin of every Chin law and custom is religiously assigned by the Chins to the orders of Mother 'Li, the great mother of the human race, who is said to have laid down a complete code of laws for the guidance of her Chin progeny."²

As Mother 'Li gave letters to other nations, so she did to the Chins also. The Burman paid not very much attention to the gift, but wrote the letters on leaves and stones; the Chin in his veneration towards the Giver wrote his language on parchment (deer's skin); but when no one was in the house, the dog came along and ate the skin. The Chin submitted as patiently as he could to the loss, but he still hopes, when he eats the flesh of his young dogs, as he

² Col. Horace Browne, *Gazetteer of Thayetmyo* (1874), pp. 48, 49.

frequently does, to imbibe some of the wisdom which that progenitor of the race of dogs then swallowed.³

Like the other hill-tribes, the Chins are much addicted to drinking 'kaung, or rice-beer, and this gift is also attributed to Mother 'Li, and the Chins say that when it is prepared in the orthodox fashion it has the same consistency as Mother 'Li's milk. It was given them, they say, to maintain their strength after the lake of milk with which Mother 'Li had first endowed them was dried up. 'Kaung, however, is not offered to Mother 'Li, though it is always offered to the spirits (*penates*, or otherwise), and forms an essential part of every Chin marriage or funeral. Among the wild Chins, I believe, at the end of a big wedding, often not a single man, woman, or child is sober; and charges made before the village elders of adultery committed on such occasions have been summarily put aside on the ground that there was no person present at the time who was sober enough to know and to remember what took place. The Burmans, as Buddhists, are all, at any rate in theory, total abstainers from alcoholic liquors; and the Southern Chins, who have come very much in contact with them, have, at least, learnt to believe that it is not meritorious to get drunk, and many of them are free from the vice of intemperance. It should be added that it is not the Chin custom to drink 'kaung regularly, but they are addicted to very heavy drinking on the occasion of a feast or of making sacrifices (to the spirits).

Tribal System.

The Chins are divided into forty or more of clans, called 'so, each clan having its common ancestry, called 'kun. The 'kuns are often spoken of as male. There is also the (n)zö-yai ancestry worshipped only by the women, with an offering of dog's flesh; but of this, and of another tribal distinction called 'kó, little information can be got. The (n)zö-yai does not seem to be a female ancestry, but it is reckoned to be in the female line of natural birth. One may be adopted into a different 'kun, for the name is used of the clan, as well as of the original ancestor and of his deceased descendants, male and female; but one's (n)zö-yai can never be changed.

The Chin clans are all exogamous, i. e., a man may not marry a woman of his own clan; but, as we shall see later on, after the marriage ceremonies are over, the wife is initiated into her husband's clan, and has her wrists wrapped round with cotton-yarn as a witness to all evil spirits that she is under the guardianship of the 'kun of her husband. So, too, all children, four or five days after birth, are admitted in like manner into the 'kun; and at the same time children have their ears bored. As to the origin of this last custom, the Chins have a strangely childish tradition. They say that if Poi 'Kleuk, the Lord of the Underworld, spies a man who has not his ears bored, he will think that this is not a man but a rabbit, and will give chase. So to avoid this mistake, and the disaster that might attend it, all Chin infants have their ears bored.

If a Chin dies leaving a widow with young children, some months after his death she will return to her parents or elder brother, and she will be readmitted, with the children also, into her ancestral 'kun. Afterwards when the children are grown up, they may be readmitted into their father's 'kun. The widow, too, may marry again; and in that case will, of course, be

³ Of recent years the American Baptist Missionaries have, with somewhat modified success, adapted, for the Chin language, the Pwo-Karen alphabet, which is again a modification of the Burmese one. They have also published in that form a Chin spelling-book, an elementary catechism, a hymn-book, and a translation of St. John, i-vi. They are, however, I understand, doubtful as to the advisability of continuing to use these characters. In 1892, Mr. Bernard Houghton, I.C.S., issued his "Essay on the Language of the Southern Chins" (with grammar, vocabularies, and sentences), in which he used the Roman characters, and this has been found far more suitable for the purpose, although as there is as yet no reading public very little has been produced in that form.

admitted into the '*kun*' of her second husband. If the string were not tied round their wrists on their admission into the '*kun*', they would probably soon come to an untimely end, and on their death they would not be permitted to arrive at the land of Póí 'Kleuk.

When two Chins who are strangers meet and enter into conversation, the first question is ordinarily, "What is your clan?" All of the same clan are regarded as brothers.* Like all the hill-tribes and the people of the plains, too, of Burma, the Chins are hospitable according to their means, — and more especially so towards their brethren of the same clan.

The explanation which the Chins themselves give of their origin of the clans is that long, long ago each tribe, or clan, lived by itself on one mountain side, e.g., that the Mendet tribe originally lived in Mendet village. Nowadays even a small village may have members of an indefinite number of tribes.

Some of the clans, as the Mendet and Talau, are to be held in more honour than others; but as their daughters must marry into other clans than their own, and their own wives also must have come from other clans, there is a complete absence of caste feeling.

* Certain sacrifices to the guardian *nat* (the Burmese name for "spirit") are performed by the Mendet and Talau clans alone. When they make these sacrifices, one person from each house, partaking in the sacrifice, brings a small measure (*salè*) of uncooked rice with a little cotton-yarn on the top of it. A pig is sacrificed, and the rice is cooked. A stand for the offering to the *nat* is erected before the house where the worshippers assemble, and all the persons taking part in the sacrifice have their wrists wrapped round with the yarn. Then, after the *pa'san* '*saya*' (their teacher or priest) has uttered the incantations, and the *nat* is satisfied and gives permission, they all fall to and feast.

Every year each clan will have a special sacrifice to their deceased forefathers, and will offer them pork and rice and '*kaung*'. The *pa'san* '*saya*' invites the spirits to the feast, calling over their names, and if there have been any comparatively recent deaths (say within two or three years) in the clan, the spirits of these their relatives are enrolled in the '*kun*'.

Propitiatory Ceremonies.

The Chins have a custom of offering first-fruits to Mother Ceres, whom they call **Pók Klai**. They say that if she gives them but one look they will have plenty of rice, and they tell a somewhat gruesome story to explain the origin of the custom of offering first-fruits. "Once upon a time a woman had a daughter. Before her death, as she lay adying, she said to her daughter, 'After I am dead and cremated, I shall return, wearing my intestines as a necklace. You must remain on the stairs. I shall come up by the back stairs and verandah. When I come you must throw some of the *kadu*-water (with which the corpse had been washed) over me. If you throw it I shall become a human being again.' Now when her mother came wearing her intestines as a necklace, the daughter was afraid, and durst not throw the *kadu*-water upon her mother; so, because she dared not, this woman could not become a human being again. Yet afterwards, her mother showed her where the cucumber seeds and the sweet cucumber and pumpkin seeds were,⁵ and, giving her a command, said: 'My daughter, eat the first-fruit of the corn in its season.' So to this day the Chins eat the first-fruits of their corn, as a religious function. Before the men eat they make offerings in their *yas* (corn, or vegetable patches) for their deceased ancestry to eat."

* Perhaps "cousins" would be the better rendering; for the Chins, like the Burmese, call their cousins of the first, and even of the second or third remove, by the same words as are used for "brother" or "sister."

⁵ i.e., taught her how to grow the vegetables required for their curry.

The Chins also propitiate the rain fairy, Plaung 'Saw, with offerings of cattle, pigs, and chickens, and, of course, with rice and 'kaung too. When this sacrifice is being held all the women must remain standing from 9 a.m. to 3 p.m.

When the Chins have sown their corn, they gather together in their fields and pray the Earth to lend herself (*i. e.*, her increase) to them once again. If they do not thus petition the Earth to lend herself to them, but thanklessly and gracelessly clutch at what they can get without even so much as 'By your leave,' they may expect poor crops, and their children too will fall sick of fever through possession by the spirit. So they make an offering of a pig, a fowl, and a pot of 'kaung, and also of three large and one small wicker-basketfuls of rice. They also wrap cotton-yarn on a piece of bamboo about three-quarters of a yard long, and pour some water from the bamboo on the baskets of offerings and on the worshippers. Again, as has been already stated, after the harvest is reaped, they assemble in the fields to make to the ancestor and others an offering of the first-fruits, and then they can eat the new corn.

In their houses, too, some Chins will, before they take a meal, call upon their ancestral 'kun, or some other spirit, and then throw away a little ball of rice for the summoned spirit to eat; but of late the custom has not been performed with much devotion, even where it is still kept up.

Chins will also offer on sundry occasions to their ancestors the flower of the *thabyé* or *eugenia*, stones, cooked glutinous rice, and cotton.

The Chins have no images of Mother 'Li, of their *penates*, or of the other spirits whom they fear; and the figures of the king-crow and of the elephant, which are often carved on the top of the memorial posts placed in their ancestral cemetery, are not worshipped by them. Neither have they any chapels, temples, or other set places for assembly and for worship. Possession by an evil spirit does not connote with them either madness or moral turpitude, but merely sickness or some untoward accident.

Sickness or other trouble is supposed to be due to the animosity of some spirit-being, who has been provoked by something some one has done, probably unintentionally and in ignorance; but the consequence is the same, the spirit holds the man in his grip. The spirits are considered as capricious rather than wicked; though the people do not shrink from saying that they worship them because they (the spirits) are bad and therefore dangerous to them.

If a man strikes his naked toe against the ground, for they wear no boots or shoes, and his foot grows more and more painful after two or three days, he must propitiate the spirit of the ground, (n)Dek'san'put, by an offering of cooked rice, which is placed in a small bamboo basket, and buried at the place where the man hurt his foot. So, it is hoped, the spirit may be appeased by the food given him.

Immediately after the birth of a child, *nats* have to be appeased by the offering of two chickens made underneath the house; otherwise they would cause the child to be for ever crying, and to be in bad health.

The Spirits.

The names and number of these spirits is legion, and the duty of the teacher is to show the people how to perform the sacrifices duly, and to utter the right incantations; otherwise the offerings would be ineffective. The common name for the teacher is *yai-shén*, (called by the Burmans *pa'san 'sayá*), or *ok-mi* if skilled and respected. All these teachers recite rhythmically the customs relating to Mother 'Li, which they have received orally from their own teachers, and all of them are much given to the drinking of 'kaung. The *lai-lö*, who holds forth at marriages, is a less esteemed teacher, and is especially fond of liquor. The office of teacher is not hereditary; neither are they intent on keeping the knowledge of their sacred

lore to themselves. They are, at least among the Southern Chins, agriculturists like their neighbours, and a villager who is not skilled enough in the traditions to be a *yai-shen* may yet be a *mong tén* (*i. e.*, of "skilled lip"), and able occasionally to make certain offerings in the absence of one more skilled than himself.

Some spirits may be satisfied if a chicken is offered in sacrifice, and a little of the flesh and some cooked rice thrown on the ground for them to eat; but generally a miniature house has to be constructed for the spirit (or *nat*, as the Burmese would call him), and offerings made of dogs, or pigs, or bullocks, or buffaloes. Sometimes whatever offerings may be made, the mind of the *nat* cannot be appeased; and in such cases, of course, the man dies. The *pa'san* 'sayá' would not find the people so ready to listen to him, I imagine, were it not that the occasion of a sacrifice is almost the only time that the Chins eat any other than vegetable curry with their rice.

Cosmology.

The Chins conceive of the world as a flat surface, which is supported by two giants (*n*)*Sóng* and (*n*)*Hói*. Sometimes to ease their shoulders they change the position of the load somewhat, and this is the cause of the earthquakes. The weight of the earth has caused awful sores on their shoulders, and as, after the manner of Chins, they do not wash the sores freely, much less use antiseptics, maggots have bred on their wounds, and these maggots are as big as elephants, so I have heard them say.

Forked lightning is considered to be the work of a spirit called (*n*)*Glet*; and meteorites sometimes found are called (*n*)*Glet's teeth*. Of the sheet lightning, so common in mild evenings, sundry accounts are given; but there seems to be common to these varying traditions the attributing of the lightning to two spirits (one or both female), the one placed in the east and the other in the west, who wink at one another out of mutual affection.

The rainbow is called the yawning of the dragon, and when they speak of an **eclipse** of the sun or moon they say that "the dog bites" or "catches" them; but I have not heard from any Chins the explanation of these sayings.

Witches.

The Chins are afraid of witches; but, as has been the case with other peoples, they find great difficulty in learning for certain whether a given woman is a witch or not. If they knew it they would certainly drive the woman out of the village, and perhaps resort to further violence. Like the Burmese, they believe that witches have the power by their incantations to introduce foreign matter into the bodies of those whom they hate, and so to cause them to sicken and die. It is the custom of the Chins to cremate the dead, and they think that when a witch is cremated, her bowels, which they conceive to be anything but human in their formation, will explode with a loud noise; and so the relatives of one who is suspected of being a witch will, when she is cremated, take care to put some big bamboos on the pyre, along with the cutch wood which is always used on such occasions, so that when the explosion takes place they may be able to affirm confidently that it was not her body that exploded, but the bamboos.

Law.

In the former days the Chin elders would decide all manner of questions and disputes that might crop up in a village, in accordance with Chin customary law; and the expenses of litigation were but pots of *haung*, and sometimes also a pig for sacrifice and consumption. Nowadays, the powers of the elders are limited to their religious customs, including, of course, questions of marriage and divorce. Other matters come before the Government representative, the *thugyi* (*i. e.*, head man), to whom they must give "the cost of a quid of betel" (commuted in these jungle villages at one rupee), on referring any matter for his decision. The Chin

national custom of taking an oath was to hold a sprig of the *Eugenia* (*thabyé*) in his hand whilst giving his evidence. It may be noted that the Burmese when victorious in war would crown themselves with chaplets made of the leaves of the same tree. Disputes are not frequent in Chin villages, and even under the British rule, which in practice unfortunately seems to foster litigation, it is very rare that the Chins ever appear in any case in the courts.

Manner of Life.

The Chin manner of life is of the simplest, and before the days of the British occupation they were very chary of leaving their homes. The Chin requires very little, excepting salt and a *dæ* (or chopper), which he cannot get for himself ; though he frequently nowadays has all kinds of luxuries unknown to his forefathers, e. g., *ngapi* (i. e., pickled fish, generally more or less putrid), earthenware jars, matches and lamps. The bamboo alone gives him material for the walls, floor, and roof of his house, for his mats, cups, and waterjugs, for handles to his tools, for his weaving implements, for his baskets of all sizes, and for his substitute for twine. By rubbing two little pieces of bamboo together he can at once make a fire ; and he can also make musical instruments of sorts from the bamboo. He grows his own corn (rice), and threshes and pounds it himself. In his *ya* he also grows all the vegetables he requires for his curry, beyond what can be found growing wild in the jungle, and cotton too, which his wife spins into yarn and weaves into garments and blankets. The dyes which he requires, and he has a considerable number of them, including indigo, he manufactures himself mainly from plants, either wild or cultivated. He grows his own tobacco, though, like the Burman, he spoils it in the drying, and he manufactures his pipe from a little bamboo. Formerly the Chins were only able to take up the laborious and wasteful *tauny-yæ* method of cultivation, whereby fresh patches of jungle must be cleared each year for that year's crop, as they had no paddy-fields (०) and often neither bullocks nor buffaloes : but of recent years they have slowly been improving their condition. In all his work, excepting the cutting of the jungle for *ya*, or the cutting down of bamboos and timber generally, and in ploughing, in the few cases where he has paddy-fields, the wife and daughter of the Chin take their full share.

The Chins are a very simple-minded people, and have not that facility in lying which most Orientals seem to possess ; that is to say, the Chins may lie freely, but they cannot ordinarily lie boldly and consistently. I have been told by a magistrate who had lived among the Northern Chins, a savage people whose greatest delight, until the British occupied the country a few years ago, was to go head-hunting along the neighbouring mountains, that a bold liar was considered a great acquisition in any of these villages, and that whenever a Government enquiry was to be made on any point "the liar" was brought forward to answer all questions. The Chins have been, and are, perpetually being defrauded by their more wily Burmese neighbours, who keep up the character ascribed to their ancestor in Chin folklore. The Chins have a saying that "the Burman language is the most simple and straightforward of languages, but the Burmese man is the most crooked and deceitful of men."

Tattooing.

Until a few years ago every girl on reaching the age of puberty had her face tattooed. In the Northern Chin Hills this tattooing is done chiefly in rings and dotted lines ; but among the Southern Chins, who were hemmed in by the Burmans, the whole face from the roots of the hair on the forehead, round by the ear to the neck, including even the eye-lids, was tattooed, and that so thickly and darkly that at a distance the whole face looked indigo, and only a close inspection would disclose the patterns worked on the face. It is not the Chin hereditary custom for boys or men to be tattooed ; but now they mostly have their body and thighs tattooed as the Burmese do, whose manner of dress they also generally follow. The reason generally given by the Chins themselves, and by others, of this strange custom of tattooing their women's faces is that they wished to make them ugly, so that there would be less danger of their

being forcibly carried off by the Burmese ; though some Chins attribute this custom also to Mother Li's injunctions. I should imagine that the custom of tattooing the faces of the women goes back far beyond the time when the Burmans grew strong enough to harass the Chins.

Burmese Influence.

In the days before the British occupation of Lower Burma, the Southern Chins who had been driven down southwards along the mountains by pressure from their fellow countrymen in the north, had found for their abode a land naturally more fertile than their old home ; but they were perpetually harassed by the Burmans. Whenever a Burman was seen near a Chin village, the whole population would flee, if there was opportunity ; for the Burmese, and more especially the officials, seem to have regarded the Chins as their legitimate prey. In those days the Chins were desperately poor : sometimes a man would be sold into slavery, or would sell his children, on account of a debt amounting to no more than a shilling, and few Chins had any cattle. Occasionally a band of Burmans, villagers who lived perhaps a day's march away, would surround a Chin village and carry off forcibly as slaves all the youths and maidens ; on such occasions they would sometimes give Rs. 5 or Rs. 10 to the parents, as a proof, I suppose, should the matter ever possibly come to the ears of the Government, that these were slaves lawfully purchased. Sometimes the women were set free after a number of years when they had ceased to be attractive to their captors or purchasers, and when they could no longer get through as much work as when they were young. At other times the Chins fared still worse. The village would be surrounded by armed men, generally headed by a Government official, and the men who were not able to make good their escape into the surrounding woods were slaughtered. The Chin women, too, were first ravished and then slaughtered ; and sometimes even the babes would be thrown up in the air and caught on the points of spears. The village, and all that could not be carried away, was burnt or destroyed ; and many even of those who had escaped into the woods died of starvation and exposure. As the Chin who told me said, "those were terrible times."

Latterly, the Chins have largely copied the language and dress of the Burmans, and to some extent their religion and other customs, — though without throwing over their own hereditary practices altogether. "If you do not know the fashion in dressing your hair, follow the mode in your village," says a Burmese proverb ; and certainly, if we may judge from their acts, the Chins seem largely to approve of that motto. In some few villages not only have the Chins given up most of their national customs, but the children do not even know the Chin language.* In the Census Reports, decade by decade, a larger percentage of the Chins and other hill-tribes is returned as **Buddhist** ; thus in the Prome District in 1872 there were 15,200 persons returned as animists, in 1901 the number was 8,632. Nor is Buddhism yet a moribund faith, for it is still attracting to it Shamanist or *nat*-worshipping Karens that have not yet fallen within the influence of the Christian missionaries The fact that no attempt at proselytising is attempted by the Buddhist clergy is probably an inducement to the uncultured to join them. The savage looks upon the missionary with suspicion. He cannot readily understand that the missionary's motives are disinterested, whereas he sees the advantage of joining such a religion as Buddhism, as it raises him in the social scale.* Moreover, he need not abandon his tutelary gods. It is this easy tolerance that has facilitated the spread of Buddhism. It may be taken as an axiom that the more thorough the conversion from one religion to another is, the more difficult it becomes to obtain converts. But this easy tolerance of Buddhism has led to its becoming adulterated in the process of absorption of the wilder creeds.* As a matter of fact, however, the Chins are at present between two stools and there is much room for Christianity as a means of raising them. As a rule they will more or less

* He thereby practically becomes a Burman, much as the Turkoman becomes a Russian by joining the Orthodox faith.

[†] *Census Report (Burma)*, 1891, pp. 59-60.

frequently kneel before the Buddha's image and join with the Burmese in their festivals, and yet they follow the customs of their forefathers. They dread the evil spirits and revere the name of the Great Parent of all good, but hardly worship that power. Their worship is mainly a propitiation ; and what need, think they, is there to propitiate their Parent who loves them dearly, and ever does them good ? Very few Chins have any real affection for Buddhism, though they can see the beauty of the moral law laid down as binding on the Buddhist 'householders' or laity. Since the British occupation the Chins have been less attentive, as I have been informed by the people themselves, to the religious ordinances incumbent on Buddhists than they were before ; for now they do not need the material protection which the profession of Buddhism used to give them, by raising them from the state of 'savages,' the lawful prey of any one, to that of civilized men.

Marriage Customs.

When a little girl is born she is placed under the guardianship of an elder brother, or cousin or uncle, on her father's side, and when she grows up she may not marry without his consent, — though this is rarely denied when there is persistence on the part of the sweethearts. Of course, the parties to a Chin marriage must be of different clans, and the ancient customs must be followed. Pre-nuptial chastity does not seem to be very highly esteemed among the Chins, and the parties often, if not generally, live together openly before marriage. Infidelity after marriage is not very common in the remote villages. Girls are generally married at fifteen years of age onwards ; boys when two or three years older. If a girl reaches twenty or twenty-five years of age and is yet unmarried, she is counted an old maid and avoided by the young men ; indeed, it is not considered creditable, and hardly reputable. A marriage should take place only in the hot weather, on or just before the full moon of the months of *Tabodwè* and *Kasóng*. If the parties elope together, the youth may then, or afterwards, be fined Rs. 60 ; but this is rather a following of Burmese customary law.

Some time previous to the marriage the youth will have gone with some comrades to the house of his prospective brother-in-law, taking some '*kaung*' with him. This time nothing is said about marriage ; but, I suppose, if the '*kaung*' is tacitly accepted it implies consent on the part of the guardians of the girl. After that the parents of the youth will go with him to her brother or parents, and formally ask for her in marriage for their son. The girl's parents or brother will then settle what kind of wedding feast the youth's parents must provide, that is to say, what pigs have to be sacrificed for the feast. On the day fixed for the wedding the friends and relatives of the bridegroom will assemble very early at the bride's house, the men bringing the pigs required, and the girls carrying '*kaung*' in gourds. Sometimes there will be as many as twenty or thirty girls thus carrying '*kaung*'. These will all sit on or by the steps of the house where the bride lives, and none of the bridegroom's party may go in without contributing a pot of '*kaung*'. The friends and relatives of the bride also bring '*kaung*' in pots, and in addition chickens and rice for the feast. The '*kaung*' is put into a huge jar into which two bamboo tubes are inserted, and through these they all suck the beer.

In the meanwhile a little porker has been killed, and the village elders examine its liver. If certain marks are seen on the liver, it is declared to be inauspicious, and a second porker is killed. When the bridegroom is in real earnest, if this second liver, too, is pronounced to be inauspicious, a third little pig is offered ; but if now, too, the fates declare against it, the marriage may not take place. The brother or parents of the girl would not allow the marriage, for there would be no children born of it, or, if there should be, they would die early, or some other dread misfortune would befall them. So the wedding is stopped, and they give the youth a present on account of the expense and inconvenience he has been put to, and this present is called a "wiper away of tears." But if, as is ordinarily the case, the fates have been more propitious, the *tanzö* pig, of medium size, which has been presented by the youth to his father-in-law, is slaughtered and cooked to serve as food for the bride's company.

the "superior" company as it is generally called. The bridegroom's or "inferior" company on the other hand eat of the chickens provided and cooked for them by the "superior" company. This rule about eating is strictly kept, or at least any breach of the rule brings about a fine of a pot of '*kaung*. The two companies sit and eat separately, but drink from the same jar, though through different tubes.

The two pigs mentioned above are always killed at a Chin wedding, and sometimes the bride's brother or parents insist also on the offering of a huge tusker, and occasionally even of a fourth pig as a special offering to the spirits. Under certain special circumstances yet other pigs may have to be offered, over and above what may be demanded to satisfy the appetites of the guests. The "inferior" company cook the pigs which they have brought, and wait on the bride's relatives and friends at the wedding breakfast; then these in their turn serve those with the chickens and rice they have brought. After that, all young and old men and women drink freely. The marriage is considered as settled and confirmed when the bride's brother eats of the pork which the groom's party have prepared.

After that one of the bride's party, or some other of their friends who may be skilled in the precepts of Mother 'Li, will recite these to the bridegroom. Presents are also interchanged, and her parents give the bride her share of their property. Before and during the marriage the bridegroom has to pay very great deference to his elder brother-in-law. The bridegroom is also exhorted to treat his wife kindly and with due respect. "Do not beat our sister," say they, "so as to make blood flow, or to raise a festering sore. If she is stupid and will not obey you, correct her by word of mouth, or at least with moderation. If you beat her so as to break a bamboo overher, or to break her bones, she will run away back to her brother." After this the drunken *lai-lò* "teacher" also recites rhythmically the precepts of Mother 'Li amidst his liberal potations of '*kaung*. Soon after mid-day the function is over, and the bridegroom's friends are summarily dismissed; the "superior" party will pour water over them, or beat them with the tubes through which the '*kaung* has been drunk. The bride is then conducted to her father-in-law's house, where she is admitted into her husband's clan, the bridegroom's mother and sisters wrapping cotton-yarn round her wrists. She afterwards gives them a chicken or a pig, yarn or money for this service. After a woman has been married, and the young people have been established in a new home, she has by Chin law no more inheritance in her parents' house.

Should the young husband be violent in his treatment of his wife, she can demand to be separated from him, receiving a full share of their united property and also in addition a bullock as compensation. More frequently, however, matters are settled peaceably by apologies and offerings of pigs and of '*kaung* for a feast. Husband and wife may mutually agree to part, and then, as is the Burmese custom, they divide equally their acquired property between them. If the husband alone wishes to separate, he must give his wife Rs. 60 over and above her half of the property; and very few Chins have so much money. If the wife wishes to leave her husband without any offence on his part, she must leave behind everything she possesses. Still there are among the Chins but few cases of separation, i.e., of divorce, and the husband and wife generally get on fairly well together. In these days it is more customary for the young people to continue to live, until perhaps a second child may be born, with the parents of one of them; and if with the bride's parents, they would only receive the dowry when they set up house for themselves. A few days' labour, or a few weeks' labour, would make all the difference between a mean house and one above the average,—and this built at no other cost than their own labour at a time when they might otherwise have been doing nothing.

Sometimes, on account of the expense, a man is unable to marry the woman with whom he lives, and who may have borne him two or three children. Should she die without ever having been lawfully married, the husband is bound to go through the marriage ceremony with the corpse; and the wife at last will be admitted into the '*kun* of her husband.

Burial Customs.

All sickness or accident is, as has been already stated, supposed to be directly due to the action of some supernatural being, and when this spirit refuses to be appeased by the offerings made to him, the man must die. The body is then washed with water, in which the leaves of the *kalu* plant have been steeped, and the hair is combed. A small chicken is killed, and tied by a string to the big toe of the deceased. This chicken will accompany the deceased to the other world, and will peck at the caterpillars lying in the way, which might otherwise incommod the traveller to that far-off land. Other chickens are sacrificed, and pigs also; and if the man was fairly well-to-do, buffaloes and bullocks too,—for the welfare of the deceased and to provide a feast for the visitors. Whenever bullocks or buffaloes are sacrificed, the blood is mixed with rice or "bread" and then put into the large intestines and roasted. A portion of this, too, is thrown away for the spirits to eat, and the rest is eaten by the guests.

Rice-beer (*kaung*) is prepared before a man dies, for it takes four or five days to brew; and were all left to the last, there might not be found time to make it before the body would have to be disposed of. Should this happen, or should there be no *yai-shen* present to utter the incantations, the corpse is buried; and then after a year it is unearthed, and the burial customs are duly performed. Chicken and rice and *kaung* are from time to time given to the corpse to eat; and the *yai-shen*, sitting between the liquor and the corpse, chants the customs of Mother 'Li. All the village, and many visitors from a distance, flock to a big funeral; but if the body is to be buried there will only be a very few present. Often the women, and formerly the men too, would dance in front of the dead man's house.

A piece of wood, nearly four feet in length, is carved with a figure of the bird (the king-crow) or an elephant on the top of it; or in the case of a poor man a piece of bamboo is cut, and the end of it is made into a fringe. This is called the (*n*)-*klo-seung*, and is put into the dead man's hand. The *yai-shen* utters his charms, and the spirit of the deceased is bidden to take up his abode in this stick. Before the corpse is removed from the house, the (*n*)-*klo-seung* is taken away and set up in the ground somewhere outside the village.

Frequently, too, a wooden spear and a wooden gun were put into the hands of the dead man; or in the case of a woman the lath of her loom. There is also put into the dead man's hand money to pay as ferry-charge over the stream of death. Sometimes a piec or two, or two annas it may be, or sometimes as much as Rs. 10, or even more, is given. This money, as well as the little chicken tied to the big toe of the deceased, and the *pawn-zeng* thread is burnt at the cremation of the body. Five small pieces of bamboo, wound round with thread (red, white, black, green, and yellow) called *pawn-zeng*, are also put into the hands of the deceased for him to take with him to the land "over there." The neighbours make an offering of a pig for sacrifice, also called *pawn-zeng*; and the master of the house gives a big pig (called *lawn-ga*) for the guests to eat. A wake is kept up the whole night before a funeral; "There can be no sleeping." The whole village attend the corpse to the burning-ground, which is not far away; but all, excepting a few men, return before the cremation actually takes place. The funeral pyre is of no great height, and is made of entch-wood, as this is found to be the best for burning. The few who remain by the fire imbibe still more *kaung*, and keep the fire up until the body is consumed. Then they gather the charred bones and put them in a new earthen pot of the ordinary kind, such as are in daily use. The pot is for a time, at least in the rains, or when the people are otherwise busy, placed on a small stand made for it under a tree outside the village fence. Afterwards, at a convenient season, the bones are conveyed away

to the ancestral burial-place, which is generally situated in some remote jungle. It is usual for a person to be cremated about three days after his death. A burial would normally take place within twenty-four hours of the death.

The spirit of the dead man should take up its abode in the (*n*)*klo-seung*; but the living are much afraid that it may not do so. They do not believe that the life "over there" is a very joyous one; being rather of the view of Achilles, whose shade told Ulysses that it was better to be a slave on earth than a prince in Hades. The dead man is told that he may not linger more than seven days in his old house; for they believe that the spirits of the dead look with envy on the living, and that they will harm them. The night before they take away the charred bones to the cemetery (*ayálaung*) they interrogate the pot of bones. They ask him what disease he died of, and will say "Let it be that he died of fever" if the pot feels light; of some other disease if it feels heavy"; and then they test it. Again they ask him if he is still lingering about here, or does he now inhabit "that country," and the answer is given in the same way as before.

Next morning they start off early, and if the deceased was a person of any means at all, they will carry with them an elaborately carved memorial post of cutch-wood to erect in the cemetery. On the top of the post will be carved the figure of an elephant or of a bird; and beneath that six-parallel circles will be cut round the post in the case of a male, and five in the case of a female. In the case of an unmarried girl all her private belongings are taken and deposited by the pot of bones, and in every case rice, chicken, *nyapi*, chillies, betel, and tobacco will be left for the soul of the departed to enjoy.

I do not find it possible to reconcile all the traditions and ideas held by the same individual Chin; and perhaps it would be too much to expect that they should admit of being harmonized, -- and more especially so with regard to matters concerning the future life. Certainly the Chins generally do not seem to believe in the doctrine of the transmigration of souls; yet my chief informant gave me the following information in Chin writing: --- "We, Chin people, must die when the rice given to our spirits on their departure from their former existence is finished. We can only remain in this existence as long as that rice lasts. The people who had much given them [lit. "brought much with them"] live long. This rice is put in small baskets outside the village fence before the corpse is removed from the house for cremation." The writer went on to add, what is indeed more in accord with the general traditions, but scarcely consonant with the above. "When a woman dies her husband will cry out by the corpse, 'when you come to Pói 'Kleuk tell him that I am left behind here; and ask him to call me before long.' Now when [he adds] people with some little property die, bullocks and buffaloes are offered in sacrifice that they may find favour when they present themselves before Pói 'Kleuk; but if the people are poor they make offerings of pigs and fowls."

But to return to the funeral. When the people convey the pot of bones to the cemetery, they take with them some cotton-yarn, and whenever they come to any stream or other water, they stretch a thread across, whereby the spirit of the deceased, who accompanies them, may get across it, too. When they have duly deposited the bones and food for the spirit in the cemetery they return home, after bidding the spirit to remain there, and not to follow them back to the village. At the same time they block the way by which they return by putting a bamboo across the path.

The spirit, however, has not finished his travels yet. It must go on until it comes to the stream of white water, on the other side of which dwells the Lord of Hades, Pói 'Kleuk. He will cry out to Pói 'Kleuk, and after he appears will let the breeze waft, streamor-like

across the water, the thread which is let loose from the *pawn-ging* bamboos that were burnt along with the corpse at the cremation; for the shades of the little chicken and of this thread have accompanied the deceased on his journey to his comfort and assistance. Then, after the thread has been duly fastened, the spirit goes across to receive his judgment for the deeds done in the body. Sometimes a spirit is terrified on account of his past misdeeds, and will endeavour to escape. But though the spirit may run, there is no remedy; for Pōi 'Kleuk has a dog, who will bite the runaways, and they dare not face him. In his terror the spirit will climb the tree of hell; but the mighty Pōi 'Kleuk will shake the branches, and the poor wretch will fall into the cauldron of hell, which is full of boiling water. Or, if he climb to the top of the tree, the dreadful vulture, *hak-kyi*, will devour his vitals. There is no escape. He must come down and receive his just punishment. There is no need to utter the sentence of condemnation. Pōi 'Kleuk merely points to them with his fourth, called "the nameless," finger, and they go away to be roasted in hell.

The Chins have some belief in a happier land, but their ideas on this subject are not very tangible; and it is difficult to know how far the hope, which they sometimes express, that they may be enabled to go by the straight and narrow way into the presence of the Great Parent of all good, and there for ever abide, is derived, directly or indirectly, from Christian teaching.

BOOK-NOTICE.

DER MON-KHMER-VÖLKER EIN BINDEGLIED ZWISCHEN VÖLKERN ZENTRALASIENS UND ASTRONESIENS. Von P. W. SCHMIDT. S.V.D. Brunswick, 1903. (Reprinted from the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, Neue Folge, Band v, Heft 1 v. 2.)

THIS work, also from the pen of Pater Schmidt, appeared originally in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, and has been reprinted in another form at Brunswick in the same year. In it, we have the summing up of the author's researches into the Mon Khmer languages and his final conclusions as to their relationship, whether mutual or to other forms of speech. A detailed account of its contents would occupy too much space, and moreover can be found in the pages of the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for January 1907 by those who are interested in the subject. I confine myself here to stating the results to which his enquiries have led Pater Schmidt, and which, in my opinion, he has conclusively proved. Briefly, they are these:—

(a) There is a group of languages called Mon-Khmer, which is closely connected not only with several tongues spoken on the Burma-Chinese frontier, such as Palaung, Wa, and others, but also with the speeches of certain aboriginal tribes of Malacca, with Nicobares, with the Khâsi of Central Assam, and with the Munda languages of Central India. It is further to be remembered that under the last head must be included a number of extinct sub-Himalayan dialects, reaching as far west as Kanâwar, traces of which still plainly survive in the Tibeto-Burman languages spoken by the descendants of

those who employed them. To this group of Mon-Khmer-Malacca-Munda-Nicobar-Khâsi languages Pater Schmidt has given the name of "Austroasiatic," and he shows that not only are all the different forms of speech mutually related, but that their speakers have the same physical type.

(b) In former works the learned author showed the existence of another group of languages, the "Austronesic," which included three related sub-groups, the "Indonesic," the "Melanesic," and the "Polynesian," covering the areas indicated by their respective names. In a second part of the work under notice, he undertakes the task of comparing, by rigorously scientific methods, the Austroasiatic and the Austronesic languages, and of proving that these two groups of speeches are ultimately related to each other, and form together one great united whole which he calls the "Austrie" family. This speech-family is the most widely spread of those whose existence has been established since the birth of comparative philology. The tract over which it extends reaches from the Panjab in the West to Easter Island, off the coast of South America, in the East; and from the Himalaya in the North to New Zealand in the South. Such a result,—and I do not think that any one can seriously impugn the arguments on which it is founded,—amply justify us in maintaining that Pater Schmidt's work is one of the most important contributions to comparative philology which has issued from the press in recent years.

GEORGE A. GRIERSON.

**A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE
LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.**

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 203.)

II.

The Theory of Universal Grammar applied to the Andamanese Languages.

Prefatory Remarks.

I.

The Andamanese are divided into twelve Tribes belonging to three Groups or Divisions, as under, from North to South (*vide* Map attached) : —

1. The Yērewa or Northern Division, consisting of the Chāriār, Kōrā, Tābō, Yēre and Kede Tribes.
2. The Bojigngiji or Southern Division, consisting of the Jūwai, Kōl, Bojigyāb, Balawa and Bēa Tribes.
3. The Önge-Järawa or Outer Division, consisting of the Önge and Järawa Tribes.

Port Blair is situated in the Bēa Territory, and that Tribe and its language are consequently by far the best known and the Bojigngiji is the best known Group or Division.

Every Tribe has its own set of names for itself and all the others, and these names have constant conventional prefixes and suffixes attached to them, making the names long and unwieldy. In this *Grammar* the Bēa set of names has been adopted, and for convenience of presentation they have been stripped of the habitual prefixes and suffixes attached to them (*vide* Appendix C).

Also, except where otherwise specially stated, all examples and all vernacular words quoted are taken from the Bēa (āka-Bēa-da) speech. Diacritical marks are not used except where unavoidable.

Lastly, it is necessary to note that Colebrooke's *Järawa Vocabulary* made in the XVIIIth Century was gathered from one individual of the Tribe and not from several persons, as has been hitherto supposed.

I. — GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

a. — Philological Value.

The Andaman Languages are extremely interesting from the philological standpoint, on account alone of their isolated development, due to the very recent contact with the outer world on the part of the speakers. Of the speech of the only peoples, who may be looked upon as the physical congeners of the Andamanese, — the Samangs of the Malay Peninsula and the Actas of the Philippine Archipelago, — no *Vocabulary* or *Grammar* is available to me of the latter, and the only specimens of the Samang tongue I have seen bear no resemblance or roots common to any Andamanese Language.

The Andamanese Languages exhibit the expression only of the most direct and simplest thought, show few signs of syntactical, though every indication of a very long etymological, growth, are purely colloquial and wanting in the modifications always necessary for communication by writing. The Andamanese show, however, by the very frequent use of ellipsis and of clipped and curtailed words, a long familiarity with their speech.

¹ Largely reprinted with additions and many corrections from Chapter IV. of Part I. of the *Census Report, India, 1901, Vol. III.* Since this article was written, Skent and Blagdon's *Pagan Races of the Malay Peninsula* has appeared, but I have not been able to collate it for the present purpose.

The sense of even Proper Names is usually immediately apparent and the speakers invariably exhibit difficulty in getting out of the region of concrete into that of abstract ideas, though none in expanding or in mentally differentiating or classifying ideas, or in connecting several closely together. Generic terms are usually wanting, and specific terms are numerous and extremely detailed. Narration almost always concerns themselves and the chase. Only the absolutely necessary is usually employed and the speech is jerky, incomplete, elliptical and disjointed. Introductory words are not much used and no forward references are made. Back references by means of words for that purpose are not common, nor are conjunctions, adjectives, adverbs and even pronouns. An Andamanese will manage to convey his meaning without employing any of the subsidiary and connecting parts of speech. He ekes out with a clever mimicry a great deal by manner, tone and action; and this habit he abundantly exhibits in the form of his speech. His narration is, nevertheless, clear, in proper consecutive order and not confused, showing that he possesses powers of co-ordination.

b. — Savage Nature.

The general indications that the Languages give of representing the speech of undeveloped savages are confirmed by the intense anthropomorphism exhibited therein. As will be seen later on, the Andamanese regard not only all objects, but also every idea associated with them, as connected with themselves and their necessities, or with the parts of their bodies and their attributes. They have no means of expressing the majority of objects and ideas without such reference; e. g., they cannot say "head" or "heads," but must say "my, your, his, or —'s, this one's, or that one's head" or "our, your, their, or —'s, or these ones', those ones' heads."

But though they are "savage" languages, limited in range to the requirements of a people capable of but few mental processes, the Andamanese Languages are far from being "primitive." In the evolution of a system of pre-flexion in order to intimately connect words together, to build up compounds and to indicate back references, and in a limited exhibition of the idea of concord by means of post-inflexion of pronouns, they indicate a development as complete and complicated as that of an advanced tongue, representing the speech of a highly intellectual people. These lowest of savages show themselves to be, indeed, human beings immeasurably superior in mental capacity to the highest of the brute beasts.

c. — Agglutinative Form.

The Andamanese Languages all belong to one Family, divided into three Groups, plainly closely connected generally to the eye on paper, but mutually unintelligible to the ear. They are agglutinative in nature, synthesis being present in rudiments only. They follow the general grammar of agglutinative languages. All the affixes to roots are readily separable, and all analysis of words shows a very simple mental mechanism and a low limit in range and richness of thought and in the development of ideas. Suffixes and prefixes are largely used, and infixes also to build up compound words. As with every other language, foreign words have lately been fitted into the grammar with such changes of form as are necessary for absorption into the general structure of Andamanese speech.

d. — Samples of Minuteness in Detailed Terms.

The following are examples of the extent to which the use of specific terms to describe details of importance to the Andamanese is carried by them.

Stages in the growth of fruit: — *Oylereka*, small: *chimiti*, sour: *pütungaij*, unripe:² *chēba*, hard: *telbich*, seed not formed: *gad*, seed forming: *gama*, seed formed: *tela*, half-ripe: *munukel*, ripe: *roieha*, fully ripe: *otyōb*, soft: *chōrone*, rotten.

Stages of the day: — *Waingala*, first dawn: *elawainga*, before sunrise: *bōdola dōatinga*, sunrise: *wainga*, early morning: *bōlola kōgalnga*, morning: *bōdola kōgnga*, full morning:³ *bōdo*

² Lit., black skin.

³ *Lilti*, early to-morrow morning: *dilma*, *kli*, early morning that is past: *dilmaya*, *dilmalen*, *liliya*, *lilinga*, this morning: *wainga dilu-rēatek*, early every morning.

shānag, forenoon : bōdō chāu, noon : bōlōla lōringa, afternoon : bōdō lārdiyanga, full afternoon : elardiyanga, evening : dīla, before sunset : bōlōla lōtinga, sunset : elakdāuya, twilight : elaritngā, dark : gūrug chāu, midnight.

e. — Specimen of Andamanese Method of Speech.

The following account of a story, abstracted with corrections from Portman, of an imaginary pig-hunt as told by a Bēa ēremtāga (forest-man) for the amusement of his friends, will go far to explain the Andamanese mode of speech, and the form that its Grammar takes.

The narrator sits on the ground, facing a half circle of lounging Andamanese. After a short silence, he leans forward with his head bent down. Suddenly he sits erect with brightening eyes and speaks in a quick, excited way, acting as if carrying on a conversation with another person. "In how many days will you return?" And then answering as if for himself: "I will come back early in the morning, I am off pig-hunting now." A pause. "I am going." Very suddenly. "You stay here in my place." Moving as if going away. "I am going away." Squeaking like a young pig with pantomime of shooting it. "It is only a little pig. I will bring it to the hut." Moving his shoulders as if carrying. "They can roast it here." Wave of the hands signifying that the pig was of no account. Pause. "I will start early to-morrow morning after a big one, — a big pig." Motions of hands to show length and breadth of pig. To an imaginary friend. "I will sharpen pig arrows to take with me. Come after me and we will hunt together." Imitation with the hands of a pig running, shooting arrows, slap on the left breast, squeals of several wounded pigs, and so on. A pause. "You bring them in readiness to cook for me." Directions by pantomime to other persons as to the pigs. "They were cooking them for me in the hut, cooking them well." Brightens up and begins again. "I will bring several more." Pretends to listen. "We have got them here. The dogs have barked." And so on for hours.

The actual expressions for such a story are:—

| | | | | | | | | |
|----------------|------------------------|-------------------|---------------|---------------|-------------------------------------|--------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Kichik in-tūn? | dīla-l'-ēde | ngo òn . | Wainga —len | do òn . | Nd | do | reg | |
| How —many? | day —past | you come. | Morning—in | I come. | Then | I | pig | |
| dele . | Kam | wai | dol. | Kam | wai | do | òn . | D' — drlög — len |
| hunt. | Hero | indeed | I . | Hero | indeed | I | come (go). | Me-place—in |
| kā . | Wai | do | jāla — ke. | Req | bā . | Kam | wai | do ik òn . |
| here. | Indeed | I | go-away — do. | Pig | little. | Here | indeed | I take come. |
| Wai | kā | eda | otjōi . | Do | lilti | dōga — | lat. | Reg |
| Indeed | here | they | roast. | I | (in—the)—early—morning ⁴ | big — (pig) — for. | Pig | dōga. |
| dōga. | Do | ēla | l'iggit — ke. | D' | okanumu — kan. ⁵ | Kaich | d' — drōlo. | |
| big | I | pig-arrow | sharpen—do. | I | —go — do . | Come | me—after. | |
| Do—ny' | —igile. | D' | —bōkotēlima | ik | òn . | Wai | d' — at | otjōi — ka |
| I —you—hunt. | Me—before | take | come. | Indeed | me—sake | cooking — were | bōd—len. | |
| Tūn | rōicha — bēringa — ke. | Nd | do | ikpāgi — ke . | Ik — re | ka . | | |
| hat—in. | More | ripe — good — do. | Then | I | several — do. | Get—did | here. | |
| Wai | eda | ikkānawa — re . | | | | | | |
| Indeed | they | bark — did. | | | | | | |

Nothing could show more clearly how "savage" the speech is in reality, how purely colloquial, how entirely it depends on concurrent action for comprehension. When the party, who were out with Mr. Vaux when he was killed by the Jārawas in February, 1902, returned, they explained the occurrence to their friends at the Andamanese Home in Port Blair by much action and pantomime and few words. The manner of his death was explained by the narrator lying down and following his movements on the ground.

⁴ i. e., of to-morrow.

⁵ This is not a Bēa form; probably borrowed from Bojigyāb.

*f. — Bibliography.⁶**a. — Books.*

1877. Man and Temple. *Lord's Prayer in the Bojinggaida (South Andaman) Language*: Calcutta.
1883. Man. *Aboriginal Inhabitants of the Andaman Islands*: London. (Many references to older writers.)
1887. Portman. *Andamanese Manual*.
1898. Portman. *Notes on the Languages of the South Andaman Group of Tribes*: Calcutta (Government). (Many references to older writers.)

b. — Journals.

1794. Colebrooke, in *Asiatic Researches*.
1882. A. J. Ellis, in *Journal, Philological Society*.
- J. R. A. S., Temple, Man, Portman.

c. — Pamphlets.

1899. Temple. *Theory of Universal Grammar, as applied to the South Andaman Language*: London.

II. — GRAMMAR.*a. — History of the Study.*

I have taken so large a share in the development of the knowledge of the Andamanese tongue that a brief personal explanation is here necessary to make clear the mode of presenting it that now follows.

The first person to seriously study the Andamanese Languages and reduce them to writing was Mr. E. H. Man, and in this work I joined him for a time soon after it was commenced, and in 1877 we jointly produced a small book with an account of the speech of the Bojinggaji Group, or more strictly, of the Bēa Tribe. We then worked together on it, making such comparisons with the speech of the other Andaman Tribes as were then possible and compiling voluminous notes for a Grammar and Vocabulary, which are still in manuscript. In 1882 the late Mr. A. J. Ellis used these notes for an account of the Bēa Language in his Presidential Address to the Philological Society.

In compiling our manuscript, Mr. Man and myself had used the accepted grammatical terms, and these Mr. Ellis found to be so little suited for the adequate representation for scientific readers of such a form of speech as the Andamanese, that he stated in his Address that: — “We require new terms and an entirely new set of grammatical conceptions, which shall not bend an agglutinative language to our inflectional translation.” And in 1883 he asked me, in a letter, if it were not possible “to throw over the inflectional treatment of an uninflected language.”

b. — History of the Theory of Universal Grammar.

Pondering, for the purpose of an adequate presentation of Andamanese, on what was then a novel, though not an unknown, idea, never put into practice, I gradually framed a Theory of Universal Grammar, privately printed and circulated in that year. This Theory remained unused, until Mr. M. V. Portman compiled his notes for a *Comparative Grammar of the Bojinggaji (South Andaman) Languages* in 1898, based avowedly, but not fully, on my theory. These notes I examined in a second article on the Theory of Universal Grammar in the *Journal*

⁶ In addition to the article mentioned in the Preface to this article.

of the Royal Asiatic Society in 1899, which again was subjected to the favourable criticism of Mr. Sidney Bay, who has since successfully applied it in outline to sixteen languages,⁷ selected because unrelated and morphologically distinct, &c., —

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. English. | 10. Nufor, Dutch New Guinea. |
| 2. Hungarian. | 11. Motu, British New Guinea. |
| 3. Latin. | 12. Mortlock Ids, Caroline Group, Micronesia. |
| 4. Khasi, Hills of N.-E. Bengal. | 13. Mota, Banks' Islands, Melanesia. |
| 5. Anam, French Cochinchina. | 14. Samoan, Polynesia. |
| 6. Ashanti, West Africa. | 15. Awabakal, Lake Macquarie, Australia. |
| 7. Kafir, South Africa. | 16. Dakota, North America. |
| 8. Malagasy, Madagascar. | |
| 9. Olo Ngadju or Dayak, South East Borneo. | |

c. — Position of the Andamanese Languages in the General Scheme of the Theory.

The next point for consideration is: — Where do the Andamanese Languages come into the general scheme? This will be shown in the following general account of them, and as the grammatical terms used will be novel to the reader, the corresponding familiar terms will be inserted beside them in brackets, wherever necessary to make the statements clear in a familiar manner. Discrepant marks will only be used when necessary to the elucidation of the text.

d. — Examples of Sentences of One Word.

The Andamanese Languages are rich in integer words, which are sentences in themselves, because they express a complete meaning. The following examples are culled from Portman's lists:—⁸

TABLE OF INTEGER WORDS.

| ENGLISH. | BÈA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀR. | JŪWAI. |
|--|-----------------------|---------------|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| Hurrah | Wē | Yui | Yui | Yui |
| I don't know | Uchin | Maka | Konkete | Koien |
| Very well : go (with a lift of the chin) | Uchik | Kobale | Kōi | Kōi |
| Humbug | Ākanōiyadake | Akanoiyadake | Omkotichwake | { Okamkoti- chwashin. |
| Oh : I say (ironical) | Pētek | Ya | { Kalalitata Kalat } | Yokokene |
| It's broken | Turushno ⁹ | Turuit | Turush | T'ruiish |
| Back me up | Jegō | Jegō | Jeklungi | Atokwe |
| Say 'yes' | Kak | Kak | Kaka | Alō |
| Not exactly | Cho | Ya | Aikut | Kene |
| Nonsense | Wai (drawled) | Wai (drawled) | Kôle | K'le |
| Yes (ironical) | Chūngē | Chunye | Chunyeno | Chunye |
| What a stink | | | | |
| How sweet (smell, with a puffing out of the lips) | Pue | Pue | Pue | Pue |

⁷ See ante, Vol. XXVIII, pp. 197 ff., 295 ff.; Vol. XXXI p. 165 ff.

⁸ Portman is so frequently inaccurate that it must be understood that throughout this article, wherever he is quoted it is with corrections.

⁹ This is doubtful.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALĀWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAL. |
|--------------|--------------------|---------------|--------------|-------------------|
| It hurts | Iyī | Yī | Yī (drawled) | Eyō (indignantly) |
| Oh (shock) | Yite (with a gasp) | Yite | Yite | Jite |
| Don't worry | Ijijomaingata | Idiyomaingata | Iramyolano | Remjolgne |
| What? Where? | Tān? | Tan? | Ilekot? | Alech? |
| Is it so? | An wai? | An yatya? | En köle? | An k'le? |
| Lor | Kâkâtek | Kakate | Kelba | Alöbai |

e. — Elliptical Speech.

Portman's *Vocabulary* shows that the habit of speaking by integers, *i. e.*, single words, or by extremely elliptical phrases, is carried very far in Andamanese, and the *Fire Legends*¹⁰ themselves give the clearest instances of it, in so far as these legends have been recorded by Portman.

The Bēa version winds up with the enigmatic single word "Tômolola," which has to be translated by "they, the ancestors, were the Tômolola." In the Kôl version occurs the single-word sentence "Kôlotatke," *lit.* "Kôlotat-be," which has to be translated:—"Now there was one Kôlotat." In the first instance, one word in the indicator (noun) form completes the whole sense; in the second, one word in the predicate (verb) form does so. Such elliptical expressions as the above and as the term of abuse, "Ngabgôrob" (*ng+ab+gôrob*, you+special—radical—prefix+spine), would be accompanied by tone, manner, or gesture to explain its meaning to the listener. Thus, the latter would be made to convey "You humpback," or "Break your spine," by the accompanying manner.

f. — Portman's Fire Legend in the Bēa Version dissected
to illustrate Grammar.

The Andamanese sentence, when it gets beyond an exclamation or one word, is capable of clear division into subject and predicate, as can be seen by an analysis of the sentences in a genuine specimen of the speech, Portman's "Fire Legend" in the five languages of the South Andaman (Bojigngiji) Group. In the Bēa Language it runs thus:—

BĒA VERSION OF THE FIRE LEGEND.

Tôl-l'oko-tima-len Pûluga-la mîmi —ka . Lûratüt-la¹¹ châpa tdp—nga ômo—re .
(a Place)—in God asleep—was. (a Bird) firewood steal-ing bring-did.
châpa-la Pûluga-la pûgat —ka . Pûluga-la bôi —ka . Pûluga-la châpa
firewood God burning—was. God awake—was. God firewood
eni —ka . a ik châpa lik Lûratüt l'ot-pûguri—re¹² jek Lûratüt-la
seizing—was. he taking firewood—by (Bird) throw-at —did. at-once (Bird)
eni —ka . a Târcheker¹³ l'ot-pûguri—re . Wôta-Emi-barai—len Châuga-tôbanga
taking—was. he (a Bird) throw-at —did. Wôta-Emi-village-in The —ancestors .
oko —dal-re.¹⁴ Tômolola .
made-fires . Tomolola.

g. — Portman's Rendering (amended).

God was sleeping at Tôl-l'okotima. Lûratüt came, stealing firewood. The firewood burnt God. God woke up. God seized the firewood; took the firewood and threw it at Lûratüt. Then Lûratüt took (the firewood); he threw it at Târcheker in Wôta-Emi village, (where then) the Ancestors lit fires. (The Ancestors referred to were) the Tômolola.

¹⁰ Cf. Man's *Andaman Islanders*, p. 89.¹¹ One of the (?) six kinds of the Andamanese Kingfisher.¹² This expression means "threw a burning brand at," a common practice among the Andamanese. It has been extended to meet modern requirements to denote "shooting with a gun," the flash from which is likened to that from a burning brand when thrown.¹³ Probably an error for Châltkar, the generic term for the kingfishers.¹⁴ This expression is elliptical. Châpa, firewood: châpa-l'idal, the eye of the firewood, a fire; châpa-l'ekodal-ke, firewood-eye-do (make), make a fire.

h. — Subject and Predicate.

Taking this Legend sentence by sentence, the subject and predicate come out clearly thus: — (P. = predicate; S. = subject).

- (1) Tollokotimalen (P.) Pulugala (S.) mamika (P.).
- (2) Luratutla (S.) chapatapnga (S.) omore (P.).
- (3) Chapala (S.) Pulugala (P.) pugatka (P.).
- (4) Pulugala (S.) boika (P.).
- (5) Pulugala (S.) chapa (P.) enika (P.).
- (6) A (S.) ik (S.) chapalik (P.) Luratut (P.) lotpugurire (P.).
- (7) Jek (P.) Luratutla (S.) enika (P.).
- (8) A (S.) Tarcheker (P.) lotpugurire (P.).
- (9) Wota-Emi-baraijlen (P.) Changa-tabnga (S.) okodalre (P.).
- (10) Tomolola (S.) (P. unexpressed).

i. — Principal and Subordinate Words.

That the words in the above sentences are in the relation of principal and subordinate is equally clear thus: —

- (1) In the Predicate, *Tollokotimalen* is subordinate to the principal *mamika*.
- (2) In the Subject, *Luratutla* is the principal with its subordinate *chapatapnga*.
- (5) In the Predicate, *chapa* is subordinate to the principal *enika*.

And so on, without presentation of any difficulties.

j. — Functions of Words.

The next stage in analysis is to examine the functions of the words used in the above sentences, and for this purpose the following abbreviations will be used: —

Abbreviations used.

| | | | |
|------|--------------|---------|----------------------------|
| int. | integer. | intd. | introducer. |
| in. | indicator. | r. c. | referent conjunctor. |
| e. | explicator. | r. s. | referent substitute. |
| p. | predicator. | c. in. | complementary indicator. |
| ill. | illustrator. | c. e. | complementary explicator. |
| c. | connector. | c. ill. | complementary illustrator. |

In this view the sentences can be analysed thus: —

- (1) Toll'okotimalen (ill. of P.) Pulugala (in.) mamika (p.).
- (2) Luratutla (in.) chapa-(c. in.)-tapnga (p., the whole an e. phrase) omore (p.).
- (3) Chapala (in.) Pulugala (c. in.) pugatka (p.).
- (4) Pulugala (in.) boika (p.).
- (5) Pulugala (in.) chapa (c. in.) enika (p.).
- (6) A (r. s., in.) ik (e.) chapalik (ill.) Luratut (c. in.) l'otpugurire (p.).
- (7) Jek (r. c.) Luratutla (in.) enika (p.).
- (8) A (r. s., in.) Tarcheker (c. in.) l'otpugurire (p.).
- (9) Wota-Emi-baraijlen (ill. phrase of P.). changatabanga (in. phrase) okodalre (p.).
- (10) Tomolola (in. P. unexpressed).

k. — Order of Sentence.

By this analysis we arrive at the following facts. The purposes of all the sentences is information, and the Andamanese indicate that purpose, which is perhaps the commencement of speech, by the order of the words in the sentence thus : —

- (1) Subject before Predicate :

Pulugala (S.) boika (P.).

- (2) Subject, Complement (object), Predicate :

Pulugala (S.) chapa (c. in.) enika (P.).

- (3) Indicator (noun) before explicator (adjective) :

Luratutla (in.) chapa-tapnga (e. phrase) omore (p.).

- (4) Illustrator of Predicate (adverb) before Subject :

Toll'okotimalen (ill. of P.) Pulagala (in.) mamika (p.).

But illustrators can be placed elsewhere,¹⁶ thus :

A (r. s. used as in.) ik. (p. of elliptic e. phrase, c. in. unexpressed)
chapa lik (ill.) Luratut (c. in.) l'otpugurire (p.).

- (5) Referent conjunctive (conjunction) commences sentence :

Jek (r. c.) Luratutla (in.) enika (p.).

- (6) Referent substitutes (pronouns) follow position of the originals :

A (r. s. in.) Tarcheke (c. in.) l'otpugurire (p.).

From these examples, which cover the whole of the kinds of words used in the sentence, except the introducers and connectors, the absence of which is remarkable, we get the following as the order of Andamanese speech : —

- A. (1) Subject, (2) Predicate.
- B. (1) Subject, (2) Complement (object), (3) Predicate.
- C. (1) Indicator (noun) before its explicator (adjective).
- D. Illustrator (adverb) where convenient.
- E. Referent conjunctives (conjunctions) before everything in connected sentences.

We have also a fine example of an extremely elliptical form of speech in the wind up of the story by the one word " Tomolola " as its last sentence, in the sense "(the ancestors who did this were the) Tomolola." *Jek Luratutla enika* is also elliptic, as the complement is unexpressed.

l. — Order of Connected Sentences.

Connected sentences are used in the order of principal and then subordinate :

Pulugala chapa enika (principal sentence) and then a *ik chapalik Luratut l'otpugurire* (subordinate sentence), after which *jek Luratutla enika* (connected sentence joined by " jek, at once "), and then a *Tarcheker l'otpugurire* (subordinate to the previous sentence).

The sentences quoted show that the Andamanese mind works in its speech steadily from point to point in a natural order of precedence in the development of an information (story, tale), and not in an inverted order, as does that of the speakers of many languages.

m. — Interrogative Sentences.

It may also be noted here, though no interrogative phrases occur in the Fire Legend, that the Andamanese convey interrogation by introducers (adverbs) always placed at the commencement of a sentence or connected sentences.

¹⁶ We have this in English :— " suddenly John died ; John suddenly died ; John died suddenly."

The introducers of interrogation in Béa are *Ba?* and *Da?*. And so, too, "Is _____?" or _____?" are introduced by "An _____? an _____?" Either these introducers are used, or an interrogative sentence begins with a special introducer, like "Tén?", Where *Micibé?* What? *Mijola* (honorific form), or *Mija?* Who? and so on.

b. — The Mode of expressing the Functions and the Interrelation of Words.

But the Andamanese do not rely entirely on position to express the function of the sentence and the functions and interrelation of its words. By varying the ends of their words, they express the functions of such sentences as convey information, and at the same time the functions of the words composing them.

Thus, the final form of *Pulugala*, *Luratula*, *chapala*, *Tomolala* proclaim them to be indicators (nouns) : of *mamika*, *boika*, *pugatka*, *omore*, *okodals*, *l'otpugurire*, to be predators (verbs) : of *chapa-lapnga* (phrase) to be an explicator (adjective) : of *Toll'okotimalen* (phrase), *chapqlik*, *Wota-Emi-baraijlen* (phrase) to be illustrators (adverbs).

c. — Expression of Intimate Relation.

The intimate relation between words is expressed by change of form at the commencement of the latter of them.

Thus in *Luratul* (c. in.) *l'otpugurire* (p.), where *Luratul* is the complement (object) and *l'otpugurire* is the predicate (verb), the intimate relation between them is expressed by the *l'* of *l'otpugurire*. So again in *Tarcheker l'otpugurire*.

In phrases, or words that are fundamentally phrases, the same method of intimately joining them is adopted.

Thus *Tol-l'oko-tima-len* means in practice "in Toll'okotima," a place so named, but fundamentally

Tol ————— l' ————— okotima-len

Tol (tree) — (its) — corner — in

means "in (the encampment at, unexpressed) the corner of the Tol (trees, unexpressed)." Here the intimate relation between *tol* and *okotima* is expressed by the intervening *l'*.

The actual use of the phrases is precisely that of the words they represent. Thus,

Wota-Emi-baraij—len

Wota-Emi-village—in

Here a phrase, consisting of three indicators (nouns) placed in juxtaposition, is used as one illustrator word (adverb).

d. — Use of the Affixes, Prefixes, Infixes, Suffixes.

It follows from what has been above said that the Andamanese partly make words fulfil their functions by varying their forms by means of affixes.

Thus they use suffixes to indicate the class of a word. E. g., *ka*, *re*, to indicate predators (verbs); *la*, *da*, for indicators (nouns); *nga* for explicators (adj.); *len*, *lik* for illustrators (adverbs). They use prefixes, e. g., *l'*, to indicate intimate relation, and infixes for joining up phrases into compound words, based on the prefix *l'*.

It also follows that their functional affixes are prefixes, infixes, and suffixes.

It is further clear that they effect the transfer of a word from class to class by means of suffixes.

Thus, the compound indicator (noun) *Toll'okotima* is transferred to illustrator (adverb) by suffixing *len*: indicator (noun) *chapla* to illustrator (adverb) by suffixing *lik*: indicator (noun) phrase *Wota-Emi-baraij* to illustrator (adverb) by suffixing *len*: predictor (verb) *lap* (-*ka*, -*ka*, -*re*) to explicator (adj.) by suffixing *nga*.

A very strong instance of the power of a suffix to transfer a word from one class to another occurs in the Kôl version of the Fire Legend, where *Kôlotat-he* occurs. *Kôlotat*, being a man's name and therefore an indicator (noun), is transferred to the predicator (verb) class by merely affixing the suffix of that class. The word *Kôlotatke* in the Kôl version of the Fire Legend occurs as a sentence by itself in the sense of "now, there was one Kôlotat."

q.—Differentiation of the Meanings of Connected Words by Radical Prefixes.

Fortunately in the sentences under examination, two words occur, which exhibit the next point of analysis for elucidation. These are :—

| | | |
|----------|----------|-------------|
| chapala | Pulugala | pugat—ka |
| firewood | God | burning—was |

and then

| | | |
|----|-----------|---------------------------------|
| a | Tarcheker | l'otpunguri - re |
| he | (a Bird) | throw-at—did |
| a | ik | chapa—lik |
| he | taking | Luratut l'otpunguri - re |
| | | firewood-by (Bird) throw-at—did |

Here is an instance of connected words, one of which is differentiated in meaning from the other by the affix *ot*, prefixed to that part which denotes the original meaning or root (*pugat*, *punguri*) of both. Therefore in Andamanese the use of radical prefixes (prefixes to root) is to differentiate connected words.

The simple stem in the above instances is *pugat* and the connected compound stem *otpunguri*. Similarly *okotima*, *okodalre*, occurring in the Fire Legend, are compound stems, where the roots are *tima* and *dal*.

r.—Indication of the Classes of Words — Qualitative Suffixes.

The last point in this analysis is that the words are made to indicate their class, i. e., their nature (original idea conveyed by a word) by the Andamanese by affixing qualitative suffixes, thus :—

ka, *re* to indicate the predicator class (verbs); *nga*, to indicate the explicator (adj.) class; *la*, *da* to indicate the indicator (noun) class; *lik*, *len* to indicate the illustrator (adverb) class.

s.—Composition of the Words.

The words in the sentences under consideration can thus be broken up into their constituents as follows :—

Using the abbreviations R. = Root: S. = Stem: P. F. = Prefix, functional: P. R. = Prefix, radical: I. = Infix: S. F. = Suffix, functional: S. Q. = Suffix, qualitative.

- (1) Mami (S.) —ka (S. Q.).
Sleeping —was.
So also *pugat-ka*, *boi-ka*, *eni-ka*.
- (2) Chapa (S.).
firewood.
- (3) Tap (S.) —nga (S. Q.).
steal — ing
- (4) Omo (S.) — re (S. Q.).
bring — did.
- (5) Chapa (S.) — la (S. Q.).
firewood — (honorific suff.).
- (6) A (S.).
He.

- (7) Ik (S.).
tak — (ing).
- (8) Chapa (S.) — lik (S. F.).
firewood — by.
- (9) l' (P. F.) — ot (P. R.) — paguri (R.) — re (S. Q.).
(referent prefixes) — throw-at — did
- (10) Jek (S.).
At-once.
- (11) Baraij (S.) — len (S. F.).
village — in.
- (12) Oko (P. R.) — dal (R.) — re (S. Q.).
— eye-make — did (lighted).

— The Agglutinative Principle.

Words are therefore made to fulfil their functions in the Andamanese Languages by an external development effected by affixes and to express modifications of their original meanings by a similar internal development. Also, the meaning of the sentences is rendered complete by a combination of the meanings of their component words with their position, and form.

The sentences analysed further show that the Languages express a complete communication chiefly by the forms of their words, and so these languages are Formative Languages; and because their affixes, as will have been seen above, are attached to roots, stems and words mainly in an unaltered form, the languages are Agglutinative Languages. It will be seen later on, too, as a matter of great philological interest, that the Languages possess premutation (principle of affixing prefixes) and postmutation (principle of affixing suffixes) in almost equal development: intromutation (principle of affixing infixes) being merely rudimentary.

u.— Identity of the Five Languages of the Southern Group of Tribes.

The above observations, being the outcome of the examination of the ten sentences under analysis, are based only on the Bēa speech, but a similar analysis of the sentences conveying the Fire Legend in the five South Andaman Languages (Bojigngjī Group), as given in Appendix A, would fully bear out all that has been above said. With the aid of this Appendix is here attached a series of Tables, showing roughly how these languages agree and differ in the essentials of word-building, premising that they all agree in Syntax, or sentence-building, exactly. An examination of the Tables goes far to show that the Andamanese Languages must belong to one family.

Comparative Tables of Roots and Stems of the same meaning occurring in the Fire Legend.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAI. | KÔL. |
|----------------------------------|---------------|---------|-----------|--------|---------|
| Indicators (nouns). | | | | | |
| camp | baraij | baroij | ... | ... | pēroich |
| fire | chapa | choapa | at | at | at |
| Predicators (verbs). | | | | | |
| seize | eni | ena | di, li | ... | ... |
| tako | ik | ik | ik | ... | ... |
| light-a-fire | dal | dal | kadak | kôdak | kôdak |
| sleep | mami | ... | paf | ema | pat |
| steal | tap | ... | ... | top | ... |
| bring | omo | omo | lechi | ... | ... |
| burn | pugat, puguri | puguru | ... | ... | ... |
| wake | boi | .. | konyi | ... | ... |
| Referent Substitutes (pronouns). | | | | | |
| he | a | i, ong | ong | a | ... |
| (she) | ... | ongoṭ | n'ong | .. | n' a |

Comparative Table of Affixes occurring in the Fire Legend.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAI. | KÔL. |
|---|------|---------|-----------|--------|------|
| Prefixes, functional, of intimate relation. | | | | | |
| (hi-, it-)s | l' | l' | l' | l', t' | l' |
| (hi-, it-)s | .. | .. | k' | ... | k' |
| (their-)s | .. | .. | n' | ... | n' |

| ENGLISH. | BEA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGRĀB. | JŪWAL. | KÔL. |
|------------------------|-----------|------------|---------------|------------|-------------|
| Prefixes, radical. | | | | | |
| ... | ot- | oto- | oto- | ... | otam-, oto- |
| ... | ... | atek- | ... | atak- | ... |
| ... | oko- | oko- | oko- | ôkô-, ôko- | oko |
| ... | ... | ... | o- | ... | a- |
| ... | ... | ar- | ... | ... | ir-, iram- |
| ... | i- | i- | ... | ... | ... |
| ... | ... | ong- | ... | on- | ... |
| Suffixes, functional. | | | | | |
| by | -lik | -te | -ke | ... | -lak |
| in | -len | -a | -in, -an, -en | -in | -en |
| to | ... | ... | -len | -lun | -kete |
| Suffixes, qualitative. | | | | | |
| was | -ka | -kate, -ia | .. | -chike | -ke |
| -ing | -nga | -nga | -nga | ... | ... |
| did | -re | -t, -te | -ye, -an | -t | -an, -chine |
| (hon. of in.) | -la, -ola | -le | -la | ... | -la |

Many further proofs of the existence of the Andamanese Languages as a Family, sub-divided into three main Groups, will be found later on when considering that great difficulty of the Languages, the use of the prefixes, and it will be sufficient here to further illustrate the differences and agreements between those of the South Andaman Group by a comparison of the roots of the words for the parts of the human body, a set of words which looms preponderatingly before the Andamanese mental vision.

Comparative Table of Roots and Stems denoting Parts of the Human Body.

| ENGLISH. | BEA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGRĀB. | JŪWAL. | KÔL. |
|-----------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|-------------|-------------|
| head | chêta | chekta | ta | tô | toi |
| brains | mûn | mun | mine | mine | mine |
| neck | lõngota | longato | longe | longe | longe |
| heart | küktâbana | kuktâbana | kapône | poktô | poktoi |
| hand | kôro | kôro | kôre | korô | kôre |
| wrist, shoulder | tôgo | tôgo | to | to | to |
| knuckle | kûtur | godla | kutar | kntar | kutar |
| nail | bôdoh | bôdo | pute | pute | pute |
| foot | pâg | pog | ta | tok | tok |
| ankle | tôgar | tôgar | togar | togar | togar |
| mouth | bang | boang | pong | pong | pong |
| chin | âdal | koada | teri | t'reye | t'reye |
| tongue | ëtel | atal | tatal | tatal | tâtal |
| jaw | ëkib | toa | ta | tô | teip |
| lip | pai | pa | pai | paka | pake |
| shoulder-blade | pôdikma | pôdiatoa | bea | bea | bein |
| thigh | paicha | poaicho | baichato | boichatokan | baichatôkan |
| knee | lô | lo | lu | lu | lu |
| shin | châlta | chaisanta | chalta | choltô | chaltô |
| belly | jôdo | jôdo | chute | chute | chute |
| navel | èr | akar | tar | takar | takar |

| ENGLISH. | BÉA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGIĀB. | JŪWAI. | KÔL. |
|----------|----------|-----------|-----------|---------|---------|
| armpit | āwa | ōkar | kôrteng | kôrteng | kôrteng |
| eye | dal | dal | kôdak | kôdag | kôdak |
| eyebrow | punyūr | punu | bein | beakaiñ | beakaiñ |
| forehead | mûgu | mugu | mike | mike | mike |
| ear | pûku | paku | bo | bôkâ | bôkô |
| nose | chôronga | chôronga | kôte | kôte | kôte |
| cheek | lb | koab | kap | kap | kap |
| arm | gûd | gud | kit | kit | kit |
| breast | kâm | koam | kôme | kôme | kôme |
| spine | gôrob | kategôrob | kinab | kurup | kurup |
| leg | chág | chag | chok | chok | chok |
| buttocks | dama | doamo | tome | tome | tome |
| anus | tômur | bang | tomur | kôlang | kôlang |

Pulled to pieces, Andamanese words of any Group of the Languages seem to be practically the same, but this fact is not apparent in actual speech, when they are given in full with their appropriate affixes, thus :—

| ENGLISH. | BÉA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGIĀB. | JŪWAI. | KÔL. |
|----------|-----------|----------|-----------|--------------|-----------|
| head | otchêtada | ôtchekta | otetada | ôtotôlekile | ôtetoiche |
| knee | ablôda | ablo | abluda | alulekile | oluche |
| forehead | igmûgnda | idmugu | irmikeda | remikelekile | ermikeche |

Any one who has had practice in listening to a foreign and partially understood tongue knows how a small difference in pronunciation, or even in accentuation, will render unintelligible words philologically immediately recognisable on paper.

III. — ETYMOLOGY.

a. — The Use of the Roots.

As the Andamanese usually build up the full words of their sentences by the simple agglutination of affixes on to roots and stems, the word construction of their language would present no difficulties, were it not for one peculiarity, most interesting in itself and easy of general explanation, though difficult in the extreme to discover. *experto crede*.

The Andamanese suffixes perform the ordinary functions of their kind in all agglutinative languages, and the peculiarity of the infix *l'* occurring in compound words depends on the prefixes. It is the prefixes and their use that demand an extended examination.

b. — Anthropomorphism colours the whole Linguistic System.

To Andamanese instinct or feeling, words as original meanings, i.e., roots, divide themselves roughly into Five Groups, denoting—

- (1) mankind and parts of his body (nouns):
- (2) other natural objects (nouns):
- (3) ideas relating to objects (adjectives, verbs):
- (4) reference to objects (pronouns):
- (5) ideas relating to the ideas about objects (adverbs, connecting words, Preper Names).

The instinct of the Andamanese next exhibits an intense anthropomorphism, as it leads them to differentiate the words in the First Group, i.e., those relating directly to themselves, from all others, by adding special prefixes through mere agglutination to their roots.

c. — The Use of the Prefixes to the Roots.

These special radical prefixes, by some process of reasoning forgotten by the people and now obscure, but not at all in every case irrecoverable, divide the parts of the human body into Seven Classes ; thus, without giving a full list of the words in each class—

Radical Prefixes in Words denoting Parts of the Human Body by Classes.

| CLASS. | ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BoJEGYĀS. | JŪWAI. | KōL. |
|--------|---|---------|---------|-----------|--------|------|
| I. | { Head Brains Neck Heart } | ot- | öt- | ote- | öto- | öto- |
| II. | { Hand Wrist Knuckle Nail Foot Ankle } | ong- | ong- | ong- | ön- | ön- |
| III. | { Mouth Chin Tongue Jawbone Lip } | äkä- | aska- | o- | ökö- | o- |
| IV. | { Shoulder Thigh Knee Shin Belly Navel Armpit } | ab- | ab- | ab- | a- | o- |
| V. | { Eye Eyebrow Forehead Ear Nose Cheek Arm Breast } | i-, ig- | id- | ir- | re- | er- |
| VI. | { Spine Leg Buttock Hip } | ar- | ar- | ar- | ra- | a- |
| VII. | Waist | öto- | | | | |

d. — Prefixes to Words referring to the Human Body.

Next, in obedience to their strong anthropomorphic instinct, the Andamanese extend their prefixes to all words in the other Groups, when in relation to the human body, its parts, attributes and necessities, and thus in practice, refer all words, capable of such reference, to themselves by means of prefixes added to their roots. In an Andamanese Language one cannot, as a matter of fact, say "head," "hand," "heart," one can only say—

my
your
his
(so & so) — 's
(that one) — 's
(this one) — 's } head, hand, heart.

e. — The Prefixes of Intimate Relation.

It is thus that the otherwise extremely difficult secondary functional prefix (always prefixed to the radical prefix, which is usually in Bojngngi *l-* or *la-* (but practically always used in its curtailed form *l-*, or *k'-*, *n'-*, *t'-* in certain circumstances) is clearly explainable. It is used to denote intimate relation between two words; and when between two indicators (nouns) it corresponds to the English connector (of), the Persian *islfat* (-i-), and so on, and to the suffix denoting the "genitive case" in the inflected languages. The Andamanese also use it to indicate intimate relation between predicate (verb) and complement (object); when it corresponds to the suffix of the "accusative case" in the inflected languages, and indeed to "cases" generally.

f. — The Prefix System.

Starting with these general principles, the Andamanese have developed a complicated system of prefixes, making their language an intricate and difficult one for a foreigner to clearly apprehend when spoken to, or to speak so as to be readily understood.

As examples of this, let us take the stem *bēri-n̄ga* good : then *d-bēri-n̄ga*, good (human being); *un-bēri-n̄ga* (good hand, *ong* pref. of hand), clever ; *ig-bēri-n̄ga* (good eye, *ig* pref. of eye) sharp-sighted ; *dk̄a-bēri-n̄ga* (good mouth or tongue, *dk̄a* pref. of mouth and tongue), clever at (other Andamanese) languages ; *ot-bēri-n̄ga* (good head and heart, *ot* pref. of both head and heart), virtuous ; *un-t'-ig-bēri-n̄ga* (good hand and eye, *ong* pref. of hand, *ig* pref. of eye, joined by *t'* pref. of intimate relation), good all round.

So, too, with *jābag*, bad : *ab-jābag*, bad (human being) ; *un-jābag*, clumsy, *ig-jābag*, dull-sighted ; *dk̄a-jābag*, stupid at (other Andamanese) languages, also nasty, unpalatable ; *ot-jābag*, vicious ; *un-t'-ig-jābag*, a duffer.

So again with *lāma*, failing : *un-lāma* (failing hand or foot), missing to strike ; *ig-lāma* (failing eye), failing to find ; *ot-lāma* (failing head), wanting in sense ; *dk̄a-lāma* (failing tongue).

Lastly, in the elliptic speech of the Andamanese, the root, when evident, can be left unexpressed, if the prefix is sufficient to express the sense, thus : —

i-bēri-n̄ga-da! may mean, " his-(face, pref. *i-*)-good-(is)." That is, " he is good-looking ! " *d'-dk̄a-chdm-he!* may mean " my-(mouth, pref. *dk̄a*)-sore-is." That is, " my mouth is sore ! "

g. — Prefixes to Words relating to Objects.

The system of using radical prefixes to express the relation of ideas to mankind and its body is extended to express the relation of ideas to objects in general. Thus : —

ad-bēringa, well (of the body) : *ad-jābag*, ill (of the body) : *ōko-lāma* (applied to a weapon), failing to penetrate the object struck through the fault of the striker. So *ig-bēringa* means pretty (of things) : *dk̄a-bēringa*, nice (to taste) : all in addition to the senses above given.

This is carried, with more or less obvious reference to origin, throughout the language. Thus : —

In Bēa : *yōb*, pliable, soft. Then a cushion, wax or sponge is *ot-yōb*, soft : a cane is *ōko-yōb*, pliable : a stick or pencil is *dk̄a-yōb*, or *ōko-yōb*, pointed : the human body is *ab-yōb*, soft ; Class II. of its parts (hand, wrist, &c.) are *ong-yōb*, soft ; fallen trees are *ar-yōb*, rotten ; an adze is *ig-yōb*, blunt.

So again, in Bēa : *chōrognḡa*, tying up (whence also that which is usually tied up in a bundle, *sis*, a bundle of plantains, faggots). Then *dt-chōrognḡa* is tying up a pig's carcase : *dk̄a-chōrognḡa*, tying up jack-fruit : *ar-chōrognḡa*, tying up birds : *ong-chōrognḡa*, tying up the feet of sucking pigs.

h. — General Sense of Prefixes to Roots.

Possibly the feeling or instinct, which prompts the use of the prefixes correctly, could be caught up by a foreigner, just as the Andamanese roots might be traced by a sufficiently patient etymologist, but it would be very difficult and would require deep study. The Andamanese themselves, however,

unerringly apply them without hesitation, even in the case of such novel objects to them as cushions, sponges and pencils; using *ot* in the two former cases, because they are round and globular, and *dkd* in the latter, because they are rounded off to an end. In both these cases one can detect an echo of the application of the prefixes to the body: *ot* of head, neck, heart, &c.; *dkd* of tongue, chin, &c.

Portman gives somewhat doubtfully the following as the concrete modifying references of such prefixes to the names of things:—

| | | | | |
|-------------------|-----|-----|-----|--|
| <i>ot-</i> | ... | ... | ... | round things |
| <i>ōto-</i> | ... | ... | ... | long, thin, pointed, or wooden things |
| <i>ākā-, ōko-</i> | ... | ... | ... | hard things |
| <i>ar-</i> | ... | ... | ... | upright things |
| <i>ig-</i> | ... | ... | ... | weapons, utensils, things manufactured |
| <i>ad-</i> | ... | ... | ... | speech (noises) of animals |

With this habit may be compared the use of numeral coefficients in Burmese and many other languages.

From Portman also may be abstracted, doubtfully again, the following modifying abstract references of some of the radical prefixes:—

| | | | |
|------------------------|-----|-----|--|
| <i>ot-, oto-, ōto-</i> | ... | ... | special relation |
| <i>ig-, ik-, i-</i> | ... | ... | reference in singular to another person |
| <i>iji-</i> | ... | ... | reference in plural to another person |
| <i>eb-, ep-</i> | ... | ... | reference to ideas |
| <i>ākan-</i> | ... | ... | reference to self |
| <i>ar-, ara-</i> | ... | ... | plural reference to persons generally |
| <i>ar-, ara-</i> | ... | ... | (also) agency |
| <i>ad-</i> | ... | ... | action of self |
| <i>ab-</i> | ... | ... | action or condition transferred to another in singular |
| <i>oiyo-</i> | ... | ... | action transferred to others in plural |

The following preliminary statement of the function of the radical prefixes can, therefore, be made out: *viz.*, to modify the meanings of roots by denoting—

- (1) the phenomena of man and parts of his body:
- (2) the phenomena of objects:
- (3) the relation of ideas to the human body and objects:
- (4) reference to self:
- (5) reference to other persons:
- (6) ideas; *i. e.*, (a) actions of self, (b) actions transferred to others, (c) actions of others (agency):
- (7) reference to ideas.

i.—The Use of the "Personal Pronouns."

The habit of the Andamanese of referring everything directly to themselves makes the use of the referent substitutes for their own names (personal pronouns) a prominent feature in their speech. These are in full in the Bojigngiji Group as follow:—

The "Personal Pronouns."

| ENGLISH. | BEA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAL. | KĒL. |
|-------------|--------------|-------------|-----------|-------------|-------------|
| I | d'ol-la | d'ol | t'u-le | t'u-le | la-t'u-le |
| Thou | ng'ol-la | ng'ol | ng'u-le | ng'a-kile | la-ng'u-le |
| He, she, it | ol-la | ol | u-le | a-kile | laka-u-le |
| We | m'olōi-chik | m'olō-chit | m-n-le | m'e-kile | la-m'u-le |
| You | ng'olōi-chik | ng'olō-chit | ng'uwe'l | ng'e'l-kile | la-ng'uwe'l |
| They | olōi-chik | olo-chit | n'u-le | n'e-kile | kuchla-n'u. |

J. — Limited Pre-inflection.

In combination with and before the radical prefixes the "personal pronouns" are abbreviated thus in all the languages of the Bojigngiji Group ;—

Abbreviated "Pronominal" Forms.

| | | | |
|--------------------|-----|-----|---|
| I, my ... | ... | ... | ... { d' - in Bēa, Balawa t' - in Bojigyaab, Jūwai, Kōl |
| thou, thy ... | ... | ... | ng' - in all the Group |
| he, his, &c. ... | ... | ... | not expressed in the Group |
| we, our .. | ... | ... | m' - in all the Group |
| you, your ... | ... | ... | { ng' - in Bēa, Balawa, Bojigyaab ng' _____ 'l in Jūwai, Kōl |
| they, their ... | ... | ... | { not expressed in Bēa, Balawa n' - in Bojigyaab, Jūwai, Kōl |
| this, that one ... | ... | ... | { k' - in Bēa, Balawa, Kōl not expressed in Bojigyaab, Jūwai |
| that one ... | ... | ... | t' - in all the Group |

In this way it can be shown that there are no real "singular possessives" in Andamanese, as the so-called "possessive pronouns" are merely the abbreviated forms of the "personal pronouns" plus *ia* (-da), &c. = belonging to, (property) : thus—

"Possessive Pronouns."

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYAAB. | JŪWAI. | KŌL. |
|---------------|----------|---------|------------|-------------|------------|
| my, mine | d'ia-da | d'oge | t'ya-da | t'yea-kile | t'ye-che |
| thy, thine | ng'ia-da | ng'ege | ng'ya-da | ng'yea-kile | ng'ye-dele |
| his, her, its | ia-da | ege | iya-da | yea-kile | ye-dele |

The "plural possessives" have been brought into line with the expression of plurality by radical prefixes, as will be seen later on.

Now, it is easy enough to express on paper the true nature of the above abbreviations by the use of the apostrophe, but in speech there is no distinction made. Thus, one can write "*d'un-lāma-re*. I missed (my) blow," but one must say "*dunlāmare*." So one can write *ng'ot-jābag-da*, "you (are a) vicious (brute)," but one must say *ngotjābagda*. So also one can write:

| | | |
|----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>dr-tām</i> | <i>d'un-t'ig-jābag</i> | <i>l'elā-re</i> |
| formerly | I-hand-eye-bad | exist-did |
| <i>achitik</i> | <i>d'un-t'ig-bēri-nga</i> | |
| now | I-hand-eye-good | |

(once I was a duffer, now I am good all round).

But one must say "*drtām dunligābag ledāre*, *achitik dunligēringa*." It would, therefore, be correct to assert that, though Andamanese is an agglutinative tongue, it possesses a very limited pre-inflection, i. e., inflection at the commencement of its words.

Limited Correlated Variation (Concord).

The Andamanese also express the intimate relation of the "personal pronouns" with their predicates (verbs) by a rudimentary correlated variation (post-inflection in the form of concord) of forms thus :—

| | | | |
|-------------|--------------|-----------|-----------|
| māmi-ke | māmik-ka | māmi-re | māmi-nга |
| sleeping-is | sleeping-was | sleep-did | sleep-ing |

Then,

| | | | |
|--------------|-----|-----|-----------------|
| do māmī-ke | ... | ... | I am sleeping |
| da māmī-ka | ... | ... | I was sleeping |
| da māmīre | ... | ... | I slept |
| dona māminga | ... | ... | I (me) sleeping |

This peculiarity is shown in all the Bojigngjī Group, except Kōl; thus:—

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGNGJĪ. | JŪWAI. |
|----------|------|---------|------------|--------|
|----------|------|---------|------------|--------|

“In the Present Tense” (ke).

| | | | | |
|-------------|----------|---------|------|------|
| I | do | do | tuk | te |
| Thou | ngo | ngo | nguk | nge |
| He, she, it | a, o | ong | uk | a |
| We | mōicho | mōt | mōt | me |
| You | ngōdicho | ngōngot | nuk | ngel |
| They | eda | ōngot | net | a |

“In the Past Tense” (ka and re).

| | | | | |
|-------------|-------|---------|---------|------|
| I | da | do | tong | te |
| Thou | nga | ngo | ngong | nge |
| He, she, it | a | ong | ong | a |
| We | meda | mongot | mōt | me |
| You | ngeda | ngongot | ngonget | ngel |
| They | eda | ongot | net | ne |

“In the Present Participle” (nga).

| | | | | |
|-------------|-------|-----|--------|--------|
| I | dona | ... | tong | tōn |
| Thou | ngona | ... | ngong | ngōn |
| He, she, it | oda | ... | ong | ōn |
| We | moda | ... | mōt | mon |
| You | ngoda | ... | ngowel | ngōwel |
| They | oda | ... | nong | no |

1. — Expression of Plurality by Radical Prefixes.

The examination of the “pronouns” shows that the Andamanese can express things taken together (plural) as well as things taken by themselves (singular). This in their language generally is expressed by changing the forms of the radical prefixes, in Bēa and Balawa habitually and in Kōl and Jūwai occasionally. Thus:—

| SING. | PLU. | SING. | PLU. | SING. | PLU. |
|-------|------|-------|------|-------|------|
|-------|------|-------|------|-------|------|

In Bēa.

| | | | | | |
|------|-------|-----------|-------|--------------|--------------|
| ot- | otot- | ong-, on- | oiot- | ig-, ik-, i- | itig- |
| ab- | at- | ar-, ara- | arat- | aka- | akat- |
| ōto- | ōtot- | eb- | ebet- | iji- | ijit-, ijst- |
| ōko- | ōkot- | ad- | ad- | akan- | akan- |
| en- | et- | | | | |

In Balawa.

| | | | | | |
|------|-------|-----------|--------|-------|-------|
| ōt- | ōtot- | ōng- | ōngot- | id- | idit- |
| ap- | at- | ar-, ara- | arat- | aka- | akat- |
| ōto- | ōtot- | eb- | ebet- | idi- | idit- |
| ōko- | ōkot- | ad- | ad- | akan- | akan- |
| en- | et- | | | | |

| SING. | PLU. | SING. | PLU. | SING. | PLU. |
|-----------|-------|-------|------|-------|-------|
| In Jūwai. | | | | | |
| ir- | ir- | ab- | at- | iche- | iche- |
| iram- | iram- | in- | in- | ... | ... |
| In Kōl. | | | | | |
| re- | ri- | a- | o- | ache- | iche- |
| rem- | rim- | en- | in- | ... | ... |

As has been already noted, the plural of the "personal pronouns" in the "possessive" form has been made to fall into line with the plan of expressing plurality by means of the radical prefixes. Thus :—

Table of Singular and Plural " Possessives."

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAI. | KŌL. |
|----------|-------|---------|-----------|---------|-----------|
| Sing. | my | diada | dege | tiyeda | tiyiche |
| Plu. | our | mētat | matat | miyeda | miyedele |
| Sing. | thy | ngiada | ngege | ngiyeda | ngiyedele |
| Plu. | your | ētat | ngatat | ngiyida | ngiyil |
| Sing. | his | iada | ege | iyeda | eyeakile |
| Plu. | their | āntat | atat | niyeda | niyiche |

m.—Qualitative Suffixes.

The suffixes of Andamanese are (radical) qualitative (expressing the class of a word) or functional (expressing its function in the sentence). The radical qualitative suffixes usually employed are :—

For Indicators (Nouns).

| BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAI. | KŌL. |
|-----------|----------------|-----------|----------------|----------|
| -da | -da, -nga, -ke | da | -lekile, -kile | -che, la |
| -la, -ola | -le | -le | ... | -le |
| -la, -lo | -o, -ō | -o | -ō | -o |
| -ba | | | | |

The first of these is usually dropped in Balawa, and in all the languages also unless the word is used as an integer, or sentence in itself. The second is an honorific, and is always added in full. The third is "vocative" and is suffixed to the name called out. The fourth is a negative: thus, *abliga-da*, a child; *abliga-ba*, not a child, a boy or girl.

For Explicators (Adjectives).

| | |
|-----|--------------|
| -da | ... |
| -la | ... |
| -re | -et, -ot, -t |

The second is honorific: the third applies to attributes, &c., of human beings. Generally these affixes follow the rule for those of the indicators (nouns).

For Predicators (Verbs).

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAI. | KŌL. |
|------------------------------|-----------|-----------------|------------|--------------|-----------------|
| (kill)s | -ke, -kan | -ke, -ken | -ke, -kan | -che, -chine | -ye |
| was (kill)ing | -ka | -ka, -te, -kate | -ya, -ye | -chike | -ye, -k |
| (kill)ed | -re | -t, -et | -nga, -nen | -chiken | -an, -wan, -nen |
| may-not (kill) ¹⁶ | -kok | -ton | -k | -chik | -k |
| (kill)ing | -nga | -t, -et, -ta | -nga | ... | -in |
| (kill)s not | -ba | -ba | -na | ... | ... |
| was (kill)ing not | -ta | ... | ... | ... | ... |
| will (kill) | -bo | ... | ... | ... | ... |

¹⁶ Preservative.

The last three suffixes are added to the suffix — *nga* in *Bēa*, thus :—

| | |
|--------|---|
| do | mâmi-nga-ba |
| I | sleep-ing-not (I am not asleep) |
| dona | mâmi-nga-bo |
| I | sleep-ing-will (I shall sleep) |
| kârama | dol-la kôp-nga-ta |
| bow | me-by cutt-ing-(was)-not (I was not making a bow) |

n. — The Functional Suffixes.

The usual functional suffixes in Andamanese are :—

Table of Suffixes.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BALAWA. | BOJIGYĀB. | JŪWAI. | KÔL. |
|-------------|------|----------------|--------------|----------|------------------|
| In, to, at | -len | -len, -kan, -a | -an | -an | -an |
| From | -tek | -te, -le | -e, -te, -le | -e, -lak | -e, -lake, -kate |
| To, towards | -lat | -lat | -lat | -late | -late |
| Of | -lia | -lege | -liye | -leye | -liye |
| For | -leb | -leb | -leb | -lebe | -lebe |
| After | -lik | -le | -le | -le | -le |

o. — The Functional Suffixes are Lost Roots.

Attempt at Recovery.

It may be taken as certain that the functional suffixes are roots, now lost to Andamanese recognition, agglutinated to the ends of words by the usual means in their languages, as exhibited in the prefixes; viz., by prefixing to them *l'*, *t'*, *k'* in the manner already explained. The roots of some of the suffixes can be fairly made out thns, from the *Vocabularies* :—

- (1) *Len, kan, a, an*, "in, to, at," seem to be clearly *l'*, *k'* + the root *en*, *e*, *ik*, "take, hold, carry, seize."
- (2) *Tek, te, le, e, lak, lake, kate*, "from" seem to be *l'*, *t'*, *k'* + the root *ik*, *i*, *eak*, "take away."
- (3) *Lat, late*, "to, towards," seem to be *l'* + the root *at*, *ate*, "approach."
- (4) *Lia, lege, liye, leye*, "of" seem to be *l'* + the root *la*, *ege*, *ii*, *eye*, "belonging to."
- (5) *Leb, lebe*, "for" seem to be *l'* + a root not traced.
- (6) *Lik, le*, "with, after" seem to be *l'* + the root *ik*, *e*, *ak*, "to go with, follow on."

IV. — PHONOLOGY.

a. — The Voice of the Andamanese.

The voice of the Andamanese, though occasionally deep and hoarse, is usually pleasant and musical. The mode of speech is gentle and slow, and among the women a shrill voice is used in speaking; but though the tendency is towards a drawled pronunciation, they can express their meaning quickly enough on occasion, too quickly, indeed, for a foreigner to clearly follow the minutiae of pronunciation without very close attention. The general tone of the voice in speaking is low.

On an examination of the prevalent vowels and vowel interchanges and tendencies in the languages of the South Andaman (Bojigngi) Group of Tribes, as described by Portman, it may be said that they relatively speak thus from a close to an open mouth :—

| | | |
|------------------|---------|---------------------------------|
| Jūwai | ... ... | ... with closed lips |
| Bojigyāb and Kôl | ... ... | with flattened lips |
| Balawa | ... ... | with open lips |
| Bēa | ... ... | with lips tending to open wide. |

It is interesting to note that the above results carry one straight from North to South.

b. — History of the Reduction of the Language to Writing.

The Andamanese speech, as it is now studied, was first committed to writing of a system devised by myself, which was an adaptation of the system, invented by Sir William Jones in 1784 for the Indian Languages, and afterwards adopted, with some practical modifications introduced by Sir W. W. Hunter, by the Government of India as the "Hunterian System". My method of writing Andamanese was subsequently modified for scientific purposes by Mr. A. J. Ellis in 1882, and having so highly trained and competent a guide, one cannot do better than use here a modification of his system, adapted to the needs of a general publication. Portman, unfortunately, has, in his publications, gone his own way to the great puzzle of students.

In this view, there is no necessity to say anything of the consonants used, and as to the vowels, the following table will sufficiently exhibit them in the Bēa Language:—

The Vowels in Bēa.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | ENGLISH. | BĒA. |
|-----------------|-----------|----------------------------------|---------|
| a ... idea, cut | alaba | o ... indolent | boigoli |
| ā ... cur | bā, yāba | ō ... pole | jōb |
| à ... casa | elākā | ō ¹⁷ ... konig (Ger.) | tō |
| â ... father | dâke | ò ... pot | pôlike |
| ă ... fathom | jarawa | ò ... awful | tâgo |
| e ... bed | ēmej | ú ... influence | bûkura |
| ē ... fade | âkâbâda | ū ... pool | pûdre |
| è ... pair | èr | ai ... bite | daike |
| i ... lid | igbadigre | au ... house | chopaua |
| î ... police | yâdi | àu ... haus (Ger.) | châu |
| ... ... ... | ... | òi ... boil | bòigoli |

c. — Peculiarities of Speech.

Stress in Andamanese is placed on every long vowel, or on the first syllable of the root or stem. Peculiarities of pronunciation in the South Andaman Languages are as follow:—

Bēa.

Sibilants tend to become palatals, s to ch: ò and ô are interchangeable: final open ð and ñ tend to a and e: t is an indistinct palato-dental.

Balawa.

t is palato-dental and lisped, cf. Irish pronunciation of English t and d. The a vowels tend to be drawn out: a to become o, and ð to become ô. There is also an incipient sandhi in words ending in gutturals: e. g., râk, pig; râg-döamo, pig's flesh.

Bojigyâb

ch is palato-dental and tends to t, and the ch of Bja tends in Bojigyâb to become s; i. e., palatals tend to become sibilants.

Jûwai.

Short vowels are not clearly marked: e and a are interchangeable: final e and è tend to i. Vanishing short vowels are common and are shown thus, fröngap: o is often drawled, to ò; penultimate e is lengthened to è, and stressed è is drawled to éa. There is sandhi of final and initial vowels in connected consecutive words. Dental, palatal and cerebral t all exist: palatals tend to dentals, ch to t: p tends to soften to ph and almost to f.

Kôl.

ë interchanges with ò: ð tends to ñ, cf. old English pronunciation gyarden for garden: e tends to ò: final open vowels are uncertain.

¹⁷ Found in Ongs only.

V.—THE NORTHERN AND OUTER GROUPS.

a.—Proofs of the identity of the Northern and Southern Groups of Languages.

Of the Five Languages of the Northern (Yēsewa) Group, two, Kōrā and Tābb̄, are still quite unstudied, the knowledge of the existence of the Tribes speaking them being of less than two years' standing; and the Language of the Yēre Tribe is very little known. Portman has, however, preserved long lists, unfortunately to be treated with much caution, of Kede and Chāriār words, together with many sentences, and it will be sufficient here to give a series of roots and stems, showing where the Northern and Southern Languages meet and how closely related they are by roots: premising that the syntax and word-structure of the Northern Group is identical with that of the Southern Group, and that affixes, notably the radical prefixes, are used precisely in the same way in both Groups. It is in the names for common objects and things that languages show their relationship, and the Bojigngiji and Yērewa Groups form no exception to this rule.

Table of some Bojigngiji and Yērewa Roots, showing a common origin.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BOJIGYĀB. | KEDÉ. | CHĀRIĀR. |
|----------------------|-----------|-----------|----------|----------|
| pig | reg | re | ra | ra |
| turtle (hawkbill) | tāu | tare | tôrō | tôrō |
| clam | chōwai | chowai | chowai | choa |
| grub | būtu | peti | pata | pata |
| fish | yât | taiye | tajeu | tajeu |
| bow (N.) | chōkio | chokio | chokie | chokwi |
| bow (S.) | karama | ko | ku | ku |
| wooden arrow | tirlech | tolô | tirleich | tirleit |
| wooden pig a. | pâligma | paligma | paligma | paligma |
| wooden a. head | châm | cham | chôm | chom |
| harpoon string | betma | kôri | betmô | luremô |
| bamboo bucket | gōb | bire | kup | kup |
| shell-dish | chîdi | kar | kar | kar |
| shell-cap (nautilus) | ôdo | kor | kur | kor |
| adze | wôlo | wole | wo | olo |
| baby-sling | chip | chepe | chips | chiba |
| cord-ornament | râ | ra | ro | iku |
| leaf-wrapper | kâpa | kaba | kôbo | kôbu |
| red-ochre | kôlob | keyep | keip | keip |
| stone hammer | tailibana | me | mio | meô |
| stone anvil | rârap | rarap | rôrop | rôrop |
| canoe | rôko | ro | ro | rua |
| c. outrigger | chârigma | charikma | chorok | chorok |

The same community of roots is to be seen in the names of the trees on the islands, establishing beyond doubt the close common origin of the Andaman Tribes of the Yērewa and Bojigngiji Groups, though it will, of course, be understood that in full form, with prefixes and suffixes, very nearly related words are in practice unintelligible to the ear. There are, equally of course, a great number of words, the roots of which, while common to each other in the Yērewa Group, differ entirely from those common to the Bojigngiji Group: thus—

Table of varying Bojigngiji and Yērewa Roots.

| ENGLISH. | BĒA. | BOJIGYĀB. | KEDÉ. | CHĀRIĀR. |
|----------------|-------|-----------|-----------|----------|
| ornamental net | râb | rap | chirebale | chirbale |
| jungle-cat | baian | beyan | chan | chan |
| belt, round | bôd | bel | tôtô | tôtô |
| b. flat, bread | rôgun | rogan | kuto | kudu |

| ENGLISH. | BEE. | BOGGRAB. | KEDR. | GHÀIÀN. |
|-----------------|---------|----------|--------|---------|
| iron fish-arrow | téhbod' | pöt | rautnl | rautul |
| lartee in comb. | tô | to | jotn | joto |
| honey | âja | koi | tumel | tumel |
| black honey | tôbul | tipal | maro- | mare |
| cockles | âla | tabe | bun | bun |

It is to be observed that in the above list, the compound stem in Bee for iron fish-arrow, *téhbod'*, is made up apparently of the roots *pöt* and *tal* in the other languages quoted: while *rautul* seems to have become transferred from the pig, *ra*, to the fish, *teyeu*. A similar transfer has taken place between *tumel*, *timel*, the "black honey" of the North, and *tôbul*, *tipal*, the "honey" of the South. All the above observations tend to confirm the close connection between the Tribes and the Languages of both Groups.

b. — The Outer Group (Önge-Järawa) examined.

In turning to the Önge-Järawa Group, one finds that the hostility of the Järawas, and the only recent friendliness of the Önges, combined with the inaccessibility of the island they inhabit, has caused the knowledge of their language to be but slight. However, we have the careful *Vocabulary* of Colebrooke made in 1790, and those made by Portman and M. Bonig¹⁸ just a century later. An examination of these affords sufficient results for the present purpose: viz., proof of the fundamental identity of the language of these people with that of the rest of the Andaman Tribes, and what is, perhaps, quite as interesting, proof that Colebrooke's informant really was a Järawa.

c. — The limited knowledge of it.

A comparison of such of Portman's words as can be compared with Colebrooke's, when shown with roots and affixes separated, and reduced to one system of transcription, produces the following results; noting that in their actual lists, both enquirers fell into the natural error of taking the prefixed inflected "personal pronouns" to be essential parts of the words to which they were attached: —

A List of Önge-Järawa Words.¹⁹

| ENGLISH. | COLEBROOKE'S JÄRAWA. | PORTMAN'S ÖNGEES. | BONIG'S ÖNGES. |
|----------|--|---------------------------|----------------|
| arm | pi-li | oni-bi-le | oni-bi-le |
| arrow | bato | bato'i | bato |
| bamboo | o-ta-li | o-da-le | o-da-le |
| basket | tero-nge | tô-le | tô-le |
| bead | tahi | taiyi (stone) | kuoi |
| beat | ingo-nîya (b. a person) | yokwo-be | on-yokwoö-be |
| belt | oto-go-le | are-kwa-ge | ... |
| bite | m-o-paka-be (b. me) | oni-baga-be (b. a person) | öni-baga-be |
| black | chigiu-go | be | i-kiu |
| blood | ko-che-nge | ga-che-nge | che-nge |
| Bene | ng-i-to-nge (your b.) | oni-da-ge | ... |
| bow | ta-nge (? wood), ta-hi (as shown in ng-i-tahi) (your bow). | aai | aë |
| breast | ka | ga-ka-ge | ga-ga-ge |
| canoe | lak-ke | du-nge | da-nge |
| chin | pi-to-nge (c. bone) | ibi-ta-nge (c. bone) | ... |
| cold | chôma | on-gatê-be (to be c.) | ... |
| cough | ingo-ta-lie (Pta-be) (to c.) | udu-be | udu-be |
| drink | m-inggo-be (I d.) | injo-be | ... |
| ear | kwa-ge | ik-kwa-ge | ... |
| earth | totanga-ge | tutano-nge | ... |

¹⁸ See Appendix C.

¹⁹ Roots shown in italics.

| ENGLISH. | CORBROOKE'S JAWA. | PORTMAN'S ÖNGES. | BONIG'S ÖNGES. |
|------------------|--|-----------------------------|---------------------|
| eat | iago-lo-lia (? imp. lo-ba) | öni-lokwa-le-be | öni-kwawo-be |
| elbow | m-ahā-lajebé (my e.) | sha-lagebbi | ... |
| eye | jebe | öni-jebbi | öni-jebbi |
| finger | m-ome (my f.) | ome | ono-boda-nge |
| fire | m-one (my f.) | tu-ke | tu-ke |
| fish | ga-bohi | cho-nge | chau-nge |
| hair | otti | ode | ode |
| hand | ng-oni (your h.) | ome | ön-ome |
| | m-oni (my h.). | ... | ... |
| head | tebe | oni-tolagibbi (man's head) | ön-ota-be |
| honey | lo-ke | tanjai | tanja ²⁰ |
| house | 'bede | bedai | ... |
| iron (adze-head) | dahu | döii | dau |
| jump | i-to-le (a j.) | akwa-tokwa-be (to j.) | ... |
| knee | ingo-le.ke (man's k.) | o-la-ge | ... |
| laugh | onke-me-be | onge-ma-be | ... |
| nail | m-o-bejeda-nge (my n.) | m-o-bedu-nge (my n.) | ... |
| neck | tohi | oni-ngito | ... |
| net | bato-li | chi-kwe | chi-kwe |
| nose | m-e-li (my n.) | oni-nyai-boi | ... |
| paddle | m-ekal (my p.) | taai | tae |
| path | echo-li | iche-le | ... |
| pig | swi | kwit | ... |
| pinch | ingi—gini—cha body-pinch-don't (don't pinch me). | oni-gini-be | gi-gine-be |
| plantain-tree | chole-li | yolö-le | chago-la, yaulo-la |
| pot | buchuhi | buchu | buchu |
| pull | toto-be (+ tigikwa) | toto-be (go) | ... |
| rain | oye | gujo-nge | beja |
| run | ng-aha-bela-be (you r.) | aha-bela-be | ... |
| scratch | ing-bea-be | a-kwea-be | ... |
| sing | goko-be | góhaba-be | ... |
| sit | ng-ongtahi (s. you) | on-antoki-be | namtokö-be |
| sleep | ng-omoka (s. you) | omoka-be | ... |
| sky | madamo | be-nge-nge (flattened out) | ... |
| sneeze | o-che-ke (a s.) | e-chi-be (to s.) | ... |
| spitting | inga-hwa-nge | öna-kwa-nge | ... |
| star | chilo-be (? shines) | chilome-be (moon: ? shines) | löia-köia |
| stone | wu-le | taiyi | kuöi |
| sun | che | eke | eke |
| swim | kwa-be | kwane-be | ... |
| take up | ng-a-toha (you t. u.) | genge-be | i-do-be (t. away) |
| teeth | m-ahoi (my t.) | m-akwe (my t.) | ... |
| tongue | ta-li | alan-da-nge | ... |
| walk | bunijwa-be | bwüö-be | bujo-be |
| water | m-igwe (my w.) | i-nge | i-nge |
| weep | wana-be | wana-be | wana-be |
| wind | tomjamie | tööte | tötte |
| wood (tree) | ta-nge | da-nge | tadz-nge |

²⁰ Bonig has lei for honeycomb.

In addition to this list of words offering comparisons, the following from Colebrooke can more, or less clearly be made out on the same lines:—

Colebrooke's Jārawa Words.

| ENGLISH. | JĀRAWA. | ENGLISH. | JĀRAWA. |
|-------------|--------------------|-------------|-----------------------------|
| (white) ant | do.nge | friend | padu |
| bat | yīt̄wi-le | leg | chi-ge |
| belly | ng-a-poi (your b.) | man | ng-amō-lan (you are a man?) |
| bind | to-be, toto-be | mouth | m-ona (my m.) |
| bird | lehe | seed | kita-nge |
| bracelet | a-le | smoke | bali-ngi |
| charcoal | wahi | swallow | bi-b̄ |
| crow | nahe | thigh | poi |
| flesh | wuhi | wash (self) | igna-doha-be |

Portman is unfortunately always difficult to follow in his linguistic statements, as they are so uncertain. His vocabularies are apt to differ frequently from the statements in his lists of sentences, and where his vocabularies can be compared they are inconstant: but at p. 781, Vol. II., of his *History of our Relations with the Andamanese*, he gives a comparative list of Jārawa and Önge words from his own observations:—

Portman's Önge-Jārawa Words.

| ENGLISH. | JĀRAWA. | ÖNGE. |
|----------|-----------|--|
| arrow | bartoī | bartoī |
| axe | douī | douī |
| bamboo | otale | ödale |
| bow | asii | aai |
| bucket | uhu | ukui |
| crab | kagai | kagaia |
| drink | injowa | injobe |
| eye | injamma | unijeböi |
| fire | tuhawe | tuke |
| foot | monge | muge |
| hair | enoide | möde |
| hand | mome | mome |
| iron | tanhi | doi (iron adze) |
| leaf | bebe | bebe |
| nautilus | gaai | gaai |
| navel | inkwa | onikwale |
| net | bortai | chikwe |
| nose | inama | uningaiböi |
| road | ischele | ichele |
| run | ahabelabe | akwebelabe |
| sea | etale | detale (Passage Id, an islet in the sea) |
| sit down | atōn | unantokobe |
| sky | baingala | bengonge |
| sleep | omohan | omokabe |
| string | etai | ebe |
| stone | uli | taiyi |
| tooth | anwai | makwe |
| water | enule | inge |

In some of the above words, where Colebrooke differs from Portman, it will be found that Colebrooke's forms, when reduced to a common transcription, are nearest the Önge.

d. — Recovery of Colebrooke's Järawa Vocabulary of 1790.

By pulling the words in the first list to pieces, the identity in race of Colebrooke's native (Järawa) with Portman's natives (Önges) will be at once evident. Many roots and affixes are common, and the words are clearly built up precisely as are all other Andamanese words by radical prefixes to roots relating fundamentally to the body and its parts and by qualitative suffixes. In addition to this, the prefixes are joined to the "personal pronouns" by pre-inflection in the manner peculiar to the Andamanese languages. And although we have nothing more on record of the Järawa tongue than Colebrooke's list, supplemented by Portman's, of any value, we have thus enough to establish the relation of Järawa and Önge as languages of the same Group, and the relation of both as languages of the same Family as the other Andamanese tongues.

In Järawa the *k* of Önge tends to interchange with *h*, and by inference the Järawas appear to use *ng* for the Önge *ng* and to say *i-nrgo* in place of *önge*.

Leaving the roots to explain themselves, the inflected forms of the "pronouns" show themselves, thus:—

Önge-Järawa "Pronouns."

| ENGLISH. | JÄRAWA. | ÖNGE. |
|-----------|---------|-------|
| I, my | m' - | m' - |
| You, your | ng' - | ng' - |

The qualitative suffixes appear to be as follow:—

Önge-Järawa Qualitative Suffixes.

| | | |
|--------------------|----------------------|--------------------|
| for "nouns" | -li, -le | -le |
| for "verbal nouns" | -nge, -nga, -ge, -ke | -nge, -ng, -ge, ke |
| for "verbs" | -be | -be, me |

The radical prefixes are given in a great variety of forms, which will probably disappear on closer knowledge of the languages.

Önge-Järawa Radical Prefixes.

| JÄRAWA. | ÖNGE. |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| ingo-, ingi-, inga-, onke-, öng-, ö- | { öni-, öna-, önu-, öno-, önan-, ina-, ine-, eng- en-, önge-. |
| uni | u- |
| o-, i-, öt- | ö-, ö-, a-, e- |
| i- | eje-, ichin-, e- |
| pi- | ibi-, ebe- |
| i- | akwa-, akwe-, ako-, ik-, ig-, i- |
| aha-, a- | aha-, a- |
| omo- | omo- |
| oto- | are- |
| | alan- |

Of these, as prefixes relating to mankind and its body, the following occur:—

öni-, a general prefix of the body, and then,

| | | |
|------------|------------------|---|
| Class I. | ... öni- | head, lip, neck, nose, navel, hip, testicles, stomach |
| Class II. | ... ik-, ig-, i- | cheek, ear |
| Class III. | ... ibi- | chin |
| Class IV. | ... o- | fist, knee, nail, throat |
| Class V. | ... alan | teeth |

That the relation between concrete words for the parts of the body and those for ideas belonging to them is shown by the prefixes, comes out neatly in *ik-kwa-ge*, ear : *ik-aibene*, deaf. So, too, the words *ichin-da-nge* and *ito nge* given for "bone" probably refer to a bone of Class II.

e. — Grammar of Önge.

Mr Bonig made a slight attempt at this by providing a few sentences and phrases. It is only an attempt, but it shows that the principles of the Önge are those of Andamanese generally. Thus we have:—

| | |
|---|---|
| • <i>ode</i> , hair. | <i>oduleda</i> , sick. |
| <i>on-ode</i> , animal hair. | ..... |
| <i>miga m'ode</i> , thy hair. | <i>miga-m'oduleda</i> , I am sick. |
| <i>ngi m'ode</i> , your hair. | <i>ngi m'oduleda</i> , you are sick. |
| <i>otangka g'ode</i> , { his } { your } hair. | <i>otangka g'oduleda</i> , { he is } { you are } sick. |
| <i>jeloto g'ode</i> , our hair. | <i>jeloto g'oduleda</i> , we are sick. |
| <i>gotaloto g'ode</i> , the hair of all of us. | <i>gotalota g'oduleda</i> , we are all sick. |
| <i>yetadakwe g'ode</i> , some one's ²¹ hair. | <i>yetadakwe²¹ g'oduleda</i> , some one is sick. |
| <i>otiedaka g'ode</i> , their hair. | <i>otiedaka g'oduleda</i> , they are sick. |

This would seem to give *m'* as to the prefix of 'my' and 'your,' *g'* as the prefix of all persons not the 'self.'

The few sentences are very obscure.

- on-ibiti dode*, what have you?
- öa-ibiti dai lekwale-be*, what are you saying?
- g'ati bama*, what do you call this?
- wanawa otang*, where is he?
- on-akuchöbe ötang*, call him.
- ötangka akuchwa*, you are called.
- g'oangkinkö-be*, you go away.
- le chune*, there it is.
- m'injaiche neñe*, I don't understand.

f. — Proof of the Identity of Önge-Jarawa with the other Groups.

Among an untutored people, so long isolated even from the other Andamanese, one would hardly look for many roots now in common with them, but the following, which occur in such short lists as those available, sufficiently establish a common origin for the Family:—

Some Roots common to the Andaman Languages.

| ENGLISH. | ÖNGE-JARAWA. | REMAINING LANGUAGES. |
|----------|--------------|----------------------|
| bat | witwi | wôt, wat, wot |
| cold | choma | chauki (Bêa) |

²¹ The sense is that the person referred is absent.

| ENGLISH. | ÖNGE-JÄRAWA. | REMAINING LANGUAGES. |
|-----------|-----------------------------------|---|
| red ochre | gyalap | bilap, upla |
| net | chi | chi |
| sneeze | che, chi | chiba (Bēa, Balawa) |
| "God" | Uluga : (<i>äluge</i> , thunder) | Puluga, Bilak (Bēa, <i>wul-nga</i> , storm) |
| turtle | chöbe | chokbe (Kede, Chāriär) |
| water | i, ig | ina (Bēa, Balawa) |
| bone | to | ta, toa (Bēa, Balawa) |
| wood | ta, da | ta, toa, to |

Colebrooke showed all sorts of impossible things to his Järawa to name, and one interesting result is the following :—

| ENGLISH. | JÄRAWA. | ÖNGE. |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| cotton-cloth } paper } | pa—nge — be flat - become - is | be — nge — be flat - become - is |

Of course, no Järawa had ever seen before anything approaching to either object, and this man's one expression for both means "it is (has been) flattened," which is what the savage meant to convey, when asked anything so impossible as to name them.

In Appendix B will be found a further list of Önge words to aid in the study of this interesting language.

g. — Derivation of Mincopie.

We are now in a position to solve a great puzzle of ethnographists for a century and more : why were the Andamanese called Mincopie by Europeans ? What word does this transcription represent ? It can now be split up thus :—

M-o——nge-be
I—man-kind-am
(I am an Önge)

Or, as the Järawas perhaps pronounce the expression, "M-inggo-be," or even "M-injo-be," I am an Inggo (Injo). The name given by the Önges to themselves is a "verbal noun," *o-nge*, man-being. So that when questioned as to himself by Colebrooke, his Järawa replied "M'inggobe," or something like it, which compound expression by mistranscription and misapprehension has become the well-known Mincopie of the general ethnological books in many languages for an Andamanese. The Önges call their own home, the Little Andaman, Gwabe-l-Önge. Järawa is a modern Bēa term, possibly radically identical with Yārewa, the Bēa name for the Northern Group of Tribes.

It is just possible that Colebrooke's Järawa misunderstood what was wanted altogether and simply said, "I am (will be, would be) drinking : m-inggo-be, I-drink-do."

I have now to record a great disappointment. The proof that the method herein adopted for recovering the Järawa Language was correct lay in the fact that the word *i-nge* for "water" was ascertained from a little Järawa boy captured during an expedition in February, 1902, and the identical word was quite independently unearthed from Colebrooke's and Portman's Vocabularies as Önge-Järawa for "water." The only other word clearly ascertained from the boy, *walu-nq* for "pig," has not been gathered independently as yet. This little boy was the last of the prisoners left, who were captured on that occasion, as the women and small children and girls were all returned and only two boys kept back for a while, in order to get their language, &c., from them. Of these, the elder died of fever, and on the very day that their language was fairly recovered, and we were in a position to set to work to learn quickly from him, the younger died very suddenly of pneumonia, without any warning illness.

APPENDIX A.

The Fire Legend in the Bojigngih Group.

(The Béa Version has been already given.)

Balawa Version.

Dim-Döra — le rite Keri-l'ong-tower — to Puluga l'i toago choapa l' — omo
 (a Man) longago (a Place) — by God his platform fire bringing
 — kate | ong ik akat-pöra puguru — t l' — a — re | Bolub ha Tarkör.
 — was | he taking all-men burn — t di — d | (a Man) and (a Man)
 ka Bilichau ongot oto — jurugmu — t — ia | ongot at — yhat mo
 and, (a Man) they in-the-sea-wen — t — did | they fish become
 — nga | ongot oso — nichal-ena — to Robwa-l'ar-tonga-baroij — a oho — dal
 — ing | they carry-taking — by (a Place) -village— in fire-mak-
 — nga l' — a — re
 — ing di — d

Portman's Rendering.— Dim-Döra, a very long time ago, at Keri-l'ong-tower, was bringing fire from God's platform. He, taking the fire, burnt everybody with it. Bolub and Tarkör and Bilichau fell into the sea and became fish. They took the fire to Robwa-l'ar-tonga village and made fires there.

Bojigyah Version.

Töl-l'oko-tim — an Bilik l'ong — pat — ye | Luratut | l'ong at ab — lechi — nga |
 (a Place) — in God sleep — did | (a Bird) | he fire bring — ing |
 Luratut l'ong — di — ye | kota ong Bilik l'ab — biki — ye | kota Bilik l'ong — konyi
 (a Bird) seiz — ed | then he God burn — t | then God awaken
 — ye | Bilik | l'ong at k — ye | ong e Luratut l'oto — toi-chu — nga |
 — ed | God | he fire seiz — ed | he then (a Bird) (with) fire hitt — ing |
 kota bol ong e Tarchal l'ote — toi-chu — ye | Chalter l'ong — di — ye |
 then again he then (a Man) (with) fire hit — did | (a Bird) seiz — ed |
 ong Lau-Cham — iea da — nga | Wota-Emi — en ota Lau-Cham | n'ong o — kadah — nga.
 he ancestors — to give — ing | Wota-Emi — in then ancestors | they fire-mak-ing.

Portman's Rendering.— God was sleeping in Töl-l'oko-tima. Luratut went to bring fire. Luratut caught hold of the fire, then he burnt God. Then God woke up. God seized the fire. He hit Luratut with the fire. Then again he hit Tarchal with the fire. Chalter caught hold of it. He gave it to the ancestors. Then the ancestors made fire at Wota-Emi.

Jawai Version.

Kwo-ton-mit — a Mon Mow — le | Bilik l'ab — and — t | peaker at — in top
 (a Place) — in Mr. Pigeon | God sleep — t | wood fire — with steaking |

*—chike at laiche Leeh — lin a | kotak a öko — kodak — chine at — lo
 — was fire the-late (a Man) — to he | then he fire-make — did fire — with
Karat-tatak — emi — in
 (a Place) — at

Portman's Rendering.—Mr. Pigeon stole a firebrand at Kuro-t'on-mika, while God was sleeping. He gave the brand to the late Lech, who then made fires at Karat-tatak-emi.

Köl Version.

Tôl-l'oko-tim — en Bilik — la pat — ke | Luratut — la Oko-Emi — t at kek — an |
 (a Place) — in God asleep — was | (a Bird) (a Place) — in fire too — k |
Kôlotat — ke | lin l — a — chol — an Min-tong-ta — kete | Min-tong-ta — kete — lak
 (a Man) — was | by (he) — wen — t (a Place) — to | (a Place) — to — by
l — ir — bil — an | Kôlotat l'ir — pin l'ir — dök — an | k'irim — kôdak — an |
 (it) — out-wen — t | (a Man) charcoal break — did | fire-make-did |
n'a n'otam — teyur — an | at — ke n'oie — tepur — an | Min-tong tôk-pôroich —
 they alive — became | fire — by (they) — alive — became | (a Place) village —
in Jangil | n'a l'oko — kôdak — an |
 in ancestors | they fire-make — did |

Portman's Rendering.—God was sleeping at Tôl-l'oko-tima. Lumtut took away fire to Oko-Emi. Kôlotat went to Min-tong-ta, (taking fire with him from Oko-Emi). At Min-tong-ta the fire went out. Kôlotat broke up the charred firewood and made fire again, (by blowing up the embers). They (the people there) became alive. Owing to the fire they became alive. The ancestors thus got fire in Min-tong-tôk village.

APPENDIX B.

Önge Vocabularies.

The "Outer Group" of the Andamanese (*Önges* and *Järawas*) bears the closest resemblance in customs, &c., i. e., assuming them to bear any at all, to the *Semangs* and *Aetas*, of all the Andamanese Tribes, and hence there is much interest exhibited in their languages. In this Appendix, therefore, is gathered together as much of the Önge Vocabulary as can be with any degree of safety extracted from Portman's *Andamanese Manual*, the information in which is not, however, unfortunately as clear as is desirable.

Subsequently to the compilation of this article, Mr. M. Bonig, Assistant Harbour Master at Port Blair, made, at the present writer's request, several trips, in January 1903, to the Little Andaman, the home of the Önges. He brought back with him three Önges from Kwatinyabòi Creek on the East Coast of that island, named Taköâte, Antiökâne, and Antideökâne, with the object of learning their language. When these men were taken home again, four others, named Idabòi, Gögamin, Agodèle and Nyäbòi, of the Palankwe Sept were induced to go to Port Blair. Mr. Bonig found that they understood the words he learnt from the East Coast, but altered a good many, showing that Portman's words were collected in Ekitia Bay, which belongs to the Palankwe Sept, and that differentiating dialects exist on the island.

In the first of the accompanying *Vocabularies*, wherever Portman's words have been verified by Mr. Bonig, the fact is shown in square brackets []. In the second are recorded the words as to which Mr. Bonig either entirely differed from Portman or which he collected in addition. In both the roots have been separated from the prefixes and suffixes.

I.—Portman's Vocabulary.

Bonig's variants in square brackets.

| | | | |
|----------------------|--|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| abundant | gene | cane-necklace | i-dedn-le |
| abuse (to) | önn-kweba-be | canoe | da-nge [ditto] |
| ache (to) | öni-dang-wule-be (? bones a.) | cast away (to) | yöböbine-he |
| acid | a-ñöii | cheek | gig-boi (your c.) |
| adze [chisel] | döli [deu] ²² | chin | ibi-da-nge |
| ant [small black] | chantibo-de [yan ^o] | clam | taga-le |
| apron (women's) | ga-kwinyoga-le | clap (to) | ako-hana bekwe-be |
| armlet [fibre] | iibi-kwe | clay (white [yellow]) | we [öö] |
| arrow (iron) [reed] | batoi [bato] | for smearing [the body] | |
| arrow (wood) | tota-le | cloud | baije |
| arrow (fish) | tome | cocoanut | da-ge (? wood, tree) |
| arrow (pig) | taköi | cold (to feet) | öngi-te-be |
| arrow-shaft | takete-le | come (to) | inai-öba-be, önu-kwange- |
| ashes | tongku-te [tong ^o] | copulate (to) | me [ön-aiya ^o] |
| awake (to) | löga-be | cough | gö-tölä-be |
| bag (of netting) | kumumwi, tangu-le | crab [large edible] | udu-ge [ditto] |
| bale out (to) | gaiye-böko-be | creek | kagaia [kaga] |
| bamboo | ö-da-le [o-da-le] | cyrena-s'hell (scraper) | kuai |
| banana | yolö-le | dance | totu-le |
| bark | gangwi | dead (to be) | ön-ola-ge |
| barb (arrow) | tome | deaf | bechame-me |
| basket | tö-le [tö-le] | dish (wooden) | ik-aibene |
| beard | ön-gu-bo-de | drink (to) | da-nge-, (wood) |
| beat (to) | [ön-]yökwo be [yökwo ^o] | dugong | töba-nge |
| beetle [dung] | todanchu [^o ran ^o) | ear | injo-be |
| belt (round) | m-are-kwa-ge (my b.) | earth | two-we |
| belt (broad, flat) | m-ino-kwe (my b.) | eat (to) | ik-kwa-ge |
| binder | tu-kwe | ebb tide | tutano |
| bite (to) | ön-i-baga-be [ditto] | embrace | ön-i-lokwale-be |
| black | be | eye | ga-de |
| blood | ga-che-nge [che-nge] | fall (to) | ku-ge |
| blow (to) [out fire] | a-kwöbö-be [ta-kuwö ^o] | fastening (a) | ön-i-jeböi [ditto] |
| boil (to) | tamboi-(be) | feather | i-teka-be [gi- ^o] |
| bone | iohin-da-nge | fern (sp.) | gwi-kwe |
| bone (human) | ön-i-da-nge | fever (to have) | gö-de |
| bow | a-ai [a-ë] | fight (to) | tomojai, laksakai |
| break (to) | gi-kwa-be [gi-kwa ^o] | finger | ungi-te-be |
| breast | ga-ka-ge [ga-ge] | fire | ön-ukwe-be |
| breathe (to) | kwaiöö-be | fish | ome |
| broom | da-ge | fist | tu-ke [ditto] |
| bucket (wood) | ukwi [uku] | flip (to) | cho-ge [chau ^o] |
| bucket (bamboo) | kubuda-nge | flood tide | o-beke [ön- ^o] |
| butterfly | bebe-le [ditto] | fly (a) | ön-i-tötöge-be |
| call (to) | ön-gyö-be, ön-ai-waba-be | | kobakwe-le |
| cane | tati [ditto] | | ngonoi [ngöno] |

²² This reads like a corruption of the Indian and Burman *dä*, a universal instrument used as a knife, axe, adze, sword, &c., as the result of recent intercourse with strangers.

| | | | |
|---------------------|-------------------------------------|---------------------|--|
| food (to take) | gi-da-be | murder (to) | öläjäji-be |
| foot | m-n-ge (my f.) [ön-u ^o] | mail * | m-öbeda-nge (my n.) |
| forbid (to) | go-bokwe-be | nutilus-shell (cup) | gasai |
| glad (to be) | a-kiokö-be | navel | ön-i-kwa-le [ön-o ^o] |
| go (to) | ön-i-töto-be (come) | neck | öu-a-ngito |
| God | Ulu-ge | necklace | m-a-ngitoke (my n.) |
| good | i-wado | net | chi-kwe [ditto] |
| grass | tokwongöye | nose | ön-i-nyaiboi |
| green | totanda-nge | orchid (sp.) | köyö |
| gun | ön-ini-nye | ornament (of shav- | kwibo-le |
| hai | m-ode (my h.) [ode] | ing) | |
| hand | m-ome (my h.) [ön-ome] | outrigger | i-bedu-ge |
| head-dress (cane) | ng-i-deda-le (your h. d.) | paddle | taai [tai] |
| heavy (to be) | ga-tukwö-be | pandanus fruit | ba-le |
| hip | ön-i-boi | path | iche-le |
| hiss | ng-ik-iki (you h.) | peel | gangwi |
| hit (with arrow) | gai-be | pig | kwi |
| honey | tanjai [°ja] | pinch | ön-i-gini-be [gi-gine ^o] |
| hook (for fish) | tome | prick | ön-i-takwa-be |
| hop (to) | ichin-kwöle-be | pot (cooking) | büchu (tö-le, its case) |
| hot (to be) | jonjome-be | [ditto] | |
| how much ? | chio ? | quick, be ! | ingkö ! |
| hum (to) | gojai | rain | gujö-nge |
| hungry (to be) | ön-gi-ai-me | red ochre | alame |
| hut | bedai [ditto] | red wax | kwengane |
| I, my | mi | resin | mone [ditto] |
| Indian (an) | i-nene | ringworm | jwichwi |
| iguana | giti | rope | kwöla-ge |
| iron (knife) | lea | rab (to) | eb-ele-be |
| jawbone (human) | ang-bo-de | run (to) | [ön] akwe-bele-be [akwa-beta ^o] |
| ornament. | | saline | ngie |
| jump (to) | akwa-tokwa-be | saliva | ina-kwe-nge |
| kick (to) | ön-i-tekwöme-be | salt | inje |
| kiss (to) (? smell) | nyönyö-be | sand | belai |
| knee | m-ola-ge (my k.) | scar | ön-i-base |
| kneel | ön-o-lakwöchö-be | scratch (to) | akwe-ö-be |
| laugh (to) | önge-ma-be | sea | i-nge (water) |
| leaf | be-be (to be flat) | shampoo (to) | ön-i-ö-be |
| lick (to) | gi-tome-be | shark | kadu |
| lie down (to) | ng-añyi-be (you l. d.) | sharp | gi-echare |
| lip | ön-gumne | sharpen (to) | totökwe-be |
| lizard [sp.] | kö-ge [koichai] | shave | ön-o-tale-be |
| man | ön-i-agü-le (married m.) | shell | todandwi |
| mangrove | tun-da-nge (tun-tree) | shoot (arrow) | gai-be [ditto] |
| mangrove fruit | kwea | sing (to) | gü-gaba-ha [nyö ^o] |
| marry (to) | ön-ya-be | sit (to) | ön-nantökö-be [nantoka ^o] |
| mat (sleeping) | emai | skin | gangwi (peel) |
| micturate | ö-chölö-be | sky | bengo-nge (what is flat) |
| moon | chile-me [chilo-me] | sleep (to) | emo-ka-be |
| mouse | ala-nge | | |
| much | liwa-nge | | |

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|-------------------|----------------------------------|
| small | baiai | thorn | tundankie |
| smoke | ön-o-taboi | throat | ön-ngito |
| snake * | tomogwi | throw | waikwô-be |
| snake (sea) | tebu-le | thunder | ölu-ge ("God") |
| sneeze | é-chi-be | tiptoe (to be on) | ön-u-jagaiö-be |
| sore (a) | ön-i-bai [ditto] | tongue | alan-da-nge |
| spill (to) | gi-bu-be | tooth | m-a-kwe (my t.) |
| spine | ön-o-noda-kwoi | torch | to-kwe [ti-kwe] |
| spitting | ön-a-kwa-nge [ön-akwi?] | tray (for food) | toba-ge |
| sprinkle (to) | ön-a-nadi-be | tumble (to) | i-teka-be |
| squeak (to) | gi-lako-be | turtle | uadela-nge [ditto], takwatoai |
| squeeze (to) | ön-ege-be | turtle eggs | kwagane |
| stand | doka-be | tusk (pig) | a-kwo |
| stomach | ön-a-nga-nge | umbrella (leaf) | o-modu |
| stone | taiyi | untie (to) | i-lebu-be |
| stool (to) | ön-i-yu-be | vomit (to) | ö-bulö-be |
| stretch (to) | on-a-kwombwokede-be | walk | bujio-be [bujo-be] |
| stretch (to s. oneself) | gi-götö-be | water | i-nge [ditto] |
| strike (to) | kwoke-be | wax (white bees') | chileme |
| string (to) | e-be | weep (to) | wana-be |
| stroke (to) | on-a-oe-be | whetstone | tijio-be |
| sun | eke [ditto] | whisk (for flies) | tomo-ge |
| surf | balame | whistling | on-i-anga-le |
| swallow (a) | tugede-le | white | tonkute |
| sweep (to) | tote-be | wife | ön-i-au-le |
| swim (to) | kwanc-be | wind | totôte [ditto] |
| take away (to) | ge-akingko-be | wound | ön-i-ba-le [i-bäi] |
| take hold (to) | ge-nge-be | yawn (to) | ön-a-langötö-be |
| tattoo (to) | ng-ulukwone-be (you t.) | yes | on-a-lajje |
| tear (to) | i-dokwo-be | | |
| testicle | on-i-kwö-ge [ditto] | | |

II. — Bonig's Vocabulary.

Portman's variants in square brackets.

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| adze (small, for canoes) | gan-kwe | burn | duleji-be |
| ant (large, red-tree) | lalu-lalu | burn (oneself) | ön-o-mama-me |
| arm | ön-ibile | buttock | ön-nena-böi |
| arise | dobinkate-be | call (to) | ön-a-kuchö-be |
| arrive | gi-gu-be | | [ön-gyö-be : ön-ai-waba-be] |
| awake (to) | gi-tanji-be [löga-be] | carry | yegote-be |
| bad | i-bi-te | catch (to) | gi-bogulä-be |
| bath | ön-a-kwantamule | chew | ön-i-lokwale-be |
| bee | gu-ki | child | o-chile |
| bird | no-kai | climb (to) | o-twake-be |
| black | j-kiu [bë] | close (to be) | gai-chebene-be |
| blind | nebobene | cloth | kwelabë |
| bottle | bota-le | cohabit (to) | ga-ele-be [gö-tölk-be] |
| breast, to support the (women) | ön-wetaka-be | collect, heap up (to) | gi-mbu-be |
| bring back | ga-tiko-be : che-be | cook (to) | gi-wolai-be |
| brow | ejala | coral | taie |
| bundle (palm-leaf) | na-nge | crab (large, edible) | kaga |

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| creep (to) | ön-a-lakachyö-be | hurt (to) | ön-ega-be |
| cry (to) | wana-be | iron (or any metal) | take |
| cut (oneself) | akite-be | knife | chule [lea] |
| cut (iron) | ugatike-be | knife-handle | chule-yan-kwe |
| cut (with a knife) | gi-ji-be | leaf | tomoji |
| cut (with an adze) | gü-ete-be | lift (to) | ga-ntakwa-be |
| dance (a) | wanda-nge | light (lamp) | mone |
| day | ekuje | limp (to be) | ga-ji-be |
| deep | öma | little | ö-kiwea |
| dirty | ga-bitima | liver | gide |
| dog (generic term) | i-kita : wöme | lizard (flycatcher) | ketekete-le |
| dog (female) | chinge-ge | lost (to be) | logukonji-be |
| dog (male) | takwado | man | gae-le [ön-agile], married m.] |
| dress (to) | töikute-be | month | ön-a-ngume |
| drift (to) | gi-buko-be | mosquito | kwina-nge |
| [dry | unkata ?] | mushroom | kwatikwa-ge |
| dull | ngi-kuno | night | o-tebebelan |
| eat (to) | ön-i-kwawo-be [ön-i-lokwale-be] | orchid (sp.) | tomotui |
| egg | aie | pack (a bundle, to) | gi-kwe-be |
| empty out (to) ²³ | gi-bu-be | pain | ön-a-ngitöwe |
| fern (sp.) | tikwanchute-le | perspiration | ön-o-tage-le |
| fetch (to) | alemaji-be | pigeon (imperial) | umu-ge |
| fill | wötangle-be | pigeon (Nicobar) | tututu |
| few | giwe | plantain | chagola ; yaulola |
| fin | gi-bole | present (to) | gi-bone-be |
| finger | ön-o-boda-nge [ome] | rain | beja [gujö-nge] |
| finished ! (I have no more !) | ön-a-ngele | recover (lost article, to) | gi-tekwabeche-be |
| fire-brand | gi-dakwe | recovery (from illness) | gi-gangula |
| firewood | name | red | i-jedo |
| flame (to flame up of fire) | booji-be | return (come back, to) | ön-i-katako-be |
| flower | totibuli | rub (to) | ön-kweta-be |
| forehead | ejala | run away (to) | alemakö-be |
| forenoon | ekteome | row (paddle, to) | ö-glanji-be |
| fry (to) | gi-ga-be | scar | ge-ki-nge [ön-i-bare] |
| full (of the belly) | i-bö-dia | screwpine | mane |
| give (to) | ebbieka-be | see (to) | ga-teaba-be |
| go (to) | gü-angkinko-be [ön-i-töte-be] | shallow | i-kata |
| hammer | kaula-le | sharp | ngi-gi-lekuta [gi-echare] |
| head | ön-ota-be | shave (to) | kwedale-be [ön-o-tale-be] |
| headache | o-duleda | shell | tenje [todandwi] |
| hide (to) | ön-a-kwo-be | sick | o-duleda |
| hold (to) | ge-nge-be | silent (to be) | kwemetamöi-be |
| hook (large, iron) | adu | skate (fish) | dugadode |
| honeycomb | lai | skin | gati [gangwi, peel] |
| hot (to be) | o-bentelenene-be [jonjome-be] | small | mintainene : giwe [baiai] |
| | | smear (the body, to) | ön-a-kwawe-be |
| | | smoke (to) | nanto-be |
| | | speak (to) | gi-lekwalinka-be |
| | | spear | gi-takwatewe |

²³ But see "collect, heap up."

| | | | |
|---------------------------|--|------------------------|----------------------|
| star | kōiakdōia | tickle (to) | ön-a-ngegede-be |
| stear | gi-ngüü-be | to-morrow | ekajetu |
| sting (of a mosquito, to) | ön-i-bujinkö-be | tongs (bamboo, to use) | wako-be |
| sting (of a bee, to) | ön-a-e-be | tortoise-shell | o-dati |
| stone | kwöi [taiyi] | turn over (to) | jule-be |
| stop (to) | kwalakaji-be | understand! | ön-ilokalema! |
| stout | ön-i-deame | wash (to) | gi-kwantai-be |
| sunrise (to) | (eke) ²⁴ gi-bete-be | wax (black bees') | tibii |
| sunset (to) | (eke) ²⁴ gi-otukitibieji-be | white | öikala |
| sweep (to) | gatie-be [tote-be] | whistle | gwana [ön-i-anga-le] |
| take away (to) | i-do-be [ge-akingkö-be] | wood | tada-nge |
| tall | midokwalenene | yam | kalu |
| throw | toko-be [waikwö-be] | yellow | gi-kita |
| tick | nana-ge | yes | niai [ön-a-haije] |

APPENDIX C.

The Andamanese Tribal Names according to the Aka-Bēa Language.

| Full. | Abbreviated. | Full. | Abbreviated. |
|----------------------------------|--------------|--------------------|--------------|
| Äkä-Chäriär-(da) | ... Chariar | Äkä-Bojigybäb-(da) | ... Bojigyb |
| Äkä-Körä-(da) | ... Kora | Äkä-Belawa-(da) | ... Belawa |
| Äkä-Täbo-(da) | ... Tabo | Äkä-Bēa-(da) | ... Bea |
| Äkä-Yëre-(da) (also Äkä-Järo-da) | Yere | Önge | Önge |
| Oko-Jüwai-(da) | ... Juwai | Järawa-(da) | ... Järawa |
| Äkä-Köl-(da) | ... Kol | | |

Below is given a table of the names given to themselves and each other by the five South Andaman Tribes or Bojigngiji Group, traditionally sprung from one tribe. It brings out the following facts:—in each language of the Group the prefixes and suffixes differ much and the roots remain practically the same throughout for the same sense. These facts strongly indicate one fundamental tongue for this group of languages.

Table of the names for themselves and each other used by the five South Andaman tribes or Bojigngiji group.

| Sense. | Tribe. | Bēa. | Balawa. | Bojigyb. | Juwai. | Kol. |
|----------------------|----------------------------|-------------------|--------------------|------------------|------------------------|-------------------|
| Fresh-water | <i>Bēa</i> ... | Äkä-Bēa-da | Akat-Bea | O-Bea-da | Oko-Beye-lekile, | O-Bea-che |
| Opposite-side | <i>Balawa</i> ... | Äkä-Bala-wa-da. | Akat-Bale | O-Pole-da | Oko-Pole-lekile, | O-Pole-che |
| Our language | <i>Bojigyb</i> ... | Äkä-Bojig-yäb-da. | Akat-Bojiguab-nga. | O-Puchik-war-da. | Oko-Puchik-yar-lekile, | O-Puchik-war-che. |
| Patterns cut on bows | <i>Juwai</i> ... | Äkä-Jüwai-da. | Akat-Juwai | O-Juwai-da | Oko-Juwai-lekile, | O-Juwai-che. |
| Bitter or salt taste | <i>Kol</i> ... | Äkä-Köl-da | Akat-Kol | O-Kol-da | Oko-Kol-lekile, | O-Kol-che |

So too Yëre, Jeru or Järo for the Äkä-Yëre Tribe means a (sort of) "canoe" in all the languages and Önge means "a man" on its own language.

²⁴ eke means the sun.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

SURVIVAL OF OLD ANGLO-INDIAN COMMERCIAL TERMS.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

ANY one who has had occasion to struggle with such a book as Stevens' *New and Complete Guide to the East India Trade*, 1775, or with Anglo-Indian terms occurring in the old Company's *Factory Records* and similar documents will appreciate the value of settling precisely what is meant by Anglo-Indian commercial terms. There is a chance of doing this in certain instances by an examination of the Indian commercial newspapers of to-day, as many more of the old terms have survived in commerce than would at first appear possible to the outside public.

Here are a few taken from a Supplement to *Capital*, published in Calcutta in 1902.

Surviving Anglo-Indian Terms.

Coir. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1510.

"Coirfibre. Demand has somewhat improved."

Doll; dal. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1673.

"Dal or split peas. Demand for all kinds is slack Masuri dal and Khari Masuri Oridh or kolye dal gram dal greenpeas dal arhar dal khasri dal khasari or mutta."

Gingerly. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1726.

"Jinjeli, sesamum or tilseed oil. Prices continue very high owing to light supply."

Gunny. Oldest quotation in Yule, c. 1590.

"Australian Gunny Market, bags and bagging."

Gram. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1702.

"Gram supplies have overtaken deliveries."

Golah. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1785.

"Salt. The market continues steady and the sales during the week are as follows; ex ships ex golahs"

Madapolam (piece-goods). Oldest quotation in Yule, 1673: see Bowrey's *Countries round the Bay of Bengal* (1669—1679), p. 100, n. 1.

"Grey Madapolam."

Myrabolam. Oldest quotation in Yule, c. B. C. 840.

"Myrabollams There has been no life in the trade: for export to the Australian Colonies for some Bimlinuts."

Shellac. Oldest quotation in Yule (s. v. Lac), c. 1343.

"There is a fair enquiry for ready parcels Button lac, a small business is passing: garnet there is nothing to report There is very little movement 300 cases button arrived this week in free condition for the American market."

Tincal. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1525.

"The article is selling superior Cossipore is reaching."

Weights.

Maund. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1610.

[This very old word and its variants at the present day are well worth comparing with the old books.]

"The Indian Maund is 82 $\frac{1}{2}$ lbs.: the Factory Maund is 74 lbs. 10 oz. 11 dwt.: the Bazar Maund is 82 lbs. 2 oz. 3 dwt.: 1 cwt., i. e. 112 lbs., equals Bazar 1 md. 14 seers 8 $\frac{1}{2}$ chittacks."

Modern Terms.

Kerosine Oil. "Indian named brands Mango, Ram, Sumatra, Rangoon."

Rice. "Commercial terms for Bengal Rice: table, white Patna, Brushed Seeta, Seeta, gross Seeta, chunichalla, khud or B. T., cleaned gross, prime Patna, gross Patna."

Names for Boiled or Brown Rice: "Boiled Patna, ballam, nagra, moonghy, zarec, kazla, kuttuck."

Sugar. Names for Indian sugar: "Cane, Benares, Shomsara, Dummah, Vally Gour, Bobarab, Akharab, Goburdanga and Jadurhat Dollo, Akrab."

Names for refined sugar: "Cossipore, Cossipore Grossery, Madras and Arcot granulated, China granulated, Penang, Mauritius."

Tea. Names for Indian tea: "Assam, Darjeeling, Sylhet, Darjeeling, Dooars, Terai."

HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS.

BY H. A. ROSE, I.C.S.

(Concluded from Vol. XXXVI. p. 48.)

THE LEGEND OF MAHĀSTU-DĒOTĀ.

Mahāstū, doubtless a corruption of **Maha-Siva**, is the god who gives his name to the **Mahāstū** Hill near Simla and other places in the Simla hills. In the legend that follows he appears in quadraple form as four brothers, just as **Bāṇa** Sur had four sons.³⁵

When Krishna disappeared at the end of the Dwāpar Yug, the Pāṇḍavas followed him. On their road to **Balir-kasharam** they crossed the Tons, and Rājā Yudhiṣṭhīr, struck with the beauty of the place, ordered Biswā Karmā to build a temple there. Here the Pāṇḍavas, with Draupadi, halted 9 days. They named the place **Hanol**, and thence journeyed by the Gangotri and Jamnotri ravines, through Kedār, to Badri Nāth, where they disappeared, and the Kali Yug began.

At its commencement demons wandered over the **Uttarā Khanda**, devouring the people and plundering towns and villages. The greatest of the demons was Kirmar, who had Beshi, Sengi, and a host of minor demons under him at Maindarth, on the Tons, whence they ravaged towns and villages, until the people sought refuge in cliffs, caves, and ravines. The demons devoured every one who came in their way. Once the seven sons of Hūnā Brahman, who practised penance in the Deoban forest, went to bathe in the Tons river and encountered Kirmar, who devoured them all.

As they did not return for some time, their mother set out in search for them, but when she reached the river without getting any clue to her sons, she sat down on its bank and began to weep bitterly. Meanwhile, Kirmar, passing by, was struck with her beauty and asked why she wept. Kirtakā turned to him and said her seven sons had gone to bathe in the river and had not returned home. Hearing this, Kirmar said, "I am fascinated by thy beauty. If thou wilt accede to my heart's desire, I will extinguish the fire of my heart and will be grateful to thee and try to help thee in this difficulty. I am a brave man, descended from Rāwan. I have won the kingdom of these hills through the strength of my own arm."

The chaste wife was terrified at these words and they increased her grief. In her distress she began to pray, saying, "O Lord, the giver of all boons, everything rests with thee."

Dohā (couplet).

Puttar dukh dukhid bhai.

Par-bal abalā dī,

Satti ko sat jāt hai :

Rākho, Ishwar, lāj.

I was distressed at the loss of my sons.

To-day I am a woman in another's power,

A chaste woman whose chastity is like to be lost:

O God, keep my chastity!

After this she took her way home, and by the power of God the demon's sight was affected, so that Kirtakā became invisible to him as she passed. She then told the story to her husband, saying with clasped hands that Durgā Dēvi would be pleased with her devotion and destroy the demons, for she alone was endowed with the power of averting such evil. The demons had corrupted religion, outraged chastity, and taken men's lives.

On hearing this, her husband said they would go and worship **Hat-koti Ishwari Mata**. So Hūnā went to the goddess with his wife. He first offered her flowers, and then prayed to **Hateshwari Durga** with the eight hands. While he prayed he unsheathed a dagger

* Temple's *Legends of the Punjab*, III., pp. 384 et seqq.

and was about to cut off his own head with it, when the goddess revealed her spirit to him, caught his hand and said, "I am greatly pleased with thy devotion. Go to the mountains of Kashmir, pray to God, and all thy desires will be fulfilled. Shiv-ji will be pleased and will fulfil thy desires. Go there cheerfully and there will be no obstacle in thy way."

Obeying the order of the goddess, Hūnā went at once, and in a few days reached his destination. After his departure, he gave up eating grain and lived on vegetables. He also gave up clothes, using the bark of trees for his dress. He spent most of his time in worship, sometimes standing on one toe. When Shiv-ji was pleased with him, the spirit of the four-armed image addressed him, saying, "I am greatly pleased with thee: ask me any boon, which thou desirest."

On hearing these words from the god Siva, Hūnā clasped his hands and said, "O Siva thou hast power to kill the demons. Thou hast power to repel all enemies and to remove all difficulties. I pray and worship the Ganges, the saviour of the creatures of the three worlds, which looks most beautiful as it rests on thy head. There are no words to describe thy glory. The beauty of thy face, which is so brilliant with the serpents hanging round thy neck, beggars all description. I am highly indebted to the goddess of Hāt-kōṭ, at whose feet I bow my head, and by whose favour I and my wife are so fortunate as to see thee in the Kali Yug."

Uttar Khand men rākshas basē, manukhoñ kā kartē dhār;

Kul mutuk barbāl kiyā, bāddi hogā ujār.

Tum hī Rudar, tum hī Bishnū Nand Gopāl.

Dukh hād sur sāthuñ ka; mārō rākshas tat-kāl.

Sāt puttar mujh dās ke nahāne gaye jab parbhāt:

Jab ghāṭ gayē nādi Tons ke jinko Kirmar khādyo ek sāth.

The demons who dwelt in the Northern Region are preying upon the people.
They have laid waste the country and the people have fled.

Thou only art Rudar (Siva); thou alone art Bishnū Nand Gopāl.³⁶

The sages and devotees are in distress; kill the demons at once.

Early in the morning the seven sons of me thy slave went to bathe.

When they reached the banks of the River Tons, Kirmar ate them at once.

The god Siva was pleased at these words and said, "O Rikhi, the people of the Kali Yug being devoid of religion have lost all strength. I admire thy sincere love and true faith, especially as thou didst not lose heart in worshipping me. Hence all thy desires shall be fulfilled and I have granted thee the boon asked for. Be not anxious, for all the devils will be killed in a few days."

Dohā (couplets).

Biddi kiyo jab Bipra ko, diyē akshat, phūl, chirdg.

Sakti rūp pahle pargat gaī, Maindārath ke bāg.

Ghar jāo Bipra āpne, rākho mujh par tēk.

Shakti rūp ke aṅg se, ho-gayē deb anēk.

Pargatē aṅg sē debtē, rōm rōm sē bīr.

Istri sahit biddi kiyō: 'rākho man mēn dhīr.'

When (the god) bade the Brāhmaṇa farewell he gave him rice, flowers, and a lamp.
A Sakti (goddess) first appeared in the garden at Maindārath.

Go home, Brāhmaṇa, and place reliance on me.

Countless divinities arose from the body of the Sakti.

Gods appeared from her body, and heroes from her every hair.

She dismissed him with his wife saying: 'keep patience in thy heart.'

³⁶ Explained to mean 'the son of Nand, i. e., Kṛishṇa.'

When the god gave Hūnā Rikhi leave to go, he gave him rice, a vessel containing flower and a lamp, and said, "O Rishi, go home and keep thy confidence in me. A Sakti (goddess) will first appear in the garden at Māindārath. Numerous demons will come out of her thimble, and every hair of her body will send forth a hero. Do not lose courage, bat go home with thy wife. Keep the garland of flowers, the rice, and the lamp which I have given thee concealed beneath the *pīpal* tree which stands in the garden behind thy house, and perform the customary daily worship of all these. Light this lamp and offer me flowers and incense on the *amāras* of Bhādon and thereafter worship me with a sincere heart. Also perform a *jīgarā*³⁷ on that date for one day and night. By so doing, thou wilt, on the third day, observe a Shakti emerge from the ground with a fountain. Flames will then be visible all around. From her forehead and other limbs will spring gods, who will be named after the member from which they were born. The four gods, called the **Nag Chauth or Mahasu**, will appear on the 4th of the light half of Bhādon. Those who appear on the following day, i. e., the 5th, will be called **Kiyāti and Banar**. Moreover, many distinguished above the rest by their courage will spring from the Shakti's hair. They will kill the demons and give great happiness to the people. They will fix their capital at Hanol, which was founded by the *Fāndavas*."

When this boon was granted to Hūnā Rikhi, he walked round the god and paid him obeisance. After this he went his way homewards and the god disappeared.

After many days the Rikhi reached home with his wife, and acting on the god's directions carefully placed the lamp, flowers, and rice on the prescribed spot. On the *amāras* of Bhādon he worshipped and lighted the lamp. On the third day a fountain sprung up, wherein the Shakti appeared.

Chaupai.

*Bhūmī sē upni Mātā Deo Lārī.
Thān Deo Mātā ko Kongo re Bārt.*

Mother Deo Lārī appeared from the earth.
The temple of Deo Mata (was named) the Bārī of Kongo.³⁸

*Tū hē yog, yugtē, tū hē yog mātē.
Dē, Mātā, bāchan dē pāinḍē menā lārī.*

Thou only art devotion and the law, thou art the mother of the age.
O Mother, give us thy promise to lead us on the (right) path.

*Mātē balē Mātē rē agnī rē geṭhē.
Bothā rājā Mahāsū hoī sūraj re bhekhdē.*

On the Mother's head burnt a fire of faggots.
Mahāsū was born with lustre like the rays of the sun,

*Chhātī sē mārtē Chakkār chālī,
Janamā Chāldā, Mātā re lālī.*

Placing her hand round her breast,
The Mother brought forth her son, Chāldā.

*Mātā Deo Lārī nē hāth kīē khājē.
Bāshuk Pabāsī dono hāth dō jharē.*

Mother Deo Lārī raised both her hands.
Bāshuk³⁹ and Pabāsī sprang from her two hands.

³⁷ *Jīgarā* (from Sanskrit *jīgarana*) means keeping awake the whole night in devotion.

³⁸ By Mahāsū, because it was close to his own temple.

³⁹ Bāshuk is also called Chāldā, i. e., 'the goer,' the serpent.

Chauth men upne Mahâsû châr.

Panchmî hût tilde dî Deo Kyâlû Bânâr.

The four Mahâsûs were born on the fourth.⁴⁰

On the fifth were created the gods Kiyâlû and Bânâr.⁴¹

Shêr Kâliâ Kyâlû hoi Bothé re wastr.

Romô hoë romô de nau lâkha bir.

Shêr Kâliâ and Kiyâlû became the ministers of Bothâ.⁴²

Nine lâkhs of heroes sprang from every hair.

Hâth jorë Hund gayd pairë pê jâi :—

'Sab manukh lië, Malkâ, râkshasê khut.'

Hunâ fell at her feet with clasped hands :—

'All mankind has been devoured by the demons, O Mistress.'

Hâth bandê pair shir lâya jânâ :—

'Maindârath Tâlo dâ Kirmar dâno.'

With clasped hands and feet he placed his head on her knees :—

'Kirmar, the demon, (dwells) in the Maindârath Lake.'

Kâthâ hoi sainâ Maindârath ke bâg.

Châr bhâsi Mahâsû karđi se âg.

The armies were arrayed in the garden of Maindârath.

The four Mahâsû brothers were like the fire.⁴³

Hunâ jaïsé rîchié ati binti lâi :—

Isi ke kâran châr Mahâsû dî.

Hunâ the Rishi made a great prayer :—

'The four Mahâsûs for this purpose have come.'

Sabhi jabi debté né binti lâi :—

'Kyâd dewé âgyâ Deo Lâti Mâi !'

All the gods made a prayer (saying :—)

'What are the orders of the goddess Deo Lâti Mâi ?'

Jab dî âgyâ Sri Dêvi Mâi :—

'Kumar Keshi râkshas ko tum dô ghâl.'

Then Sri Dêvi Mâi gave orders :—

'You must kill the demons Kirmar and Keshi.'

Chambola.

Râjâ Rikh-cholyâ lâyo tero nâw.

Râjân ho râj nâw tero nâw.

Thy name is King of Rikh-cholyâ.

Thy name is king of kings.

Kungâ kasturi, Râjâ, gugla ko dhâp,

Châr Bhâsi Mahâsû Narain ko rûp.

Râjan ko râj nâw tero nâw.

With saffron, musk and fragrant resin and incense, Raja,

The four Mahâsû brothers are Narain incarnate.

Thy name is king of kings.

⁴⁰ Of the light half of Bhâdon.

⁴¹ That is to say, two of the four Mahâsûs were created on the 4th and two on the 5th of the light half of Bhâdon.

⁴² Mahâsû.

⁴³ Of a cow-dung cake.

Hath shaikh, chakkar gal idamp ke hār,
 Chir bhāi Mahād Buddar avatār;
 Bhēkh-dhātī rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

With conch and quoit in their hands and serpents round their necks,
 The four brothers Mahād are Buddar⁴⁴ incarnate,
 In spite of all disguise, thy name is king of kings.

Hath shaikh, chakkar, gajjd, tirshāl,
 Nāch lāyo part ro, burkhd hoē phāl,
 Bhēkh-dhātī rājāl lāyo tero nāw.
 Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

Conch, quoit, mace and trident in hand,
 Dance of fairies and rain of flowers,
 In spite of all disguise kingly is thy name.
 Thy name is king of kings.

Uliyā ho nānī Rājā Bhimlā ko jāyo.
 Kashmīre chhōri Rājā Maindārath dīyō.
 Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

Uliyā's grandson and Rājā Bhimlā's son has been born.
 The Rājā left Kāshmīr and came to Maindārath.
 Thy name is king of kings.

Dohā (couplet).

Thāro aūt koi naikn jāne, līld param apār.
 Bhagat lut kārne tum koi bikh setē ho avtār.

None knoweth thy infinity, thy glory is infinite.
 Thou dost take many shapes in order to do good.

Bintī sun rikhī kī, parsan huē atyant.
 Hukam diyē saindāpation ko 'mālio asur turant.'

Hearing the prayer, great was the joy of the saints.

They gave the order to the leaders 'slay the demons forthwith.'

Agyāl pāi, Mahāsū lī muṅgar kyāl hāth.
 Mahān rath par Chālādā baijhē nau lākh saindā sāth.

Receiving the orders, the Mahāsūs took bludgeons in their hands.
 Chālādā sat in his great war chariot at the head of nine lākhs of men.

Pirtham yudh hūl Maindārath meñ, saindā mārī apār.
 Aisē Shīv Shankar bhaē jo santan prān adhār.

Battle was first joined at Maindārath and armies were slain.

It was Shīv Shankar who thus came to save his disciples.

When the whole army of the rākshasas had been killed, Kīrmā beat a retreat and came to Majhog, the abode of Singi the demon. There they collected their scattered forces, intending to give battle afresh.

Dohā (couplet).

Jab Majhōg mēa derat pahāñchē ñn,
 Singi mālio jab daít, hūl yudh ghameñn.

When the dēotās reached Majhog,
 They killed Singi the demon and a desperate battle was fought.

On hearing of the slaying of Singî Râkshas by Sher Kull, and that most of his men were slain, Kirmar fled to Kinârî Khanjâi, a village on the river bank, but was pursued by the déotâs. When he was about to hide in a ravine of Mount Khanjâi, he was overtaken by Châldâ Mahâsû, who rode on a throne of flowers borne on two soldiers.

Dôha (couplet in Pahâri).

*Khanjâi jâpe khé pâwâ thâ thâo,
Bir bhânâ⁴⁶ thê Râjîé khâdâ rê lâo.*

He took refuge under a rock in the village of Khanjâi,
Intending to smite with his sword his opponent.

When Sri Châldâ⁴⁶ killed the demon, a large force of other gods reached him.

Dôha (couplet in Pahâri).

*Sâth lajan deoté kharié⁴⁷ khândâ,
Ghâlî luwe⁴⁸ râkshas lâi lâi bândâ.*

All the gods attacked with their swords
And cut the demons to pieces.

After killing the demon Kirmar, all the gods threw flowers over Sri Châldâ and paid homage to him.

Dôha (couplet).

*Âdi Kali Yug mén Kirmar kiyô rdj.
Sant mahâtmâ ko dûkh diyô dait samâj.*

Kirmar ruled the world in the beginning of the Kali Yug.

The demon brotherhood caused great trouble to the saints and the men of God.

*Sab deran kâ deb hai Mahâsû kartâr.
Kirmar âdi märkâ, dûr kiyô mahi-bhâr.*

The lord Mahâsû is the god of all gods,

Killing the great Kirmar, he has lightened the burden of the World.

*Tah charitr Mahâdev kâ chit dê suné jo koi,
Sadâ rahai sukh sampaid aur mukti phal hoi,
He who listens to this story of Mahâdev with a sincere heart
Will always remain happy and attain the fruit of salvation.*

After killing Kirmar, all the gods encamped in a field near Khanjâi, and the place came to be called Dev-kâ-khâjal. It still forms the *jâgir* of Dev Banâr. The place in Khanjâi, where Kirmar met his death, still retains the marks of his sword on a rock. Travellers and passers-by worship this stone by offering flowers, and also express gratitude to Mahâsû.

Next morning at daybreak Hûnâ Rikhi came to Mahâsû with clasped hands and expressed joy at Kirmar's death. He further begged that the demon, Keshî, who had made Hanol his abode and was destroying its people should be killed, adding that the place was a delightful one, as it had a fine temple, that the rippling waves of the river by which it lay added beauty to its scenery, that it was a place of sanctity and would be better under his rule than under the demon's, and that it was therefore right that the demon should be killed.

Hearing this the god marched his army in that direction, and on the march they passed Salnâ Patti, a village in Râwingarh, near which lived another demon in a tank, receiving its water from the Pabar. When the flower-throne of Mahâsû reached this spot he saw a demon dancing in the tank and making a noise. Sri Nañârî Jî said to Mahâsû :—“This is a fearsome sight.” When Mahâsû heard the Umâ Shankari's words he knew by the might of his knowledge that this was the demon spoken of by the *rikhsî*. He stopped his throne and

⁴⁶ From *bhân-nyâ*, to break, in Pahâri.

⁴⁷ Lit., ‘raising high.’

⁴⁸ I. e., Mahâsû.

⁴⁹ Ghâl huwe, ‘are killing.’

destroyed the demon on the spot by muttering some charms, which had such power that even to this day the river does not make any sound as it flows. Hence the place is called Nashudi.

Dohā.

*Bājd̄ jari-bharthā deotē rē bājd̄,
Bothā Rājd̄ Mahāsū Hanola khē birbājd̄.*

Jari-bharth, the music of the gods, was played,
When Bothā, Rājā and Mahāsū left for Hanol.'

*Mahārāj Mahāsū Chāldā Pabāsi,
Hanol dékhīrō bahutē mano dē hāsē.*

Mahārāj Mahāsū, Chāldā and Pabāsi,
The gods laughed greatly in their hearts on seeing Hanol.

*Chhotē chhotē bahutē deo;
Sri Bothā Mahāsū deote rd̄ deo.*

There are many minor gods;
But Sri Bothā Mahāsū is the god of gods.

When Sri Mahāsū reached Hanol with his army, he asked Ilānā Rikhi if it was the resort of Keshī the demon. The latter humbly replied that it was, but he added that the demon sometimes haunted the Masmor mountains, and had perhaps gone in that direction and that preparations for his destruction should be made at once. Upon this all the gods held a council and sent Sri Chāldā with Sher Kaliā, Kōlū, and others to the mountains of Masmor to kill Keshī. Under those orders Sri Chāldā seated himself on a throne studded with pearls, and with the other warrior-gods set out in search of the demon. This song of praise was sung :—

'Teri Hanolē, Rājd̄, phulon ki bāri,
Chād̄ bhādi Mahāsū Mātā Deo Lāri.

Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

Bhesh-dhāri Rājd̄ ji.

Rāni, Rājd̄ nāw parjā nāw.'

'Rājā, thou hast a garden of flowers in thy Hanol,
The abode of the four Mahāsūs and their mother.

Thy name is king of kings.

In spite of all dispraise thou art Lord,

The queen, the king and his subjects bow down to thee.'

Potgi.

Khaṇḍāiē dākū nāmī chōr,

Lē chalo pālgī meri ubhī Masmōr.

Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

Kōshmīrī Rājd̄ dewā kethī? Bhimlā kī br.

Thieves and famed robbers of Khaṇḍāi,

Bear ye my palanquin up to Masmor.

Thy name is king of kings.

Whither is the king of Kashmir gone? He is gone towards Bhimla.

Kailās Kashmir ekhōrō rājasthān Mainindrāth dyā.

Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

Thou hast left Kailās and Kashmir and came to Mainindrāth.

Thy name is king of kings !

When Sri Chāldā's throne reached the hill with his bandsmen playing music, the demon Keshī witnessed his arrival, and thought him to be the same who had killed his lord Kirmar, and had come there for the same purpose. So he made ready for battle and said, "It is not

right to fly." Thinking thus, he took a huge mace and spear to attack the god. When about to shatter the god in pieces with his mace, the god's glory was manifested and the demon's hand hung motionless. Sri Chālādā ordered Sher Kaliyā to kill the demon at once. This order was instantly obeyed. The people of the place were exceedingly glad at this good news, and there was much throwing of flowers over Mahāsū.

Verse.

*Khushī horē ddami pahārō rē sārē :—
Kārē tek khaumpani kātō rē mārē?*

All the hill people rejoiced :—

'Accept as thy revenue the offerings made out of our (share of the) produce.'

*Kār deo khaumpani pārē Hanole lātē,
Sadd bārwi de barshē deo Bharānsi lē buldē.*

'We will work and send tribute in our turn to Hanol,
And will bring the god for worship to Bharānsi every twelve years.'

*Sadd kahēn, Mahāsuwā, mulak tihārā,
Sdl deo samatō rā kātō rā kārā?*

'O Mahāsū, we say this land is thine for ever,
And we will give thee each year every kind of grain in due season.'

*Bhūt, kar, rākshas, parēt, chhal,
Kār deo khaumpani sadd rahai parjā tumhārā.
Achhiddar dō aur karō rakeshā hamārā.*

'Protect us from the evil-spirits, demons, ogres and goblins,
And we will give thee tribute and ever remain thy subjects.
Give us prosperity and grant us protection.'

After killing the demon, Sri Chālādā Mahāsū seated himself on his throne and came with his forces to Hanol in great state. He brought with him all the offerings in gold and silver, as well as a gold *kaddū* taken from the demons.

On reaching the place he recounted the death of Keshī to Bothā Mahāsū, saying :—" All the demons have been killed by thy favour, and all the troubles removed. Accept these offerings which I have brought and send them to thy treasury."

Hearing this, Bothā Mahāsū said : " O Sri Chālādā, go with all these heroes to the places which I name and divide the country among them, so that they may rule there, and guard the people against all calamities. The people of these lands will worship thee as thy subjects and be dependent on thee. Every person will offer thee silver, gold, brass or copper on the attainment of his desires. Wherever thou mayst go, the inhabitants will worship thee, performing a *jāgrā* on the Nāg-chauth and Nāg-panchami days, which fall each year in Bhādon. They will be amply rewarded for these annual fairs." And he added : " Thou shalt be worshipped like myself, and be highly esteemed throughout my kingdom, but thou wilt have to pay the *malikānd* dues for each place to the other gods. When a grand *jāgrā* is performed, thou wilt be invited to present offerings to me."

*Bājē tāl mardang shāikh bājē ghāntā,
Sabhī Shri Mahāsū ji ne dəbtōn ko rāj dīno bāntā.*
The cymbal, the mardang and the conch were sounded and bells were rung.
When Sri Mahāsū divided his kingdom among his minor gods.

*Rāj sabē deoton kō ts tarah bāntā,
Rājdhāni Pabāti denā Deban rā dāndā.
He divided his State to the gods thus,
Giving the territory of Mount Deban to Pabāti.*

*Bāshuk ko Bāwar dīne poru, Bilo boli Shāthi,
Pabdi Bel dīno punwādō jō Bel Pāshā.*

To Bāshuk he gave the whole of the Bāwar territory with the part of Bilo on this side of Shāthi.
To Pabdi he also gave the country of Shāthi which is on the bank of the Patwāl.⁴⁹

Kālū Kotlā hū dīno Kyālū Banār.

Bojhē Chāldā Mahāsū ro rāj howā sarab pahār.

To Kālū and Banār he gave Kālū and Kotlā also.

And Bōthā and Chāldā Mahāsū became rulers of the whole of the hill tract.

Bojhā Chāldā Mahāsū sab deban re deo.

Pūjanē rā Mahāsū re jāṇadē nā asau.

Bōthā and Chāldā Mahāsū are the gods of all the gods.

The people do not know how to worship Mahāsū.

Sab richā deni Hund Rikhi khe Vedo ri batāi.

‘Isi bidhi kār mere debte rī pūjan kardī.’

The hymns of the *Vedas*⁵⁰ were dictated to Hunā Rikhi :

‘Perform my worship according to them.’

Sab guwē debte apne sathāno khe jāi.

Vedo rī richā deni pūjanē lāi.

All the gods went to their own capitals.

The Vedic hymns should be used in worship.

Shri Mahāsū ke sāth sab debte gae dī,

Is Khanḍ Uttar men dete māntā kardī.

All the gods who had come with Mahāsū.

Are worshipped in this Northern Region.

Notāre Pokho chhōrā jo marāshwar Mahādeo.

Hanol men Bojhā Mahāsū jo sub deban ke deo.

Notāre⁵¹ and Pokhā remain, Mahadev the god of the burning places.

Bōthā Mahāsū is the god of gods in Hanol.

Chūrī men Chūrīshwar wahi Mahāsū hai deo.

Desh chhōrē deshorē Dūm addi Bhindrā deo.

That same Mahāsū as Chūrīshwar is the god of the Chūr Peak.

Dūm, Bhindrā and others are in charge of the other parts of the plain country.

Narain, Ruddar, Dhaulā, Ghordū debte gaye Bashahro rī nālli.

Hātēkōti men Mātā Hātēshwari aur pahār pahār men Kāli.

The gods Narain, Ruddar, Dhaulā and Ghordū were sent towards the valley of Bashahr.

Mother Hātēshwari was in Hātēkōti and on every hill was Kāli.

Sabhān kī pūjan Bhai hui ‘jai jai’ kār.

Kirmar addi mār ke ānand bhayo sansār.

All worship the Brothers and give them [the cry of] ‘victory.’

The world became very happy at the death of Kirmar and the other demons.

Desh huwā muluk, Shri Chāldād, tumhārā.

Hanolo khā bhejād kāto rā kārā.

Sri Chāldā, all this country is thine.

Thy servants give thee tribute in Hanol.

Thus was a separate tract assigned to each, and they were sent each to his own territory. Hunā Rikhi was loaded with blessings in money. After this, Mahāsū disappeared and an image of him with four arms appeared of its own accord. It is worshipped to this day.

⁴⁹ This is the meaning as explained by the descendant of Māverā. Lit., the translation appears to be—to Pabdi he gave Bel on the day of the full moon, and so it is (now) called Bel Pāshā.

⁵⁰ That is, in regard to the worship of this god.

⁵¹ In Garhwāl.

*Sab gaye debis apne apne asihān,
Jab Bojhā huē Shri Mahāsū jī antar-dhyān.
All the gods went to their own places,
And then Bojhā Sri Mahāsū disappeared.
Kyālū Bandr dink urāo,
Kūl rī serf dā pākṛī phāo.
Kyālū and Banār flew away,
And took possession of the fields of Kūl.⁵²*

The following story is connected with these two places. The capital of the two gods is Pujarli, a village at the foot of the Burgā Hill, beyond the Pabar stream.

When all the gods had gone to their own places, all the land was regarded as the kingdom of Mahāsū, and his capital was Hanol. It is now believed that if any irregularity occurs in this territory, the gods in charge of it and the people are called upon to explain the reason. The people of this country believe Mahāsū to have such power that if a person who has lost anything worships the god with sincere heart, he will undoubtedly achieve his desire.

Dohā (couplet).

*Līlā iski barnan salke koi kaun?
Ādi deban ke dev hai, Mahāsū kahāwā jaun.
Who can praise him?
He is the chief god of all gods, and is called Mahāsū.
Jo jan din-ho-kar unke dhyāwā,
Wah ant samay man-bānchhit phal pā.⁵³
He who remembers him with humble mind,
Shall at last have all his desires fulfilled.
Aise bhaē yah Ruddar avatār,
Jin idrā sakal sansār.
So (great) is the incarnation of Rudar,⁵⁴
That all the world is delivered from transmigration.
Wahi Shīb Shaṅkar avatār,
Jinkī māyā ne bāndhā sansār.
He is Shīv Shaṅkar incarnate,
And the whole world is enthralled by his illusion.
Aise hain wah Shīb Shaṅkar Anāndā.
Jin-ke simran se kātē har phāndā.
Such is Shīv Shaṅkar ever pleased.
Who remembers him passes safely through the whole maze.⁵⁵
Jis-nē is-mēn shānkā ujhāt,
Wah narak hī mēn hai Shambhā nē pā.
He who has doubts as to these things
Is doomed to hell by Shambhu.
Wah Shīb Shaṅkar antarjāmī,
Jin-kō dhyāwat sur nar gyāni.
He is Shīv Shaṅkar, the heart-searcher,
On whom meditate the heroes and the sages.*

⁵² Kūl is a place in Rawāingarh, near the Burgā Mountains.

⁵³ Sīvā.

⁵⁴ Or we may read *Har phāndā* and translate: "By remembrance of him (mankind) may be delivered from the maze of Har (Shīv)."

Yeh Shambhu jagat sukh dāt,

Jin ke pār kōi nahiñ pāt,

He is Shambhu and gives blessings to the world

And no one can fathom his doing.

Bhava, Sharva, Rudra, Pashu-pati, Girisha, Mhesha, mahān,

Jin ke gurudau-vād-ko gītaw Veda Purān.

He is Bhava, Sharva, Rudra, Pashu-pati, Girisha, Mahesha, the great one,
Whose virtue is sung in the *Vedas* and *Purāns*.

Aise bhaē wāh Muhdsū sukh-dāyī,

Jal thāl men jo rahē samdyī.

Mahāsū comforts every man

And his glory pervades both sea and land.

Kōi baran nā sahē unkī prabhutī,

Brahmā, Vishṇu Sāradā ait nahiñ pāt.

We lack words to tell his greatness.

Brahmā, Vishṇu, and even Sāradā could not know his reality.

Tin lok kē nāth hain ait nahiñ kachhu pāt,

Brahmā, Vishṇu, Sāradā, hār-gayé man-māhi.

He is the king of the three worlds and is infinite.

Even the gods Brahmā, Vishṇu and Sāradā could not stand before him.

Hāth jor-kē Brahmā, Vishṇu, kharī Sāradā mātī :—

'Tin lok mei jāte bhaē pār kīne nahiñ pāt.'

Brahmā, Vishṇu, and Mother Sāradā stood with clasped hands before him :—

'We have been round the three worlds, but could find no end (to his glory).'

Hār mān-kar thakat bhaē pār nahiñ jab pāt,

Hāth jor-kar thāddē bhaē nāth-pad shis nāt.

When they could find no end to his glory,

They came before him with clasped hands and bowed heads.

Sis nauñi ke nāth pad kē kinī bahut pukhār :—

'Tum deban ke deb hō līlā param apār.'

They bowed their heads to the god and praised him aloud :—

'Thou art the god of all gods and wonderous is thy glory.'

Hai chandra-shūra madandksh-shūl pāni kar jaīd.

Tin lok kē hārtā kartā deban deb Maheshā.'

'Thy light is like that of the moon and thou art full of water like the ocean.
Thou art Mahāsū, the creator and destroyer of the three worlds.'

Jahāñ tāhāñ bhaē Mahāsū aītar-dhyān,

Tub se unkī astuti barat Hanolā Sthān.

From the time that Mahāsū disappeared,

He began to be praised in the Hanol Temple.

Wah sathāñ hai Uttar Khaṇḍ māhi.

Nādi kindre Tons kē mahāir bandā tāhāñ.

His place is in the Northern Region.

His temple is built on the bank of the river Tons.

When all the gods went to their own places, the other gods agreed to pay tribute to Hanol according to the directions of Mahāsū. They also agreed to pay *mālikānd* dues on the birthday of Mahānādī to the inhabitants.

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES.¹

From the Native point of view.

BY MIAN DURGA SINGH.

(Communicated by H. A. Rose.)

I. — Tribes.

1. A detailed account of the present tribes is given under paragraph 36 below. The original division was as follows : —

(1) Sub-divisions into castes according to the Hindu or Muhammadan Scriptures.

(2) Minor sub-divisions named after some great ancestor : e. g., there are two principal sections of the Brâhmans, viz., Shukal and Krishan. Similarly, the Râjpûts are divided into the Sûraj and Chandar Bansî (Solar and Lunar) Dynasties.

The Brâhmans are divided according to their occupations, while Râjpûts are divided according to their descent.

2. Formerly there were four main tribes among the Hindus, and the same number among the Muhammadans, but they have been multiplied by difference of occupation. Hindus were originally divided into Brâhmaṇas, Kshatriyas, Vaisyas and Sûdras, and Muhammadans into Shaikhs, Sayyids, Mughals and Pathâns. Nowadays these main sections are divided into many other sub-sections.

II. — Tribal Designations.

3. The fixed designations of the tribes are known among themselves as well as to outsiders.

4. (a) Modern researches have brought to light many facts which were unknown before or were misunderstood. Not only the fact that all the tribes came from the same stock has been proved, but also that they had a common language ; Central Asia and the neighbourhood of Kailâs (Himâlayas) being the common home of the Aryas. According to the belief of the Hindus, the Aryas were the followers of the *Védas*, and each and every action of theirs was guided by the *Védas*, as they believed them to be sacred and of divine origin. The *Purâñas*, the *Védas*, and other historical books show that the Himâlayan region was populated from ancient times, but the religion and race of the inhabitants of those days cannot be ascertained. However, an observation of ancient ruins proves that these people were idolaters and believers in the *Védas*. In support of this the following facts may be mentioned : — (1) Broken images are found in the mountain caves and old buildings. (2) The worshippers of the mountain gods follow the ritual of the *Védas*. They recite the Vedic hymns, and teach them to their children orally, as they have no sacred books. As the hill-language was not that of the *Védas*, these hymns have undergone changes, and have never been corrected by a literate man, yet on close examination they are found to be real Vedic hymns.

(b) The Brâhmans in winter go to the high peaks to worship the goddess Kâlî and recite hymns from the *Atharva Veda*. This shows that this country was populated at the time when

¹ [Evidently consisting of answers to a series of ethnological questions set as a guide. — Ed.]

the *Védas* ruled supreme in India. The people learnt them by heart, and the same practice is continued to this day. There is also mention of these treatises in the *Rámáyana* and the *Mahábhárata*. It seems that there was not much caste distinction in those days. The only distinction among the Bráhmans, the Rájputs, and the Kanaits was that they did not intermarry. Their food and customs were much the same. The few Kshatriyas and Bráhmans had come from the plains and settled here. The Kanaits are said to be the aborigines of the hill-tracts, and were independent, brave, and given to marauding. They raided one another's villages. Small huts and caves served as their habitations. They slept much during the day and held agriculture in light esteem, while at night they committed dacoities. Every party in a village had its own head, known as the *movanna* (leader), who used to get his share of the plunder and a small tribute as his *haq-i-sardari*. The whole mountainous country was divided in this way; the first quality of land being given to the gods as rulers, and the next to the *movannas*. The ruins of the houses of the *movannas* are to be found still. They are big castle-like buildings.

(c) As regards the agriculture of that time, the *kharif* and *rabi* crops were cut at one time. The produce was scanty on account of excess of rain and snow. The people of the villages went armed for seed-sowing, owing to the fear of enemies. People, when going on business from one place to another, went armed in bodies of fifteen to twenty men. The women took part in agriculture and had much liberty. The Kshatriyas, who came up from the plains, were respected by the people on account of their skill in the arts of civilisation, and lands were granted to the Bráhmans, who accompanied the Kshatriyas as priests. The Kshatriyas, by their tact and skill, got the upperhand and, driving away or destroying the *movannas*, took possession of their property. Thus the Kshatriyas became the masters of the whole country.

(d) There is no reliable source of information as to the time when and the place whence the Kshatriyas first came. But the tradition is that, at the time of the wholesale massacre of the Kshatriyas by Balaramji Balaráma, they left their country and settled in the hills. Many of them changed their caste and became Bráhmans, Baniás, etc. Some of their women were kept by the Bráhmans and their children became known as the Khattris. The men who had saved their lives by changing their caste were named Rájputs or Chhattris. This is proved by the fact that the *göt* (sub-division of a caste) of the Chhattris of the hills is similar to that of the Bráhmans, and Bráhmans of the same brotherhood are found up to the present time and have social relations with them. In short, the Bráhmans came with the Kshatriyas as priests from various places in the south.

The Rájputs came from different localities, such as Bengal, Rájputáná, Central India, etc., etc.

The Vaishyas, consisting of Súds, Baniás, etc., came from the plains, and are very few in number.

The Súdras, such as the Kanaits, who, as above said, are considered to be the aborigines of this part of the country, are said to have obtained their name by the following legend. When the Bráhmans and Rájputs came from different parts of India and settled in the hills and took possession of the *movannas*, they saw that the rites and customs of the villagers were not in accordance with the Scriptures; that there was only one caste; that religious ceremonies were not performed; that neither marriage nor funeral ceremonies were observed; and that all the ancient Hindu customs had been forgotten. So they called the high castes among the indigenous tribes by the name of Kunit, which really represents Kunit, i.e., those who violate the law. Gradually they were acknowledged as high castes, and spread over all the hilly tracts. The castes inferior to them are considered low castes.

5. All the tribes, except the Bráhmans, the Kshatriyas, and the Vaishyas consider themselves to be the aborigines of the hills, and call themselves Kunit (ancient inhabitants).

III.—History of Migrations.

8. The following table will show when a tribe or its sub-division migrated to the hills and the history of such migration:—

Table of the Sections of the Hill Brāhmans.

| No. | Original Caste. | Present Name of the Caste. | Real Home. |
|-----|---------------------|----------------------------|----------------|
| 1 | Brāhmaṇ | Gauṛ | Gauṛ (Bengal). |
| 2 | Do. | Sārsut ... | The Deccan. |
| 3 | Do. | Bhardwāj | Do. |
| 4 | Do. | Kanōj ... | Do. |
| 5 | Do. | Kūn Kōbj | Do. |
| 6 | Do. | Balrāmī | Do. |
| 7 | Do. | Bhāṭ ... | Bengal. |

The Brāhmans are generally divided into Shukal and Krishan.² The Shukal Brāhmans are considered the superior. They do not cultivate land with their own hands, and devote most of their time to worship and prayer, performing the rites of marriage or death according to the Hindu Scriptures. They take alms only when offered at marriages, but not those given at deaths. They do not take any alms given for the sake of the dead. The Krishan Brāhmans are those who accept the alms offered at the time of death, and those offered to propitiate evil stars, such as Rahu and Sani. The Shukal and Krishan Brāhmans do not intermarry, and the rest of their rites are not alike. A Krishan Brāhmaṇ can eat the food prepared by a Shukal Brāhmaṇ, but the Shukal Brāhmaṇ does not even drink water which has been touched by a Krishan Brāhmaṇ.

It is said that the Balrāmī Brāhmans were the first to come and settle in the hills. In reality the Balrāmī and Sārsut Brāhmans are one and the same. The Balrāmīs are so called, because those living near the temples founded by Balramji state that they were set there by Balramji himself. They also worship Balramji as their god, and are quite a distinct tribe nowadays. They consider themselves to be of the highest caste. They mix with the Sārsut and the Gauṛ Brāhmans.

The Gauṛs, Bhardwajis, the Kan Kōbjas and the Bhāṭs have social relations with one another. But they do not take into their brotherhood any man who has been excommunicated on religious grounds. They came to the hills in company with the Rājpūts who migrated from Bengal. It is said that a part of Bengal was called Gauṛ, therefore the Brāhmans of that place were known by the name of Gauṛ, and to-day they are to be found in every part of India. The Gauṛ family of the Brāhmans came after the fall of the Rajas of Bengal.

The Sārsuts lived, in the beginning, on the banks of the Indus and the Saraswati. They migrated from there and settled in the hills. The name Sārsut is derived from the Saraswati.

Coming to the hills the Rājpūts became the Thākurs, while the Rānas, the Rājas and Brāhmans became their priests. History tells us that Shahabu'd-din Ghōrī conquered Delhi and appointed his slave Kutbu'd-din as Viceroy there. One of his officers, named Bakhtiār Khilji, attacked Bengal and usurped the country from the Rājpūts. At that time many Brāhmans and Rājas fled to Prāg, now called Allahabad, and thence went to different places.

² [This probably represents a division into Saivas and Vaishnavas.—Ed.]

Table of the Sections of the Hill Rajputs.

| No. | Original Caste. | Present Name of the Caste. | Real Home. | Time of Coming. |
|-----|---------------------------|----------------------------|--|------------------------|
| 1 | Kshatriyas or Rājpūts. | Pramar or | Ujjain | ..... |
| 2 | Do. | Pawār... | ... ... | ..... |
| 3 | Do. | Chohān | ... ... | ..... |
| 4 | Do. | Solāngī | ... .. | ..... |
| 5 | Do. | Prahar | ... ... | ..... |
| 6 | Do. | Gaur | Bengal | 1267, Bikanir. |
| 7 | Do. | Gyāru... | Gya | ... ... |
| 8 | Do. | Katāl ... | Nāhān | ... ... |
| 9 | Do. | Vishāl | Ujjain | ... ... |
| 10 | Do. | Bhardwaj | Kauchananagar (Deccan). | ..... |
| 11 | Do. | Mabhālī | ... | |
| 12 | Do. | Lohākri | ... | |
| 13 | Do. | Panghāni | Mārwār, etc. Differ- ent districts. | ..... |
| 14 | Do. | Trōndi | ... | |
| 15 | Do. | Ghiāni | ... | |
| 16 | Do. | Nirāl | ... | |
| 17 | Do. | Thākur | Mārwār | ... ... |
| 18 | Do. | Rāna... | Mārwār | ..... |
| 19 | Do. | Pathāniā | Delhi | 300 years ago. |
| 20 | Do. | Padwāl | Mālwā | ... ... |
| 21 | Do. | Kshatriya | Descended from Paras Rām. | ... ... |

The name Kshatriya was applied to the crowned rulers of a country or territory. They were quarrelsome, given to robbery and well versed in the art of war. They were brave, courageous and kind. Their sons, other than the heir-apparent, were known as Rājpūts, or the sons of rulers. Nowadays this word is applied to all the Kshatriyas. In fact, the Rājpūts are next in rank to the Kshatriyas, but these words are used interchangeably. The Kshatriyas are divided into two main sections : (1) the Sūraj Bansī; (2) the Chandar Bansī. Brahmā had two sons, Dachhā and Uttar, and these were the ancestors of these two tribes. Dachhā was the father of the Sun, from whom came the Sūraj Bansīs; and Uttar was the father of the Moon, from whom the Chandar Bansīs descended. The capital of the Solar dynasty was Allahabad. Every Rājpūt, of whatever tribe, caste or sect, is ultimately descended from either the Solar or the Lunar dynasty, and the above table clearly shows the manner of their immigration.

It is said that the *shikars* or *mowahads*, who were previously settled in the hills, were also Rājpūts, but their customs are quite different from those of the Rājpūts. It is further said that when Rāja Nāki Singh,³ who flourished some 2352 years ago (= 450 B.C.), introduced Buddhism, it began to spread from this direction, so that this religion is still found in Kanšwar, Tibet, Lāhaul, etc. Much confusion has taken place among the Rājpūts for this very reason. The history of no tribe is trustworthy, nor can its genealogy be correctly traced. It is said that at the time of the great war of the *Mahābhārata* the Rājpūts were the rulers of the hill territories. There is mention of the ancestors of the Rājas of this region in the *Bhagavat Gītā* and the *Mahābhārata*.

The Rāwats and Rāthis also come under the heading Rājpūts. These people plough and cultivate land with their own hands. Their rites at marriage or death are not according to the Scriptures.

Sartiras are persons born of a Rājpūt father and Kānai or some other low caste mother. The Rājpūts do not intermarry with them, nor eat food prepared by them.

Table of the Sections of the Hill Vaishyas.

| No. | Original Caste. | Present Name of the Caste. | Real Home. | Time of Coming. |
|-----|-----------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------|
| 1 | | Bōhrā... | Poona, Satāra (Deccan). | ..... |
| 2 | | Baniā | Plains | ..... |
| 3 | | Sūd | Do. | ..... |
| 4 | | Bhābra | Do. | ..... |

They are not the original inhabitants of the hill region, but came from the plains and settled there. Therefore nothing certain can be known of their history or genealogy. But the history of the Kāngrā District shows that the Bōhrās came, in the beginning, with the Rāja of Kāngrā from Poona and Satāra in the Deccan, and gradually spread to other places. In the Hill States they were put in charge of the store-houses and godowns.

It is said that Rāja Nirandar Chandar died and left behind him a widow, who was with child. The widow, fearing lest she might suffer at the hands of her husband's heirs, went to her parents in the Deccan. While on the way she gave birth to Rāja Shēr Chand, and taking him with her reached her paternal home at Poona. When the boy, who was brought up by his grandfather, became of age and learnt that Kāngrā was his inheritance, he determined to conquer his kingdom. He took an army of his grandfather's subjects with him, attacked Kāngrā, subdued those who occupied the throne, and succeeded to his paternal kingdom. Diwan Rūp Lal Bōhrā, who was sent with the Rāja by his grandfather, was made the Minister. Then gradually some persons of the family of the Minister came and settled in Kāngrā. Some of them went to Rūpar. Then they went to other parts of the country for trade. These people knew Urdū, Hindi, and Nāgari, and so they were respected everywhere and were honourably entertained.

The following is stated to be the origin of the Sūds: — A man of low caste owed some money to a Baniā. They settled their account after some years. The principal amount was paid by the debtor, but he would not consent to pay the interest, and the Baniā would not forego the interest. The debtor, instead of paying the interest, agreed to give his wife to the creditor. The children of this woman and the Baniā became known as Sūd (interest). In the course of time the Sūds began to intermarry with the high castes. Now they are considered of high caste like the Baniās, etc.

The Baniās are generally divided into (1) the Aggarwāls and (2) the Sarhogis. The Sarhogis are Jains. The Aggarwāls are considered of high caste. They totally abstain from meat.

[A recollection of Sakyamuni = Buddha. — Ed.]

Table of the Sections of the Hill Súdras.

| No. | Original Caste. | Present Name of the Caste. | Real Home. | Time of Coming. |
|-----|-----------------|----------------------------|------------|-----------------|
| 1 | High Súdras | Kanait | Aborigines | ..... |
| 2 | Do. | Goldsmith | ..... | ..... |
| 3 | Do. | Jat | ..... | ..... |
| 4 | Do. | Barber | ..... | ..... |
| 5 | Do. | Gardener | ..... | ..... |
| 6 | Do. | Milkman | ..... | ..... |
| 7 | Do. | Potter | ..... | ..... |
| 8 | Do. | Mason | ..... | ..... |
| 1 | Low Súdras | Washerman | ..... | ..... |
| 2 | Do. | Die Sinker | ..... | ..... |
| 3 | Do. | Bâdi (carpenter) | ..... | ..... |
| 4 | Do. | Ironsmith | ..... | ..... |
| 5 | Do. | Thithâra or Harêra | ..... | ..... |
| 6 | Do. | Tûri, Dhâgi or Dhâdi. | ..... | ..... |
| 7 | Do. | Chanâl | ..... | ..... |
| 8 | Do. | Kôli (minstrel) | ..... | ..... |
| 9 | Do. | Shepherd or herdsman. | ..... | ..... |
| 10 | Do. | Sweeper | ..... | ..... |
| 11 | Do. | Shoemaker or cobbler. | ..... | ..... |
| 12 | Do. | Râwûr | ..... | ..... |
| 13 | Do. | Weaver | ..... | ..... |

Something has already been mentioned about these tribes. The first eight sub-divisions were Râjpûts or Brâhmans, but they settled in such turbulent territories that they could not peaceably perform their religious ceremonies. Kanaits get their name from this cause, for, as already stated, the word Kanait means violator of the law. When the Brâhmans came and saw the ceremonies of Kanaits, they gave the tribe the nickname, which has led to the formation of a distinct sect of Kanaits. The other castes took their names from the profession they adopted.

We learn from old histories that the aborigines of India were Bhils, Gôndas, Minâs, Kôls and Joârs, who were found near Nâgpûr. They did not know Sanskrit, and their language was quite different from it. Their religion, too, differed from that of the Hindus. When the people of other countries occupied their territory, they fled to the forests and hills. Enquiry shows that they had no caste distinctions. They did not believe in contamination by touch. They used meat and wine, while

superior Hindus abhor these things. They kept in their houses the dead body of a person for several days after death. They offered alms two or three days after death, and these constituted all their funeral ceremonies. They never cleaned their houses and were impure. Some of them worshipped a god, while others worshipped a goddess. Every village had temples. They were ignorant and unclean. They were idolaters, and none of their customs were in accordance with the Hindu Scriptures. On examination of old books, and on taking photographs of the inscriptions on stones and examining them, it is found that the characters used therein are neither like those of the Sanskrit nor of any other language; for example, the letters of the inscriptions on the image of a goddess at Hât, on the big stone at Datta Nagar, on the big stone at Sohanpur near Hât, and at Jhonjan Deora in Shângin. These facts show that these people belonged to the pre-Sanskrit period. They became civilised gradually with the spread of Sanskrit.

Table of the Sections of the Hill Mendicants.

| No. | Original Caste. | Present Name of the Caste. | Real Home. | Time of Coming. |
|-----|-----------------|----------------------------|------------|-----------------|
| 1 | Hindu Faqirs | Bairagi | Plains | ..... |
| 2 | Mendicants | Sanyâsi | ..... | ..... |
| 3 | ..... | Jogi | ..... | ..... |
| 4 | ..... | Udasi | ..... | ..... |

These people came up from the plains and established themselves in the hills as monks of the temples. They seem to have come specially from Kurukshêtra and Hardwâr. Some of the mendicants adopted family life, and others remained as they were and lived by begging their bread.

As for Muhammadans only Shekhs came up from Bâsi, Rûpar, and Kharar. The reason of their migration is said to be this, that originally they were Hindus, but the king who ruled at that time converted them to Muhammadanism by force. Some members of a family remained Hindus, while others turned Muhammadans. The converts gave up their share of the property in favour of their brothers, and they themselves came and settled in the hill country. They lived by trade. Their settlement in the hills does not seem to be older than twenty-two or twenty-four generations.

IV. — Tribal Head-Quarters.

7. The tribes have no common head-quarters. Every tribe has its own head-quarters in its own village, which is called by the name *thâtri* or *chaurî*.

8. Some tribes declare themselves to be the aborigines. Some say that they came from the Deccan, Bengal, Ujjain, Gya, Nâhan, Sirmûr, Poona, Satâra, Mârvâr, Delhi and Mâlwâ, as has been fully shown in the above tables.

9. Because it is very long since the tribes came to the hills, they do not go on pilgrimage to their original homes. Every tribe or sect has appointed a place of pilgrimage in some village situated close to its own.

10. All tribes have in their respective villages cremation grounds, where they burn their dead. If a man of one tribe dies in the village of another, or near his own village, his corpse is brought to the village to which he belonged and is cremated at the place where his forefathers were cremated. In this way corpses are brought even from a distance of two or four days' journey. The crematoria of some tribes are near the banks of the Sutlej, Khud Giri or Payar.

V.—Genealogical Tables.

11. The genealogical tables of the Brāhmans and the Kshatriyas remain with the family priests, and generally they trace only so many generations as are necessary to be known for the performance of ceremonies on occasions of death or marriage. The genealogical tables of the great Rājas and Rānas are kept in the State offices. When the Purhbis (priests) of Ganges (Hardwār), Kurukshētra, Bhōa and Gādāwarī come into the hills, they prepare the genealogical tables of their disciples, and having written these tables down in their books, take them away.

Table showing the Names of the Conventional Ancestors of some of the Hill Tribes.

| No. | Name of Tribe. | | Names of Ancestors. |
|------|---|-----|---|
| 1 | Brāhmaṇ or Bhāṭ ... | ... | Bhārdwāj, Gautam, Atri, Balrām, etc., famous rishis (saints) |
| 2 | Chhatri or Rājpūt ... | ... | Rām Chāndar, Krishṇa, Puru, Birāt Rāja, Bhīmchand Rāja, Man Dhāta, Bīkrama Jit and Bhoj, Rāja Jagdeva, Sālbāhan and Rāja Karan. |
| 3 | Khatri | ... | Sukh Datta, etc., famous Rājas. |
| 4 | Kayastha | ... | Bhoj and Kora, etc., famous Rājas. The people of this section are not found in the hills, therefore no mention of them has been made above. |
| 5 | Bania, Sūd, Bōhra, etc. | .. | No tradition about these worthy of mention. |
| 6 | Kanait | .. | Born of the intermarriage of the Brāhmans and the Rājpūts. |
| 7 | Jat | .. | Unknown. |
| 8 | Goldsmith | ... | Do. |
| 9 | Barber | .. | Do. |
| 10 | Gardener, milkman, potter, and mason. | | Do. |
| 11 | Bādi or carpenter ... | ... | Bāwa Rām Singh Kūkā, who was a carpenter by caste. |
| 12 | Other low castes, i. e., Koli, Rahir (shepherd), shoemaker and cobbler. | | Kabīr and Rām Dās, noted saints, are considered to be the forefathers of these. |
| 13 | Turi, Dhaki, Dhādi ... | ... | Baju Bāvra and Tān Sēn, famous musicians. |
| 14 | Bairagi | ... | Ramānand and Nīmānand, well-known saints. |
| 15 | Sanyāsi | ... | Unknown. |
| 16 | Jōgi | ... | Gōrakh Nāth, Machandar Nāth, Jālandhar Nāth, noted Jōgis. |
| * 17 | Udāsi | .. | Nānak, Rām Dās, Amar Dās, Gōbind Singh. |

Nothing is known about the other tribes, nor is any story or tradition concerning them available.

18.* No tribe has got any genealogical table to enable one to trace the descent from the ancestors. The Rājas and Rānas have their genealogical tables, which I have not been able to get, and hence no account of them can be given.

* [The answer to Question 18 seems to have been omitted.—ED.]

14. The Brâhmans, the Râjpûts and the Baniâs consider the Kanaits to be an offshoot of the higher castes. All the tribes, as explained above, except the Sûdras, consisting of Kanaits, came from the plains and settled in this part of the country.

15. Neither marriage nor death ceremonies among the Kanaits are performed according to the rules laid down by the Hindu Scriptures, but are according to the customs formerly prevailing in the country. Saints, Brâhmans, Râjpûts and Baniâs do not eat the food prepared by the Kanaits, who are not privileged to worship after the methods of the Hindu Scriptures.

VI.—Monuments.

16. Neither tomb nor monument belonging to any tribe is to be found. Each tribe has its own **crematorium**. A person belonging to one tribe cannot burn his dead in the crematorium of another. Likewise the high and low castes have separate *bâolis* and **springs of water**. The men of low castes cannot take water from the *bâolis* or springs belonging to those of high castes. The **habitations** of the population are also arranged according to the divisions of castes, i.e., Râjpûts live in one part of the village, while Brâhmans occupy another part. The low castes live at some distance from the village, for the reason that the high castes may not come in contact with the smell and smoke of the kitchens of the low castes.

17. Something about the migration of these tribes can be ascertained from the names of some towns. No history of their migration can be traced by means of the inscriptions on stones.

VII.—Caste Marriages.

18—20. As regards marriage, there is, nowadays, no distinction of caste. However, people of the same caste can marry among themselves, but the high castes do not marry with the low castes. A detailed account of the marriages of all tribes is given below under paragraph 86.

VIII.—Totemism.

21. It is not the prevailing custom among the people not to eat the flesh of an animal, whose name is like that of any person. However, some persons do not eat fish and pork, for the reason that incarnations of the deity had taken the form of a fish and a pig. But this is held only by some people, and is not accepted by any tribe or sect as a whole.

22. No tribe of the hills has given up the use of any arm or instrument merely for the reason of its name being after the name of some ancestor of theirs, nor for any other reason.

23. The high castes — such as the Brâhmans, the Râjpûts, and the Baniâs — worship the *pipal* and the banyan trees, and do not burn their wood. All these tribes have two forms of religion : (1) **Vaishanavas** or **Dakshmarag**; (2) **Saivas** or **Saktis** or **Vammarag**. Those professing the first form of religion do not eat any of these articles : meat, onions, garlic, turnips, radishes, cones and mushrooms; or drink wine. Those of the second section eat all these things, but not eggs, domestic fowls, crows, peacocks and other animals forbidden by the Scriptures.

IX.—Peculiarities of Tribal Names.

24. Different tribes have different names, and no two sections have like names. However, the names of sub-sections of Kanaits are like those of the Brâhmans or Kshatriyas, and the reason of this is that they are held to be an offshoot of the Brâhmans and the Kshatriyas.

25. Some of the low castes have named some of their sub-sections after the name of the high caste which they have been serving.

26. The first four sections of the **Dashals** — i.e., Gônds, Thêôgs, Mâdhans, Darkâlis, etc. — were considered, for a long time after their migration to the hills, to be low castes, like the Kanaits. They did not put on the sacred thread, nor did they perform death ceremonies. Gradually they mixed with the Râjpûts, and began to give their daughters in marriage to wealthy Râjpûts. Afterwards the Râjpûts also consented to marry their daughters to them,

The history of the migration of the Gauris and Jar Kaitas is very much the same. In reality they were Brahmins, and Brahmins of their brotherhood are still to be found. But they gave up the Brahmanical functions and, adopting the marriage and death ceremonies of the Rajputs, have mixed with them. For example, Kot Khai, Kambaras, Karangla, Delta, Kanthal, Juba, Ranvin Sairi, Titch and Kash were full of the low castes of Kanaita, but now they have adopted the ceremonies of the superior Kanaita.

The Sarasut and the Gaur Brahmins formerly did not intermarry, but now they do so.

X. — Public Assemblies.

27. There is no assembly of lawyers or rulers appointed by the people. Whenever any religious or secular dispute arises, all the people concerned come to the temple of their god, and hold a meeting there. The members of the *panchayat* (council) are the custodians and the worshippers of the deity's temple, and they summon, through the priest, all the followers of the god. Respectable and rich folk of every village come and give their decision in the matter under dispute. If the parties are satisfied with the decision of the *panchayat*, the matter ends there and then. Otherwise a party not agreeing with the decision is asked to refer the matter to a law court, and the *panchayat* serve as witnesses. This *panchayat* deals only with religious points and has no concern with legal matters.

28. The same assembly is called by the name of Dūm or Khumali.

29. The priests and custodians of the temple of the deity are generally the members of the council. The office of these members is hereditary. They belong to the priest and Kanait class and are inferior to the Brahmins.

XI. — Deities.

30. Generally the hill people worship separate deities and are their disciples. In every *paragand* (group of villages) the people of some villages have a god of their own, and have his temple made in a village situated at convenient distances from the habitations of the followers of the god. Some five to seven families of priests live in this village. They enjoy a free lease of land, as remuneration for their services in the temple. Every one of the disciples of the god, at the time of harvest, gives 10 to 12 seers of grain to the priests. The priests, in addition to the service of the god, also perform, in accordance with the requirements of the time, other religious or secular business.

31. Overseers are appointed to look after the temple and the priests. This office is also hereditary. They are called kardars, mēhtas or wazirs. A portion of the income of the temple is given to them as their remuneration.

XII. — Constitution and Duties of Assemblies.

32. If any social, religious or secular quarrel arises, the complainant informs the priest about this. The priest, with the consent of the overseer, imparts verbal orders to all the people. He goes from village to village, and tells the people that in such and such a temple on such and such a day a *panchayat* (committee) will be held to decide such and such matters, that all the people should attend it, and that those who do not do so will be punished by the deity. If the business be a very urgent one, the words *dadhi*, *tēk* and *dal* are pronounced, on hearing which the people leave their engagements, however urgent they may be, and go to attend the council at once. Otherwise every one is fined one rupee. This fine, in a territory under British Government, is given in the temple fund, but in a Native State to the Rāja or Rāni of that place. The priest's method of proclamation is to call aloud to the men of the village, and ask them to present themselves at a certain place on a certain day. People necessarily obey this call, and present themselves at the place and on the date required.

33. The office of the chairman is a permanent one. Men of certain families are selected for this office, and the selection rests with the council.

34. The members, as mentioned above, are called *kardars*, *wazirs* or *méhtas*.

35. If the hereditary chairman be a minor, he is represented by a grown-up man belonging to his brotherhood. If a fit person is not to be found in the brotherhood, then the council appoints a guardian.

XIII. — Trade.

36. The chief articles of commerce are opium, potatoes, wool, borax, fur, woollen cloth, stone, goats, and horses. A detailed account is given below.

Kôt Khâi is the greatest centre of the opium trade. People buy this article from the surrounding territories, and sell it, according to the laws, at Kôt Khâi. All the license-holding Kanaits go to the neighbourhood to buy opium. Any action against the law is discussed and decided among themselves. The buyers of opium are of two sorts : (1) The license-holders who, like great merchants, buy opium from their agents. These merchants send to their agents, in the month of Kârtik or Maghar, as much money as the agents ask for. The agents in return supply their masters, in the month of Hâr, with opium at four rupees per seer, no matter what the market rate of opium may be : (2) License-holders who buy opium directly. They buy it at the rate agreed upon by the parties. The same is the case with potatoes. The rest of the trade is with Tibet, and this trade cannot be carried on by a single person. There are three passes into Tibet : the first through Busâhir, the second through Garhwâl, and a third through Sultânpur in Kûlu. People go for trade in caravans of hundreds of armed men, for the passage is infested with robbers, and for this reason a small number of men cannot safely travel. The traders going by these three paths have, each, a distinct part of the country set apart for trade. One cannot trade in the territory belonging to the other. Any one doing so is arrested. Some men of each of these three territories are appointed as the members of the council in Tibet. Some four or five Tibetans, too, take part in it. All the cases of theft and civil and criminal suits are decided by it. Half the punishment is borne by the Tibetans and half by the members of the council belonging to the country of the culprit. Besides this, the parties to a case are required to feed the council. This food is named *charvâl*. The members have full authority, and they can decide even murder cases. The money realized from fines is appropriated by themselves. A nominal sum of one or two rupees is paid to the Râja. All commercial contracts are made by the merchants among themselves, and there is no particular rule about this. Different measures suited to different opportunities are adopted.

The merchants of Busâhir are divided into four groups : Takpais, Gâvâs, Shawâls and Râjgrâñvis. They are named after the names of their *pargâns* (districts). If a person belonging to one group joins or trades with another group, then the members of his group punish him as well as the group who admitted him without the consent of his party.

The rates of all commodities are fixed by an assembly of all the merchants, and tables of rates are prepared by them. Any one who charges a rate higher or lower than the common rate is considered guilty of disloyalty to the assembly. Commodities cannot be sold before a fixed time. The rate of every article is determined by the merchants and the producers of that article after some days' consideration.

XIV. — Artisans.

Bâdis or Carpenters. — They build houses and make ploughs and other implements of cultivation. The wages for building houses are not fixed, but depend upon the labourers and their employers. They make implements of cultivation and give them, every season, to the land-owners, free of charge. They get food from the land-owners. They also get some grain at the harvest time. This grain is named *shikotâ*.

Ironsmiths. — They also, like the carpenters, serve the land-owners.

Shoe-makers and Cobblers. — The hides of the dead kine, oxen or buffaloes are given to the cobblers, who make shoes for the land-owners of half the hide ; the other half being kept by the shoemaker as his remuneration. They also get some grain at harvest time.

Shepherds. — One or two of them live in every village. They graze the cattle of the villagers. They get from every house in the village one or two cakes daily, either in the morning or in the evening. They also make agricultural utensils of bamboo, which they give to the land-owners free of charge. They get some land rent-free from the common lard of the village, and also some grain at harvest time.

Barbers. — They shave the land-owners for nothing. They get grain at the time of harvest. This also is termed *shikātē*.

Goldsmiths. — They also serve the land-owners without charging any wages, and get as their remuneration some grain at harvest time.

Turis. — They mostly beat a drum when a corpse is carried out to the cremation ground. They get some wages in proportion to the wealth of the dead. They are also given some grain at the time of harvest.

Jogis. — They were originally mendicants, but now they have become householders. They burn their dead, and for every corpse get four annas in money, together with a plate of brass or *kânsî* (spelter) and a woollen or cotton cloth. They also get some grain at the time of harvest.

XV. — Marriage Customs.

Table of Intermarriage Rules.

| No | Caste | Principal Sub-divisions. | Sub-divisions that can intermarry. | Göt (sub-section) | Sub-divisions that cannot intermarry. |
|----|--------------------|--------------------------------|---|--|---|
| 1 | Chhatri or Râjpût. | Suraj Bansi and Chander Bansi. | Khatris, Kayasthas, Solanghis, Puwârs, Chohâns, Parmaras, Gyârûs, Katwâls, Dishâls, Gaurs, Râvats, Thâkurs, Râthis, Sartôrs, Jamwals, Sonlis. | Bhardwâj, Gautam, Chohân, Atri, Kashap, Kashayap, Samdeva. | Mahbali, Pangiani, Nirondi, Ghiani, Naryâl, Sarâti, Ravâti, Johalti, Kotguru, Kenu, Krânglu, Deltu, Kunhârsenu, Balsni, Thagoi, Ghondi, Sângri, Badsâl, Takrâl, Atoel, Darkoto, Rihani. |
| 2 | Brâhman. | Shukal and Krishan. | Gaur, Sarsut | Atri, Bashist, Bhardwâj, Kâshayap. | Kansuji, Bhat, Kan Kobj, Methul, Darâwar, Agni Hotri, Balrami, Mahtâ Brâhma n, Achârj, Bhât, Dakaut, Shalauri, Chauti, Pa-puch or Papuj, Nâmti, Pande, Pujari. |
| 3 | Kanaît .. | ... | Khâsh, Rahu, Karun, Khanâri, Ch a n d e l, Chohân, Dogri, Mehta, Dadarwâl, Behrwal, Pabarwâl, Jâd, Lâma. | Badohi, Chohân, Kashayap. | The whole of the hilly tracts are full of Kanaits, who have many sub-divisions. Every village has two or three minor divisions of them, therefore a detail cannot be given. |

37. All tribes and sects can marry among themselves. But the high castes — such as Kshatriyas, Brâhmans, Râjpûts, Sûds, Bôhrâs, Baniâs, Kanaits, Goldsmiths, Barbers, Khâsh, Kârun, Râhus, Khanâra, Jâds, Lâmas — cannot marry with persons belonging to their sub-section. This is called here *khél*. The *khél* does not extend over more than twelve generations. *Sâtak pâtak* is also taken into consideration only up to seven generations. No *sâtak pâtak* exists among those families who have no connection with one another within seven generations. Families which are connected even by the twelfth generation do not intermarry, but those who have no such connection can do so.

The low castes, such as Kôlis, shepherds, etc., have different rules. They do not intermarry in families which are connected even in the fourth generation. They marry with their maternal uncles' daughters.

The high castes hold to the following rules :—

(1) They do not intermarry with families connected with theirs even by the seventh generation.

(2) They do not intermarry with families connected with that of their maternal grandfather even by the third or fourth generation.

(3) They do not marry with girls of lower families than their own.

(4) They do not marry daughters of the father's or grandfather's sisters.

38. A detail of the relations with whom intermarriage is prohibited has been given above.

39. In addition to the facts already mentioned, the following circumstances are considered unfavourable for marriage. The society is not bound to obey any fixed rules, but the following things about the girls are considered as defects at the time of the marriage : small neck, blue eyes, white or black spots on body, leprosy, syphilis, consumption, etc., which are chronic diseases ; evil names, such as Nâgan, Jôgni, Kâni, etc. ; being born of diseased parents ; not having either known parents or own brothers.

XVI. — Marriage Rites and Rules.

40. Marriage must be celebrated according to the rules laid down by some religion. A man belonging to one form of religion cannot marry, either according to the Scriptures, or according to the customs of the country, a woman belonging to another.

41. Some tribes of different castes do indeed intermarry, but the high castes do not do so. As for example, goldsmiths and barbers marry the daughters of Kanaits, but they do not give their daughters in marriage to Kanaits. Kanaits marry the daughters of Khash and Karun, and also give their daughters in marriage to the latter. This custom does not prevail among other tribes.

42. Such marriages are not conducted according to the Hindu Scriptures, but they are customary marriages known as the karêwa.

43. The Rajputs marry the daughters of people of castes lower than theirs. In the same way the men of high castes marry the daughters of men of low castes. The children born of such marriages are considered inferior to those born of religiously lawful marriages.

44. The high and low tribes are distinguished by caste. The men of high castes marry the daughters of men of low castes. The children thus born are considered inferior to others and are called sartorë. The men of low castes cannot marry the daughters of men belonging to high castes.

45. When the bride comes to the house of the bridegroom, then, if the marriage is being celebrated in accordance with the Scriptures, the husband and wife play a gambling match. Afterwards cooked food is brought and laid before the pair. The husband feeds the wife, and out of the same plate the wife feeds the husband. The bride also pays some money to the Brâhmans and to the sister of the bridegroom. If the husband already has another wife, then the new wife interviews the old one with great pomp and show. This interview is named 'shaking hands.' It is said that the old wife, together with some other women who are singing songs, comes from one side, and the new wife and her husband, together with some other women, come from the other side. The women of both parties sit at the place appointed for interview. At this place also a ceremony called *mukh dikhî* (showing the face) is performed by the women of both parties.

46. Every man marries, according to his capacity, as many wives as he pleases, as there is no limit of number in this respect.

47. If a man marries more than one wife, then, as long as no son is born, the first wife is considered the chief or head Rāni, but when a son is born the wife giving birth to the son is considered the chief Rāni. She rules supreme in all the household business. The servants consider her their only master, and the husband as well as other members of the family respect her.

48. Poor men keep all their wives in the same house; while rich men set apart separate rooms for every wife.

49. Licentious people keep girls, too. Among the high families it is necessary to employ maid-servants; for no man can enter the houses where the *pardd* system is observed, and therefore maid-servants have to perform all the household duties.

XVII. — Divorce and Remarriage.

50. Except the Brāhmans and the Rājpūts, among whom the *karbwā* (irregular marriage) not prevails, the women of all other tribes, such as Sūds, Baniās and Bōhrās, can marry more than one man. The parents of the woman pay to her husband the expenses of the marriage and get her divorced. After this the woman can marry whomsoever she likes.

51. Men set up illegal connections with women, and thus directly choose wives. Generally women of loose character marry more than one husband. The well-conducted women stick to one only.

XVIII. — Polyandry.

52. It is a custom among the Sūdras, such as Kanaits, that the eldest of four or five brothers marries a wife according to the customs of the country. The wife thus married is told that all the brothers shall treat her as their common wife, and the wife also agrees to this and takes every one of them as her husband. Thus the woman is considered the common wife of all, provided the husbands are own brothers.

XIX. — Prostitution.

53. The women of high families have no freedom before marriage, and their parents look after them. It is a common saying that women have three guardians, i.e., parents in early age, husband in youth, and sons in old age. The women of low castes remain free before marriage.

54. Only Tūris, and no other tribe, offer their daughters for prostitution.

55. If any girl turns out of loose character before marriage, her parents do not accept any feast in return for their daughter. In the first place, girls cannot become immodest, and even if any one becomes so, she is checked from doing so as far as possible. The matter is kept quite secret, for it leads to the disrepute of the husband as well of the parents.

XX. — General Marriage Customs.

56. The girls are married only when they are above nine years of age.

57. Early marriage cannot be cancelled, whether either of the parties be of age or not. When the religious ceremony is once performed, it becomes, without any regard for sexual intercourse, irrevocable.

58. In high castes, husbands are chosen entirely by the parents of the girls. In low castes, like the Sūdras, the mother of the girl asks her opinion also in the matter of the choice of her husband. The parents of a girl send their barber or Brāhmaṇ in search of a husband for the girl, and these men propose betrothals. In other tribes, either the parents of the girl themselves or their relatives choose the husband for the girl.

59. Among the Brāhmans and the Rājpūts generally, the barbers and the priests serve as mediums in marriages, for that is their profession. These men generally deceive the people. They take bribes from one party as their brokerage. But nowadays people do not invest them with full powers of betrothal, and make enquiries to satisfy themselves.

60. If the girl be a minor, then consent of the guardian and own brothers of the girl is necessary to make the contract valid and to ensure marriage. But if the parties be of age, then their consent alone is sufficient. Under either of the circumstances, the calling together of the

brotherhood and making them witnesses, as it were, is very essential. The object of the distribution of red thread and sweetmeat at the time of the confirmation of the marriage contract is only to make witnesses of those persons who get the red thread and the sweetmeat.

61. Neither the bride nor the bridegroom is allowed to make a choice of the other. They cannot even see each other before their marriage. However, among the Dādras, like Kanaits, etc., there is no such restriction, and they can make a choice before marriage.

62. (a) If the bridegroom be of a caste higher than that of the bride's parents, then they pay to him bhattā (money to make up the deficiency of the caste), and the sum of this money is determined by the parties. Also money must be paid in cases when an inferior man wants to marry his daughter to a superior man, e.g., if a Rāna wants to marry his daughter to the son of the Rāja.

(b) The bridegroom buys the bride in the way indicated above; but it has now become a custom that, if the girl's father be a poor man, he sells his daughter. Generally this custom prevails among the Kanaits, but now it is gaining ground among the Rājpūts and Brāhmans also.

63. There are no rules to fix this price. If the bridegroom likes to take bhattā, it will be fixed according to the capacity of the bride's parents. If the parents of the girls want to pay the bhattā, it will be in proportion to the rank of the bridegroom's parents. Among the Kanaits, Kōlis and shepherds, the girls of Kanaits are valued at Rs. 60, and those of Kōlis or shepherds at Rs. 40. This price is termed dhōri.

64. The price of neither sort can be appropriated by the bride or the bridegroom, but their parents spend this money in marriage expenses.

65. If a formal marriage is once performed it cannot be cancelled. However, among the Muhammadans, marriages can be set aside.

66. The marriage cannot be set aside if either party lose any organ. But customary marriages can be cancelled at the option of the parties. Muhammadans can cancel their marriages.

67. No woman can be set at liberty to re-marry only on account of any of her omissions or commissions. The man does not cohabit with his regularly married wife if she proves to be of loose character, but has to maintain her throughout her life. She can either remain in her husband's house or go to her parents. The Muhammadans divorce a woman of bad character.

68. The system of divorce does not prevail among the Hindus. Muhammadans can divorce their wives on certain conditions, such as impotency of the husband or suspicious character of the wife.

69. The Muhammadans use the talaka-i-bain (irreversible divorce). The husband can divorce the wife without any fault on her part. This divorce becomes valid, when it is proved that the parties quarrelled at least thrice. It is necessary that the divorce be repeated after every month. The husband has the power, either directly, or indirectly, to revoke the divorce. If talaka-i-bain be pronounced thrice, the parties so separated cannot re-marry without the woman going through the formality of marrying another man and being divorced from him. But if the divorce be pronounced only once or twice, this condition is not necessary for re-marriage. If the husband at the time of his death divorces his wife and dies before the expiration of his iddat (period of probation of 4 months and 10 days, to see if the woman is *enceinte*), the wife is entitled to her husband's inheritance. It is natural for a woman to wait so long before her second marriage. Also, if the husband abstains from sexual intercourse for 4 months with the wife, this fact is also considered as an irrevocable divorce.

70. There are two kinds of marriages among the Hindus — the legal and the illegal. A formally married wife cannot be divorced, nor can she re-marry. The customary wife is free. She can leave one husband and marry another. It is a popular saying that the women of the hills never become widows — i.e., if one husband dies they marry another. Among Muhammadans, all women re-marry.

XXI. — Inheritance. —

71. In the hills the right of children is considered per stirpes and not per capita. The rights of children born of a formal marriage are superior to those of the children born of a customary marriage. The children whose father and mother are of different castes are called *shartari*.

These rights are inferior to those of the children born of customary marriage. They are given money and immovable property, just sufficient to support them. The children born of criminal connection between a man and a woman are called *jahat* or *jhatu*, and they live as servants of the family, or are given one or two fields and movable property worth twenty or thirty rupees.

72. If a man has got two sons by a formal wife, two sons by a customary wife, two sons by a customary wife belonging to a low family, and two sons by a wife of another caste or religion, then the sons of the formal wife have the main right to their paternal inheritance, but they give some portion of it to other sons of their father — i.e., one-half of the property left by the father will be retained by the legitimate sons, while the other half will be given to the rest of his sons. The shares of the latter are determined by the members of the brotherhood. The greater portion of the father's property is given to the legitimate sons, and the others are given maintenance as the village council directs, for there is no special law about this. At some places the legitimate children get two-thirds of the whole property of their father, while the natural sons get only one-third.

73. The legitimate sons follow their father's religion or faith. The natural sons are termed *sartari*, and now they have become a separate caste. But gradually this caste is being turned into the caste of its forefathers, for it organises relations with the pure caste.

74. There is a great difference between legitimate and illegitimate sons (i.e., sons by wives formally and customarily married). They cannot intermarry, nor do the former eat food prepared by the latter. Among the Kanaits there is no restriction as to eating and drinking. Such restrictions are observed only among the Rājpūts, the Brāhmans, the Sāds, the Bōhrās and Baniās.

75. After seven or, at the most, twelve generations, one family loses sight of the fact of being descended from the same forefathers as another family.

76. The paternal caste can be lowered only by contracting some irreligious or illegal connections. By no other means can this be effected.

XXII. — Tribal Details.

77. It has been already stated that the Brāhmans are divided into two main sub-divisions, i.e., Gaur and Sārsut, and from these the minor sub-divisions — such as Kanaujī, Bhāt, Kan Kobja, Mēthāl, Dārāwār, Aguf Hotri, Balramī Mahābrāhmaṇ, Acharāj, Dakaut, Shalāvāri, Chautī, Papūj or Papuch, Nāmī, Pāndē and Pujārī (priests) — have descended.

The following sub-divisions claim their descent from Rājpūts, the Brāhmans and the Baniās:— Kanait, Rāhu, Kārun, Khāsh, Khānāri, Chandēl, Chohān, Dōgrā, Mehtā, Dadarwāl, Pabarwāl, Jād, Lāma, Goldsmith, Barber, Potter, Bairagi, Sanyāsi, Udāsi and Jogi.

The following state that their ancestors were Rājpūts and Brāhmans:— Kōlis, Shepherds, Washermen, Dye-sinkers, Tūris, Carpenters, Ironsmiths, Bharējās, Cobblers, Shoemakers, Sweepers.

78. The ancient Brāhmans lived near the Indus and the Saraswati and the surrounding territories. The Gauris and the Sārsuts were their descendants who first came to the hills. As this happened in very remote and ancient times, so they forgot their origin and became known by the name of the place where they went and settled. Those who took their abode in Kānā became known as the Kanaujis, and those at Cawnpore were called Kan Kobja. Hence it is that those Brāhmans who are now found in the hills are held to be descendants of the two main Brāhmaṇ divisions.

The Rājpūts, Brāhmans and Sāds say that the Kanaits are the most numerous of all the tribes. All men belonging to any religion, who adopted the *karśwā* (customary marriage) and gave up the religious and national customs, were known as Kanaits. They were sub-divided according to the professions which they adopted. For instance, one who undertook to make gold ornaments was called goldsmith, and so on.

The tradition about the Kōlis is that a Kanait father had two sons by two wives. The sons quarrelled as to who had the superior right. At last it was decided that the one who should plough the field earliest in the morning should get the superior right. So, next morning, one of the brothers

went to plough the field, while the other began to plough the lowest floor of his house; but the place was too narrow to be ploughed. At last, being annoyed, he cut off one of the feet of his bullock. His brother, seeing this, turned him out of his home, for acting against religion. The Kolis, the shepherds, the shoemakers, the weavers and the boatmen are his descendants.

XXIII. — Widow Marriage.

80.⁵ The widows of all tribes, except those of the Brâhmans, Râjpûts, Sûds, Banias and Bohras, can re-marry. This custom prevails even among Râjpûts, who do not follow the rules which are observed by the high castes.

81. Widow marriage is not allowed by the Scriptures, for the marriage ceremonies can be performed but once. As the proverb goes: the lion produces a whelp by a single intercourse with the lioness, so the true man acts upon what he says. The banana tree, if once planted, always yields fruit; a woman, once married, cannot be re-married: and rich men do not give up their prejudices.

82. The younger brother can marry the widow of the elder brother, but not vice versa, except among Kanaits.

83. The widows of low castes can re-marry either a man of their own caste or one of another caste.

XXIV. — Inheritance after re-marriage of widows.

84. If a widow re-marries, her children by the first husband are to be supported by the husband's brother, whether the children be male or female.

85. If the widow marries a man of a caste different from hers, her husband's property is inherited in the following way:—

- (a) The widow is entitled to no share of her husband's property if she re-marries.
- (b) The children by the first husband are entitled to inherit the property of their father and their shares are determined by custom.
- (c) The husband's brother cannot inherit any portion of the property of the deceased. He is entitled only to his father's property.

86. If the widow marries her husband's brother, then the following rules about inheritance are observed:—

- (a) The widow cannot claim the property of her first husband.
- (b) A person by marrying his brother's widow becomes disentitled to his brother's property.
- (c) The children by the first husband inherit the property of their father, and their shares are determined by custom.
- (d) The children by the second husband have no right to claim the property of the first husband. They inherit their father's property.

87. The sons of a widow by her husband's brother are not called the sons of her first husband, but those of the second. The children born in the lifetime of the first husband, or within ten months of his death, are considered his sons.

XXV. — Household Customs.

Pregnancy and Childbirth.

88. No ceremonies are performed during pregnancy.

89. The woman assumes one of two postures at child-birth:—

- (a) She kneels on the ground. The midwife remains behind her, and, fixing her knees in the back of the lying-in woman, holds both of her shoulders by her hands.
- (b) The woman prostrates herself on the ground. The midwife keeps to her left side. Other women take hold of the head, hands and legs of the lying-in woman.

90. The midwife serves in the room of the lying-in woman. After child-birth, persons who are rich, or belong to high families, employ nurses. The wife of a poor man is attended by his parents only.

⁵ [No answer was apparently given to Question 79.—ED.]

91. Different ceremonies are performed at the birth of a child. Poor men prepare good food and distribute it among the Brâhmans and people of their own brotherhood. On the third day after the birth of the child the family celebrate the first feast. The priest comes and prepares the horoscope of the child. Sugar and sweetmeat is distributed among friends. Singing and dancing parties are given and guns are fired. The second feast comes after seven days, the third after nine, and the fourth after eleven days. The lying-in woman is kept, at the time of child-birth, in the lowest story of the house. After the fourth feast the woman takes the child in her lap. Music is played and songs are sung, and thus the mother, together with some other women, in the first place, worships the sun, and then the gate of the house. Afterwards the household god is worshipped, and some alms are paid to the Brâhmans. Among all the women present, presents and sweetmeats are distributed. People of the surrounding territories come with their guns and fire them. They are given some money or sugar. They present some green grass to the father of the child as a good omen. They call this grass *dib* (turf). The four feasts are celebrated only at the birth of a son, and this ceremony is named *gauntrâlî*. After eleven days, when the last *gauntrâlî* has been performed, the mother can go and live in the upper flats of the house. *Havan* (sacrifice) is also performed. At the birth of a girl no ceremony, except that of good food, is performed, nor is there any special rule about this. As long as the last *gauntrâlî* is not performed, nobody either eats food or drinks water from the house of the person where the child was born, except his relatives and people of low castes. This period is termed *sûlak* (impure state). The Brâhmans are purified after ten days; the Kshatriyas after twelve days; Baniâs, Bôhrâ and Sûds after fifteen days, and other castes after one month.

92. If the father be a poor man, then he stops his business for three days, because his relatives, friends and men of the brotherhood come to congratulate him. He has to present to them, according to his capacity, some money, sugar or cloth. In wealthy families, feasts and distribution of alms extend over all the eleven days. All the poor men, Brâhmans, mendicants, priests and barbers get alms and rewards. Green turf is presented and presents are given. Dances and other entertainments take place. At the birth of a girl the father stops his business for one day, or at the most three days. Generally on such occasions only food is distributed, and alms and rewards are not given.

93. There is no reason, except the one mentioned above, for stopping business.

94. No special rule or ceremony is necessary to be observed at the birth of twins.

XXVI. — Adoption.

95. There is no particular rule for adoption. Generally the custom in the hills is that the adopter calls to his house the boy whom he wants to adopt and paints his forehead with *sandal* paste. A contract is made according to the conditions agreed upon. Then they go to the temple of the god and break the *dingî* (a piece of wood, to signify truth of purpose) there, and make a solemn vow before the god that if they do not carry out the contract, then the god may punish them. Some remuneration is given to the priest and overseer of the temple, and this is called *bishî*. Then the boy becomes bound to serve his adopter as his father. The adopter gives every authority to the boy as his son. One rupee is offered to the god.

96. Until the contract has been reduced to writing, or the *dingî* has been broken at the temple of the god, the adoption is considered invalid.

97. The validity of the adoption depends upon the performance of this ceremony alone.

98. No custom, other than those given above, prevails in the hill tracts. There is no restriction of age for adoption. However, it is necessary that the adoptee be of the same blood as the adopter.

XXVII. — Puberty.

99. A ceremony is performed to mark the beginning of puberty, which is termed *dasîthan*. Alms are distributed and Brâhmans are fed. In the hills this custom is observed by very few people, except the high caste Kshatriyas.

100. The period of puberty is marked among the Hindus by wearing the sacred thread, and among the Muhaminadans by circumcision. Both these ceremonies are performed at a time when the boy has gained enough wisdom and sense to distinguish between right and wrong, and good and bad.

XXVIII. — Betrothal.

101. Betrothals are of two kinds:—

(a) **Barni** is that which is according to the Hindu Scriptures. The parents of the boy and those of the girl propose the betrothal, and the priest appoints a day for carrying it out. On this date the boy's father sends the priest and barber with some ornaments and clothes, which the girl puts on. Some money is given to the barber, the priest, the nurse and the Brâhman as their reward. A feast like the one given at the time of marriage is given, and a music band attends. The servants of both parties get rewards. Then the girl's parents send clothes and ornaments for the boy.

(b) **Sagai** or **sôta**. In this case a few ornaments or, if these be not available, one or more rupees are sent by the father of the boy to the girl through the priest or some relation. In order that the betrothal be considered permanent, the man carrying the ornaments takes his food in the house of the girl's parents. No other ceremony is celebrated, nor any rewards are given. Nothing is sent by the girl for the boy.

102. In the **Baoni Ceremony**, in order to ensure betrothal, the wearing of ornaments and clothes and painting the forehead with *sandal* paste and distribution of rewards are necessary. In the **Sagai Ceremony**, the taking of food by the messenger and handing over of money or ornaments to the girl's parents is essential.

103. However, the continuance of betrothal depends upon the option of parties.

104. Betrothal can be made after or before the parties are five years of age.

105. The consent of parents is essential for betrothal. If the woman be of age, then her parents also are consulted. If the father be dead, the permission of the elder brother or the guardian is taken. If there be no guardian, then the own brothers and near relatives are the persons whose consent is necessary.

106. If the betrothal is cancelled, one party pays the expenses incurred by the other. A list is prepared of all the articles exchanged at betrothal.

XXIX. — Marriage.

107. Marriages are of three kinds:—

(a) **Bêd-lagan**. — The bridegroom, wearing a bridal chapard on his head, goes to the house of the bride with music and attendants. The girl's parents give two or four feasts according to their capacity. The *bhânwar* (marriage service) is recited. After the *bêd-lagan* (matrimonial ceremony) the party is dismissed. The bridegroom comes back to his house and gives a feast, and the marriage festivities continue for some days. Prizes are given to his own menials, as well as to those of the bride. The bride pays some money to the men who accompanied the bridegroom to the house of the former and *vice versa*. The rewards and prizes are given according to the capacity of the parties, and there is no fixed rule for this. The recital of the *bhânwar* is essential in such marriages.

(b) **Jhâjra** or **Gadar**. — One or two men representing the bridegroom go to the house of the bride, where one person from the family in the village is present. They are given either a dinner or a supper by the bridegroom. The priest, the barber, the musician and other menials of the village are given four annas each, or at the most one rupee each, as their remuneration. The bride is brought to the bridegroom's house. Ganesh is worshipped, and this is essential.

(c) **Bardani**. — The bridegroom sends a woman to fetch the bride. One or two women come with the bride also. Ganesh is not worshipped nor any prizes given.

108. In the case of the *Bêd-lagan* the recital of *bhânwar* is necessary, in the case of the *Jhâjra* the worship of Ganesh, and in the case of the *Gadar* nothing.

109. There is no custom of seizing the bride forcibly. Two or three days after the carriage, if the wife be of age, the ceremony of union known as the *pusman sammit karam* (the union of man and woman) is performed. The priest appoints an auspicious date for this purpose. On that date one common bedding is laid for the pair. The husband, according to his capacity, gives some

money or ornaments to the wife on this first intercourse, which is called the *nāru khuldī* (remuneration for entering the girdle). The women distribute some sweets among themselves.

If a man forcibly seizes a woman and brings her to his house, this is called *hār* (abduction) and is considered an illegal marriage.

110. No such custom as the marriage of the bride with a god prevails.

XXX. — Death.

111. The dead of all the tribes are cremated, except those of the Muhammadans, the Bairāgis, the Udāsīs, the Sanyāsīs and the Jōgīs, whose dead are buried.

112. The Muhammadans place their dead, at the time of burial, in a lying position; the Bairāgi, etc., in a sitting posture.

113. The Hindu corpse is kept in a coffin, having its upper side open, and fine cloths are put upon it. A funeral pile of wood is prepared, and the coffin containing the corpse is placed upon it, and then it is set on fire. When all the corpse is reduced to ashes, these ashes are either thrown into the *kādī* (a deep valley), or are sent over to Hardwār to be washed away by the Ganges.

114. Different tribes have different ways of disposing of their dead:—

(a) The Muhammadans wash the corpse before it is buried. Then it is taken to the burial ground on a *chārpātī* (couch) or in a box. Then a grave is dug. Their priest chants some words according to their faith, and the corpse is laid into the grave and the pit is filled with earth. Some men put in some salt also, in order to hasten the dissolution of the corpse. A stone is placed on the mouth of the grave, and it is covered by a sheet of white cloth. A *fakir* (mendicant) lives there to take care of the grave, and after some days the sheet, the *chārpātī* and some money are given to him.

(b) The corpse of a Brāhmaṇ, Rājpūt, Bania, Sūd or Bōhrā is well washed. Then it is enveloped in a shroud of gauze or muslin and is placed in a painted coffin open at one end. Shawls and other silken cloths cover the dead body. The coffin is then placed in the court of the house and music is played. Thousands of people gather together, as if to a fair. They come in white robes to mourn for the dead. Musicians walk before the coffin, and all the relatives and other men, who come together for mourning, follow the coffin to the cremation ground, where the Jōgī prepares a pile of wood two or three cubits wide and four or five cubits long. There, a cow with a calf is given to the Jōgī or to the Mahābrāhmaṇ. Then the corpse is placed upon the pile, and funeral cakes, together with some alms, are offered in the name of the dead. Then one of the relatives strikes the head of the corpse with a stick, and this is called *kapāl kiryā*.

The Achāraj (man officiating at the funeral ceremonies) is paid some money. Then the pile is lighted. All the musicians and Achāris present are paid some money. Grain, fruits and pieces of money are thrown over the corpse throughout the passage from the home to the crematory. All these expenses are fixed according to the capacity of the dead.

(c) Among other tribes, the corpse is washed. The musicians are sent for, who play on instruments for one or two days. In some places the corpse is kept at home for two to three days. Then the coffin is taken out with the band playing before it. All the men who have come for mourning accompany the coffin to the cremation ground. They throw as much grain, fruits and pieces of money as they can afford over the corpse on their way from home to the cremation ground. Then having placed the corpse on the funeral pile, they take off all the costly coverings and burn, with the corpse, the ordinary ones. The musicians are paid their wages. The *kapāl kiryā* is not performed. Funeral cakes are not offered as in the case (b). The ashes are thrown into the valley. The well-to-do people carry the bones to Hardwār.

115. There are three different methods of propitiating the dead:—

(a) If the deceased died a natural death, the Brāhmaṇs, Rājpūts, Banias, Sūds and Bōhras put a lamp in the room where the deceased breathed his last, and keep it burning throughout day and night for ten days, taking care for it to burn continually. An earthen pitcher full of water is placed at the door with a hole in the bottom, from which water trickles. Every evening the son, or other

relative of the deceased, offers the funeral cake. The priest sits near the lamp and reads a *kathā* (a text) from the *Nasket* and *Garuḍ Purāṇas*. After ten days the lamp and the pitcher are thrown into the valley, and the reading of a *kathā* is also stopped. Then *spindī karam* (a ceremony to unite the dead with his ancestors) is performed, and after that the *vikhad shradh* is performed. The Achāraj is given ornaments, clothes and food. All the Brāhmans present are given some alms and cows, and horses are also given to them. After a fortnight or more a goat is killed, and all the relations are called together and fed with meat and rice. The father of the wife of deceased person's son supplies all the requisite material at this time, and gives clothing to his daughter and son-in-law. All present are fed for two or three days by the family of the deceased. After this a *shradh* (offering of funeral cakes to the dead) is performed every month. After six months a great sacrifice is performed, and cows, ornaments and clothes are given to the Brāhmans in the name of the dead. In the same way annual and quadrennial sacrifices are performed; after which only an annual *shradh* is observed. The bones of the dead are sent to Hardwār. Rice balls are offered at Bhoā and Kurukshētra, too.

(b) There is no particular custom to be observed at the death of a childless man. All the ceremonies of *shradh* and the sacrifices mentioned above are performed in this case, too, with the ordinary expenses.

(c) In the case of a violent death, it is necessary to offer funeral cakes in the name of the dead at Hardwār, Bhoā and Kurukshētra. Some persons perform the Nārāṇī Bali Shrādh — i.e., funeral cakes are offered for forty days instead of ten.

(d) Among the other tribes, having or not having of children by the deceased is of no importance. Much stress is laid upon music. Poor men call in a small band, while rich men employ a large band of musicians. Funeral cakes are offered on the third day after death. The ten *karmas* (ceremonies) are not performed. The goat is either not killed, or the heir of the deceased kills the goat any time after three days, and the mourning ceremonies then come to an end. Funeral cakes are offered at Hardwār, but this has been introduced only very lately. Monthly *shradhs* are not performed, but *shradhs* are performed after six months, one year and four years. Ornaments and clothing are given to the Brāhmans. The son of the sister of the deceased is given some alms and ornaments, instead of the Achāraj (the man officiating in funeral ceremonies).

(e) Among Muhammadans, after forty days a feast is given to all the brotherhood. No other ceremony is performed.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

THE FRENCH ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIÉTÉ D'ANGKOR.

By the Franco-Siamese treaty of 23rd March 1907, we learn that France has acquired the provinces of Battambang, Siemreap and Sisophon. These new provinces include the most magnificent group of architectural monuments in Asia, which are now added to those previously possessed by France in Cambodia and Annam. Among the numerous edifices that bear witness to the splendour of the ancient Indo-Chinese civilization are the wonderful temples of Angkor, — rivalling the greatest architectural marvels of the world.

As repository of these treasures France has not been slow in recognising the duty of carefully

preserving them, and, indeed, after existing for a millennium exposed to the ravages of time, a tropical climate and its vegetation, they are in need of careful conservation. French archæologists will avoid the evils of restorations but, though local revenues cannot assume the full burden of the expenditure required for so large an undertaking, they are resolved that it shall not be said that Angkor long suffered from French national indifference. They have therefore formed the 'Société d'Angkor' for the preservation of the remains. It consists of over fifty founders — French archæologists, professors, scholars and others interested in Indo-China and the preservation from destruction of the relics of its glorious past.

THE AGE OF THE TAMIL JIVAKACHINTAMANI.

BY T. S. KUPPUSWAMI SASTRI (TANJORE).

THE religious works of the Jainas made their appearance first in Sanskrit, and then, assuming the garb of the Indian vernaculars, spread through the country. The Tamil *Jivakachintamani* is probably one of such. Having been adapted into Tamil, it is looked upon even during the present day as a standard Tamil classic. The works that deal with the story of Jivaka are four in number, viz.—(1) the *Gadyachintamani* by Vâdibhasinha, (2) the *Kshattrachûddamani* by the same author, (3) the *Jivandharachampû* by Harichandra. These three are in Sanskrit. Another work is said to have been composed by Harichandra and called the *Jivandharanâtaka*, which is believed to treat of the life of Jivaka. No manuscript of it has been traced so far, and I therefore doubt if it ever existed. Consequently, it may at present be assumed that the fourth extant work dealing with the life of Jivaka is (4) the Tamil *Jivakachintamani*. We shall now proceed to examine if this poem is an original work, or if it is merely an adaptation of some earlier epic.

Mahâmahôpâdhyâya Pandit Saminatha Aiyar, in his edition of a portion of the *Jivakachintamani*, published in 1899, observes : “The Sanskrit works *Kshattrachûddamani* and *Gadyachintamani* by Vâdibhasinha, and *Jivandharachampû* and *Jivandharanâtaka* by Harichandra deal with the story of Jivaka. This story is related in the *Mahâpurâna*, which contains the stories of the sixty-three *Sâlakkayapurushas*. The bilingual *Sripurâna*, which gives an account of the twenty-four *tirthankaras*, also refers to the life of Jivaka in the story of Sri-Vardhamâna. On comparing the first three poems with the *Jivakachintamani*, I was struck with the resemblances between the two, and thought that in each of the former could be found several passages containing the sentiments and ideas expressed in some of the verses of the latter. I naturally began to suspect if the Sanskrit poems had been composed on the model of the *Jivakachintamani*. But on closer examination it was found that this supposition was untenable, because all the Sanskrit names introduced into the *Gadyachintamani* *Kshattrachûddamani*, and *Harichandrachampû* are found in the Tamil work. Many corrupt Sanskrit and Prâkrit words and many coincidences of thought and sentiment were at the same time traceable. I, accordingly, concluded that the *Jivakachintamani* was not an original work like the Tamil *Silappadigâram*. The former bears a closer resemblance to the *Gadyachintamani* than to the other two Sanskrit poems, while the story as found in the *Jivakachintamani* is different from the account given in the *Sripurâna* It is thus clear that Mahâmahôpâdhyâya Pandit Saminatha Aiyar is of opinion that the Tamil *Jivakachintamani* is not an original work, but that it is, greatly indebted to the Sanskrit *Gadyachintamani*. A few of the parallel passages are extracted below and serve to illustrate my remark.

(1) “ *Un̄d-enav=ursiyir=kêtpâr-uyir=uru pâvam-ellâñ
gand=ini-tteligav=enu kâttuvâl pôlav=âgi
vin-dôda nivanda kâyil vinnavar-magalîr=chenrâl
ven=dalai payinra kâtul vilang-ilai tamiyal=ânal.* ”

Jivakachintamani, Nâmagal-ilambagam.

“ अदिवानं पापवैचर्यी शुतवन्मः शुतौ पुरा ।
पश्चेषु त्रुमेतीव श्रीकल्पाभूषकिष्वना ॥ ”

Kshattrachûddamani, 1st lambaka—85.

The idea in the above two quotations is the same :— “ That lady who might be compared to the goddess Lakshmi became lonely and helpless as if she meant to show to the world which had only heard it explained from books that sin cannot be exhausted but by the inevitable working out of its evil results.”

(2) “ Soliya nañmai=illā=ochuñangai=vuñdambu nīngi=
y=ell-oji=tte van=āgi=ppirakkumōv=enña vēñdā
koll-ulaiy-agatt=iñ=ūdi=kkür-irum piradañ=gutta
v=ellaiyil ēm-bonn=āgiy=eri-niram perrad=apre.”

Jivakachintāmani, Gunamālaiyār-ilambagam.

“ यक्षोऽजनि यक्षोऽयमहो मन्त्रस्य शक्तिः ।
कालायसं हि कल्याणं कल्पते रसयोथातः ॥ ”

Kshattrachūḍāmani, 4th lambaka, ślo. 4.

Here again the idea is the same :— “ By the power of *mantra*, this dog became the king of Yakshas. Is not iron changed into gold by amalgam in the process of alchemy ? This is even so.”

(3) “ Ven=nira=ttagil=inañgan vñlandu mññ=āgi nippa
v=on=nirav=udiran=dannaiy=udiratt=āl=oñikkal=āmē
pañ=nira=kkilaviyār tam=bāsaiyinār=piranda pāvañ-
gan=nira=mulañinār tan=galviyār=kalikkal=āmē.”

Jivakachintāmani, Kēmasariyar-ilambagam.

“ ग्रन्थानुबन्धी संसारस्तेनैव न परिक्षमी ।
रक्तेन शूषितं वस्त्रं न हि रक्तेन शुभ्यते ॥ ”

Kshattrachūḍāmani, lamba 6, ślo. 10.

Once again the same idea is given :— “ The misery of this worldly life which grows up by attachment can never be cut off by attachment again. A cloth stained with blood can never be cleansed by blood.”

It will be seen from the above extracts that the expressions vary only as much as might be expected from the difference of idiom between Sanskrit and Tamil. The ideas are exactly the same. What is compressed in two lines of verse in Sanskrit is expanded into four lines of Tamil. There is no other difference. Similar passages may also be quoted from the *Gadyachintāmani*.

The Sanskrit poems which treat of the story of Jivaka are based on the Jain *purāṇas*. And this fact is attested to by the authors of the former. For instance, Vādibhasinha says in the preamble to his *Gadyachintāmani* :—

तिःसारभूतमपि बन्धमतम्भुजासं
मूर्खा जनो वहति हि प्रसवामुष्मन्
जीवधरप्रभवपुण्यपुराणयोगा-
दाक्षयं ममाप्युभयलीकहितप्रदायि ॥

“ The string by its association with flowers is accepted by the head. Even so then shall my humble words showing the joys of this world and the world hereafter be acceptable by their association with the holy *purāṇa* which recites the life of Jivaka.”

As the subject-matter is the same in the *Kehattrachūḍāmaṇi*, there was no need for the author, Vādibhasinha, to refer pointedly to the fact of the poem being based on the *purdñas*. In the Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi* the author, Tiruttakkadēvar, says:—

Munpir=ppiganda pavalattēdu ēangumuttu-
 m=anpir=uvarikkum=enip yd=arvi nikugirpl-
 r=annirav=en ēor=paļuddiyinu=gulbavanyē
 poyn̄iravallē=pporulē viñ pugudum=epbōr.

The commentator Nachchīnārkkīriyar explains the words *poyn̄iravallē=pporulē*, ‘ideas that do not partake of falsehood,’ as follows: “The majority of those that think they can obtain liberation through the true words of the *purdña* will certainly never despise the poet’s words, however distasteful and insipid they may be, as they are only the medium by which the ideas of the *purdña* are conveyed. This the poet was convinced of and hence his boldness in writing thus” It is then clear that, at the time of the commentator Nachchīnārkkīriyar, Tiruttakkadēvar was believed to have based his *Jivakachintāmaṇi* on the Jaina *purdñas*. As Tiruttakkadēvar does not refer either to the *Gadyāchintāmaṇi* or to the *Kehattrachūḍāmaṇi*, it remains doubtful if they were really anterior to the *Jivakuchintamani*. At any rate there seems to be no doubt that the latter was written after the *purāṇas*. And according to Jaina tradition, the original story of Jivaka is found in the *Mahāpurāṇa*, while the bilingual *Sṛṣṭipurdña* is admittedly of later date.

We have now to ascertain the date of the *Mahāpurāṇa*. The author who began the composition of the work is Jinasēnāchārya, disciple of Vīrasēnāchārya. The former wrote the *Harivāhiṇa-Purāṇa* in Saka-Saṁvat 705 (= A. D. 783) and became the preceptor, it is said, of the Rāshtrakūṭa king Amoghavarsha I., whose accession took place in A. D. 813. The *Pṛśvādhyudaya* was written during the same reign by the same author at the request of a co-disciple, named Vinayasēnāchārya, for a poetical work celebrating Pārvānātha-Tirthamkara. In composing this work Jinasēnāchārya chose to honour the Sanskrit poet and dramatist Kālidāsa in an ingenious way. He wove each line of verse of the poem *Mēghasāndēśa* into his own śloka. The last line of each of the latter is identical with that of one of the verses of the former. Not even a line of the *Mēghasāndēśa* has been omitted. Neither has he at the same time sacrificed his own thoughts or his subject in thus trying to honour the lines of Kālidāsa’s poem. Jinasēnāchārya, who began the *Mahāpurāṇa*, did not live to complete it. The work was taken up by his disciple Guṇabhadrāchārya and finished. The portion of the *Mahāpurāṇa* which was composed by the former is called the *Pūrvapurāṇa*, while the composition of the latter is known as the *Uttarapurāṇa*, and contains the story of Jivaka. It may therefore be supposed that the Sanskrit poems mentioned above, as well as the Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi*, are based on the *Mahāpurāṇa*, composed by Jinasēnāchārya and his disciple Guṇabhadrāchārya. The date of the *Mahāpurāṇa* would then be the upper limit of that of the *Jivakachintāmaṇi*. Luckily, we have no difficulty in fixing the former, because the subjoined *prabasti* of the *Uttarapurāṇa* tells us that it was written during the time of the Rāshtrakūṭa king Akālavarsha and in the Saka year 820, corresponding to A. D. 897. The very day on which the work was finished may be fixed with the help of the astronomical details furnished in the following passage:—

“ भक्तालवर्षेभूपाले पालवस्थस्तिळामिलाम् ।
 स्तिळमिवधस्तत्त्विः दोषादिपि वीभवयोऽनुष्ठि ॥
 पश्चालवस्थुक्षुलामविकासकासस्यतापसंसद्वहसि ।
 श्रीमति लोकादिरथे धर्षस्तप्रथितशङ्कुसंतप्तसे ॥
 वेलपत्ताके वेलभाजामुजे वेलकेतनतनुजे ।
 श्रीवेलवर्गेषुपूर्णिष्ठात्रिनि विभुषीभवशसि ॥
 कलावादरेष्वमविलाङ्गुष्ठात्रि विलक्षणक्षमं सुखं सुखिरम् ।
 तत्रिपत्ता निजनामकृते वेलाते, अमुजे पुरेष्वधिके ॥

शकनृपकाला यन्तरविशस्थभिकाटशतमिताद्वान्ते ।
 मङ्गलमहर्षकारिण पिङ्गलनामानि समस्तजनसुखदे ॥
 श्रीपद्मांश्च बुधार्द्वाजुजि दिवसकरे मन्त्रिवरे बुधांशे
 पूर्वांश्च सिंहलमें धनुषि धरणिजे वृथिकाकौं तुलाचाम् ।
 सर्वे शुक्रं कुलीरे गवि च मुरगुरौ निष्ठितं भव्यवर्णे ।
 प्राप्तेऽयं सर्वसारं जगति विजयते पुण्ड्रमेत्सुराणम् ॥ ”

Before proceeding to fix the lower limit of the date of the Tamil *Jivakachintāmani*, I take advantage of this opportunity to refer to another Tamil work composed by a Jaina preceptor. This is the versified Tamil lexicon *Sūlamaninigandu*, compiled by Maṇḍalapurusha, the disciple of Guṇabhadra. In the body of the lexicon, Maṇḍalapurusha gives a clue as to his date when he mentions Kiruttīparāya (Krishṇarāya) as having made unbounded gifts (*kodai-māḍam*). By Kiruttīparāya the Vijayanagara king Krishṇarāya cannot be meant, because Maṇḍalapurusha claims Guṇabhadra for his preceptor. By the Tamil expression *kodai-māḍam* the author evidently refers to the *biruda* Akālavarsa of the Rāshṭrakūṭa king, Krishṇa II. It thus appears that both Guṇabhadra and his disciple Maṇḍalapurusha were protégés of the Rāshṭrakūṭa king, Akālavarsa-Krishṇa II, whose dates range from A. D. 888 to 911-12. The Tamil lexicon *Sūlamaninigandu* was therefore compiled roughly in the third quarter of the 9th century A. D.

Returning to the lower limit of the date of the *Jivakachintāmani* we find that the Saiva teacher Umāpatiśivāchārya, who flourished at the beginning of the 14th century, refers to the work in his *Tiruttōṇḍarpurūḍhavaralāṛu*. In describing the circumstances which led to the composition of the Tamil *Periyapurūḍam* by the Chōla minister Sēkkilār, Umāpati tells us that the Chōla king Anapāya, the patron of Sēkkilār, was devoting his time to the study of the *Jivakachintāmani*. Sekkilār exhorted his patron to study the lives of the Saiva devotees and not waste his time over the *Jivakachintāmani*, which was based on fiction, and by the study of which no merit would accrue to him. Subsequently, Sēkkilār composed the Tamil *Periyapurūḍam* at the instance of the Chōla king. This Anapāya-Chōla is otherwise known as Rājēndra-Chōladēva alias Kulōttunga-Chōla I. or Śūmgandavirtta-Chōla. Archaeological experts say that his time was between 1070 to 1118 A. D. There is no mention of *Jivakachintāmani* in any work prior to the time of the *Periyapurūḍam*. As I have already pointed out, that the former must have come into existence only after the 9th century, it may be concluded that Tiruttakkadēvar's *Jivakachintāmani* was composed during the period ranging from the beginning of the 10th to the second half of the 11th century A. D.

¹ It is not clear on what grounds Mr. Kuppuswami Sastri identifies Anapāya with Kulōttunga I. But as he is not the first to make this identification, it is necessary to state the case as it actually stands. So far as it is known at present there is only one inscription which mentions the Chōla king Anapāya. It is engraved on one of the walls of the Tyāgarāja temple at Tiruvārūr in the Tanjore district, and is dated during the reign of a Kulōttunga, who, to judge from the alphabet employed in the inscription, cannot be Kulōttunga I. Even on purely literary grounds the identification of Anapāya with Kulōttunga I. seems to be untenable. The author of the Tamil *Periyapurūḍam*, who was a protégé of the Chōla king Anapāya, must have lived a pretty long time after Nambi-Āṇḍār Nambi, who arranged the Saiva Tamil scriptures (*Tirumūra*). The *Tiruviśaiippa*, which forms a part of these scriptures, has a hymn on the Gaṅgaikondachōlēvara temple, built evidently by the Chōla king Gaṅgaikonda-Chōla or Rājēndra-Chōla I., the maternal grandfather of Kulōttunga I. It is thus apparent that Nambi-Āṇḍār Nambi must have lived sometime after Rājēndra-Chōla I. If Anapāya had been the grandson of Rājēndra-Chōla I., it is not easy to believe that the work accomplished by Nambi could have been forgotten so soon, especially as the circumstances under which he discovered the sacred scriptures were almost miraculous. King Anapāya was altogether ignorant of Nambi and his work, and had practically lapsed into the Jains' creed. The interval between Rājēndra-Chōla I. and Kulōttunga I. is hardly 50 years, and the meritorious work of Nambi, accomplished during the earlier portion of this interval under such exceptional conditions, could not have been completely forgotten towards the close of the interval. It seems to me therefore that the identification of Anapāya with Kulōttunga I. is untenable on epigraphical as well as literary grounds. — V. V.

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES.

From the Native point of view.

BY MIAN DURGA SINGH.

(Communicated by H. A. Rose.)

(Continued from p. 284.)

XXXI. — Purification Ceremonies.

The Brâhmans are purified in ten days, the Kshatriyas in twelve days, the Vaiśyas, i. e., Baniās, Sûds and Bôhrâs, in fifteen days, and all other tribes in one month. People neither eat nor drink in the house in which some one has died, during the period of impurity. But when the heirs of the deceased eat either meat or asafœtida, they are considered purified, even if it be done within the period of impurity and then people do not object to eating food prepared by them.

* The Kshatriyas and Baniās, etc., get their heads shaved at the death of a relation. But this is not a general custom : for to shave the head it is necessary that the written permission of the Râja or the Rânâ be obtained beforehand.

116. The *shrâdhs* are of two kinds :—

(a) Those performed in the name of the deceased. A detailed account of such *shrâdhs* has been already given.

(b) Those which are performed in the *pitrî paksh* (the dark half of the lunar month) in the month of *Bhâdron* (about September). In this month all tribes, except the menials, perform *shrâdhs*. Some persons perform *shrâdhs* during the whole of the fortnight. Others perform only one *shrâdh*, in the name of all their dead, on the *amâvas* day (the last day of the lunar month). Every kind of food is cooked for the *shrâdhs*; fruits are put upon the table. The Brâhmans are called on the eve of the *shrâdh* to feast at a certain person's house, all arriving in the morning. The owner of the house calls the family priest and offers funeral cakes. Sacrifice is also performed. After this he washes the feet of all the Brâhmans, offers them *sandal* and flowers, and feeds them. In the end, money is given to the Brâhmans and they are dismissed. The family priest gets more than all the others. .

117. The Brâhman works as the priest in funeral ceremonies and also chants the hymns.

118. All the tribes in the hills have Brâhmans to officiate in their funeral ceremonies. The nephew also receives some gifts.

119. The method of purification has been stated above. It is done by killing a goat and eating asafœtida.

120-121. Either in the case of death or birth, it is after the prescribed periods that purification is regained. During that period, provided the heirs of the deceased do not use meat or asafœtida, the impurity continues.

122. On the day appointed for eating asafœtida or killing the goat, all the relations and the Brâhmans are called together, and all of them are required to eat asafœtida, while Brâhmans are also fed. The Brâhman chants some hymns over a mixture of milk, Ganges water, and cow's urine (called the *panch gâvîth*) and makes the heirs of the deceased take some of this mixture, and thus purification is effected.

XXXII. — Religion.

Sects.

123. The Hindus are divided into three sects, Saivas, Vaishnavas, and Sâktaks, worshippers of Sakti, the Female Principle.

The Saiva worship Siva. They are the disciples of the Sanyâsi or Udâsi mendicants. Some of them use meat and wine, while others do not.

The Vaishnavas are the followers of the Bairágis. Generally they do not use meat and wine. The majority of the Brâhmans belong to this sect.

The Sâktaks have as their teachers the Jôgîs, the Sanyâsîs, and the Udâsîs. They worship all sorts of deities. The use of meat and wine at the time of worship is considered good. They sacrifice goats to the goddess Kâlî. There is a separate god to every village or every four or five villages. Some of this sect go to Jawâla Mukhi to worship in the temple there.

Only Shêkhs are found among the Muhammadan sects. They believe in the Lakh Dâtâ Saint (the giver of millions). They do not follow any of the rules of the Hindu religion, but act according to their own laws.

124. The existing religion has been the religion of the people of this country from ancient times, and the three sects have always observed the rules of their own order.

125. It has been already stated that in ancient times the people followed the Vedic religion, until it was supplanted by Buddhism. After the decline of Buddhism the former religion revived and is still flourishing.

126. Ordinarily, Hindus follow one of the three forms of belief above mentioned. Some people here and there follow the dictates of their conscience and believe in other gods and teachers. But these are very few.

127. Some persons worship tombs and *pirs* (saints) also.

The Gods of the Hill Tracts.

| No. | The Name of God. | The Name of the Village or Seat of God. | Territory. | NOTES. |
|-----|------------------|---|-----------------------|---|
| 1 | Dêvi or Durgâ. | Kiyâri ... | Kôt Khâi and Kôtgurû. | I êvi is worshipped throughout the hills. |
| 2 | Chatur Mukhi ... | Mailôn | Kôtgurû | All the people believe in the god of Kôtgurû. He is also worshipped in Kanehti and Rêk and in all the small villages. |
| 3 | Dum ... | Danthlâ | Do. | Worshipped only by the natives of Danthlâ. |
| 4 | Dum ... | Pumlâhi | Do. | The god of this one village only. |
| 5 | Dum ... | Shamâthlâ | Do. | Do. do. |
| 6 | Dum ... | Dalân ... | Do. | Do. do. |
| 7 | Marichhî | Kêpu ... | Do. | Worshipped in Kêpu, Gharâl, and Nanjâ. |
| 8 | Dêva Kirti | Kirti ... | Do. | Worshipped in Kirti, Bhanâna, and Shâwat. |
| 9 | Bhôteahar | Bhôthi | Do. | Worshipped in Bhôthi, Bagâhar, and by the agriculturists of Mâhorî. |
| 10 | Baindrâ | Dêvri ... | Kôt Khâi | The god of the Majhgîhî and Thakariâghî territories. |

| No. | The Name of God. | The Name of the Village or Seat of God. | Territory. | Notes. |
|-----|------------------|--|------------------|---|
| 11 | Chembî .. | Bêthi .. | Kôt Khâi .. | The god of the agriculturists of Bêthi and Auri. |
| 12 | Dum .. | Nehrâ .. | Do. | The god of this one village only. |
| 13 | Mahâ Dêva .. | Pûrag .. | Do. | The god of half Chhê Bisi. |
| 14 | Nâg ... | Chathlâ .. | Do. | The god of Chathlâ and Pungrish. |
| ✓15 | Kâli Tûnâ .. | Rakh Chambî Kûpar. | ..... | Worshipped throughout Kot Khâi. |
| 16 | Sharavan Nâg. | Shôshan .. | Kôt Khâi .. | Worshipped in Gajdhâr in the Kôt Khâi Tahsil and in Shêlâ in Darkotî. |
| 17 | Baindrâ Tâni .. | Khâri and Pi-darâ. | Do. | Worshipped only in these two villages. |
| 18 | Nandharâri .. | Pujârlî | Do. | The patron of Chêwar, Gajdhâr, Chehr, Shalâwar, Darkotî State and half Chhê Bisi. |
| 19 | Mahâ Dêva .. | Dalsâr .. | Do. | The god of Dalsâr only. |
| 20 | Nandan .. | Devrî .. | Kanehtî State.. | God of all Kanehtî, except Sadôch. |
| ✓21 | Dêvi Âd Shaktî | Kachêr .. | Kumhârsen State. | The goddess of the whole territory, but there are other minor village gods. |
| 22 | Mahâ Dêva .. | Kôtî Madhâti .. | Do. .. | Worshipped in all Kumhârsen, but there are other minor gods of villages. |
| 23 | Magnêshar .. | Kôt .. | Do. .. | The god of the Sêl territory. |
| 24 | Dum .. | Sarmalâ .. | Do. | The god of the Obâdêsh territory. |
| 25 | Nâg | Ghûndâ .. | Do. | The god of Ghûndâ and Chadyânâ in the Kôt Khâi Tahsil. |
| 26 | Baindrâ .. | Dim .. | Do. | The god of one village only. |
| ✓27 | Dum .. | Himrî .. | Do. | The god of the Chagûon territory. |
| ✓28 | Nâg | Bâgi .. | Do. | The god of the Chajôli territory. |
| ✓29 | Bhima Kâlf .. | Sarâhan .. | Busâhir State.. | The goddess of the territory of Busâhir. There are other minor gods under her. |
| 30 | Mahâsû .. | Shêkal .. | Do. | The god of agriculturists of Shêkal only. |
| 31 | Pabâsi .. | Chapâri .. | Do. | The god of the agriculturists of Balâr in the Râwin State, Chapâri and Lohârkôtî. |
| 32 | Pabâsi .. | Gavâs .. | Do. | The god of the rest of the State. |
| 33 | Panch Nâg .. | Janglêkâ, Dêvdi, Tangnû, Pê-khâ, and Gô-sakvâri. | Do. | Has a temple in each of these five villages. |

| No. | The Name of God. | The Name of the Village or Seat of God. | Territory. | Notes. |
|-----|------------------|---|----------------------------------|--|
| 34 | Chasrâlû | Gôsakvârî | Busâhir State ... | The god of two or three villages only. |
| 35 | Godârû Pûbâsî. | or Daswâni | Do. .. | The god of the Daswâni territory. |
| 36 | Godârû Pûbâsî. | or Khaniârâ | Do. ... | The god of Khaniârâ territory. |
| 37 | Dêva Sheldêsh. | Shêldêsh | Do. ... | The god of the Larôt and Shêladêsh. |
| 38 | Nâg ... | Khâbal | Do. ... | The god of the Khâbal territory. |
| 39 | Pûbâsî | Rôhal ... | Do. ... | The god of Rôhal. |
| 40 | Nârâin | Jâbal ... | Do. ... | The god of the Jôgahâ territory. |
| 41 | Mahâ Dêva | Pôjâli | Do. ... | The rural god of Pôjâli and Bêtianî. |
| 42 | Dêva ... | Jakhnôtî | Do. ... | The god of Jakhnôtî. |
| 43 | Khantû | Dêvi Dhâr and Ranôl. | Do. ... | The god of the Sârî of Râjgarh territory. |
| 44 | Bakrâlû | Dalgôn and Rôphû. | Do. ... | The god of the Spêl territory. |
| 45 | Baindrâ | Bachhôncî | Do. ... | The god of half the Mandalgâh territory. |
| 46 | Mêshar | Pôjârlî | Do. ... | The god of the other half of Mandalgâh. |
| 47 | Nâg ... | Pôjârlî ... | Do. ... | |
| 48 | Lôdar | Pôjârlî ... | Do. ... | The gods of the Nâvar territory. |
| 49 | Nârâinû | Nârâin | Do. ... | |
| 50 | Dhôlû | Karûsâ | Do. ... | The god of Ghôri Karâsâ in the Nâvar territory. |
| 51 | Shâlû | Mélthî | Do. ... | The god of the Nâvar territory. |
| 52 | Nagêshar | Jhârag | Do. ... | The god of the Pandrâ Sau territory. |
| 53 | Dêvi Durgâ | Shil... | Do. ... | Worshipped by the agriculturists of Shil. |
| 54 | Mahâsû | Mandhôl | Do. ... | Worshipped by the natives of Mandôl. |
| 55 | Dêvi Durgâ Hât | Hât Kôtî | Busâhir, Jûbal and Râwin States. | Worshipped in the Pandrâ Sau, Nâvar Jûbal and Râwin territories. |
| 56 | Kharâinû | Kharâhan | Busâhir State ... | The god of the Rék and Sâmat territories. |
| 57 | Palthân | Shôli... | Do. ... | The god of the Mastgarh and Alat territories. |
| 58 | Khanâsi | Barkal | Do. ... | The rural god of the Barkal territories. |
| 59 | Khanâsi | Mahbûli | Do. ... | The god of the Sêô territory. |

| No | The Name of God. | The Name of the Village or Seat of God. | Territory. | Notes. |
|----|------------------|---|------------------|--|
| 60 | Kalēdā .. | Kalēdā .. | Busāhir State... | The god of the villages of Kalēdā and Phōlā. |
| 61 | Chater Khand. | Brāndī .. | Do. ... | The gods of the Kanchhin territory. |
| 62 | Mauglēshar .. | Dwārpā .. | Do. ... | |
| 63 | Lachhmi Nārāin | Kumstū .. | Do. ... | The gods of the Shalātī territory. |
| 64 | Khantū .. | Majhālti .. | Do. ... | |
| 65 | Dēva Kōkhi .. | Darkālti .. | Do. ... | |
| 66 | Lachhmi Nārāin | Pāt .. | Do. ... | |
| 67 | Dēvijīti .. | Munush .. | Do. ... | |
| 68 | Kanglēshar .. | Dēothī .. | Do. .. | The god of the Hōchhi territory, and Majhālti and Chaksā villages. |
| 69 | Nāg .. | Kim .. | Do. ... | The god of Kim village. |
| 70 | Chhāri Gudrī .. | Karērī .. | Do. .. | The god of one village only. |
| 71 | Jakh .. | Rachhōli .. | Do. ... | The god of four or five villages. |
| 72 | Gasō Dēv .. | Gasō... .. | Do. ... | The god of one village only. |
| 73 | Bashērū .. | Bashērā .. | Do. .. | The god of Tin Kōthi, but universally worshipped. |
| 74 | Nārāin .. | Kinū .. | Do. ... | The god of the Chhē Bisī territory. |
| 75 | Lachmi Nārāin | Maujhēlī .. | Do. ... | The god of the Nau Bisī territory. |
| 76 | Jhangrū .. | Manjgāon .. | Do. ... | The god of the Panjgāon territory. |
| 77 | Nāg .. | Navārū .. | Do. ... | The god of the Pat Sō territory. |
| 78 | Nāg .. | Bari .. | Do. ... | The god of the Bari territory. |
| 79 | Dēvi .. | Tarāndā .. | Do. ... | The god of the farmers of the Tarāndā territory. |
| 80 | Mahēshwar .. | Sōngrā .. | Do. ... | The gods of the farmers of the Sōngrā territory. |
| 81 | Okhā .. | Nachār .. | Do. ... | The goddess of the Nachār territory. |
| 82 | Durgā .. | Kambā .. | Do. ... | The goddess of the Rēpi Kamba territory. |
| 83 | Mahā Rudr .. | Kiāo .. | Do. ... | The god of the Khiđūnitchā territory. |
| 84 | Nāg .. | Barandā .. | Do. ... | The god of the Jagōrī territory. |
| 85 | Jal .. | Sarpārā .. | Do. ... | The god of the Kāo Bil territory. |
| 86 | Nāg .. | Barū .. | Do. ... | The god of the Kilbā territory. |
| 87 | Mahēshwar .. | Bhabbā .. | Do. ... | The god of the Bhabbā territory. |
| 88 | Mahēshwar .. | Chagāon .. | Do. ... | The god of the Chagāon territory. |

| No. | The Name of God. | The Name of the Village or Seat of God. | Territory. | NOTES. |
|-----|-------------------------------------|---|------------------------|--|
| 89 | Badri Nâth .. | Kâmrû .. | Busâhir State .. | The god of the Tukpâ territory. |
| 90 | Chandikâ .. | Kôthî .. | Do. ... | The god of the farmers of Shôa. |
| 91 | Thâkur Dwârâ .. | Naising .. | Do. ... | The god of the farmers of Naising village only. |
| 92 | Raghû Nâthjî .. | Sarâhan .. | Do. .. | Worshipped throughout the country. |
| 93 | Narsinghjî .. | Râmpur .. | Do. ... | |
| 94 | Bâlrâmjî .. | Larsa, Dansa, Shingla, Shaneri. | Do. ... | Worshipped in four villages only. |
| 95 | Bâlrâmjî .. | Nirat .. | Do. ... | Worshipped in Niratnagar only. |
| 96 | Bâlrâmjî .. | Nandla and Torsa. | Do. .. | Worshipped in Nandlâ, Tôrsâ, Chêdnî, Gômân, Dagôli. |
| 97 | The tombs of Mansâgir and Dhânígir. | Ghôrnâ .. | Balsan State .. | Worshipped by the people of all the territory ; there are separate rural gods in every village also. |
| 98 | Dêvî Mansâ .. | Ghôrnâ .. | Do. ... | |
| 99 | Kadhâsan .. | Dêôthî .. | Do. .. | The god of the farmers of the Dhârtî, Ducl and Nôti <i>pargând</i> . |
| 100 | Râi Rê Môlê .. | Kadhâran .. | Do. .. | The god of the Kadhbâran, Shilgri and Dhâr territories. |
| 101 | Chêôli .. | Shêlâ .. | Do. ... | The gods of the Sheltâ territory. |
| 102 | Chitrâ .. | Chândnî .. | Do. ... | |
| 103 | Nâg .. | Pal .. | Do. ... | The gods of the Shalgâon territory. |
| 104 | Mahêshwâr .. | Mahâsû .. | Do. ... | Worshipped in Majhêtî and Draunk <i>pargândas</i> . |
| 105 | Kadâsan .. | Tâlî .. | Do. .. | The god of the Parli Phâtî territory. |
| 106 | Bagêshar .. | Bagêshar .. | Do. ... | Worshipped in Shâkh, Kâtâr, and Bagêshar of Balsan, and in the adjacent Nâhan villages. |
| 107 | Nâg .. | Kathôrî .. | Do. ... | The god of Kathôrî village only. |
| 108 | Gôn .. | Bakrârî .. | Do. ... | The god of the Kalâsi territory. |
| 109 | Nainôh .. | Dêvtî .. | Do. ... | The god of the Parâli territory. |
| 110 | Banâr .. | Shaiâchlî .. | Kêônthal State .. | The god of all Râwin territory. |
| 111 | Mahâsû .. | Hanôl .. | Do. ... | Do. do. |
| 112 | Nigâlhû .. | Jâflî .. | Do. ... | The rural god of Aglâ Pônar. |
| 113 | Banêshar .. | Chôhág .. | Pônar, Kêônthal State. | The rural god of Pichhlâ Pônar. |
| 114 | Paddôî .. | Parôl .. | Sangiri State .. | The god of the Sângri, Kumhârsen and Bhâjjî States. |
| 115 | Nâg .. | Shêdri .. | Do. ... | The god of the Bhâjjî, Sângri, Busahir, and Kûlâ. |

| No. | The Name of God. | The Name of the Village or Seat of God. | Territory. | NOTES. |
|-----|------------------|---|-----------------------------------|--|
| 116 | Bând | Banâr | .... | Worshipped in the Banâr territory only. |
| 117 | Marichh | Sawân | .... | Worshipped in the Sawân territory only.. |
| 118 | Grêhan | Dêtti | Ghônd State ... | The god of the Shilâ territory. |
| 119 | Shilgur | Ghund | Do. | The god of the Prâlâ territory. |
| 120 | Thâkur Dwârâ | Ghund | Do. | The god of farmers. |
| 121 | Bânthiâ | Chikhur | Thêgg ... | Do. do. |
| 122 | Bânthiâ | Janôg | Do. | Do. do. |
| 123 | Jîmprû | Padrôg | Do. | Do. do. |
| 124 | Mahâsû | Gajyârî | Do. | Do. do. |
| 125 | Banâr | Sharâchli | Jûbal State .. | The god of the Barâr territory in the Jubal State, and of the Rânâ of Jubal. |
| 126 | Mahâsû | Hanôl | Do. | The god of all the Jûbal State. |
| 127 | Shrigul or Bijat | Sarâhan | Do. | The god of the Bis Sô territory. |
| 128 | Râthi kâ Banâr. | Bârhâl | Do. | The god of the Bârhâl village only. |
| 129 | Santôpiâ | Dhâr | Do. | The god of Dhâr village only. |
| 130 | Shârî | Shârî | Do. | The god of four villages. |
| 131 | Dêvi | Jûbal | Do. | The goddess of the Barâr territory, and of the Rânâ. |
| 132 | Dêvi | Hatkoti | Râwin, Jûbal, and Busâhir States. | The goddess of the territories round Jûbal. |
| 133 | Rihatnâ | Thalôg | Jûbal State ... | The god of the Jakhôli territory. |
| 134 | Gôna | Bôdhnâ | Do. | Do. do. |
| 135 | Dêvi Jogrâsan | Pôjarî | Do. | The rural god of the Pêonthrâ territory. |
| 136 | Kanêrâ | Pôjarî | Do. | The rural god of the Shak territory. |
| 137 | Dêvi Dunudi | Dhabâs | Do. | The rural god of the Hamal territory. |
| 138 | Dum | Bhôt | Do. | The rural god of the Jakhôli territory. |
| 139 | Mahâsû | Pôriyâ | Tharôch State... | The gods of all the territories of Tarôch and Sangiri. |
| 140 | Mahêshwar | Mashrân | Do. | Do. do. |
| 141 | Mahâsû | Hanôl | Do. | Do. do. |
| 142 | Thân | Sawân | Sangiri State... | Do. do. |
| 143 | Tawânsi | Barâgâon | ..... | Worshipped in Maghidhâr territory. |

XXXIII. — Origins of the Gods.

128. (1) A Sanyâsi mendicant, named Ilachigir, came to Balsan and Thêbg States. The Chiefs of both the States became his disciples, for he knew *jög* (spiritual science) very well. After his death, a tomb was raised over his ashes, and this tomb is now worshipped. The real seat of the saint is Thôr in Sirmûr State, and the Chiefs and subjects of both the States pay visits to this place also.

(2) The gods of the hills are of two kinds : — Female, i. e., Dêvis (goddesses); male, i. e., Dêvatâs (gods). The image of a goddess is always complete. In the case of a god, his head or bust only is represented.

(3) The accounts of their origin and attributes vary. The gods are generally of one type, though they bear different names. The modes of worship are the same, and their images alike. Some goddesses are represented with four arms, some with two, some with eight, twelve, or even sixteen. Some are made to sit upon a dead body; some are shown as riding a lion. There are many other images in a temple, besides those of the god and the goddess, bearing different names, such as Shibi, Shambhûjî, Ganâsh, Indar, Râjan, etc.

Ay

XXXIV. — Forms of Worship.

trsâ.

(4) The priests worship the gods twice a day. In the morning the priest provides some *sandal*, rice, purified butter for the lamp, flowers, *dhûp* (scent), and some sweets or fruits for the god. First of all, the god is washed with fresh water, and then his image is wiped with a clean cloth; *sandal* is pasted upon the forehead and some rice also. A garland of flowers is thrown round his neck. A lamp is lighted, drums are beaten, and bells are rung. The priest offers incense and chants hymns. Then sweets or fruits are placed before the image. After this all the worshippers offer their presents. The priest paints their foreheads with *sandal*, and prays to the god to fulfil their desires. Then the *chela* (disciple) of the god goes into a trance and foretells success or failure to the pilgrim, offers him rice, and gives him directions in answer to his questions. In the evening only the lamp is lighted, incense and food being offered; after which the god or goddess retires. This is called *ârti*.

(5) All kinds of presents are offered. Some men present gold and silver ornaments, clothes, money, grain, fruits, and purified butter, etc. A goat is killed. One loin of the goat is given to the person offering it; the remainder is distributed among the priests. Two or four annas in cash are given to the priest for each goat. In the temple of the goddess, presents are offered in the months of Chêt and Asôj. In addition to this, one can offer presents, if one likes, on a Tuesday, the day of the full moon, and the fourteenth, eighth or ninth day of the moon. Presents can be offered to a god at any time; but to do so on the first day of the month, or in Baisâkh, Bhâddon or Mâgh, is considered best.

(6) The presents offered to a god or goddess are collected in the treasury and are spent in charity. The men in charge of the temple, such as the priest, the monk and the musician, are paid small sums by the pilgrims, the least sum being six pies. The pilgrims can pay them as much as they like.

XXXV. — Ghosts and Spirits.

129. *Bhûts* (ghosts), *parîs* (fairies), *chadrâs* and *mânhrâs* are believed in by children and women.

130. Stones are not worshipped in any way, except that people make images of stone and hang them round their necks.

131-132. No.⁶

133. N.l.⁶

134. The Vam Margis, who worship the genital organs, are not to be found in this territory.

⁶ [Obviously answers to questions. — Ed.]

XXXVI. — Initiation Ceremonies.

135. (a) To admit a person to any religious order, the brotherhood of the village assembles in the temple of its god. After discussing the question, they send for the man who is to be admitted. A Brâhman is called to that place by permission of the Ch.of. He chants some hymns on the *panch gavyâ* (a mixture of milk, honey, cow's urine, water of the Ganges, and clarified butter) and makes the candidate for admission drink it. A feast is given to all the brotherhood, and the excommunicated can join in the feast. Then he goes to the god and presents offerings. This is allowed to reclaim those who have been excommunicated by the brotherhood owing to some mistake. Apostates who voluntarily give up the Hindu religion and become converts to any other religion cannot be reclaimed.

(b) Generally it is necessary to wear the sacred thread in order to join the Hindu religion. But the Sûdras, as already mentioned, do not wear it. They are considered members of the religion if they obey the ordinary rules, even if they do not wear the sacred thread.

XXXVII. — High Class Hindu Sects.

136. High class Hindus are divided into two sections — (1) **Saivas**, who worship the god Siva ; (2) **Saktaks**, who worship Siva, the goddess, and other gods. Those belonging to the first sect regard the sacrifice of goats and drinking of wine as sins. Those belonging to the second consider both to be virtuous. Enquiry shows that the latter abound in the hills, while the former are very few, not more than two per thousand.

XXXVIII. — Brâhman Sects.

138⁷. Brâhmans are divided into two kinds : — (a) Pandits or Pâdhas, i. e., **Shukal**; and (b) Achâraj, Bhât or Dakaut, i. e., **Kishan**.

The Shukal Brâhmans accept the alms offered on happy occasions — such as the birth of a child, a marriage, or some other festival. They also chant hymns, or officiate in the worship of gods at such times. Every tribe has a separate Brâhman of this kind.

The Achâraj receives alms offered at funeral ceremonies. On these occasions the reading of the *kathâ* and the chanting of hymns is done by the Shukal Brâhman, i. e., the priest. The alms are given to the Achâraj.

The Bhâts are given alms only at marriages. They are inferior to the Brâhmans, but superior to the Achâraj.

Alms offered to propitiate evil stars, such as Râhu, Kêtu, Sani, are given to the Pandâs or Dakauts. They also receive *tulâ dâna* (alms in the form of grain, metals, etc., equal in weight to the weight of the man offering them). The hymns are recited by the Shukal Brâhman. Only the alms are given to the Dakauts.

The Brâhmans of all the tribes, except those of the Cobblers, Kôlis, Shepherds, Musicians and Sweepers, do all the work mentioned above and take alms.

The Shukal Brâhmans do not eat food prepared by the Kishan Brâhmans.

XXXIX. — Priests.

139. Only Brâhmans act as priests.

140. No priest is to be found who performs ceremonies not pertaining to any particular god.

141. Every tribe has its own priests. None but Brâhmans can serve as priests.

142. Each family has a priest.

143. The priest knows all the business that he has to perform in the house of his disciple. He is not bound to keep *brahmachârî* (celibacy) to the prescribed age, nor is he under any restrictions as regards profession. It is necessary for him to know the rules for giving or receiving alms at the times of death, marriage, birth, or any other festival.

⁷ [No answer was apparently given to Question 137 — Ed.]

XL. — Places of Worship.

144. In some places there are separate buildings set apart for worship, while in others there are not.

145. The temples have their doors either to the north or east or on all sides.

146. A temple is either a *shivdālā* or a *thākur-dwārā* or a *dēvī-dwālā*.

147. A *shivdālā* contains the images of Shibi, Rāma, Ganesh, Hanumān and Bhairōn. A *thākur-dwārā* those of Shivājī, Rāma, Lakshman, Krishnā, Balram, Gopālji, and Hanumān. A *dēvī-dwālā* the images of Dēvī, Kāli, Lōnkrā, and a lion.

148. The god of the temple is worshipped thrice every day, in the morning, noon and evening, but in some places this worship is performed only twice. Offerings are made. The Brāhmaṇ is fed at particular festivals and *hawan* (sacrifice) is performed.

149. Some ceremonies are performed openly, and some secretly. The latter are called *narol pūjā*, and are performed on the occasion of particular festivals only and not every day.

XLI. — Sacrifices.

150. (1) Goats and sheep are sacrificed to all the gods.

(2) Goats are sacrificed in the name of the Dēvī or Kāli.

(3) Sheep are sacrificed in the name of Bhairōn, Lōnkrā, and Narsingh.

(4) Buffaloes are sacrificed to the younger Lōnkrā.

(5) Fowls, pigs, fish, and lizards are offered to the lesser Kāli.

151. Generally the family priest officiates at the time of the sacrifice, but one can sacrifice without the aid of the priest as well. The sacrifice is offered to the god who is the patron of the offerer.

152. The sacrifice is performed at the temple.

153. If the sacrifice be of a goat or sheep, one loin is given to the person who offered it, and the remainder is distributed among the monks, gods, and the priests. Sometimes the sacrificial animal is buried. In some places the head and liver of the sacrificed goat are kept by the priests and monks, and the remainder is given back to the offerer.

The sacrifice of the other animals are offered by the Kōlis, Cobblers or Shepherds.

154. Sometimes, instead of a living creature, an imitation of it in flour or silver are offered, or the living beast, without being sacrificed, is let loose in the temple of the god. The animal remains in the forest, and the custodians of the temple look after it. When fat it is sold, and the money thus realised is added to the god's treasure. If the image offered be of silver, it is stored in the treasury. If of flour, it is cooked in oil or clarified butter, and is eaten by the priests.

155. The worshippers do not offer any part of their body as sacrifice.

XLII. — Human Sacrifice.

156. It is said that in ancient times men, women, and children were offered as sacrifice to the Dēvī or Kāli. Men were sacrificed to Lōnkrā also.

157. It is said that men had their heads cut off as offerings to Jawālā Mukhi, Kāli, Bhima Kāli and Bhairōn Bir, etc., and put into the sacrificial fire. Many men cut out their tongues and offered them to the goddess.

A sacrifice of the nature of **human sacrifice** is, however, still performed in the hills every forty or fifty years, and is called **Bhunda**. A man of the **Beda** Tribe of Kūlū and Garhwāl is sent for. From ancient times such men have been kept as priests in the places where this sacrifice is performed. They are treated like the ordinary priests, and are given an

annual pension out of the temple fund. When the time of the sacrifice has been fixed, the Bēdā is sent for three months before the date. He comes with his family and gathers hemp, with which a big rope, four or five hundred yards long, is prepared. All the men accompanying the Bēdā are sumptuously fed, and one of them who willingly offers himself is chosen for the sacrifice. He is given plenty of wine, meat, milk, etc. The sacrificial fire is kept burning for three months in the temple of the god. On the appointed day, saints, Brâhmans, and gods of the neighbourhood are sent for, and all are provided with food.

The Bēdâ is brought to the temple in the morning and placed near the sacrificial fire. He is then worshipped and sacrificed, like a goat, in the name of the god. A rope that is prepared by the man himself is tied to two poles, and then the man is thrown over this rope. Some die, while others escape alive. In the latter case he is given eighty-four rupees in cash, garments and ornaments from the god's treasury. He has authority to ask for anything he likes from the pilgrims, who are bound to give it to him. This is a very critical time, and much care is taken in British territories. It is however held that the man's death or otherwise is under divine control. Some places where the rope is bound to poles are flat, while others are valleys between two rocks.

158. The men to be sacrificed, like the priests, are certain men fixed upon and are sacrificed in turn. A quarrel, as among the priests, arises if one offers himself in the place of another.

159. Open human sacrifice is now quite obsolete.

List of Bhunda Sacrificial Spots.

| No. | Name of God. | The Place of Sacrifice. | Territory. | NOTES. | | |
|-----|------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------|---|--|--|
| 1 | Bashêrû ... | Bashêrâ ... | Busâhir State | A good place, but very distant. | | |
| 2 | Kanglêshwar .. | Dêvthî ... | Do. ... | An ordinary place. | | |
| 3 | Lachmî Nârâin | Manjhêoli .. | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 4 | Dêvi and Balrâm | Shinglâ .. | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 5 | Do. ... | Shanêri .. | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 6 | Do. ... | Larsâ ... | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 7 | Do. ... | Dansâ... | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 8 | Datâtrâ and Balrâm. | Nagar ... | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 9 | Sûraj and Balrâm. | Nirat ... | Do. ... | Do. | | |
| 10 | Kharândû | Kharâhan ... | Do. ... | A difficult place, steep on both sides. | | |
| 11 | Palthan ... | Shôli ... | Do. ... | Do. do. do. | | |
| 12 | Bakrâlû ... | Dalgân ... | Do. ... | Do. do. do. | | |
| 13 | Bhîma Kâli ... | Sarâhan ... | Do. ... | Do. do. do. | | |
| 14 | Thân! ... | Ejâhl ... | Jûbal State ... | Do. do. do. | | |
| 15 | Dêvi ... | Nirmand ... | Kâlo ... | Do. do. do. | | |

XLIII.—Table of Festivals.

| No. | Name. | Month (English). | Month (Indian). | NOTES. |
|-----|---------------------|--------------------|---------------------------------------|--|
| 1 | Lohri ... | Middle of January. | Pôh and the 1st day of Mâgh. | Food prepared and alms given to the Brâhmans. |
| 2 | Khattâlâ Ekâ-dashi. | End of January | Mâgh ... | Fasts are observed and sesame is offered as alms. |
| 3 | Basant Panch-amî. | Early in February. | Phâgun | Dances are performed. The New-year is celebrated. |
| 4 | Shiv Râtri ... | February or March. | Phâgun | A fast is observed in the name of Siva : food is prepared, and a goat sacrificed. |
| 5 | New-year's Day | March | 1st of Chêt | The Brâhmans foretell the events of the year to the Kshatriyas, and receive some money as a gift. |
| 6 | Hôli ... | March... | Phâgun | People throw coloured water on one another. Dances are performed, shows are held, and feasts given. |
| 7 | Chêtar Chau-das. | April ... | Chêt ... | A proper day for making offerings to gods. The <i>thâkur dwârds</i> are the scenes of great festivities. |
| 8 | Nôrâtrê ... | March or April | Chêt ... | Fasts are observed in honour of the Dêvi (goddess), and goats and wine are offered to her. |
| 9 | Baisâkhî ... | April ... | 1st of Baisâkh. | Gift are given to Brâhmans. Fairs are held for a fortnight. |
| 10 | Nirjâlâ Ekâ-dashi. | May ... | Jêt ... | People observe a fast. Sherbet is given gratis to the people to drink. |
| 11 | Dêb Sani Ekâ-dashi. | June or July ... | Hâr ... | Alms are given and fasts observed. |
| 12 | Biâs Puâja ... | June or July ... | Hâr ... | Do. do. do. |
| 13 | Narsingh Chau-das. | March | Chêt ... | Presents are offered in the <i>thâkur dwârds</i> . Image of Narsing is displayed. |
| 14 | Râm Naumi ... | March | Chêt ... | Do. and the Râm Lîlâ is performed. |
| 15 | Sâoni ... | 15th July | 1st Sâwan | People eat food. Garlands of flowers are put round the necks of the cattle. |
| 16 | Rakhri ... | August | Sâwan or Bhâdron. | The Brâhmans make arm-rings of thread and tie them to peoples' wrists, and get money as a reward. |
| 17 | Janam Ashtami | August | End of Sâwan or beginning of Bhâdron. | People fast, and feed the Brahman next day. |

| No. | Name. | Month (English). | Month (Indian). | NOTES. |
|-----|---------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------------------|--|
| 18 | Kishun Ghari Mâvas. | August | End of Sâwan or beginning of Bhâdôñ. | Farmers worship their land on the second day after <i>amâvas</i> (last day of the lunar month) and sacrifice a goat. |
| 19 | Nâg Panchami | August or September. | Do ... Beginning Asôj. | People worship their gods and offer sacrifices to them. |
| 20 | Anant Chaudas | September | Beginning Asôj. | Anant is worshipped, and gifts are given to the Brâhmans. |
| 21 | Pitra Pakh Amâvas. | September | Asôj ... | Brâhmans are given gifts in the name of the dead forefathers. |
| 22 | Nôrâtrê | October | Asôj ... | The goddess is worshipped, sacrifices are offered, and masquerade shows are held. |
| 23 | Dasâhrâ | October | Asôj ... | The end of the <i>Nôrâtrê</i> . At the Dasâhrâ festival gifts are awarded to the poor. |
| 24 | Chréwal | August | 1st of Bhâdôñ. | Gods of clay are made and worshipped. Lights are shown to the gods every evening. |
| 25 | Sâér ... | September | 1st of Asôj | The barbers show mirrors to rich men, who give them rewards. |
| 26 | Diwâli ... | October | Kâtik ... | Every village and every house is illuminated. Rich food is cooked and distributed amongst relatives. |
| 27 | Karnvâli | October | Kâtik ... | { Celebrated in <i>thâkur dwârâs</i> only. |
| 28 | Gôpâ Ashtami | October | Kâtik ... | |
| 29 | Panch Bhishmi Ekâdashî. | November | Mâghar | { Fasts are observed, and gifts are given to the Brâhmans. |
| 30 | Panch Bhishmi Puranmâshî. | November | Mâghar | |
| 31 | Sankrânt | December | 1st Pôh | Goats are sacrificed throughout the country. Goats reared during the summer are sacrificed at this time. |
| 32 | Sataya Nârâin | December | Pôh ... | The people fast on every <i>puranmâshî</i> (full moon) and give alms to the Brâhmans. |
| 33 | Somâvatî Amâvas. | December | Pôh ... | This festival returns after long intervals. Fasts are observed, and charity bestowed on the Brâhmans. |
| 34 | Pandrû | December | Pôh ... | { Fasts are observed in the name of Siva, and there is also feasting. |
| 35 | Khefâin | January | Mâgh ... | |

XLIV. — Some Details of the Festivals.

. 161.* A brief account of every festival has been given in the table above. Some details are now given.

(1) **Lôhri khichri** (a kind of food) is prepared and is distributed among relatives. The people play with balls in every village or in the temple of the god. The saints and Brâhmans are given rice, pulse, and money. Some people perform oblations in their homes. The priests worship the doors of their customers.

(2) **Basant Panchami.** — This festival is celebrated in the court of the Chief only. The *tûris* (musicians) sing and play upon instruments and get rewards. The people sprinkle coloured water over one another. Some men and women wear yellow scarves, but it is not a general custom.

(3) **Shiv Râtri.** — Fasting is observed during the day. In the night an image of Siva is made of clay. A coloured square is prepared, and the god is placed in the middle of it. Cakes are placed on all sides round the square. The god is worshipped throughout the night. Songs are sung, and music played. A goat is sacrificed. In the morning the god is thrown into water. The cakes are given to a Brâhman, and distributed amongst the brotherhood.

(4) **New-year's Day.** — On the first of Chêt, *tûris* (musicians) sing songs and play on instruments, and receive gifts. The Brâhmans foretell the events of the year and get rewards. The *tûris* go from village to village and entertain people throughout the month of Chêt.

(5) **Hôli** is celebrated in the Chief's court only. Coloured water is sprinkled and songs are sung. All the men taking part in the **Hôli** are entertained with a feast.

(6) **Nôrâtrê.** — The goddess is worshipped and sacrifices are offered to her.

(7) **Baisakhi.** — On the 1st day of the month the priest worships the gates of his customers, who give him, according to their capacity, grain and money. During the whole of the month sacrifices are offered to the god on different dates. The people practise archery at a fair.

(8) **Sankrant Sawanî** (first day of the month Sawan). — Wreaths of flowers are thrown round the necks of quadrupeds. Rich foods are prepared and distributed among the family and relations and guests. Fairs are held throughout the month in the temples of gods. All the people of the neighbourhood gather at the fairs, and dance and sing during the day. In the evening they go to feast at home or at their relatives' houses.

(9) **Nâg Panchami.** — In some places fairs are held at the temples of gods. The people keep awake the whole night, and hill songs are sung and instruments are played upon. In the morning all the people present are fed. The fair at this time is called Jâgrâ or Bhadrônjû.

(10) **Nôrâtrê.** — The goddess is worshipped. Masquerades are held in the night. Music is played, and in some places is called *batri* or *kardî*. The next day is the Dasêhîra. A man impersonating Râmchandar drives in a chariot and conquers Lankâ.

(11) **Shêri or Saér.** — Each man makes an image of clay, puts flowers on it, and places it before his house. Rich food is prepared on the first day of the month. In the evening illuminations are made all around the image, and it is worshipped.

(12) **Diwâli.** — Every person illuminates his house. Food is prepared and distributed among relatives. The people amuse themselves with gambling. A heap of wood is kept burning all night, and all the villagers gather round it and abuse the natives of adjoining villages, who in return abuse them. The people remain awake during the night and sing the songs of Diwâli, like the *kathâ* (recitation). A song is fixed for this festival.

* [No answer was apparently given to Question 160.—]

Men and women of every tribe attend the fairs at this time, except women who observe the *pardî* system. Persons of all ages are among the spectators.

162. The dates for all the festivals are fixed, except the Somâvati Amâvas and Satyâ Nârânîn.

163. No festival is celebrated to commemorate any season.

164. Food is given to the Brâhmans in the name of the dead on the date corresponding to the death of the deceased, and this is termed *tithi shraddh*. This is done by a few persons and is not a general custom.

165. All the Hindu festivals are celebrated by the people generally. However, some of the festivals pertaining to *thâkur dwârâds*, as mentioned in the above table, are celebrated by some persons, while others do not observe them.

166. The Hindus do not observe the festivals of the Sarâogîs.

167. There is no festival where boys and girls desirous of marriage meet and select their consorts.

168. Among certain classes the festival of Karvâ Chauth is considered to be for the wife and husband only.

169. Wine is used in the fairs held on Baisâkhî, Sâbñî, and Holi festivals.

XLV.—Objects of Worship.

170. There are no ghosts or spirits who are considered to have any connection with sticks. However, the sticks, lances, and bugles of a god are honoured like the god himself.

171. The silver sticks, lances, bugles, and bells of a god are thought sacred. It is also believed that these things possess supernatural powers.

172. Wood and stone are worshipped, for they are considered to be the abodes of gods.

XLVI.—Animism, Spirit Worship.

173. The people believe in spirits living in rivers, hills, trees, ruins, and in clean and unclean places.

(a) Yama (god of death) is supposed to live in rivers.

(b) *Bdolis*, brooks and springs are supposed to be the abodes of *jal paris* (water nymphs) and *mâtris*.

(c) Kali is supposed to live in hills.

(d) Spirits of all kinds are supposed to live on trees.

(e) Banshir spirits live in ruins of old buildings, or valleys or mountains.

(f) Vicious spirits live in dirty places, and virtuous spirits or gods in clean and pure localities.

174. A detailed account of the worship of ghosts is given below. If a person is laid up with some disease and does not improve with medicine, a Brâhman is called and is asked to exorcise the disease. He indicates the kind of ghost, if any, with which the man is possessed. The following are the signs of possession by ghosts:—

(1) The patient seems comparatively comfortable during the day, but as the night advances, his restlessness increases. He gains composure with the passing of night and coming of day.

(2) The pulse of the patient beats like that of a healthy person. Now he becomes faint and again comes to his senses. Sometimes he speaks, while at others weeps and cries.

(3) The more medicine is administered, the more the disease increases. Sometimes he is cured without the use of medicine. The patient feels nausea, depression, and palpitation of the heart.

When these signs and the opinion of the Brâhman concur, the guardians of the patient make the following arrangements for the propitiation of the ghost:—

(a) The water nymphs or Mâtris are supposed to have female forms. They are of two kinds:— Virtuous or superior, and vicious or inferior. Means for propitiating virtuous nymphs are these: Fruits and flowers are offered to them, a small palanquin is made of bamboo and covered with cloths of five colours, the Brâhman makes a cake, recites some hymns, and places the palanquin before the patient, and puts the fruits and flowers in it. The patient is made to worship a lamp and the palanquin, after which it is placed at a crossing. To propitiate an evil or vicious nymph, a goat, or a sheep, or a pig or a hen is offered as sacrifice. The remaining methods of adoration are like those mentioned above.

(b) Propitiation of the god of death is performed thus:— Some beasts, as hens, pigs, or sheep are brought. A cake of seven kinds of grain is cooked. Five or six lamps are lighted and placed upon this cake, together with some pieces of stone. All this is placed before the patient. The Brâhman chants a hymn on every stone and puts it upon the cake. The stones are either 5, or 7 or 11 in number, always representing odd numbers. When this is done all these things, together with the beasts, are taken to the cremation-grounds, where the Brâhman sacrifices the animals and takes them away.

(c) Kâli is worshipped with the sacrifice of a goat, flowers, fruits, wheaten bread, and lamps, in the same way as a Mâtri.

(d) Ghosts and nahshîras are propitiated by sacrifices of goats in some places, and by dust or gravel in others. In the same manner evil ghosts are propitiated by the sacrifice of a boar, or hen, or dust only.

175. Dâgs or demons are the ghosts connected with fields. It is a well-known fact that an estimate is made of the produce of the fields. If the crops of a certain season yield produce less than the estimated one, the difference is thought to be appropriated by the dâg.

176. Most men perform the Kunjhain pûja instead of sacrifices.

177. Kunjhâdin is ordinarily offered to Kâli, a pari (fairy), or a mâtî. A certain portion of the forest or hill is set aside for this purpose. Even if the forest is cut down, yet the portion consecrated to the god is preserved for his worship. None of the trees in this portion is cut, nor are any leaves or boughs broken.

178. Monkeys, elephants, cows, oxen, and snakes are worshipped as gods.

(1) A monkey or an ape is considered as a representation of Hanûmân. Large cakes, grain, and gram are offered to them.

(2) An elephant is taken as a representation of the god Ganêsh, and is worshipped on such festivals as Ganêsh Chauth, etc.

(3) Cows are of two kinds, viz., kâm dhénû and kapilâ, and both of them are adored as gods. Cows having a tongue or a hoof on their backs are also worshipped.

(4) An ox or nâd is worshipped instead of Siva.

(5) Snakes are worshipped as the nâg dêvtâ (snake-god).

XLVII.—Ancestor Worship.

179. Prayers and sacrifices are offered to the spirits in the name of the dead.
180. No ceremony deserves mention.
181. No sacred animal, nor any plant, nor any other thing, is worshipped in the name of any ancestor.
182. The heirs of the deceased offer alms in the name of the dead while performing *kiryā karm* or *shradh* (funeral ceremonies) under the impression that all this goes to the spirit of the dead.
183. The things placed with a corpse are disposed of in the following manner:—
- (1) All that is put in the mouth of the dead, as *panch ratan* (five gems), is burnt with it.
 - (2) The ornaments are, in the case of poor men, taken back, and in the case of rich men, sent to Hardwār, or given to the Achāraj (man officiating at funeral ceremonies).
 - (3) Clothes of small value are burnt with the corpse or buried with it. Costly clothes are taken back by poor people, but sent to Hardwār or given to the Achāraj by rich men.
 - (4) Edible things are generally given to the Achāraj.
184. Living persons fear the spirits of the dead.
185. If the soul of a dead person is seen in a dream by any one, and it troubles him, the deceased is considered to be the cause of this. A Brāhman is asked to offer prayers for the salvation of the dead. A charm is written and tied to the neck or arm of the person dreaming about the dead.
186. The spirit of the deceased is considered to haunt his house for eleven days after death. The following matters are taken into consideration as regards other haunts:—
- (1) The spirit that has become united to the universal spirit does not return.
 - (2) The spirit which, on account of his sins, has not obtained salvation, always haunts here and there, finds rest nowhere, and is not pleased with any place. So spirits of the second sort haunt all places, like graveyards and cemeteries. Their forms are very fearful and they have no flesh on their bodies. They are said to be of fabulous sizes.
187. The forms of ghosts lead us to the conclusion that they were great sinners in their lives, or died a sudden death — such as by poison, or by falling down, or by suicide — and have not obtained salvation. There are different interpretations of these facts; but it is of no use to give their details, for it is impossible to find out the truth in this way.
188. The Brāhmans expel ghosts by charms and magic. The person possessed by a ghost is made to inhale the smoke produced by burning wheat, chillies, the flesh of a tiger, and pork. If the ghost is not dispelled by these means, then the method mentioned in para. 174 is applied.
189. The kinds of ghosts have been given in para. 174.
190. Fifteen days are consecrated to the deceased ancestors in Bhādōi or Asōj. This period is called *pitrī pakṣ* (ancestor's fortnight), and at this time Brāhmans are fed and given alms in the name of ancestors. This is called *shradh*.
191. It is necessary to perform the *shradh* of a man at Gyā, and that of a woman at Gōdāvari. For instance, if the parents of a person die, then he will perform the *shradh* of his father at Gyā and that of his mother at Gōdāvari.

* [Or, at some place recognised as a substitute. — ED.]

XLVIII.—Animal Worship.

192. No tribe nor any subdivision of a tribe is named after the name of an animal, a tree, or an arm or instrument.

193. The Hindus honour such objects, for they take them to be sacred according to their Scriptures. They abstain from killing, cutting, burning, or eating any male or female cattle, elephant, monkey, snakes, crows, *garur* (a large heron), peacocks, cat, or dog, or any *pipal* tree, or banian tree.

194. Hanūmān is represented as a monkey; Ganēsh is represented as an elephant. The images of the animals mentioned above are kept by the people for worship. Besides these the people make images of all gods and adore them.

195. Every custom is handed down from ancient times. There is no special tradition about this. Idol worshippers have a strong faith in images.

XLIX.—Tree Worship.

196. Women particularly worship the *pipal* and banian trees. They also worship the *tulsi* (a shrub); and the sensitive plant.

197. The *pipal* is worshipped on the occasion of a marriage or any other like happy occasion. Also the *tulsi* plant is worshipped. Girls can be named after the *tulsi*, but there is no such rule for the names of boys.

Superstitions.

L.—Omens from Animals.

198. A detail of ill-omens is given below :—

- (1) If a cow, buffalo, goat, or sheep give birth to a young one during the period extending from the 26th of Baishākh to 8th Jēth, this young one, with its mother, is given away to the Brāhmaṇ, or it is sold. To keep it is considered unlucky.
- (2) The same rule applies to cattle bringing forth their young in Bhādron or Māgh.
- (3) Cattle producing young in Jēth under the influence of the star Mūl are subject to the same rule.
- (4) The animal that howls at night, or seems grumbling like an unhealthy individual, is either given away in charity or is sold.
- (5) If small spots appear on the skin of a buffalo, it is sold.
- (6) Cows or goats yielding blood instead of milk are sold.
- (7) Cows or goats that drink their own milk are sold.
- (8) An animal that kills or devours its own young is sold.

LI.—Omens from Domestic Utensils.

- (1) It is forbidden to eat out of a broken vessel of white brass.
- (2) The vessels of clay or white brass are used by the members of one class only. They become polluted if used by members of another caste.
- (3) A vessel is considered unclean unless it is cleaned with dust and water.
- (4) The cooking vessels are liable to impurity more quickly than the utensils for water.
- (5) The people do not allow the members of a caste, different from theirs, to use their copper and white brass metals. Other vessels are free from such restrictions.

LII. — Omens from Houses.

(1) The place where a crow caws at night and a jackal howls at day, becomes unfit for habitation. This is considered to be the forecast of somebody dying there.

(2) The sitting of an owl, a pheasant, or a vulture on the roof of a house is considered ominous. If this happens, a goat is sacrificed at once.

(3) The crawling of a snake in the upper floor of the house is considered to portend evil. If one appears, it is expelled by pulling down the roof and not through the door. Something is also given in charity.

(4) Cracking sounds in the roof or furniture of a house are unlucky.

(5) If in a house the sound of a stranger, or of a member of the family, is heard, and after enquiry it is found that there was no such man there, but the sound was only an unnatural one, the house is thought to be unfortunate.

(6) The appearance of moisture in the walls of a house without any rain, is thought ominous.

(7) The following are ill-omens for a house : — The subjection of the inmates to constant whimsical thoughts, excessive sleep, poverty, constant dreams, expenses greater than income, perpetual illness.

(8) The going out of a fire suddenly at the time of cooking food.

(9) Decrease in charity, prayers and worship, and increase in sin, portend misfortune.

LIII. — Omens from the Roads.

To lay a road along one's habitation is prohibited.

LIV. — Omens from Movements of the Body.

(1) The trembling of any limb, in a healthy state of the person, is of evil import.

(2) Unusual silence or too much talk, sickly heart and whimsical thoughts, foreshadow coming evil. Also evil dreams; sneezing of a person in front or on the left; a succession of calamities; spitting; a snake, a lizard, a jackal or an ass touching the body; the perching of a crow on the head or the fall of a crow's droppings on the body; the appearance of drops of blood on a cloth when the cause cannot be found out; biting by a dog or cat; burning by fire; cloth being damaged by mice.

LV. — Lucky and Unlucky Stars.

199. Every one has two *rāshis* (stars of fate), i. e., birth *rāshi* and name *rāshi*. If an evil star comes near this *rāshi* at a distance of 4, 8 or 12 stages, the man under its influence has to propitiate it, and considers himself unlucky.

The images or likenesses of stars are not buried.

LVI. — Omens from the Rivers.

200. If the following omens occur to a man crossing a river, he will stop for an hour and then cross it : — Sneezing, tumbling, confronting an ass or a snake going to the right, confronting a bareheaded man or a man bringing wood, a bridegroom going to a marriage, one being asked as to where he is going, appearing to the left or in front of a partridge, a crow, a pheasant, a deer, a jackal or a heron, a widow.

If one comes across some of these omens successively in crossing a river or a road, he returns and does not proceed.

LVII. — Sumptuary Customs.

201. *Kolis*, cobblers, weavers, washermen, barbers, *tūrs* (musicians), ironsmiths, *bharērās*, and shepherds do not wear gold and gems, nor do they wear shawls, *chugdās*, *sarbāndās* (dresses). *gulbadan* and *kimkhāb* (silken cloth). In addition to these tribes, the Kanaits do not wear gold arm-rings, *barāgar*, *sarshōbhā*, *amīrash* and diamonds (ornaments), and cloths of *kimkhāb*. But nowadays this custom is being disregarded.

No tribes, except Brāhmans, Rājpūts and Baniās can take their food in silver vessels.

There is no custom as regards planting and eating of herbs or plants.

LVIII. — Naming Customs.

202. Some plants have names like those of some of the tribes, but there is no tradition about them worth mentioning.

203. Children ordinarily have two names: birth name and ordinary name. The former is used in performing religious ceremonies, and no one except the priest knows this name. The latter is used in ordinary business and is known to all. An opprobrious name is given to a boy whose elder brother died before his birth, e. g., *Gandū*, *Badū*, etc., in order that he may live. Holes are made in his nose and ears like the women.

204. The above applies both to boys and girls.

205. In ordinary matters, parents swear by their children and *vice versa*. They touch their bodies. In legal matters, a man is made to swear by the god that he believes in. The man who takes an oath in the temple of a god, touches the image of the god, or throws a stone towards the temple, or picks up the money or disputed objects before the god. Some oaths are performed by touching a cow or lifting upon one's head the water of the Ganges.

206. The truth or falsity of a man who takes an ordeal is determined in this way — that if he suffers any loss or injury, then he is considered false; and if he prospers, then he is true. In ancient times cases were tried by making the culprit dive in water, by putting the hand in hot oil, or by giving poison to a goat.

The party who was willing to take an oath was taken to a tank or a *khad* (valley) full of water and was made to dive. If he was true, then he came back to the surface and won the case; otherwise he was considered false and, being pronounced guilty, suffered punishment.

Ten or fifteen seers of oil were boiled in an iron cauldron, and when it was foaming a copper piece was dropped in it. The man ready to take oath was then asked to pick up this piece. If his hand was burnt, he was considered false, and lost the case. If, on the other hand, he received no injury, he won the suit.

A flat piece of iron was made red hot, and the tongue of the swearing person was branded with it. The burning of the tongue showed the falsity of the swearer, while its safety proved him true in his cause.

The parties to a dispute used to bring two goats alike in all respects. The goats were given equal quantities of poison. The party whose goat was affected with poison before the other's was considered to be in the right and won the case.

All these three customs are now out of use in British territories.

207. All quarrels are decided by the oaths stated above.

LX. — Magic and Charms.

208. Magic is practised by magicians only, and there are no witches.

209. This practice is no concern of the priest, nor has he any enmity with the magicians. In some places even the priests act as magicians; and in others, other men do so. In short, any one who learns this science can become a magician.

210. The magician's business is to foretell by means of figures. He always remains at home. He goes to the house of a person who calls him, and there he either makes a charm or dispels one. Generally, the people look upon him with respect.

211. The man who remains dirty and unclean, and does not worship gods, but devotes his whole attention to the worship of evil spirits, and does not take a bath, is taken to be as a magician.

212. The people generally believe that the attendance of a magician means either the calling of ghosts to disclose some secret or to make a person receive some gain or injury.

LXI. — Possession and Exorcism.

213. It is believed that people become possessed of ghosts. In order to cure a possessed person, he is made to inhale the smoke of chillies. If the ghost does not leave him, a Brâhman or a magician is called in, who, according to his own science, makes charms as mentioned above.

214. Possession by a ghost is considered evil. Spirits are generally under the control of low persons, such as Kôlis, cobblers, shepherds, ironsmiths, etc., as well as under that of Brâhmans. A ghost imposed by a low person is thought to be unholy, while that by a person of high caste is holy.

LXII. — Dreams.

215. Dreams dreamt in good health and on a clear night can portend good or evil, can tell about the past, and foretell the future.

216. A learned Brâhman is called to interpret a dream, and is told all about it. If the dream seems, according to the rules of the books, evil, the Brâhman makes the man who dreamt it give some charity, but there is no need of charity in the case of a good dream.

217. If a dead person is seen in a dream, and conversation is held with him, then the dream is considered to be one relating to the communication with spirits. Other dreams are good or bad omens.

LXIII. — Spirit Propitiation.

218. To propitiate spirits, Brâhmans are made to recite *panchak shânti* hymns (hymns to propitiate), and alms are given. Brâhmans or magicians make charms and tie them to the necks of the possessed persons.

LXIV. — The Evil Eye.

219. People believe in the effects of the evil eye and are much afraid of it. They consider it worse than magic.

220. Some men have so much power in their eyes, that if anything be eaten in their sight, it is soon vomited. No particular reason given for this is worth mentioning.

221. The effects of the evil eye are done away with by charms, or by performing the business out of the sight of the man suspected to possess it. A portion of something brought from without is put in the house fire. The effect of the evil eye upon an animal is neutralized by throwing some dust over it.

LXV. — Charms.

222. Magicians perform charms upon a person by means of things belonging to that person, or by things that were a portion of his body : —

- (1) Nails or hair cut from his body, or the dust over which he has trodden.
- (2) Driving a nail in a tree bearing the same name as the person intended to be injured, will wound that person.
- (3) Warming the water of a spring of the same name as the victim on a fire, will make him to suffer from heat.
- (4) Making an image of a person and wounding it with a nail in his name.
- (5) Making an image of a person and either burying or burning it.
- (6) Putting the flesh of a corpse, or some pepper or mustard, in the name of the victim, on a sacrificial fire.

All these things are done in order that their effect may fall upon the victim.

223. Special care is taken to destroy nails or hair when cut. Every man has two names, and the reason of this is that the magicians may not know the birth name.

LXVI. — Fortune-telling.

224. A magician or a *jōtishi* (astrologer) foretells and foresees future events.

225. The following are the methods of prophesying and foreseeing : —

- (1) The astrologer has three dice. He throws them and, making estimates by means of the letters of the alphabet, interprets good or evil results.
- (2) The disciple or *ddd*, who is well known as a magician, concentrates his attention for a few minutes, and answers any questions put to him as to the good or bad end of the enquirer.
- (3) Some oil is poured on a plate of white brass, and a lighted lamp is placed on this plate at night. The medium fixes his eyes, for a few minutes, upon this lamp, after which he goes into a trance, and in this state he foretells future events.
- (4) Questions are put to the medium in the evening, and he answers them the next morning. It is supposed that he receives information at night from some god.
- (5) Sometimes the medium takes some oil or *ghī* (purified butter) in his hands and rubs them for a few minutes, and then answers questions. Some interpret answers by making the questioner name any fruit or flower.

Answers to most of the questions about the past or present are correct, but to those about future are very seldom correct. Magicians and charmers belong to the Brāhmaṇa, Jogi, shoemaker, Kōli, minstrel, smith, and Bādi classes.

LXVII. — Illness is Spirit-caused.

226. Illness is generally attributed to ghosts.

227. If a man is suffering from a disease which cannot be diagnosed by physicians, or if it increases with the use of medicine, or if it abates in the day and increases in the night, then it is thought to be a case of possession, and is referred to a Brāhmaṇa or disciple (*ddd*). He throws dice or goes into a trance, and thus tells what sort of spirit is possessing the patient. The patient is treated in the manner suggested by the medium. Generally the medium cures him by adoration and other such means.

Social Restrictions.

LXVIII. — Abstention from Foods.

228. The Hindus abstain from taking the meat of a cow, an ox, a buffalo (male and female), a dog, a cat, an ass, a horse, a mule, a camel, a crow, a jackal, a heron, a peacock, a mouse, a serpent, a lizard, a tortoise, and a sheep. They do not use garlic, onion, turnip, raddish, carrot, and mushroom among the vegetables. But these customs are observed by some of the people and not by all.

229. All persons do not abstain from the use of things already mentioned, but only high caste men and Brâhmans, such as Râjpûts, Baniâs, Sûds, and Bôhrâs, do so. Others, such as Kanaits, smiths, minstrels, Bâtis, barbers, and goldsmiths, do not care for the above restrictions. All the tribes, except shoemakers, Kâlis, shepherds, and Nigalûs, abstain from the above-mentioned meats, but not necessarily from the vegetables.

230. It is a religious restriction not to take these things.

231. People abstain from these only on account of religious restrictions. Otherwise there is no reason for giving them up.

LXIX. — Tribal Descent.

232. No tribe is considered to have been descended from any plant or animal. However the *pipal* tree, the banian tree, and the *tâlasî* plant are thought to have divine powers.

233. No reasonable explanation can be given of the tribal fables.

LXXX. — Customs on Eating, etc.

234. The customs of the people as regards eating, touching, speaking, seeing, and pronouncing names are given below :—

Brahmans, Râjpûts, Bôhrâs, Baniâs, Sûds, and Kshatriyas. — There are some sections who do not take unfried food prepared by any person not belonging to their own section. There is no restriction regarding touching, seeing, speaking, and pronouncing names. They do not drink even water touched by a low Brâhmaṇ, such as the Krishan.

Kanaits and other sects neither eat food prepared by a person not belonging to their own sect, nor do they drink water touched by such a man. There is no restriction as regards touch.

235. The restriction of touch is according to caste. For instance, men of high castes do not touch those of low castes. The restrictions of eating and drinking are according to the subdivisions even of the same sect.

236. High-caste people look down upon low-caste men. They hate the men who eat flesh of cows or buffaloes. However, this custom prevails among the low castes only.

LXXI. — Restrictions as to Women.

237. Infants and women cannot enter into temples unless they are purified by means of baths, etc. A woman whose husband is alive is not allowed to worship the god Siva, nor can she worship Bir Bhairôn or Hanûmân nor Kâli. Widows worship Siva.

238. The father of the husband of a woman has no scruples against using the things of her father, but her father cannot take anything from his son-in-law. He will not even drink water from the village where his daughter is married. But this custom prevails only among those tribes whose marriages are performed according to religious tenets. There is no such restriction for those whose marriages are not thus performed.

239. The reason of the above restrictions seems to be this — that as the father makes a vow to forsake everything that he gives as dower to his daughter, and it is not permissible to appropriate anything that has been once given up, so he does not even take meals at his son-in-law's house; for everything in the house of the latter is affected by the things given by the former. For the same reasons, a *jijmān* (disciple) of a Brāhmaṇ cannot take food in the house of that Brāhmaṇ.

LXXII. — Pronouncing Names and Words.

240. The names of elder relatives are not pronounced out of respect for them. The younger relative does not pronounce the name of the elder, but the elder can call the younger by name. For instance, a son does not pronounce the name of his father, mother-in-law, or elder brother, out of regard for them, and considers them more sacred than others.

241. There is no fear of magic or charm. The name is not pronounced only out of respect.

242. Many men do not pronounce, in the course of a conversation, the name of the chief or of a deceased person. The chief is mentioned by his title, and the deceased by his relationship.

243. Words or subjects denoting contempt, licentiousness, drinking, etc., are not spoken in the presence of a chief, or elder, or respectable person.

LXXXIII. — Courtesy Titles.

244. The following are the titles used by different castes. An inferior person will call a superior one by his customary title. Men of equal rank can call each other by name : —

Titles of Brāhmans : — Pandit, Jōtishī, Pādhā, Parōhit, Achāryā, Pāndā, Rāī, Bhāṭ.

Titles of Rajpūts : — Rājā, Mahārājā, Rāṇā, Mahārānā, Thikur, Kāñwar, Miān, Rathī, Rangar, Rāvāt, Dād, Sartorā.

Titles of Baniās : — Shāh, Sēth.

Titles of Kanaits : — Mukhiā, Wazir, Mehtā, Mehr, Nēgi, Palerā.

Other tribes have ordinary titles according to their professions, and they need not be dwelt upon.

An inferior person will address a superior one with the following words : — Panditjī, Jōshījī, Mahārājī, Rājā, Sāhib, Rāṇā Sāhib, Shāhjī, Mukhiyājī, and so on.

LXXXIV. — Agricultural Superstitions.

245. (1) It is prohibited to plough land on the *amāvas* (last day of moon), *ekādashi* (eleventh day of moon), or any other important festival. If at the time of ploughing, a snake be killed by the ploughshare, it is forbidden to go on ploughing without purifying it.

At the time of seed sowing the following matters are regarded as necessary : — (a) That the sower be under the good influence of the moon; (b) That there be no evil *māskalatar* (star), *tithī* (date) or *jōg* (combination of stars); (c) That the day be neither Tuesday nor Saturday.

(2) The following things are regarded as necessary, both at the time of sowing and of harvest :—

The people generally are very careful of *panchak jōg*, Tuesday, Saturday; *amāvas puranmāshī* (full moon) and *shākrānt* at the time of seed sowing and harvesting, but they do not care for evil stars and *jōge*. If it rains a day or two after seed sowing it is considered ominous. The same is thought of rain at harvest, or of excessive rain at the time of planting a corn-field or one or two days after it, or of rain on the night of *janamashtamī* or *puranmāshī* in Hār or *amāvas* in Bhādōn.

Ordinarily, land is ploughed twice, but good farmers plough it thrice, i. e., first in lines parallel to the length of the field; secondly, crosswise from one corner to the other; and thirdly, also crosswise from the third corner to the fourth. The advantage of this is that the soil which remains unturned by the first ploughing is turned by the second, and thus the whole of the field is uniformly made fit for the crops to grow.

A long post is fixed in the field and a bone, or the skin of some animal, is hoisted on this post as a scare crow. Beasts being afraid of it, do not come near and injure the crops. It is also believed to be a safeguard against ghosts or the evil eye.

246. Feasts are given to the Brāhmans at the time of digging a well, or a water-channel, or harvest. When a well or a water-channel is ready, the Brāhman is made to offer prayers, and after this they are used for watering purposes. When the harvest has commenced a big wheaten loaf is brought to the field and distributed among all the men present, or a goat is sacrificed and taken home. When corn is separated from the chaff it is collected in a large heap and worshipped, and a portion of it is set aside for the gol. The scrapings are stored in bags or boxes. The people do not use fresh corn without feeding a Brāhman with it. Also some grain is devoted to the deceased ancestors, with which Brāhmans are fed. At the end of the year — i. e., at the end of the *kharif* season, when all the crops have been garnered — the people of the village bring their god from his temple with great éclat and worship him and sacrifice to him a goat. All the persons accompanying the god and saints and mendicants are fed. Generally this entertainment is given by several villages from the month of Bhādōn to Māgh, and is called *bhadronjū*, *halan*, *jdgrd*, *panild pehrd* or *māghējī*.

247. Sowing for the *rabi* crops begins in Asōj and ends in Pōh, and that for the *kharif* continues from Chēt to Hār. The reaping of crops begins in Baisākh and ends in Hār for the *rabi*, and that for the *kharif* begins in Asōj and ends in Maghar. Sowing and reaping not done at the proper time is defective, and excess or want of rain on both these occasions is harmful.

248. There are no special gods for special seasons.

249. No tribe has any particular god, nor is caste of any importance in becoming a disciple. People can worship any god they choose.

LXXV.—Food and Drink.

250. A detail is given below of the use, or otherwise, of wine, beef, the flesh of a monkey, pork, cloven-hoofed or uncloven-hoofed animals' flesh, fowls, fish with or without scales, shark, snake, mice, and other insects, and food of which another person has been eating.

Ved Pathī Brāhmans or those living in plains, Bhīṣmīas, Banīas, Khshatriyas, and Bairagi mendicants neither eat nor touch any of these articles.

Brāhmans of the hills, Rājputs, Sūds, Bōhrās, Kanaits, goldsmiths, Jats, barbers, gardeners, milkmen, potters, masons, washermen, dyesinkers, carpenters, smiths, Thathērā or Bharērās, minstrels or Tūris, or Dākis, and Dhādis, if Saivas or Saktaks, eat the flesh of animals and use wine; if Vaishnavas, they do not.

The Saivas use the following: — Wine of all sorts; flesh of goats, either male or female; flesh of male sheep; pork; flesh of wild fowl; fish of every kind. There is no rule for the use or otherwise, of the flesh of animals with cloven or uncloven hoofs. Some men eat the flesh of cloven-hoofed animals, and others do not. The same is the case with animals with uncloven hoofs and wild birds. The flesh of the peacock, crow, *kanshārdī*, heron, and kite, etc., is not used.

The Chanāls, Kōlis, minstrels, shepherds, sweepers, cobblers, sailors or boatmen, and weavers use beef, the flesh of bustaloes, pork, flesh of cloven-hoofed and uncloven-hoofed animals, except those mentioned above and the flesh of a snake, a jackal, or a mouse.

No tribe eats anything of which a person of another tribe has been eating. Also men of the same tribe do not use food left after eating by another person. If a person of low caste be in the service of a person of high caste, then he can eat the food left by his master. A wife can use the food left by her husband, and children can use food left by their parents or elder brothers.

251. Some men do not take meat in the rains. They do not use cold things in winter, and warm things in summer.

252. It is forbidden by religion to take meat in the rains. In other seasons some things are not used in order to preserve health.

253. Widows and small children do not use meat. There is no difference between men and women, minors and adults, poor and rich, in taking or rejecting other foods.

254. None but the Chanāls and low castes use the flesh of monkeys, elephants, cows, oxen, herons, etc., for they are regarded as belonging to the gods.

LXXXVI. — Dining Customs.

255. Among the Hindus none but Kayasthās eat together. Every adult person eats on a separate table. Minor boys and girls can take food with their parents, but only as long as they are six or seven years old.

256. Men and women do not eat together among the Hindus.

257. After the food is ready, a little of everything cooked is set apart for the god, and some of it is consigned to the fire of the hearth. Then it is laid before all the men. Every man puts aside, from his own plate, some portion for a cow, and a little is given to the crows and dogs. Some is put in the fire, and the rest is eaten.

258. There is no peculiarity concerning eating and drinking, except that it is an ancient custom.

LXXVII. — Stimulants and Medicines.

259. Stimulants and medicines are indifferently used. Some men do not use medicines prepared by a doctor who is of a low caste. Medicines, containing anything the use of which is prohibited by religion, are not used. No particular custom deserves mention.

260. People use wine at the time of the Holi or on any other happy occasion.

261. Wine is often used as a preventive of epidemics, like cholera, etc.

262. Drinking and use of other stimulants is regarded in the following manner by people : —

(1) Excessive drinking is badly thought of, if it produces lowness of spirits and brain fever. If it is used in small quantities, so as not to bring on excitement, or not to retard the ordinary course of business, then it is considered no harm to drink.

(2) The use of *charas* and *ganja* (intoxicating hemp drugs) is considered wicked.

(3) Use of opium to prevent some bodily disease or infirmity is not thought badly of, but otherwise it is looked down upon.

(4) To smoke *chandu* (a hemp drug) is considered wrong

(5) The use of *bhang* (a light hemp drug) in summer as a cooling draught is thought good.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

THE SEASONS OF GIRDHAR SADHU.

By the Poetess Sanvri Sakhi.

Text

Girdhar, bansi bajî ; Shâm, terî âwâz sunkar
main dauri.

Rimjhim simjhim mehâ barseh pât : Jamnâ
par lagî jhuri.

I.

Pahlâ mahinâ Asâr lagiyâ ; merâ dil ho rahâ
bhorangi

Pandit, joshi, sabhi bûjh hye ; bûjh liyâ ramtâ
jogi.

Girdhar, bansi bajî, &c.

II.

Dûsrâ mahinâ Sâwan lagiyâ ; haryâli ho rahâ
jangal men.

Dam dam par yâd kardh ; thi jhurwat apne
mahlân men.

Girdhar, bansi bajî, &c.

III.

Bhâðon mahinâ it ghan gaïje, dhamañk tarin;
chhatyâñ larzen.

Wâ, Man Mohan, kathori mere dil ka, dard koï
nahin bûjhe.

Girdhar, bansi bajî, &c.

Translation.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded ; Shâm, hearing
the sound I hastened to thee
Heavily, heavily fell the rain : I hastened to
the Jamnâ

I.

The first month June has come; my heart is in
a turmoil
Priests, astrologers, all have I consulted; I have
consulted the wandering joy.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

II.

The second month July has come; the grass is
green in the woodlands.
Every moment I recall them; there was suffering
in my palace.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

III.

In the third month August the clouds thunder,
and the lightning falls and the heart grieves.
Alas, Man Mohan, fascinator of my heart, no one
considers my pain.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

IV.

Aejājā lagī rahi, Sakhi ri; ajhū nā aye Har Khrishnā.

Tulsi ki mālā leke hāth men, Rām Rām ratnā ratnā.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

V.

Kātik karm-bhāg mere chūke nahin mile Nand ke lāla.

Mukat ki latak mere man bas gai; ri Mohan-mālā!

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

VI.

Manghur mang bhari naksak se, sab zewar mera sone kā.

Ajhūn na ae. Kin barmāe? Barā andshā hai pī ka.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

VII.

Poh piyā mad māti dolen, jūn Sāwan ki hai bijli.

Palpal bars parā; pal bite; jūn bite, jūn jān sahāye.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

VIII.

Moh mahinā man mera atkā: Har darshan ki hūn piyāsi.

Afrut apnā sir mort; ajhūn na ae Birj-bāsi.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

IX.

Phāgan phāg khel Man Mohan: 'abir, gulāl, ude roli;

Kēssar rang ki kich bahi hai; lipat̄ jhapat khelein Holt.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

X.

Chet mahinā at mohe chintā lagī; bhāl ghar nā sūjhe.

Prān pati piyāre, Man Mohan, bilā darshan koi na pachhe.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

XI.

Baisakh mahinā sab sakhi milkar, Dewal pūjan men jāti.

Shām mile to sab dukh bichhein, sital ho meri chhāti.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

XII.

Jejh mahinā tapein deotā bich Puhār Kushāvarti. Sanvri Sakhi par kirpā kijio; anj milenī Mathrā bāsi.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

IV.

September has commenced, O Sakhi; Har Khrishnā has not yet come.

I take my tulsi garland in my hand to repeat the name of Rām again and again.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

V.

In October my heart grieves that I have not met the son of Nand.

The brilliancy of his crown has filled my heart; oh the Mohan necklace!

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

VI.

In November I have braided my hair, and put on all my golden jewels.

Yet he comes not. Who has deceived him? Great is the anxiety in my heart.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

VII.

In December my love is filled with pride, like the lightning of July.

The separation of a year has passed; I suffer the separation; as I suffer, so my life passes.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

VIII.

In January my heart is in love: I am athirst for a sight of Har.

The spring is set; yet the dweller in Brij comes not.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

IX.

In February Man Mohan has come to play: abir,¹ gulāl² and roli³ are used;

Saffron has fallen lavishly; leaping and dancing they play at the Holt.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

X.

In March my heart is grieved; pleasure comes not to my house.

The master of my life, Man Mohan, has not asked to see me.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

XI.

In April all my companions go together to the Dīwali festival.

If I meet Shām, all my trouble is eased and peace enters my breast.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

XII.

In May the gods do penance on Kushāvarti Hill, Do Sanvri Sakhi a favour that she may meet the dweller in Mathrā.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

¹ The red powder thrown by the people on one another at the Holt.

² A mixture of rice, turmeric and alum used to paint the forehead.

³ Saffron-ambergris.

**A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE
LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.**

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 251.)

III.²⁵

**THE THEORY OF UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR APPLIED
TO THE NICOBARESE LANGUAGE.**

Prefatory Remarks.

THE Nicobarese speak one Language in six Dialects so different as to be mutually unintelligible to the ear. These six Dialects are, from North to South, Car Nicobar, Chowra, Teressa, Central, Southern, and Shom Pei (*vide* Map attached).

The chief place of European residence has always been Nancowry Harbour, where the Central Dialect is spoken and hence that Dialect is by very far the best known. Therefore, except where otherwise specially stated, all examples and all vernacular words quoted are taken from that Dialect. Diacritical marks have not been used, except where unavoidable.

The works of Prof. Kuhn, Grünwedel, Vaughan Stevens, and Pater W. Schmidt were not available to me while writing this Grammar.

I.—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

a.—History of the Study.

The Nicobarese Language in the Central Dialect has been long since studied. Vocabularies, collections of sentences, and partial Grammars of this Dialect have been made at intervals by various missionaries and others from 1711 onwards—the two Jesuit Fathers Faure and Bonnet in 1711; Surgeon Fontana of the Austrian vessel *Josef und Theresia* in 1778 (published 1795); G. Hamilton in 1801; the Danish missionary Rosen in 1831-4; Fathers Chabord and Plaisant (in Teressa) in 1845; Fathers Barbe and Lacrampe in 1846; Dr. Rink in the Danish vessel *Galathea* in 1846; the Austrian *Novara* Expedition in 1857 (published in 1862), with additions by de Roepstorff and others under Colonel H. Man; Maurer in 1867; Mr. A. C. Man in 1869; comparative statement by V. Ball of all information up to 1869; Mr. E. H. Man in 1871 onwards; F. A. de Roepstorff in 1876 onwards; Dr. Svoboda of the Austrian *Aurora* Expedition, 1886 (published 1892).

Ten Vocabularies and a translation into the Central Dialect of 27 Chapters of the Gospel of St. Matthew were made by the Danish Moravian missionaries (Herrnhuter) in 1768—87. These are still preserved in manuscript at Herrnhut, and were partially embodied in de Roepstorff's posthumous *Dictionary of the Nancowry (Central) Dialect*, 1884; a capital book with valuable appendices, requiring, however, retransliteration for English readers.

b.—Man's Enquiries into the Central Dialect.

But the latest and best attempt to reproduce this Dialect is Mr. E. H. Man's *Dictionary of the Central Nicobarese Language*, 1889. This contains also a brief and valuable attempt at the Grammar and a Comparative Vocabulary of all the Dialects. The system of transcription adopted is the very competent one of the late Mr. A. J. Ellis. Mr. Man had the advantage of all the labours of his predecessors, together with a much longer residence in the islands than any of them and better means of locomotion. To these he has added the accuracy and care which distinguish all his work. In this Article, therefore, his book has been followed for the facts of the language and the forms of its words, and all the examples given in it are culled from the great number of sentences he has recorded. For the mode of presentation I am, however, responsible, as Mr. Man attempted in his *Grammar* to explain the language exclusively from the current English view of Grammar, rather than to present its character as a scientific study.

The other Dialects only find a place in Mr. Man's studies and are still but little known, no one with sufficient scholarly equipment or inclination having ever resided on any of the islands for the time necessary to study them to the extent that has been possible at Nancowry.

²⁵ Largely reprinted, with additions and many corrections from Chapter IV, Part II, of the *Census Report, India, 1901*, Vol. III.

c.—Philological Value.

The Nicobarese speak one language, whose affinities are with the Indo-Chinese Languages, as represented nowadays by the Mon Language of Pegu and Annan and the Khmer Language of Cambodia amongst civilised peoples and by a number of uncivilised tribes in the Malay Peninsula and Indo-China. It has affinities also with the speech of the tribes in the Peninsula, who are generally classed as "wild Malays" (Orang-utan and Orang-bukit), so far as that speech has come under the old influence of the Indo-Chinese Languages. The Nicobarese language is thus of considerable value philologically, as preserving, on account of isolation and small admixture with foreign tongues for many centuries, the probable true basis for the philology of the Languages of the Indo-Chinese Family.

d.—Dialects.

The language is spoken by 6,300 people in six Dialects, which have now become so differentiated in details as to be mutually unintelligible, and to be practically, so far as actual colloquial speech is concerned, six different languages. These dialects are limited in range by the islands in which they are spoken—

1. Car Nicobar (population 3,451).
2. Chowra (population 522).
3. Teressa with Bompoka (population 702).
4. Central — Camorta, Nancowry, Trinkut, Katchal (population 1,095).
5. Southern — Great Nicobar Coasts and Kondul, Little Nicobar and Pulo Milo (population 192).
6. Shom Pen — inland tribe of Great Nicobar (population 348).

e.—Mutual Unintelligibility.

Although it can be proved that the Nicobarese Language is fundamentally one tongue, yet the hopeless unintelligibility of the dialect of one Island to the ear of the people of another may be shown by the following example:—

Car Nicobar.

om p̄atākā dra chian kd̄ tārik
don't afraid not I eat man

Central.

wōt men pahōa chit okngōk ten p̄aiyāh
don't you afraid I-not eat to man

Sense of Both.

Don't be afraid ! I don't eat men ! (I am not a cannibal).

f.—Foreign Influence.

In spite of the aptitude of the people for picking up such foreign tongues as they hear spoken, quite a few foreign words have been adopted into their speech. Examples are—

From Portuguese.

| ENGLISH. | NICOBARESE. | ENGLISH. | NICOBARESE. |
|--------------|-------------|------------------|-------------|
| boot | shapāta | cask | pīpa |
| book, paper | kēbare | elephant | lisānta |
| hat | shapēo | rupee | rupiā |
| copper money | Sānta María | shaman, sorcerer | pater |
| "God" | Dēuse, Rēos | | |

From Hindustani.

| | |
|------|-----------|
| salt | shal, sal |
|------|-----------|

From Malay.

| | | | |
|---------|---------|----------------|----------------------|
| cup | mōngko | an evil spirit | iwipōt ²⁶ |
| buffalo | kapo | fowl | haiyam |
| cat | koching | | |

²⁶ The iwi are spirits of the departed ghosts, one of which is iwi-pōt, pōt being the Sanskrit bhūta through some Indo-Chinese form.

Only a century ago Portuguese was the trade language of the islands, with a sprinkling of Danish, German, and English. Malay and Chinese were both so before the Portuguese day, and now English, Burmese, and Hindustani are well understood. Indeed, the nature of the trade at any given island can be tested by the foreign languages best understood there. E.g., on Car Nicobar, Burmese is best understood, and then English and Hindustani: Malay and the other Nicobarese dialects not much. On Chowra, Hindustani, Tamil, Malay, and English are spoken to a limited extent, and there is a trading knowledge of the other Nicobarese dialects, except Shom Pen. On Teressa, Maley, Burmese, and English are the languages, with the dialects of Chowra and the Central Group. In the Central Group they talk Hindustani, Malay, English, Chinese, and a little Burmese, with the dialects of the South and Teressa. In the Southern Group they talk Malay, Hindustani, Chinese, and English, with the Central Dialect.

The women know only their own dialect, and are dumb before all strangers. And here, as elsewhere among polyglot peoples, natives of different islands sometimes have to converse in a mutually known foreign tongue (e.g., Hindustani, Burmese, Malay, or English), when unable to comprehend each other's dialects.

g.—Effect of Tabu on the Language.

There is a custom of tabu, which in the Nicobars, as elsewhere when it is in vogue, has seriously affected the language at different places, at least temporarily. Any person may adopt any word, however essential and common, in the language as his or her personal name, and when he or she dies it is tabued for a generation, for fear of summoning the ghost. In the interval a synonym has to be adopted and sometimes sticks, but that this is not very often the case is shown by a comparison of the Vocabularies published or made in 1711, 1787, 1876, and 1889, which prove that the language possesses a stability that is remarkable in the circumstances of its being unwritten and therefore purely colloquial, spoken by communities with few opportunities of meeting, and subject to the changing action of tabu.

h.—Method of Speech.

The Nicobarese speech is slurred and indistinct, but there is no abnormal dependence on tone accent, or gesture to make the meaning clear. The dialects are, as might be expected, rich in specialised words for actions and concrete ideas, but poor in generic and abstract terms.

i.—A Highly Developed Analytical Language.

Nicobarese is a very highly developed Analytical Language, with a strong resemblance in grammatical structure to English. It bears every sign of a very long continuous growth, both of syntax and etymology, and is clearly the outcome of a strong intelligence constantly applied to its development. Considering that it is unwritten and but little affected by foreign tongues, and so has not had extraneous assistance in its growth, it is a remarkable product of the human mind. There is no difference in the development of the different dialects. That of the wild Shom Pen is as "advanced" in its structure as the speech of the trading Car Nicobarese.

j.—Nature of Growth.

The growth of the language has been so complicated, and so many principles of speech have been partially adopted in building it up, that nothing is readily discoverable regarding it. The subject and predicate are not at once perceptible to the grammarian, nor are principal and subordinate sentences. The sentences, too, cannot at once be analysed correctly, nor can the roots of the words without great care be separated from the overgrowth. Neither syntax nor etymology are easy, and correct speech is very far from being easily attained.

k.—Order of the Words.

Grammatically the point to bear in mind is the order of the words, which is practically the English order, especially as functional inflexion is absent to help the speaker to intelligibility, and there is nothing in the form of the words to show their class, whether nouns, verbs, adjectives, and so on. Prepositions, conjunctions, auxiliaries, adverbs, and the "particles" of speech are freely used, and so are elliptical sentences. Compound words and phrases, consisting of two or more words just thrown together and used as one word are unusually common, and the languages show their Far Eastern proclivities by an extended use of "numeral co-efficients."

1. — Difficult Etymology.

The great difficulty in the language lies in the etymology. Words are built up of roots and stems, to which are added prefixes, infixes, and suffixes, both to mark the classes of connected words and to differentiate connected words when of the same class, i. e., to show which of two connected words is a verb and which a noun, and to mark the difference in the sense of two connected nouns, and so on. But this differentiation is always hazily defined by the forms thus arrived at, and the presence of a particular classifying affix does not necessarily define the class to which the word belongs. So also the special differentiating affixes do not always mark differentiation.

Again the affixes are attached by mere agglutination, in forms which have undergone phonic change, and by actual inflexion. Their presence, too, not unfrequently causes phonic change in, and inflexion of, the roots or stems themselves.

The chief peculiarity of the language lies in a series of "suffixes of direction," indicating the direction (North, South, East, West, above, down, below, or at the landing-place) in which action, condition, or movement takes place. But even suffixes so highly specialised as these are not by any means only attached to words, the sense of which they can and do affect in this way.

It is just possible that "North = up there: South = down there: West = below: East = in towards" have reference to the original migrations of the people, because the general direction of a migration, still in steady progress, of half-civilised tribes of considerable mental development on the Northern Burmese frontiers is North to South regularly. But this point would require proof.

It is thus that only by a deep and prolonged study of the language, one can learn to recognise a root, or to perceive the sense or use of an affix, and only by a prolonged practice could one hope to speak or understand it correctly in all its phases. Nicobarese is, in this sense, indeed a difficult language.

m. — Specimens of the Speech.

The following sample sentences in the Central Dialect will sufficiently exhibit the manner of Nicobarese speech.

The abbreviation c. i. r. = connector of intimate relation, a point to be explained later on. By translating it "in respect of" the sense of the Nicobarese sentences in which it occurs becomes clear.

Sample Sentences in the Central Dialect.

1.

ane ināat lamang ten chüa
that knife belong to I
(that knife belongs to me).

2.

ināat ta shong b̄t
knife c. i. r. sharp is
(the knife is sharp).

3.

ñ̄re ane nōang shanen kwòmhata ten chüa
both that thing spear give to I
(give me both those spears).

4.

iteak poatōre kāmheng en an
sleep always noon c. i. r. he
(he is always asleep at noon: the Nicobarese idiom is however really "noon (is) always asleep for him").

5.

an chūh harra halau lōe kān de
he go see buy cloth wife own
(he has gone to see about buying cloth for his wife).

6.

leđt etchai—chakā-lēbare chüa oal kaiyi de
did greet—face—paper (read aloud) I in road own
(I read it aloud while I was travelling).

7.

etchai—shake—lēbare chāa tanang ia an
 read—aloud I arrived c. i. r. he
 (he arrived while I was reading aloud).

8.

harra ta chāa ds ta s̄inowa tai
 see c. i. r. elder-brother own c. i. r. beat by
 chāa an kenyām leāt chīm
 father his child did cry
 (his child cried on seeing its elder brother beaten by its father).

9.

chūz s̄inowa tai an ta òng òlhaki
 I beat by he c. i. r. past-of-today morning
 (I was beaten by him this morning).

10.

paitche shi lōe òt ta ofē
 some old cloth has c. i. r. they (more than two)
 (they have some old cloth).

11.

katom? guang kamitoka kakat ta wahe
 how-many? persons dancers present c. i. r. last-night
 (how many dancers were there last night?)

12.

an hat kōan men
 he not child you
 (he is not your child).

13.

oal hoptep men ta ngong
 in box you c. i. r. nothing
 (there is nothing in your box).

14.

ane banyāt halau men longto-ten chi?
 that coat buy you from who?
 (from whom did you buy that coat?)

15.

chūa obidkngatō an kātō ta n̄i chūa
 I permit he live c. i. r. hut I
 (I let him live in my hut).

16.

chūa leap kitchal
 I can swim
 (I can swim).

17.

linken chit leap okngōk taina tū
 to-day I-not can eat because sick
 (I cannot eat to-day because I am sick).

n.—Bibliography.

Books.

1810. *Lettres Edifiantes*, Vol. XI, Toulouse.
 1867. Maurer, *Die Nikobaren* (valuable Bibliography: English, Danish, and German, 1799—1763).
 1870. Selections from the Records of the Government of India, No. LXXVII, Nicobar Islands (valuable Bibliography).
 1875. De Roepstorff, *Nicobar Vocabulary*: Calcutta Government (valuable references French, Danish, and German).
 1884. De Roepstorff, *Dictionary of the Nancowry Dialect*: Calcutta (valuable references to Danish works).

1888. Man, *Nicobar Vocabulary*: London.

1889. Man, *Dictionary of the Central Nicobar Language*: London.

Journals.

Anthropological Institute. Man (many) Skeat.

Asiatic Researches. Colebrooke (1794): Hamilton, Vol. II (1801).

Asiatic of Bengal, De Roepstorff (1870).

Indian Antiquary. Man (many): Temple (many).

Journal of the Indian Archipelago. Chopard (Vol. III, 1844).

Philological Society. A. J. Ellis (1882).

Straits Branch R. A. S. Blagden.

Pamphlets.

1812. Latrobe, *Letters from the Nicobars*.

1846. Barbe, *Notice of the Nicobars*.

II.—GRAMMAR.

a.—The Theory of Universal Grammar.

I will now proceed to discuss the Nicobarese Language on the lines of the Theory of Universal Grammar already explained, using the Central Dialect for the purpose, and avoiding diacritical marks, except where necessary to the context. The familiar grammatical terms will be inserted in brackets beside the novel ones used, whenever necessary, in order to make statements clear in a familiar manner.

b.—Example of Sentences of One Word.

The Nicobarese, like all other peoples, can express a complete meaning or sentence by an integer or single word, or by a phrase representing a single word: but they do not use this form of speech to excess. Thus :

| ENGLISH. | CENTRAL DIALECT. | ENGLISH. | CENTRAL DIALECT. |
|----------------------|------------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| oh (astonishment) | weē, oyakarē | ler | tochangtō |
| alas | aiyakarē | there (annoyance) | hah-ā-a |
| oh (pain) | arē | what a pity | bōh |
| dear me (compassion) | ōh | go on (encouragement) | shial |
| ah (dislike) | shesh | there's no saying | añyapa |
| ugh (disgust) | huñ-huñ-huñh | who knows | añyachü |
| hush | äbäh-äh | what's that? | kašī? |
| tut (rebuke) | ein-ein-ein-ein | thingummy (doubt) | chinda |
| pooh | hāsh | thingembob (doubt) | chūanda |
| hurrah, bravo | hū-ha-a-a | | |

c.—Subject and Predicate.

Nicobarese sentences, when of more than one word, are usually, but not always, clearly divided into subject and predicate, as can be seen from an examination of the sample sentences above given. Thus :

P = predicate : S = subject. The numbers below refer to the sample sentences.

(1) ane (S) inoat (S) lamang (P) ten (P) chua (P).

(2) inoat (S) ta (S) shong (S) ot (P).

(3) anre (P) ane (P) noang (P) shanen (P) kwombata (P) ten (P) chua (P)
(S not expressed).

(5) an (S) chuh (P) harra (P) halau (P) loe (P) kan (P) de (P).

(6) leat (P) etchai-chaka-lebare (P phrase) chua (S) oal (P) kaiyi (P) de (P).

(7) etchai-chaka-lebare (P phrase) chua (S) tanang (P) ta (P) an (P).

(8) harra-ta-chau-de-ta-finowa-tai-chia (S phrase) an (S) kenyum (S) leat (P)
chim (P). (Here "harra — etc. — chia" is a phrase, "see (ing) elder-brother
beaten by father," in the subject part of the sentence).

(9) chua (S) finowa (P) tai (P) an (P) ta (P) ong (P) olhaki (P).

- (10) paitche (S) shi (S) loe (S) ot (P) ta (P) ose (P).
 (11) katom (S) yuang (S) kamatoka (S) kekat (P) ta (P) wah (P).
 (12) an (S) hat (P) koan (P) men (P).
 (14) ane (P) kaayut (P) halau (P) men (S) longtoten (P) chi (P).
 (15) chua (S) oklakngato (P) an (P) kato (P) ta (P) ni (P) chua (P).
 (16) chua (S) leap (P) kichal (P).
 (17) linhen (P) chit (S) leap (P) okngok (P) taina (S) tu (P).

Two of the sample sentences present a peculiarity in expressing Subject and Predicate.

- (4) *iteak poatore kamheng en an*
 asleep always noon c. i. r. he

This can be properly and directly translated, "he is always asleep at noon"; but the Nicobarese idiom runs in English, "noon is always asleep for him," the predicate (verb) "is" being unexpressed. So that the sentence is properly divided thus—*iteak* (P) *poatore* (P) *kamheng* (S) *en* (P) *an* (P).

- (18) *oal hoptep men ta ngong*
 in box you c. i. r. nothing

Here we have both Subject and Predicate in an elliptical form, and in English, though translateable at once as "there is nothing in your box," the sentence really runs "(the contents, not expressed) in your box (are, not expressed) as nothing." So that neither the subject nor the Predator (verb) are expressed, but we have instead merely a phrase explaining the subject placed in apposition to another phrase illustrating the predicate. The sentence, in fact, as it stands, consists of an explicator (adjective) phrase, placed in apposition to an illustrator (adverb) phrase, and is divided elliptically thus—*oal-hoptep-men* (S) *ta-ngong* (P).

d.— Principal and Subordinate Words.

The words in the sample sentences are also clearly, but not readily, divisible into principal and subordinate. Thus:

- (1) *ane* (sub.) *inoat* (prin.) in the subject : *lamang* (prin.) *ten-chua* (sub.) in the predicate.
 (2) *inoat* (prin.) *ta-shong* (sub.) in the subject.
 (3) all the words are sub. to *kwomhata* in the predicate.
 (4) *iteak poatore en-an* are all sub. to a predictor (verb) unexpressed.
 (5) *loe kan de* are all sub. to *chuh-harra-hilau* (prin.) in the predicate.
 (6) *leat* (sub.) *etchai-chaka-lebare* (prin.) *oal-haiyi* (sub.)
 (7) here are two separate sentences—the first has one word in each part, and in the second
 ta and *an* are sub. to *tanang* in the predicate. In full analysis the first sentence
 is an illustrator (adverb) phrase illustrating the predictor (verb) in the second.
 (8) in the subjective part *harru-ta-hau-de-la-finowa-tai-chia* and *an* are sub. to *kennyum*
 and so is *leat* to *chim* in the predicate.
 (9) all the words in the predicate are sub. to a predictor (verb) unexpressed.
 (10) *paitche* and *shi* are sub. to *loe* in the subject and *ta-ose* to *ot* in the predicate.
 (11) *katom-yuang* are sub. to *kamatoka* in the subject and *ta-wah* to *kakat* in the predicate.
 (12) all the words in the predicate are sub. to a predictor (verb) unexpressed.
 (13) in this sentence *oal-hoptep-men* are sub. to an indicator (noun) unexpressed in the
 subject and *ta-ngong* to a predictor (verb) unexpressed in the predicate. The
 whole of the words actually expressed are thus subordinate.
 (14) all the words in the predicate are sub. to *halau*.
 (15) all the words in the predicate are sub. to *oklakngato*.
 (16) *leap* is sub. to *kichal* in the predicate.
 (17) here again are two sentences joined by *taina*, because. In the first *linhen* and *leap*
 are sub. to *okngok* in the predicate. In the second *taina* is sub. to *chua* (I)
 unexpressed in the subject, and *tu* to a predictor verb unexpressed in the predicate.

e. — Functions of Words.

The next stage in analysis is to examine the functions of the words used in the sample sentences, and for this purpose the following abbreviations will be used :—

Abbreviations Used.

| | | | |
|-----|--------------|--------|----------------------------|
| int | integer. | intd | introducer. |
| in | indicator. | r. o. | referent conjunctive. |
| e | explicator. | r. s. | referent substitute. |
| p | predicator. | c. in | complementary indicator. |
| ill | illustrator. | c. e. | complementary explicator. |
| c | connector. | c. ill | complementary illustrator. |

The sample sentences can then be further analysed thus —

- (1) *ane* (e) *inoat* (in) *lamang* (p) *ten* (c) *chua* (r. s. as c. in).
- (2) *inoat* (in) *ta* (c) — *shong* (e., the whole an e. phrase) *ot* (p).
- (3) *anre* (c. e.) *ane* (c. e.) *noang* (c. e.) *shanen* (c. in) *kuomhata* (p) *ten* (c) — *chua* (r. s. as in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (4) *iteak* (e) *poatore* (ill) *kamheng* (in) *en* (e) *an* (r. s. as in) : *iteak-poatore-en-an-* from an ill. phrase).
- (5) *an* (r. s. as in) *chuh* (p) — *harra* (p) — *halau* (p., the whole a p. phrase) *los* (c. in) *kan* (in) — *de* (e., the whole an e. phrase).
- (6) *leat* (p) — *etchai* (p) — *chaka* (c. in) — *lebare* (c. in., the whole a p. phrase) *chua* (r. s. as in) *oal* (c) — *kaiyi* (in) — *de* (e., the whole an e. phrase).
- (7) *etchai* (p) — *chaka* (c. in) — *lebare* (c. in) — *chua* (r. s. as in., the whole an ill. phrase) *tanang* (p) *ta* (ill) *an* (r. s. as in).
- (8) *harra* (p) — *ta* (c) — *chau* (c. in) — *de* (c. e.) — *ta* (c) — *finowa* (e) — *tai* (c) *chia* (in., the whole an e. clause) *an* (e) *kengum* (in) *leat* (p) — *chin* (p., the whole a p. phrase).
- (9) *chua* (r. s. as in) *finowa* (e) — *tai* (c) — *an* (r. s. as in., the whole an e. phrase) *ta* (c) — *ong* (e) — *ohaki* (in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (10) *paitshe* (e) *shi* (e) *loe* (in) *ot* (p) *ta* (c) — *ose* (r. s. as in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (11) *katom* (e) — *yuang* (e., the whole an e. phrase) *kamatoka* (in) *kakat* (p) *ai* (c) — *wake* (in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (12) *an* (r. s. as in) *hat* (e) *koan* (c. in) *men* (e).
- (13) *oal* (c) — *hoptep* (in) — *men* (r. s. as e., the whole an e. phrase of subject unexpressed) *ta* (c) — *ngong* (in., the whole an ill. phrase of predicate unexpressed).
- (14) *ane* (c. in) *kanyut* (c. in) *halau* (p) *men* (r. s. as in) *longioten* (c) — *chi* (r. s., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (15) *chua* (r. s. as in) *oklakngato* (p) *an* (r. s. as in) — *kato* (p., the whole c. in phrase) *ta* (c) — *ni* (in) — *chua* (r. s. as e., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (16) *chua* (r. s. as in) *leap* (p) — *kichal* (p., the whole a p. phrase).
- (17) *linhen* (ill.) *chit* (r. s. as in) *leap* (p) — *okngok* (p., the whole a p. phrase) *taina* (r. o.) *tu* (e).

f. — Purpose of Sentence Indicated by the Position of the Components.

It will be seen that the purposes of the sentences thus analysed are as under —

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| (1) Affirmation — Nos. 1, 2, 15, 16, 17. | (4) Exhortation — No. 3. |
| (2) Denial — Nos. 12, 13. | (5) Information — Nos. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, |
| (3) Interrogation — Nos. 11, 14. | 9, 10. |

The sample sentences cover, therefore, the whole range of all speech as regards purpose, and analysis shows that the Nicobarese rely on the position of the words in the sentence to indicate its purpose, that no special order is observed for differentiating any particular purpose, and that the position of the words is in their language of the greatest importance for the intelligibility of the sentences. That is, Nicobarese is a language that indicates purpose mainly by the position of the components of the sentences.

g. — Order of the Words in the Sentences.

Another analysis of the sample sentences will, therefore, now be made to shew what the order of the words in Nicobarese sentences is.

I.

Subject precedes predicate, but for emphasis can follow it :

Preceding :

- (1) *ane-inoat* (S) *lamang-ten-chua* (P)
and so always, except
- (6) *leat-etchai-chaka-lebare* (P) *chua-oat-kaiyi-de* (S).
- (7) *etchai-chaka-lebare* (P) *chua* (S) *tanang-ta-an* (P)

II.

Subject, predicate, complement (object).

- (1) *ane-inoat* (S) *lamang* (P) *ten-chua* (C).

But the order is reversed for emphasis.

- (3) *anre-ane-noang-shanen* (C) *kwomhata-ten-chua* (P., S. unexpressed).
- (14) *ane-kanyut* (O) *halau* (P) *men* (S) *longtoten-ohi?* (P).

III.

Explicator (adjective) precedes indicator (noun); or follows it, usually with a connector (preposition), but also without a connector. Thus :

(a) Preceding indicator (noun) :

- (1) *ane* (e) *inoat* (in) *lamang ten chua*.
- (3) *anre* (e) *ane* (e) *hoang* (e) *shanen* (in) *kwomhata ten chua*.
- (4) *iteak* (e) *poatore* (ill.) *kamheng* (in) *en an*.
- (5) *paitshe* (e) *shi* (e) *loe* (in) *ot ta ose*.

(b) Following indicator (noun) with connector :

- (2) *inoat* (in) *ta* (c) *shong* (e) *ot*.

(c) Following indicator without connector :

- (5) *an chuh harra halau loe kan* (in) *de* (e).
- (9) *chua* (in) *finowa* (e) *tai an ta ong olhaki*.
- (12) *an* (in) *hat* (e) *koan* (in) *men* (e).
- (13) *oal hoptep* (in) *men* (e) *ta ngong*.

(d) Following indicator (noun) with and without connector :

- (8) *harra ta chau* (in) *de* (e. without c.) *ta* (c) *finowa* (e) *tai chia an kenyum*
leat chim.

IV.

Illustrators (adverbs) usually follow, but sometimes precede, predators (verbs).

(a) Follow :

- (3) *anre ane noang shanen kwomhata* (p) *ten-chua* (ill. phrase).
- (5) *an chuh-harra-halau* (p) *loe kan-de* (ill. phrase).
- (7) *etchai-chaka-lebare-chua* (ill. phrase) *tanang-ta-an* (p. phrase).
- (10) *paitshe shi loe ot* (p) *ta-ose* (ill. phrase).
- (11) *katom yuang kamatoka kakat* (p) *ta-wahe* (ill. phrase).
- (14) *ane kanyut halau* (p) *men longtoten-ohi* (ill. phrase).

(b) Precede :

- (17) *linhen* (ill.) *chit leap-blongok* (p.)
- But illustrators (adverbs) follow explicators (adjectives).
- (4) *iteak* (e) *poatore* (ill.) *kamheng en an*.
 - (9) *chua-finowa-tai-an* (e. phrase) *ta-ong-olhaki* (ill. phrase).
 - (18) *oal-hoptep-men* (e. phrase) *ta-ngong* (ill. phrase).

V.

Connectors (prepositions) precede the words they connect with preceding words:

(a) Connecting predicate (verb) with complement (object):

- (1) *ane inoat lamang* (p) *ten* (c) *chua* (C).
- (3) *anre ane noang shanen kwomhata* (p) *ten* (c) *chua* (C).
- (8) *harra* (p) *ta* (c) *chau* (C) *de ta finowa tai chia an kenyum leat chim.*

(b) Connecting predicate (verb) with illustrator (adverb):

- (4) *iteak poatore kamheng en* (c) *an* (r. s. for ill. phrase). (p. unexpressed).
- (9) *chua finowa tai an ta* (c) *ong-olhaki* (ill. phrase).
- (10) *paitshe hi loe ot* (p) *ta* (c) *ose* (r. s. for ill. phrase).
- (11) *katom yuang kamatoka kakat* (p) *ta* (c) *wake* (ill.).
- (13) *oal hoptep-men ta* (c) *ngong* (in. as an ill. phrase): (here ill. is connected with p. unexpressed).
- (14) *an kanyut halau* (p) *men longtoten* (c) *chi* (r. s. for ill. phrase).
- (15) *chua oklakngato an kato* (p) *ta* (c) *ii-chua* (ill. phrase),

(c) Connecting indicator (noun) with explicator (adjective):

- (2) *inoat* (in) *ta* (c) *shong* (e) *ot.*
- (6) *leat-etchai-chaka-lebare chua* (in) *oal* (c) *kaiyi-de* (e. phrase).
- (8) *harra ta chau-de* (in) *ta* (c) *finowa* (e) *tai chia an kenyum leat chim.*
- (15) *oal* (c) *hoptep-men* (e. phrase connected with in. unexpressed) *ta ngong.*

(d) Connecting explicator (adjective) with illustrator (adverb):

- (8) *harra ta chau de ta finowa* (e) *tai* (c) *chia* (in) *an kenyum leat chim.*
- (9) *chua finowu* (e) *tai* (c) *an* (in) *ta ong olhaki.*

VI.

Referent conjunctors (conjunctions) commence a sentence connected with a previous one.

- (17) *linken chit leap okngok* (first sentence) *taina* (r. c.) *tu* (second sentence).
paigah^{26a} *hat* *dōh* *katka* *hen* (r. c.) *mikdsha*
 man not can dance (first sentence) when sing
kōi-hakt.
 solemn-chaunt (second sentence).
 (one may not dance when singing the solemn chaunt).

VII.

Interrogatory Speech.

Introducers (adverbs) commence sentences.

kdhē *na* *itd?*
 when he here? (p. unexpressed).

(when will he be here?)

chi *yō* *haryan?*
 who wish pig-hunt?
 (who is going to hunt pigs?)

chun *oñhan* *ongswdng* *en* *chua?*
 which tree cut-down c. i. r. I?
 (which tree shall I cut down?)

chin *léang* *an?*
 what name he?
 (what is his name?)

chuang *léang* *an?*
 what name it?
 (what is its name?)

^{26a} This is an additional illustrating sentence.

Questions are, however, usually asked by means of an interrogatory prefix, *ka*, *kd*, *kan* meaning "what?" attached to the subject of the sentence. In every such case the usual place of the subject is not changed. E. g.

| | | |
|--|--------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>tāu</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>kd—an?</i> |
| younger-brother | you | he? |
| (is he your younger-brother?) | | |
| <i>chawatāre</i> | <i>ka-men?</i> | <i>ta linhen</i> |
| return | you? | c. i. r. morning |
| (will you return this morning?) | | |
| <i>m̄kngayan</i> | <i>ka-en—kōan?</i> | <i>*men</i> |
| quite-well | c. i. r. child? | you |
| (is your child quite well?) | | |
| <i>m̄h</i> | <i>ka—not?</i> | <i>hēang shud men Lōng</i> |
| ever | you-not? | one time you Great Nicobar |
| (have you never once been to Great Nicobar?) | | |

As in many languages, there is an interrogative introducer (adverb) *an*, which expects an affirmative answer. E. g.

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------|-----------------|------------------|
| <i>an?</i> | <i>na</i> | <i>tāu</i> | <i>men</i> |
| yes? | he | younger-brother | you |
| (isn't he your younger-brother?) | | | |
| <i>an?</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>iteakla</i> | <i>ta linhen</i> |
| yes? | you | drowsy | c. i. r. morning |
| (aren't you drowsy this morning?) | | | |
| <i>an?</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>hēang</i> | |
| yes? | you | one | |
| (surely you got something?) | | | |

The following uses of *ka*, when prefixed to a word, show the system of the Nicobarese language well:—

| | | | |
|---|----------------|---|------------------|
| <i>men</i> | <i>itūa</i> | <i>Lōng</i> | <i>ka-hānān?</i> |
| you | visit | Great Nicobar | no? |
| (will you visit Great Nicobar or not?) | | | |
| <i>men</i> | <i>hēu</i> | <i>ka-an?</i> | <i>ka-hānān?</i> |
| you | see | yes? | no? |
| (you saw it, didn't you?) | | | |
| <i>an?</i> | <i>ka-men?</i> | <i>yiang en chūa olyōl an ka-hānān?</i> | |
| yes? | you? | with c. i. r. I say yes | no? |
| (are you coming with me? say, "yes or no"). | | | |
| <i>ka-shiri?</i> | <i>na</i> | <i>ku-añ?</i> ²⁷ | |
| fool? | he | yes? | |
| (what a fool he is!) | | | |
| <i>ka-shiri?</i> | <i>me</i> | <i>ka-an?</i> | |
| fool? | you | yes? | |
| (what a fool you are!) | | | |
| <i>ka-shiri?</i> | <i>cha</i> | <i>La-an?</i> | |
| fool? | I | yes? | |
| (what a fool I am!) | | | |

²⁷ These three sentences express impatience at anything carelessly done.

VIII.

Referent Substitutes (Pronouns).

Referent substitutes (pronouns) follow the place of their originals—

- (1) *ane inoat lamang ten chua* (r. s. as in).
- (4) *iteak poatore kamheng en an* (r. s. as ill. phrase).
- (5) *an* (r. s. as in) *chuh harra halau loe kan de*.
- (8) *an* (r. s. as e.) *kenyum leat ekim*.
- (9) *chua finowa tai an* (r. s. as ill. phrase) *ta ong olhaki*.
- (10) *paitshe shi loe ot ta ose* (r. s. as ill. phrase).
- (12) *an* (r. s. as in) *hat koan men*.
- (13) *oal hoptep men* (r. s. as e.).
- (15) *chua oklakngato an* (r. s. as. in) *kato ta ni chua* (r. s. as e.).
- (16) *chua* (r. s. as in) *leap kichal*.
- (17) *linhen chit* (r. s. as in) *leap okngok taina tu*.

The ordinary referent substitutes (pronouns) are :

Table of "Personal Pronouns."

| | | | |
|-------------------|-------------|------------|----------|
| <i>chüa</i> | I | <i>ina</i> | you-two |
| <i>meñ</i> | thou (you) | <i>ifé</i> | you |
| <i>an, na</i> | he, she, it | <i>onâ</i> | they-two |
| <i>heñ, chaai</i> | we-two | <i>ofé</i> | they |
| <i>hê, chiöi</i> | we | | |

Chüa, meñ, an are ordinarily inflected also to *cha, me, eh.* E. g.

hendün *ta* *eh*
awake c. i. r. *he*
(awake him).

There is further inflexion of all the "personal pronouns" with *hat*, not, in negative sentences. Thus :

Table of Negative "Personal Pronouns."

| | |
|----------------------|--|
| <i>chit</i> | I-not |
| <i>met</i> | thou-not |
| <i>net (and hat)</i> | he-not |
| <i>heñ-hat</i> | we-two-not (in full, to distinguish from the next) |
| <i>het</i> | *we-not |
| <i>inât</i> | you-two-not (in full, to distinguish from the next) |
| <i>ifêt</i> | you-not |
| <i>onât</i> | they-two-not (in full, to distinguish from the next) |
| <i>ofêt</i> | they-not |

Inflection of some of these words appears again in the questions used when startled.

Thus :

- chüa?* *kane?* what? that? (what was that?) (*kane?* = *ka?* + *ane*)
chüa? *kinâ?* what? you-two? (what was that?) (*kinâ?* = *ka?* + *inâ*)
chüa? *kifé?* what? you? (what was that?) (*kifé?* = *ka?* + *ifé*)

So, too, in greetings : *et-chai-chakd* (greet-face), greet; then (*et-*) *chai-chachd-ka* (greet-face-indeed), or (*et-*) *chai-cha-rakat* (greet-face-now). Then further—

- met-chai?* how d'you do? (*met* = *meñ* + *et*)
inât-chai? how d'you do, you two? (*inât* = *na* + *et*)
ifôt-chai? how d'you do, all of you? (*ifôt* = *ifé* + *et*)

Another common inflexion of the same type may be noticed here, though it does not belong to this place : *wdt*, don't, for *wi-hat* (do-not).

h. — Order of Connected Sentences.

Connected sentences are usually joined by referent conjunctors (conjunctions) and in such cases the principal sentence is followed by the subordinate.

(17) *linhen ohit leap okngdk* (principal sentence) *taina* (r. c.) *tu* (subordinate sentence).

| | | | | | | |
|------------------------------|------------|--------------|--------------------------|--------------|-------------|-----------|
| <i>ata</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>milah</i> | <i>laak</i> | <i>taina</i> | <i>chua</i> | <i>yō</i> |
| go | you | play | outside (prin. sentence) | because | I | wish |
| <i>iteak</i> | | | | | | |
| <i>sleep</i> (sub. sentence) | | | | | | |

(go and play outside, because I want to sleep).

| | | | | | |
|---------------|------------|------------|------------------------|------------|----------------|
| <i>paiyūh</i> | <i>hat</i> | <i>doh</i> | <i>katōka</i> | <i>hen</i> | <i>mikdsha</i> |
| man | not | can | dance (prin. sentence) | when | sing |

kōi-haki

solemn-chaunt (sub. sentence).

(one cannot dance, when singing the solemn chant).

Referent substitutes (pronouns) are often, though not always, used in both of two consecutive sentences. Thus :

| | |
|-----------------------------|---|
| <i>ka</i> , who, which, | { |
| <i>chichi</i> , ya, whoever | |
| <i>kae</i> , whatever | |

in the prin. sentence with *shina*, the same, in the sub. sentence.

Except when thus used *shina* should therefore be regarded as a referent conjuncor (conjunction).

i. — Expression of Connected Purposes.

But the tendency of the Nicobarese in indicating connected purposes by speech is to treat the subordinate sentence as an integral part of the principal, and to avoid breaking up speech into separate sentences connected by referent conjunctors (conjunctions). E. g.

(6) *leat etchai-shaka-lebare chua oal kaiyi de*
did read-aloud I in road own

There are two connected purposes in the sentences of this statement: (1) "I read aloud," (2) "while I was travelling." But the Nicobarese treats them as one by turning the subordinate sentence *oal-kaiyi-de* into an explicator (adjective) phrase attached to the subject "*chua*, I."

(7) *etchai-shaka-lebare chua tanang ta an*
read-aloud I arrive c. i. r. he

Here the two connected purposes of the statement are more apparent. The information is (1) "I was reading aloud," (2) "he arrived." But the Nicobarese has treated the subordinate sentence *et-chai-shaka-lebare chua* as an illustrator (adverb) phrase of the principal sentence *tanang ta an*.

(8) *harra ta chua de ta finowa tai chia*
see c. i. r. elder-brother own c. i. r. beat by father
an kenyum leat chim
his child did cry

Here we have (1) "his child cried," (2) "on seeing its elder-brother beaten by its father." But the subordinate sentence *harra ta chau de ta finowa tai chia* is treated by the Nicobarese as an explicator (adjective) phrase of the subject *an kenyum*.

j. — Expression of the Functions and Interrelation of Words.

It will have been observed that the Nicobarese express the interrelation of the components of their sentences by functional connectors (in their case prepositions), which form, therefore, an important part of their speech. Thus:

| | | | | | | | |
|------|-----------------|----------------------------|-----------------|--------------|------------------|----------------|-----------------|
| (1) | <i>lamang</i> | <i>ten</i> | <i>chua</i> | | | | |
| | belong | to | I | | | | |
| (2) | <i>inoat</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>shong</i> | <i>ot</i> | | | |
| | knife | c. i. r. | sharp | is | | | |
| (3) | <i>kwomhata</i> | <i>ten</i> | <i>chua</i> | | | | |
| | give | to | I | | | | |
| (4) | <i>iteak</i> | <i>kamheng</i> | <i>en</i> | <i>an</i> | | | |
| | asleep | noon | c. i. r. | he (is) | | | |
| (6) | <i>leat</i> | <i>etchai-chaka-lebare</i> | <i>chua</i> | <i>oal</i> | <i>kaigi</i> | <i>de</i> | |
| | did | read-aloud | I | in | road | own | |
| (7) | <i>harra</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>chau</i> | <i>de</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>finowa</i> | <i>tai chia</i> |
| | see | c. i. r. | elder-brother | own | c. i. r. | beat | by father |
| (8) | <i>chua</i> | <i>finowa</i> | <i>tai</i> | <i>an</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>ong</i> | <i>olhaki</i> |
| | I | beat | by | he | c. i. r. | past-of-to-day | morning |
| (9) | <i>paitshe</i> | <i>shi</i> | <i>toe</i> | <i>ot</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>o/e</i> | |
| | some | old | cloth | possess | c. i. r. | they | |
| (10) | <i>katom</i> | <i>yuang</i> | <i>hamatoka</i> | <i>kekat</i> | <i>ta</i> | | <i>wake</i> |
| | how-many? | persons | dancers | present | c. i. r. | | last-night |
| (13) | <i>oal</i> | <i>hoptep</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>ta</i> | | <i>ngong</i> | |
| | in | box | you | c. i. r. | | nothing | |
| (14) | <i>ane</i> | <i>kanyut</i> | <i>halau</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>longtoten</i> | <i>chi</i> | |
| | that | coat | buy | you | from | | who |
| (15) | <i>chua</i> | <i>oklukngato</i> | <i>an</i> | <i>kato</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>n̄i</i> | <i>chua</i> |
| | I | permit | he | live | c. i. r. | hut | I |

k. — Connectors (Prepositions).

The functional connectors (prepositions) and connector-phrases are necessarily numerous and their use quite simply expressed. The commonest are :

Table of "Prepositions."

| CENTRAL DIALECT. | ENGLISH. | CENTRAL DIALECT. | ENGLISH. |
|--|----------------------------|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ten, au, ta, tatai | to, at, on (object) | yō | to (place) |
| tai | by | en, at, kat | at |
| oal, ol | in | enyāh | after |
| yōl, yang, hokaio | with | pat, taihit, hatyōl hatyang | } without |
| lōngto, lōngtoten, ngatai, yang, lōngtota, chakā, lamōngtai | { from | kāe | concerning |
| ngashī | { about, in relation to | yōna-ta-kāe | { for, account of, sake of |
| henshāt-kāe | for, place of | hēangechuk | among |
| mongyūlangñie | between | talashiaik | along-side |
| tanūak | beneath | harōh-tōmtare | except |
| oyūhta | till, until | tamang | as-far-as |
| ta-tangtatai, | { as-well-as | tamat | during |
| hēangetai, | | yōhñe | through (a solid) |
| okālhare | across | ōakñe | through a fluid |

A good example of their use is the following :

an okaihangā pōwah lōngto ta oal dūe chua
 he took-away-south paddle from c. i. r. in canoe I
 (he took away to the South the paddle out of (from inside of) my canoe).

1. — Connectors of Intimate Relation.

The only class of connectors (prepositions) that presents any difficulties is that of the connectors of intimate relation. These are *ta*, *en*, *pan* and may be translated "in respect of, as, as for, as to, regarding, as regards, with reference to, concerning, for" according to the context. They are used for connecting:

- (1) indicator (noun) with its explicator (adjective).
- (2) subject and its predicate.
- (3) explicator (adjective) with its illustrator (adverb).
- (4) predicator (verb) and its complement (object).

- (1) indicator (noun) with its explicator (adjective).

inbat *ta* *shong* *öt*
knife ta sharp is

(the knife is sharp).

paiyüh *ta* *uruhateshe* *däk*
man ta many come

(many men came).

kenyüm *tai* *an* *ta* *fiñowa*
child by he beat

(the child was beaten by him).

- (2) subject and its predicate.

yuchüh *pan* *chüa*
go-home I

(I am going home).

paitshe *homkwom* *en* *men* *ten* *chüa*
some give en thou to I

(give me some).

oal *hoptep* *men* *ta* *ngong*
in box you nothing

(there is nothing in your box).

- (3) explicator (adjective) with its illustrator (adverb).

iteak *klinheng* *en* *an*
asleep noon en he

(noon is asleep for him, i. e., he sleeps at noon).

chüa *fiñowa* *tai* *an* *ta* *ony* *ölhaki*
I beat by he past-of-to-day morning

(I was beaten by him this morning).

hat *öt* *löe* *ta* *oal* *hoptep* *an*
not is cloth in box he

(there is no cloth in his box).

- (4) predicator (verb) and its complement (object).

harra *ta* *ghau* *de*
see elder-brother own

(seeing the elder brother).

paitshe *shi* *löe* *öt* *ta* *o/ð*
some old cloth have they

(they have some old cloth).

wi *an* *en* *ta* *linhen*
make it to to-day

(make it to-day).

chit *lisap* *wi* *an* *en*
I-not can make it to

(I cannot make it).

The Nicobarese, however, have no idea of using connectors (conjunctions) merely for joining two words together. They cannot express "and" or "or" without a paraphrase. Thus :

ane nina an—diawu an homkwdm
 that this it—another he give
 (he gives this and that).

an dāk òlhakt hānān en chüa
 he come morning no I

(he will come in the morning : no : (then) I, i. e., he or I will come in the morning).

m. — Order of the Words is the Essence of the Grammar.

But the great point of the speech is the position of the words and that comes out clearly in the following instances from the sample sentences, where the words are simply thrown together.

an chüh harra halau lōe kdn de
 he go see buy cloth wife own
 (he has gone to see about buying cloth for his wife).

an hat kōan men
 he not child you
 (he is not your child).

ane kanyūt halau men longtoten cht ?
 that coat buy you from who?
 (from whom did you buy that coat?)

It would be impossible to make such sentences intelligible, except by the order of the words. The same principle of simple collocation in a certain order is adopted in elliptical connected sentences.

oal hoptēp men ta ngong
 in box you c. i. r. nothing
 (there is nothing in your box).

Simple collocation of words, in a fixed order, determining the functions and classes of each is very common in the language.

| | | | | |
|--------|--------|--------|------|----------------------|
| chia | kan | chüa | { } | = my wife's father |
| father | wife | I | | |
| kdn | chia | men | { } | = your father's wife |
| wife | father | you | | |
| due | chang | chüa | { } | = my own canoe |
| canoe | own | I | | |
| hoptēp | chang | chia | kdn | chüa |
| box | own | father | wife | I |

(my wife's father's own box).

n. — Expression in Phrases.

The habit just explained comes out strongly in the simple collocation of appropriate words to express the various phases of action or condition necessarily connected with predicates (verbs). Thus :

Table of "Auxiliaries" to "Verbs."

| | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| orihata | beat |
| wòt ori (wòt for wí hat, do not) | don't beat |
| chia ori | I beat (I am beating) |
| chüa yuangshitô ori | I busy beat (I was beating) |
| chüa leät yüangshitô yanga ori | I finish busy just-now beat (I had been beating) |
| chüa yanga ori | I just-now beat (I have just beaten) |
| chia leät ori | I finish beat (I have beaten, I did beat) |
| chüa ori leätingare | I beat entirely (I had beaten) |
| chüa yô ori | I wish beat (I will beat) |

| | |
|--------------------------|---|
| chüa enyâk ori | I afterwards beat (I shall beat) |
| chüa alde ori | I just-now beat (I am about to beat) |
| lâk (and shôk) chüa ori | let I beat (let me beat) |
| chüa lêap ori | I can beat |
| chüa dôh ori | I able beat (I may (perhaps) beat) |
| dôhta chüa ori | duty I beat (I must (ought to) beat) |
| chüa kaiyâhtashe ori | I permit-from-some-one beat (I may, i. e., have the power to, beat) |
| harôh-ta-yande- chüa ori | expect-continus I beat (I might beat) |

So with the really ellipsed form *oria*, beaten, where the predicate (verb) is unexpressed.
E. g.

| | |
|----------------|-----------------------------------|
| chüa leât oria | I finish beaten (I was beaten) |
| chüa yô oria | I wish beaten (I shall be beaten) |
| chüa dôh oria | I can beaten (I may be beaten) |
| and so on. | |

All this shows that the Nicobarese have no idea of "active" and "passive voices," the expression of the various natural phases of action and condition being merely with them a question of the collocation of certain conventional appropriate words.

O. — Numeral Coefficients.

The habit of collocating conventional words in phrases comes out in another important point in the Nicobarese language. There is, in common with all Far Eastern languages, but carried to a far greater extent than usual, a kind of explicator (adjective) employed in Nicobarese, known to grammarians as the "numeral coefficients," attached with numerals to indicators (nouns), when the numerals themselves are used as explicators (adjective). Thus, one cannot say in Nicobarese "one man," but one must say "one fruit man": i. e., one must not say *hêang enkiña*, but *hêang yûang enkiña*. The numeral coefficient is always collocated with the words to which it is attached between the numeral and the thing enumerated.

Table of Numeral Coefficients.

CENTRAL. CAR NICOBAR.

| | |
|--|---------------------|
| (1) for human beings and spirit-scaring figures (<i>kareau</i>). | |
| <i>yûang</i> (fruit) | <i>taka</i> |
| <i>kôi</i> (head) | |
| <i>tat, tat-yûang, tat-kôi</i> | |
| (2) for animate moving objects, eggs, parts of the body, domestic and other objects • that are round. | |
| <i>nôang</i> (cylinder) | <i>nòng</i> |
| (3) for fruit. | |
| <i>nôang-yûang</i> | <i>taka</i> |
| (4) for flat objects, cooking-pots and fishing-nets. | |
| <i>tdk</i> (wide) | <i>tdk</i> |
| (5) for dwellings and buildings. | |
| <i>hen</i> | <i>momti</i> |
| (6) for trees and long things. | |
| <i>chanang</i> | <i>md</i> |
| (7) for ships and boats. | |
| <i>danbi</i> | <i>nòng</i> |
| (8) for bamboos used for keeping shell-lime. | |
| <i>hînle</i> | <i>kdhâ</i> |
| (9) for bunches of fruit, but for single pine-apples or <i>papaya</i> . | |
| <i>tôm</i> (bunch) | <i>lamndha, tum</i> |
| (10) for bundles of <i>pandanu</i> -paste. | |
| <i>manoal, mokônha</i> | |

- (11) for bundles of split-cane and wood-chips.
pomdh *chumvi*
- (12) for bundle of cane.
- (13) for bundles of firewood.
mndl
- (14) for bundles of tobacco.
lamem *milima*
- (15) for books.
amoka
- (16) for ladders.
chaminkda
- (17) for pieces of cloth.
shamanap
- (18) for cord and fishing lines.
kamilang

Another set of numeral coefficients for " pair " is used in the same way.

- tafual* pair of cocoanuts, rupees, edible birds' nest.
tdk pair of bamboos for shell-lime.
amok pair of cooking pots.

This principle is carried rather far in the following instances:—

amok is also used for two pairs of bamboos for shell-lime.

kamintap is a set (4 to 5) of cooking pots.

nōang is a set of ten pieces of tortoise-shell.

EXAMPLE—*löe nōang okhip*, three sets of tortoise-shell, i. e., 30 pieces.

Numeral coefficients appear again in yet another way in the following instances:—
tanai shud, five times, but

- tanai kotatai* five times (for hammering and hand work)
dn kochat two times (for jumping)
jouu kongaldh four times (for going)
löe kuñengē three times (for talking, singing)
jouu koshtohukd four times (for eating, drinking, feeding)
issdt koshtanha seven times (for washing, bathing)

p.—Elliptical Sentences.

Elliptical sentences are very common: the obvious predicate being usually unexpressed.

steak paotore klmheng en an, noon (is) always asleep for him.

an hat kōan men, he (is) not your child.

q.—Analytical Nature of the Language.

We can now perceive generally how the Nicobarese mind regards speech. A Nicobarese has no idea of using variation in the external form of words to indicate the functions of the sentences and the interrelation of the component words, but uses position and special additional words (connectors) for those purposes: nor does he use anything but position to indicate the functions of his words. He must consequently, to make himself intelligible, rely mainly on the order of his words, in the sentence, which thus becomes of the greatest importance to him. His language is, therefore, essentially a Syntactical Language of the analytical variety. Briefly it may be described as an Analytical Language.

r.—Order of Speech.

To the Nicobarese instinct the logical order of speech for all purposes is as follows:—

- (1) subject before predicate,
(2) subject, predicate, complement (object).
(3) explicator (adjective) before indicator (noun): or with connector (preposition) after indicator,

- (4) illustrator (adverb) after predicator (verb) or explicator (adjective).
- (5) connector (preposition) before the word it connects with another.
- (6) referent conjunctior (conjunction between connected sentences) and introducers (interrogative adverb) before everything.
- (7) referent substitutes (pronouns) follow the position of their originals.
- (8) the principal sentence precedes the subordinate.

The Nicobarese has to adhere strictly to this order, and can only vary it when the inherent qualities of the words used allows him to do so for emphasis or convenience; as when he makes the subject follow the predicate, explicator (adjective) follow indicator (noun) without connector (preposition), illustrator (adverb) precedes predicator (verb) or explicator (adjective). He has very complicated methods, without using functional variation of form, of indicating the *nature* and class of his words, and these necessarily form the chief point for study in the language as regards the structure of its words.

B.—Classification of Words Depends Primarily on Position in the Sentence.

Primarily there is nothing in external form, which necessarily denotes the function or functions of a word in a sentence and, therefore, its class or its inherent qualities, i. e., its nature. Nor is there primarily anything in external form to show that a word has been transferred from one class to another. That is, properly the class of a word is known by its nature or by its position, and its transfer from one class to another is shown by its position.

I have said above "primarily" and "properly," because, like all speakers of highly developed languages, as analytical languages must necessarily be, the Nicobarese follow one principle of language chiefly and others in a minor degree. So, as will be seen later on, it is possible in many, though not in by any means all, cases to classify Nicobarese words by their form.

Examples of the effect of position on the class of a word.

lōa, "quick," explicator (adjective) is transferred to illustrator (adverb) "quickly" by position.

mitti "false," to "falschood."

chang, "own," predicator (verb) to "own," explicator (adjective),

hen, "time" to referent conjunctior "when."

kapngato, "remember" to "mindful."

paitngato, "forget" to "forgetful."

kedohnga, "another" to "otherwise (differently)."

lpatayan, "punctual" to "early" illustrator (adverb).

hoi, "far" explicator (adjective) to "far" illustrator (adverb).

Words of the same form with totally different meanings according to class are known by position. Thus:—

kdtō as explicator (adjective) means "silent": as a predicator (verb) it means "dwell."

taſhal as an indicator (noun) means "pair": as a numeral explicator (adjective) or indicator (noun) it means "six."

tā as an indicator (noun) means "touch": as an explicator (adjective) it means "flat."

kdhē as an indicator (noun) means "moon": as an referent conjunctior it means "when."

yō means "if," "wish" (verb), "to," "thither" according to its position in the sentence. *E. g.*

yō men yō yō Pa
if you wish to Car Nicobar.

(if you wish to go to Car Nicobar).

t. — Phrases (Compound Words) Classed as Words.

Phrases (compound words) formed of several words thrown together without connectors are very common. They are treated in the sentence precisely as simple words.

Indicator Phrases (Compound Nouns).

| | | | |
|---------------|-------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------------------|
| heñ-hatdm | time-night, night-time. | āñh-chakā-fòin | life-face-crossbow, |
| paiyūh-olchūa | man-jungle, jungle-man. | āñha-oal-hindel | bolt of c. contents-gun, cartridge. |
| kōi-henyūan | head-hill, hill-top. | moah-toah | nose-breast, teat. |

Explicator Phrases (Compound Adjectives).

| | | | |
|-----------|--------------------------|---------------|--------------------------------|
| karū-fáp | big-side, corpulent. | yô-huyöie-tai | wish-drunk-make, intoxicating. |
| yô-huyöie | wish-drunk, intemperate. | dôh-eñhngashe | can-recover, able. |

Predicator Phrases (Compound Verbs).

| | | | |
|-------------|--------------------------------|--------------|-------------------------|
| alde-shiang | just-now-sweet, be-come sweet. | ingühñe-nâng | inform-ear, send word. |
| | | wi-kaiyi-dâk | make-road-water, drain. |

The use of such phrases (compound words) as single words is proved by the following examples : —

I. Roots : *rū*, shade; *kōi*, head. Then

- (1) *ha—rū—ngare* go into the shade
pref. shade suff.
- (2) *ha—rū—kōi* take shelter
pref. shade head
- (3) *ha—rū—ya—kōi—re* shade the head
pref. shade suff. head suff.

In this case we have :

- (1) root + pref. + suff. (simple word).
- (2) root 1 + root 2 + pref. (compound word).
- (3) root 1 + pref. + suff. = first word (+) root 2 + suff. = second word, the whole being a compound word. The third case shows clearly that the whole compound is looked upon as one word grammatically constructed.

II. Roots : *tum*²⁸ (lost r.), tie; *lâh*, leg. Then

- (1) *tum—a—lâh* tied by the leg (simple word)
tie suff.+leg
- (2) *om—tum—lâh* tie the legs (compound word)
pref. tie + leg

III. Roots: *tum* (lost r.), tie; *kodl*, arm.

- (1) *tum—a—kodl* tied by the arms, pinioned (simple word)
tie suff. arm
- (2) *om—tum—kodl* tie by the arms, pinion (compound word)
pref. tie + arm

III.—ETYMOLOGY.

a.—Classification of Words Depends Primarily on Their Order in the Sentence.

It has been already noted that the Nicobarese relies mainly on the position and inherent qualities of his words, i. e., on their nature, for a complete expression of his meaning, and that there is nothing in the external form of the words which necessarily indicates their class, or

²⁸ This root is seen again in such words as *tom-bl*, *tom-mâl*, collect, gather; *ha-tõm*, assemble.

whether a word, as used in a sentence, belongs to its original class or has been transferred to another. That is, there is nothing to show that *lēap*, can, and *wt*, do, are predators (verbs), or that *oyūhta*, till, is a connector (preposition), or that *düe*, canoe, and *kōi*, head, are indicators (nouns), except their actual meaning.

Again, there is nothing to show when the indicator (noun) *chāa*, I, is transferred to explicator (adjective) "my," or when *lōa*, quick, explicator (adjective) is transferred to illustrator (adverb) "quickly," or when *leüt*, did, predictor (verb) is transferred to illustrator (adverb) "already," except their position in the sentence.

b.—Classification of Words Depends Secondarily on Form.

But, nevertheless, the Nicobarese have means of indicating the class to which a word has been transferred, or to which of two or more classes connected words in different classes belong, and of differentiating connected words belonging to the same class. They can thus make their speech clearer than would be possible, if they entirely trusted to the mere collocation of their words.

c.—Form Created by Radical Prefixes, Infixes, and Suffixes.

The Nicobarese manage to differentiate connected words by adding, in various complicated ways, affixes of all the three sorts,—prefixes, infixes, and suffixes,—to simple stems or roots. The affixes are, therefore, none of them functional, but are all radical, and the words consist of simple stems, or of compound stems (stems made up of a root or a simple stem plus radical affixes). The Nicobarese carry this principle through a great part, but not through all of their language, and have by its means built up a complicated but uncertain system of radical and derivative words, and have rendered their language a very difficult one to analyse and to speak, or to understand, correctly.

d.—Use of Radical Affixes: Agglutinated, Changed, and Inflected.

The radical affixes usually employed to indicate transfer of stems from one class to another, i.e., to create words of different classes connected with each other, those to which the affixes are added being necessarily "derivatives" of the others, are as follow. It will be seen, from what follows later, that they are added—

- (1) by mere agglutination, i.e., unchanged form :
- (2) by changed form :
- (3) by clipped form, i.e., by inflexion.

Table of Radical Affixes of Transfer.

(*Mr. Man gives many more.*)

Prefixes.

ka ha na ma men en hen op o la lan lok fuk

Infixes.

ma am an e

Suffixes.

a o yo yan la nga hat

e.—Use of the Radical Affixes of Transfer.

The following examples will exhibit the use of the radical affixes of transfer:—

Abbreviations used in the following tables :

| | | | |
|-----------|------------------------------|------------|-------------------------------|
| in. class | for nouns (indicators) | ill. class | for adverbs (illustrators) |
| e. class | for adjectives (explicators) | c. class | for prepositions (connectors) |
| p. class | for verbs (predicators) | | |

Radical Affixes of Transfer added by Agglutination.

Prefixes.

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|------------------------|--|
| | ha | | men |
| c. class | to p. class | in. class | to e. class |
| <i>yōl</i> (with) | <i>ha-yōl</i> (mix fluid) | <i>kōan</i> (child) | <i>men-kōm</i> (having many children) |
| | na | | la |
| in. class | to p. class | in. class | to e. class |
| <i>wū</i> (blood) | <i>na-wū</i> (bleed) | <i>ok</i> (back) | <i>la-ak</i> (behind, following) |
| | ma | | ka |
| e. class | to in. class | ill. class | to in. class |
| <i>huyōie</i> (drunk) | <i>ma-huyōie</i> (drunkard) | <i>yōl</i> (together) | <i>ku-yōl</i> (friend) |
| | en | | lan |
| p. class | to in. class | in. class | to p. class |
| <i>pōya</i> (sit) | <i>en-pōya</i> (seat) | <i>dākmat</i> (tear) | <i>lan-dākmat</i> (water, of the eyes) |
| | op | | lōk |
| p. class | to in. class | in. class | to p. class |
| <i>lōp</i> (cover the shoulders) | <i>op-lōp</i> (shawl) | <i>shamōa</i> (sprout) | <i>lōk-shamōa</i> (to sprout) |
| | o | <i>hōdng</i> (sweat) | <i>lōk-hōdng</i> (to sweat) |
| in. class | to p. class | | fuk |
| <i>fdang</i> (window) | <i>o-foud</i> (to open) | in. class | to p. class |
| | hen | <i>ddk</i> (water) | <i>fuk-ddk</i> (draw water) |
| p. class | to in. class | | |
| <i>tainya</i> (to plait) | <i>hen-tain</i> (basket) | | |
| <i>lain</i> (revolve) | <i>hen-lain</i> (wheel) | | |

Infixes.

| | | | | | |
|----------------------------------|--|--|----------------------------------|--|---|
| | ma. | | p. class | | to e. class |
| p. class | to in. class. | | <i>l-ēap</i> (can) | | <i>l-am-ēap</i> (expert) |
| <i>pa-hōa</i> (to fear) | <i>pa-ma-hōa</i> (coward) | | | | |
| <i>po-mōan</i> (to fight) | <i>pa-ma-mōan</i> (warrior) | | <i>k-ōan</i> (child) | | <i>k-am-ōan</i> (having children) |
| <i>pōin-nōp</i> (die) | <i>pa-ma-nōp</i> (corpse) | | <i>ch-ūaha</i> (property) | | <i>ch-am-woahōn</i> (rich) |
| e. class. | to in. class | | | | |
| <i>ka-rū</i> (large) | <i>ka-ma-rū</i> (adult) | | | | |
| in. class | to e. class. | | p. class | | an |
| <i>pu-yōl</i> (hair) | <i>pa-ma-yōl</i> (hairy) | | <i>t-dk</i> (to measure) | | to in. class |
| | am | | | | <i>t-an-dk-rām</i> (night-measurer, sand-glass) |
| p. class | to in. class | | <i>w-i-n̄l</i> (make-hut, build) | | <i>w-an-e-n̄l</i> (framework of hut-roof) |
| <i>d-āk</i> (come) | <i>d-am-āk</i> (guest) | | <i>ch-īō</i> (to whistle) | | <i>ch-an-e-ō</i> (a whistle) |
| <i>t-āk</i> (to measure) | <i>t-am-āka</i> (fathom) | | <i>ch-tal</i> (lift by a handle) | | <i>ch-an-ōla</i> (strap, handle) |
| <i>ch-nanga</i> (visit a jungle) | <i>ch-am-nanga</i> (a visitor of a jungle) | | | | |
| e. class | to in. class | | e. class | | to in. class |
| <i>k-oñng</i> (strong) | <i>k-am-oñng</i> (strong man) | | <i>sh-i-tashe</i> (old) | | <i>sh-an-i-tashe</i> (age) |

Suffixes.

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|--|--|--|
| | a | | nga |
| p. class <i>ngēang</i> (employ) | to e. class <i>ngēang-a</i> (employed) | p. class <i>dōh</i> (can) | to e. class <i>dōh-nga</i> (suitable) |
| p. class <i>top</i> (drink) | to in. class <i>top-a</i> (beverage) | in. class <i>kaiyi</i> (road) | to p. class <i>kaiyi-nga</i> (go away) |
| e. class <i>orēh</i> (first) | to p. class <i>orēh-a</i> (begin) | (ol) <i>chūa</i> (jungle) | <i>chūa-nga</i> (go into (visit) ²⁹ a jungle). |
| p. class <i>ori</i> (beat) | to e. class <i>ori-a</i> (beaten) | | |
| in. class <i>fāp</i> (side) | o to e. class <i>fāp-o</i> (fat) | in. class <i>oyāu</i> (cocoanut-tree) | yan to e. class <i>oyāu-yan</i> (lonely) |
| p. class <i>iteak</i> (sheep) | la to e. class <i>iteak-la</i> (sleepy) | e. class <i>paich</i> (small) | hat to in. class <i>paich-hat</i> (a little) |
| p. class <i>leāt</i> (finish) | to in. class <i>l-an-eāt-la</i> (final me- morial feast) | in. class <i>düe</i> (canoe) | yo to p. class <i>due-yo</i> (travel in a canoe) |

Radical Affixes of Transfer added in Changed Form.

Prefixes.

| | | | |
|-------------------------------|--|--|--|
| | change of ma to mo | | change of en to an |
| p. class <i>hēu</i> (see) | to e. class <i>mo-hēwu</i> (long- sighted) | p. class (<i>ol-</i>) <i>öla</i> (in)) | to in. class <i>b u r y</i> <i>an-üla</i> (grave) |
| | change of ha to hā | | change of en to in |
| in. class <i>wan</i> (net) | to p. class <i>hā-wan</i> (net fish) | p. class (<i>ol-</i>) <i>yōla</i> (speak) | to in. class <i>m-öla</i> (tale) |

Infixes.

| | | | |
|-------------------------------------|---|-------------------------------------|---|
| | change of am to om | | change of am to aīm |
| p. class <i>p-em</i> (drink) | to in. class <i>p-om-em</i> (drunkard) | p. class <i>t-op</i> (drink) | to in. class <i>t-aīm-op</i> (drunkard) |
| w-i (make) | <i>w-om-i</i> (maker) | | change of an to en |
| e. class <i>ch-ōngkōi</i> (tall) | to in. class <i>ch-om-ōngkōi</i> (tall man) | p. class <i>h-et</i> (to chisel) | to in. class <i>h-en-et</i> (a chisel) |
| in. class <i>sh-dyo</i> (sack) | to p. class <i>sh-om-yo</i> (fill a sack) | p. class <i>d-tan</i> (run) | change of an to in to in. class. <i>d-n-nónha</i> (winner in a foot race) |

Suffixes.

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|---|-------------------------------------|---|
| | change of a to wa | | change of a to ha |
| p. class <i>halau</i> (buy) | to in. class <i>halau-wa</i> (a purchaser) | p. class <i>dian</i> (run) | to in. class <i>dinnón-ha</i> (winner in a foot race) |
| | change of a to ya | | change of o to yo |
| in. class <i>miyai</i> (value) | to e. class <i>miyai-ya</i> (costly) | in. class <i>chatai</i> (weapon) | to e. class <i>chatai-yo</i> (armed) |
| | | in. class <i>due</i> (canoe) | to p. class <i>due-yo</i> (travel in a canoe). |

²⁹ We have here a very interesting set of words to exhibit word-building: (*ol-*)*chūa*, jungle; *chūa-nga*, visit a jungle; *ch-aw-üla-nga*, visitor of a jungle.

Radical Affixes of Transfer added by Inflection.

Prefixes.

| | | | |
|-------------------|-----------------|------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| ha inflected to h | | en-lūana (exorcise) | m-en-lūana (exorcist) |
| p. class | to in. class | itūa (visit) | m-itūa (visitor) |
| okngōk (cat) | h-okngōk (food) | e. class | to in. class |
| in. class | to p. class | orēh (first) | m-orēh (first person or living thing) |
| omkwōm (gift) | h-omkwōm (give) | omtōm (all, the whole) | m-omtōmā (flock, crowd) |
| ma inflected to m | | | |
| p. class | to in. class | | |

f. — Correlated Radical Affixes of Transfer.

The Nicobarese also indicate the classes, to which connected words derived from lost or obscure roots belong, by a system of correlated radical affixes of transfer.

Prefixes.

| lost or obscure root | p. class | to in. class |
|----------------------|---|------------------------|
| hēat | ha-hēat (to hook up) | hen-hēat (hooked pole) |
| het | hai-het (to strain) | hen-het (strainer) |
| đi | hu-yōie (drunk) | hen-yōiya (drunkard) |
| shin | ka-shin (to prop) | ken-shin (a prop) |
| tōk | ka-tōka (to dance) | ken-tōka (a dance) |
| shāng | ka-shāng (to fish in slack water) | kan-shāng (a weir) |
| kâk | tom-kâk (pierce) | ten-kâk (lance) |
| fūal | tom-fūalhata (tie a pair of cocoanuts) | ta-fūal (a pair) |
| hōn | kom-hōn (to trap fish) | ken-hōn (a trap) |

A good instance of the use and force of correlated radical affixes of transfer is the following : — Obscure or lost root, *tain*: then *tain-ya*, plaiting: *en-tain-ya*, plaited: *hen-taiñ*, basket: *ha-tain-ya-paiyāh*, crosswise.

Instructive examples of the effect of correlated affixes of transfer on the forms of connected words are the following, where a prefix has been added to the lost root of one of two connected words and an infix to the other. Thus :

| lost or obscure root | p. class (pref. used) | to in. class (inf. used) |
|----------------------|------------------------|--------------------------|
| dī | o-dī (beat with stick) | d-an-i (cudgel) |
| kūsh | i-kūsha (sing) | k-an-dishe (song) |

That the lost root in the latter case is really *kūsh* in the last case is shown by *momi-kdshu* (maker-song), a singer.

g. — Inflection of Affixes.

It is probable that there is more inflexion than at first appears in the existing forms of the radical prefixes.³⁰ Thus in the case of the correlated radical prefixes—

| | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| hen may be taken to be ha + en | tom may be taken to be ta + om (for an) |
| ka + en | pa |
| ta + en | pa + an |

h. — Duplication of Affixes.

The existence of such inflexion would make one suspect the common existence of duplicated radical affixes, and that this is the case the following instances go to show : —

(1) *en-lūana* (exorcise): *m-en-lūanu* (exorcist). Here the root is *lūan* and the prefix *men* is certainly an inflected form of *ma+en*, two separate prefixes.

(2) *kōan* (child): *k-am-an-ūana* (a generation). Here the root is *k-ōan*, and the infix *aman* is certainly *am+an*, two separate infixes.

(3) *h-en-tain* (basket): *m-en-tain-yr* (basketful). Here the root is *tain* and the prefixes *hen* and *men* are certainly inflected forms of *ha+en* and *ma+en*, respectively.

There is also a prefix of transfer, *kala*, which seems certainly to be made up of *ka+la*. Thus, *hōi* (far): *kala-hōyu* (sky).

³⁰ Hero seems to be a strong instance of the inflection to which affixes can be subjected: *wi*, make: *w-am-i*, maker, which also takes the form of *m-am-i* for (?) *m-[w]-am-i* (*ma + w + am + i*).

Duplication of suffixes is very common: e. g.,

Lapā-yān (well): *lapā-yāntō* (glad). *Di* (bulk): *di-ngareshē* (all absent from anything, entirely wanting in); here the suffix is double (*ngare + she*) or more probably³¹ treble (*ngā + re + she*).

The proof will be seen in the following examples: —

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>wi-hala</i> (to take <i>owi-la eh</i> (take it out) | <i>owi-hahat</i> (to screw <i>owi-ha eh</i> (screw it in) out) |
| <i>kaichuat-hala</i> (to dig <i>kaichuat-la eh</i> (dig it up)) | <i>tuak-haiñe</i> (to drag) <i>tuak-nē eh</i> (drag it out) |
| | <i>tapaih-haiñe</i> (to spit out) <i>tapaih-nē eh</i> (spit it out) |
| <i>lenkdh-hanga</i> (to bend) <i>lenkdh-nga eh</i> (bend it) | <i>ēp-hashe</i> (to transplant) <i>ēp-she eh</i> (transplant it) |

i. — Connectors of Intimate Relation as Prefixes.

There must of course be a strong tendency in the connectors of intimate relation (prepositions), *ta*, *en*, *pan*, *pen*, to become radical prefixes of transfer, and we accordingly find that in some cases they do so: e. g.,

Connectors of Intimate Relation as Radical Prefixes of Transfer.

| | ta |
|----------------------|--|
| p. class | to in. class |
| <i>kāpdkh</i> (die) | <i>ta-kāpdkh</i> (carcase) |
| | pen |
| e. class | to in. class |
| <i>teyēn</i> (white) | <i>pen-teyēn-oalmāt</i> (white of the eye) |
| <i>āl</i> (black) | <i>pen-āl-oalmāt</i> (pupil of the eye) |

j. — Nature of Nicobarese Predicators (Verbs).

There is also a use of the duplicated prefix *hen* as an affix of transfer with predicators (verbs), which is of grammatical interest, as showing that the Nicobarese do not separate in their minds predicators (verbs), when they merely assert a fact regarding a subject, from indicators (nouns). They look upon them both as indicating, the first the idea about a thing, and the second the thing itself; and instinctively put the words for both in the same class, indicators (nouns). That is, the Nicobarese look upon "intransitive verbs" as "nouns" and in order to transfer them to the class of real, i. e., "transitive verbs," they add sometimes, but (in obedience to their instinct in such matters) not always, an affix of transfer, the prefix *hen*. Thus:

| ENGLISH. | INTRANSITIVE FORM. | TRANSITIVE FORM. |
|----------|--------------------|----------------------|
| break | <i>tōkngā</i> | <i>hen-tōkngā</i> |
| smash | <i>dāhngā</i> | <i>hen-dāhngā</i> |
| sink | <i>pangshe</i> | <i>hen-panghashe</i> |

k. — Expression of "Active" and "Passive."

An important set of correlated suffixes of transfer in daily use are worth noting apart. They are used to transfer explicators (adjective) to predicators (verbs) and have, naturally though erroneously, been taken to indicate the "passive and active voice."

The common explicator (adjective) suffix of transfer is *a*: then very commonly

| stem | e. class | to p. class |
|-------------------------------|------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>harōk</i> (burn) | <i>harōk-a</i> (burnt) | <i>harōk-hata</i> (burn) |
| <i>haril</i> (shoot with gun) | <i>haril-a</i> (shot) | <i>haril-hata</i> (shoot) |

That this is the correct way to view this point in Nicobarese Grammar can be shown thus:

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| (1) <i>lāk hē harōk ten an</i> | <i>lāk hē ori ten an</i> |
| let wo burn to it | let we beat to it |
| (2) <i>lāk an harōka</i> | <i>lāk an ora</i> |
| let it burnt | let it beaten |
| (3) <i>harōk(hata)³² ta eh</i> | <i>ori(hata)³² ta eh</i> |
| burn o. i. r. it | beat c. i. r. it |

³¹ See below, q, "Groups of Words Bound an Idea," II.

³² *Hata* is omitted in the "imperative."

Here we have in (1) the mere stems *haròk*, burn; *ort*, beat. In (2) we have the predicate (be) unexpressed. In (3) we have the subject (thou, you) unexpressed. There is no instinct whatever of an "active" or "passive voice." Of the suffixes, *a* is merely a suffix of transfer indicating the class (é.) to which the stems have been transferred from their original class (p.); and *hata* is really a suffix of differentiation, giving a definite turn to the original sense of the stem.

1.—Use of Radical Affixes of Differentiation.

The Nicobarese differentiate connected words of the same class and derived from the same root (original meaning) by radical affixes, precisely as they indicate transfer of words from class to class. There is no difference in method or form in the affixes thus used. *E.g.*,

Radical Affixes of Differentiation for Connected Indicators (Nouns).

Prefixes.

| | | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|-------------------|----------------------|
| hen-tain (basket) | mahen-tainya (basketful) | en-kòiñā (a male) | men-kòiñā (a male of |
| wétare (goblet) | ta-wétare (gobletful) | | a given race) |
| yai (price) | mi-yai (value) | mòngko (cup) | mo-mòngkòa (cupful) |

Infixes.

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------------------|--------------|------------------------|
| sh-áyo (sack) | sh-am-ayòwa (sackful) | k-áhē (moon) | k-am-aheñwa (lunation) |
|---------------|-----------------------|--------------|------------------------|

Combined Prefix and Infix.

| | |
|-----------------|--------------------------|
| p-omlē (bottle) | ta-p-ah-òmlē (bottleful) |
|-----------------|--------------------------|

For Connected Explicators (Adjectives).

Suffixes.

| | | |
|----------------|--------------------------|------------------------|
| kéh (violent) | kéh-tó (ill-tempered) | kéh-ngayan (difficult) |
| lapā (good) | lapā-yan (well) | lapā-yantô (glad) |
| héang (one) | { héang-ashe (alike) | héang-ayan (equal) |
| | { héang-e (same) | héang-she (first) |
| karù (large) | karù-ngashe (extensive) | karù-she (abundant) |
| yôl (together) | { yôl-hashe (same kind) | yôl-shî (beside) |
| | { yôl-ten (accompanying) | |

m.—Working of Correlated Radical Affixes.

In the following instances one can see side by side the working of the correlated radical suffixes both of transfer and differentiation.³³

(1) Lost or obscure root; *tang* (?) arrive.

CLASS. WORD. SENSE.

| | | |
|----|-------------|---------------------------|
| e. | tang-ngashe | complete. |
| e. | tang-tashe | accurate. |
| p. | tang-hat | arrive eastwards. |
| p. | tang-ngato | approve. |
| p. | tang-ngayan | satisfy (hunger, thirst). |

(2) Lost or obscure root; *yâh* (?) attract.

CLASS. WORD. SENSE.

| | | |
|----|----------------|-------------------|
| e. | yâh-ngamat | pretty |
| e. | yâh-ngatô | happy |
| e. | yah-ngayan | kind |
| p. | yâh-ngashi | fond of (to be) |
| p. | ha-yâh-ngashi | love (family)(to) |
| p. | hen-yâh-ngashe | family love |

In the last two instances it will be noticed that correlated prefixes of differentiation have been called in to make the sense clear in the usual way.

n.—In the "Comparative Degrees."

In working out his "comparative degrees" the Nicobarese exhibits the uses of the radical affixes in most of the ways above explained. He adds the suffix *a* and then sometimes the infix *en* or the prefix *en* and *ong*, and sometimes he uses correlated prefixes. This addition he effects by agglutination, change of form, or inflexion.

³³ The mental process observable in these cases becomes quite clear from a reference to the Languages of the Torres Straits, as pointed out to me by Mr. Sydney Ray. Thus:

Palai (intransitive form *pali*) expresses the idea of separation, division into two parts, motion apart. Then *dan-pali* (*dan* = eye), to open eye, be awake.

gud-pali (*gud* = mouth), to open (flower, mouth).

poi-pali (*poi* = dust), to shake off.

galu-pali (*galu* = cold), to tremble.

gagai-palai (*gagai* = bow), to shoot.

iadai-palai (*iadai*, plural of *i'a*, word), to cause one to chatter.

kerket-palai (*kerket* = smarting sensation), to cause to smart.

The connection with the root idea in these cases is not always easy for a European to follow.

Table of the "Comparative Degrees."

(Suffix always a.)

Unchanged Form of Suffix.

Infix en.

| | | |
|--------------|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| changed form | ch- <i>òng</i> (high) | ch-in- <i>ònga</i> (higher) |
| inflected | <i>l-apā</i> (good) | <i>l-en-pāa</i> (better) |
| inflected | ch- <i>aling</i> (long) | ch-in- <i>linga</i> (longer) |
| inflected | <i>sh-lang</i> (sweet) | sh-inn- <i>ēanga</i> (sweeter) |
| inflected | <i>p-ōap</i> (poor) | <i>p-en-n-ōapa</i> (poorer) |
| inflected | <i>la-nGAN</i> (heavy) | <i>l-en-ngdñna</i> (heavier) |

Changed Form of Suffix.

| | | |
|-----------|-----------------------|-----------------------------|
| inflected | <i>f-uōi</i> (thick) | <i>f-enn-diyo</i> (thicker) |
| inflected | <i>pa-chau</i> (cold) | <i>p-en-chauwa</i> (colder) |

Unchanged Form of Suffix.

Prefixes en, ong.

| | | |
|--------------|-----------------------|------------------------------|
| inflected | <i>en-h</i> (near) | <i>enn-enha</i> (nearer) |
| agglutinated | <i>kodñg</i> (strong) | <i>ong-koñnga</i> (stronger) |

Changed Form of Suffix.

Correlated Prefixes.

| | |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>mi-tlñnto</i> (short) | <i>en-tlñnta</i> (shorter) |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|

The "superlative" does not come into the argument, as there is, strictly, no such "degree," the illustrator (adverb), *ka*, 'indeed,' following the "comparative" for the purpose. Thus:
chòng (high) *chinònga* (higher) *chinònga ka* (highest)

o. — In Expression of "Continuing Action."

So also in working out a plan for expressing "continuing action," the Nicobarese employs the same method. He adds a suffix *yande* to the suffix *a*, and then proceeds as in the former case.

Continuing Action.

(Suffix always a + yande.)

Infix en.

| | | |
|-----------|--|--------------------------------------|
| inflected | <i>t-op</i> (drink) | <i>t-enn-opayande</i> (c. drinking) |
| inflected | (<i>ok</i>)- <i>ng-ōk</i> (eat) | <i>ng-enn-ōkayande</i> (c. eating) |
| inflected | (<i>i</i>)- <i>k-dsha</i> (sing) | <i>k-enn-dishayande</i> (c. singing) |
| inflected | (<i>ong</i>)- <i>sh-òngha</i> (walk) | <i>sh-inn-ōngayande</i> (c. walking) |

Correlated Prefixes.

| | |
|------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>i-teak</i> (sleep) | <i>en-teakayande</i> (c. sleeping) |
| <i>ka-tōka</i> (dance) | <i>ken-tōkayande</i> (c. dancing) |
| <i>et-ēt</i> (write) | <i>en-ētayande</i> (c. writing) |
| <i>a-minh</i> (rain) | <i>en-minhayande</i> (c. raining) |

p. — In Expression of Naturally Connected Words.

So further in the case of expressing the depth of water, a matter of much consequence to a people constantly navigating canoes and boats along a coral-bound shore.

Water and canoes are measured by the arm-span, which is something over five feet, or roughly a fathom: *hēang tamōka*, one fathom. But for the more commonly used 2 to 10 fathoms there are expressions specially differentiated by means of the prefix or infix *en* and the suffix *o* (for *a*), attached on the principles noted in Appendix A in the case of the numerals.

Root.

| | | WORD. | SENSE. |
|---------|-------|---------------------|------------|
| āñ | two | <i>enn-āy-o</i> | 2 fathoms |
| l-ōe | three | <i>l-enn-ōiy-o</i> | 3 fathoms |
| f-oan | four | <i>h-enn-oan-no</i> | 4 fathoms |
| t-anai | five | <i>t-enn-ēy-o</i> | 5 fathoms |
| t-afual | six | <i>t-en-fūal-o</i> | 6 fathoms |
| issat | seven | <i>en-shát-o</i> | 7 fathoms |
| enfoan | eight | <i>enfōan-no</i> | 8 fathoms |
| sh-om | ten | <i>sh-inn-am-o</i> | 10 fathoms |

Sudden emphasis on these terms is very often necessary in narration, and further differentiation is effected by the attachment of the prefix *ma* or the infix *am*: e. g.,

| | | | |
|-----------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|
| m-enn-āy-o | only 2 fathoms | t-amen-fual-o | only 6 fathoms |
| l-amen-ōiy-o | only 3 fathoms | m-en-shat-o | only 7 fathoms |
| ma-h-enn-ōann-o | only 4 fathoms | m-enfoan-no | only 8 fathoms |
| t-amen-ey-o | only 5 fathoms | sh-aminn-am-o | only 10 fathoms. |

q.— In Expression of Groups of Words Round Ideas and Groups of Ideas Round Words.

The Nicobarese carry this plan of differentiating connected words of the same class by radical affixes very far, and manage by this means to create groups of words round one idea or set of ideas, or *vice versa*, groups of ideas round one word or set of words.

Groups of Words Round an Idea Differentiated by Radical Affixes.

**I. Idea : " Same Sort."
(Prefixes or Infixes Employed.)**

| | | | |
|----------|--------------|----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| enkōīna | a male | m-enkōīna | a male of the same race |
| enkāna | a female | m-enkāna | a female of the same race |
| kenyūm | child | k-am-enyūma | child of the same race |
| paiyūh | a Nicobarese | { p-en-yūh p-amen-yūh } | a Nicobarese of the same community. |
| nōt | pig | men-nōta | pig of the same village |
| ām | dog | enm-āma | dog of the same village |
| chōng | ship | ch-inm-ōnga | ship of the same rig |
| mattai | village | m-en-tai | village of the same people |
| kentōka | dance | k-am-entōka | dance of the same kind |
| kanōishe | song | ka-menn-ōishe | song of the same kind |
| kaling | foreigner | ka-ma-lenga | foreigner of the same country |

This last word is an instance where a foreign word has been subjected to Nicobarese grammatical forms; for Kling, Kaling is an Indian word for the foreigners settled in the Malay countries, from Kalinga, the Northern coasts of Madras.

Example.

| | | | | | | |
|--------|-------------------|----------|------------|-----|--------------------|----------|
| hēang | kamenndōishe | ta | kōisha | dn | kamentōka | ta |
| one | same kind-of-song | c. i. r. | sing | two | same kind-of-dance | c. i. r. |
| kaiōka | tai | chūa | wd̄hē | | | |
| dance | by | I | last-night | | | |

(one sort of song was sung and two dances of the same kind were danced by me last night).

II. Idea : " Complete Condition."

(Suffixes Employed.)

| ROOT OR STEM. | CONNECTED WORDS. | SENSE. |
|---------------------------|---|---|
| dī (bulk) | dī-re { dī-ngashe } dī-shire { dī-ngare } dī-ngareshē | all good (of a hut, goods) all bad (of a hut or goods) all absent (of a quality, substance) |
| hēang (one) | hēang-lare | all good (contents of anything) |
| dūat (length) | hēang-ngare | all bad (contents of anything) |
| hēang-leāt (one-finished) | dūat-shire | all (of a long object) |
| | hēang-leāt-tare | the whole set |

Example.

linnā dingareshe mattai nē hat b̄t took ta tain
 to-day all-absent village this not is toddy c. i. r. fermented
 (there is no fermented toddy at all in this village to-day).

Groups of Ideas Round a Word Differentiated by Radical Affixes.

Word : la, a portion ; then l-inn-a, less.

(Suffixes Employed.)

| | |
|--------------|--|
| linnā-ngashe | less than— |
| linnā-ngayan | |
| linnā-hala | less than (a height ; a distance northwards) : |
| linnā-hashe | less than (a shortness ; a distance westwards) |
| linnā-haiñe | less than (a nearness ; a distance to landing-place) |
| linnā-hanga | less than (a distance southwards) |
| linnā-hahat | less than (a distance eastwards) |

Examples.

| | | | | | |
|----|------------|----------|------|-----|-------|
| an | linnā-hala | chināngā | kōi | ten | ch'ia |
| he | less | taller | head | o | I |

(he is not so tall as I am).

| | | | | |
|----|--------------|-----------|-----|-----|
| an | linnā-ngayan | ongkodngā | ten | men |
| he | less | stronger | to | you |

(he is not so strong as you are).

r. — Differentiating Radical Suffixes of Direction.

When one comes to consider the suffixes of predators (verbs), we find the principle of differentiating and grouping connected words by radical affixes carried to an extraordinary extent. Thus, there are sets of suffixes attached to roots or stems indicating motion, which give them a special force, though, when attached, as they frequently are, to other roots or stems, they have no particular force traceable now, whatever might have been possible once.

Differentiating Radical Suffixes of Direction attached to Roots and Stems Indicating Motion.

| | | | | | |
|-------|-------|-----|-----|------|---|
| hala | lare | le | la | al | northwards, upwards, out of. |
| hangā | ngare | nge | nga | ang | southwards, from self. |
| hahat | hare | he | hat | ahat | eastwards, inwards. |
| hashe | shire | she | she | aich | westwards, downwards. |
| haiñe | ñire | ñe | ñe | aiñ | towards the landing place, outwards, away. |
| hata | tare | te | ta | at | towards any direction on same lead, towards self. |

As the differentiating radical suffixes of direction play an important part in Nicobarese speech, some examples are given here.

I. Root o, go.

| | | | |
|---------------------|-------|-------------------|-------|
| go north | o-le | go up (ascend) | o-le |
| go south | o-nge | | |
| go east | o-he | | |
| go west | o-she | go down (descend) | o-she |
| go to landing place | o-ñe | | |
| go anywhere | ote | | |

II. Root af, go.

| | |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| go north | af-al ²⁴ |
| go south | af-ang |
| go east | af-ahat |
| go west | af-aiach ²⁴ |
| go to landing place | af-aiñ |
| go anywhere | af-at |

III. Root tang, arrive.

| | |
|-------------------------|----------|
| arrive northwards | tang-la |
| arrive southwards | tang-nga |
| arrive eastwards | tang-hat |
| arrive westwards | tang-she |
| arrive at landing place | tang-ñe |
| arrive somewhere | tang-ta |

IV. Root oid, hither.

| | |
|-------------------------|-----------|
| hither northwards | oid-lare |
| hither southwards | oid-ngare |
| hither eastwards | oid-hare |
| hither westwards | oid-shire |
| hither to landing place | oid-ñeire |
| hither to anywhere | oid-tare |

V. Root shwa, bring back.

| | |
|-----------------------------|------------|
| bring back northwards | shwā-hala |
| bring back southwards | shwā-hanga |
| bring back eastwards | shwā-hahat |
| bring back westwards | shwā-hashe |
| bring back to landing place | shwā-haine |
| bring back anywhere | shwā-hata |

s. — Extreme Extension of the Use of the Radical Suffixes of Direction.

These suffixes explain a set of illustrators (adverbs) of direction, which are to be explained as consisting of a lost root *nga* + suffix of direction, e. g.,

Illustrators (Adverbs) of Direction.

| | | |
|---------|--------------|------------------------------|
| ngā-le | north, above | nga-iche } |
| nga-nge | south down | ngā-she } |
| ngā-hae | east | nga-ñe to landing place |

Example.

| | | | |
|--|------------------|---------|------|
| due | ngaiñe | chamang | oh? |
| canoe | at-landing-place | belong | who? |
| (whose is the canoe at the landing place?) | | | |

Transferring these illustrators (adverbs) to indicators (nouns) by means of using the connector of intimate relation, *ta*, as a prefix, we get —

The Four Quarters.

| | | | |
|-----------|-------|------------|-------|
| Ta-ngāle | North | Ta-ngange | South |
| Ta-ngāhae | East | Ta-ngaiche | West |

Transferred to yet another set of illustrators (adverbs), the sense of "ago" is conveyed to predicates (verbs) of motion in the same curious manner.

Illustrators (Adverbs) of Time Past.

| | |
|-------|--|
| hala | ago (of movement, occurrence in the North) |
| hangā | ago (of movement, occurrence in the South) |
| hat | ago (of movement, occurrence in the East) |
| hashe | ago (of movement, occurrence in the West) |
| hata | ago (of returning) |
| hashī | ago (of a death) |

Example.

| | | | | |
|---|------------------|-----------|----|-------|
| tanā | hangā | kamahehwa | an | kāpāh |
| five | ago-to-the South | month | he | die |
| (five months ago he died in the South). | | | | |

²⁴ *Ajal*, *afaiach*, like *atile*, *zeha*, mean also "go up," "go down" (a hill).

The interrogative prefix *ka*, *ka*, *kan*, has been already explained and when attached by inflection to *st*, *be*, together with an inflected suffix of direction, it produces a curious and common set of forms of question and answer.

Interrogatives of Direction.

Root *st*, *be*, plus prefix *ka* for the question, plus suffix *ta* of "any direction" inflected with suffix of definite direction.

| | | | |
|------------------|--------------------------------|------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>k-à-d-de?</i> | <i>be?</i> | <i>k-ò-hare?</i> | <i>be east?</i> |
| <i>k-ò-lde?</i> | <i>be north?</i> <i>be up-</i> | <i>k-ò-itde?</i> | <i>be west?</i> <i>be</i> |
| | <i>stairs?</i> <i>be</i> | | <i>downstairs?</i> |
| <i>k-ò-ngde?</i> | <i>be south?</i> <i>be</i> | <i>k-ò-iñde?</i> | <i>be at landing</i> |
| | <i>below?</i> | | <i>place?</i> |

Examples.

- Q. *Kòdde ta ane dák?* Any water there? A. *Kakat.* There is.
 Q. *Kòlde ta ane dák?* Any water up there? up north? A. *Kòlde.* It is up there; up north. A. *Ngilide.* It is up here.
 Q. *Kòngde ta ane dák?* Any water down there? down south? A. *Kóngde.* It is down there; down south. A. *Ngange.* It is down here; down south,
 Q. *Kòhare ta ane dák?* Any water to the east? A. *Kòhare.* There to the east. A. *Ngòhae.* Here to the east.
 Q. *Kòitde ta ane dák?* Any water downstairs? to the west? A. *Kòitde.* There to the west. A. *Ngashe* (and *ngache*). It is down here to the west.
 Q. *Kòinde ta ane dák?* Any water at the landing-place? A. *Kòinde.* It is there at the landing-place. A. *Ngaiñe.* Here at the landing-place.
 Q. *Kakat?* *enkòina* *enkána* *ta* *itá* A. *Kakat.*
 Q. *Be?* man woman c. i. r. here A. *Be.*
 (Q. Are there any men and women here? A. There are.)
 In the above instance *kakat* is a case of a double prefix *ka+ka+(ò) t.*

t. — Use of Terms for Parts of the Human Body as Supplementary Radical Affixes of Differentiation,

Words relating to some parts of the body are used as supplementary radical suffixes both of differentiation and transfer to indicate action or relation naturally referable to those parts. Thus :

-*tai* (hand) refers to what is done by the hand or by force : -*läh* (foot, leg), to movement by the foot : -*köi* (head), to anything relating to the head or top : -*nàng* (ear), to what can be heard : -*chakd* (face), to what is done before one or in the presence : -*ngé* (voice), to speech : -*mat* (surface, eye), and -*ok* (skin, back), to what is outside, on the surface. E. g.,

Supplementary Radical Suffixes Derived from the Parts of the Body.

| | | |
|----------------------|--|------------------|
| <i>tai</i> (hand) | <i>hodh</i> (starve)- <i>nga-tai</i> | (make to starve) |
| <i>läh</i> (foot) | <i>ò</i> (go)- <i>ngeläh</i> | (to) leave |
| <i>köi</i> (head) | <i>kenyúa</i> (a leaf ²⁵)- <i>nga-köi</i> (head) | (to) cover a pot |
| <i>nàng</i> (ear) | <i>huma</i> (bequest)- <i>nga-nang</i> | (advice) |
| <i>chakd</i> (face) | <i>oreh</i> (before)- <i>chakd</i> | (to) advance |
| <i>ngé</i> (voice) | <i>opyap</i> (overhear)- <i>nga-ngé</i> | (to) eavesdrop |
| <i>mat</i> (surface) | <i>ettat</i> (polish)- <i>mat</i> | (to) wipe |
| <i>mat</i> (eye) | <i>däte</i> (water)- <i>mat</i> | (to) wipe a tear |
| <i>ok</i> (skin) | <i>ettach</i> (husk)- <i>nga-ok</i> | (to) flay |

(To be continued.)

²⁵ Kenya is the name of the plant which produces the leaves used as the covering of pots for steaming *pandanus* paste.

NOTES ON ANCIENT ADMINISTRATIVE TERMS AND TITLES
IN THE PANJAB.

BY H. A. ROSE.

A STUDY of the old designations of officials and administrative divisions in the Panjab would undoubtedly throw much light on the ancient system of administration. Unfortunately, the material for such a study is very scanty and is almost confined to the names and titles given incidentally in the copper-plate inscriptions of the Chambā State, some of which were published in the *Archaeological Report* for 1903. A full collection is being published by the Panjab Government in a separate volume.

The Chambā inscriptions allude to the "eighteen elements of the State," but do not describe what these eighteen elements were. They would appear, indeed, to have been given a more or less conventional number,¹ according to a theoretical system borrowed from the more powerful State of Kashmir, rather than a description of the indigenous organization of the State in actual force at any period. Besides these so-called eighteen elements, the inscriptions enumerate a horde of officials, whose functions are not described and are not known at all clearly from other sources. From three of the inscriptions a list of no less than thirty-five official, or *quasi-official*, titles is obtainable, as the following table, which is taken from three Chambā copper-plates of 960—1080 A. D., shows:—

Official Titles in Chambā, circ. 1000 A. D.

| Plate II. Text. | Plate IV. Text. | Plate V. Text. |
|--|---|--|
| 1. rājā. | 1. rājū. | 1. rājā. |
| 2. rānā (rājānaka). | 2. rānā. | 2. rānā. |
| 3. rājput (rājaputra). ² | 3. rājāmātya. | 3. rājpūt. |
| 4. rājāmātya, royal minister. | 4. rājū-putra. | 4. rājāmātya, royal coun- cillor. |
| | 5. parikara-sanniyuktaka- viniyuktaka: ? 'those appointed and com- missioned (out of the Rājā's attendants).' . | 5. brāhmaṇa. |
| 5. rājasthāniya, chief justice. | | 6. kshatriya. |
| 6. pramātar, ? measurer. | | 7. vaisya. * |
| 7. sarobhangā. | | 8. sūdra. |
| 8. kumārāmātya, councillor of the prince. | | 9. rājasthāniya. |
| 9. uparika. ³ | | 10. parikara-samniyuktakavi- niyuktaka: cf. No. 5 of Plate IV. |
| 10. vishayapati.* | | |
| 11. nihelapati. | | |

¹ It can hardly be more than a coincidence that the well-known Eight-hand castes in Madras comprised eighteen sorts of people: cf. Nelson's *Scientific Study of Hindu Law*, pp. 98, 99, and 100. And, according to Dubois (*Hindu Manners, Customs, and Ceremonies*, 6th Ed., p. 15), the Sūdras of Madras comprise eighteen chief sub-castes.

² Rūwat (Guzarāti) and Rāut (Marāthi) = horse-soldier, trooper, also appear to be derived from rājaputra, *Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum*, III, p. 218.

³ A fiscal term, ? fr. Pr. *upari*, may denote a tax levied on cultivators who have no proprietary rights in the soil: *C. I. I.*, III, 97, etc.

* Lord or governor of a *vishaya*, probably a sub-division of a *dēśa* or *mandala*: *C. I. I.*, p. 327.

| | | | |
|-----|---|---|--|
| 12. | kshatrapa (kshetrapa). | | |
| 13. | prāntapāla, frontier guard. | | |
| 14. | hastyāsvostra balavyāvī(=pr)ataka, those occupied with elephants, horses, camels, and the forces. | | |
| 15. | dūta. ⁵ | 6. dūta. | 11. dūta. |
| 16. | gamāgamika. | 7. gamāgamika. | 12. gamāgamika. |
| 17. | abhitvaramāna. | 8. abhitvaramāna. | 13. bhītvara-sāmāna. |
| 18. | khasha. | 9. khāsa. | 14. khāsa. |
| 19. | knlika. | 10. kulika. | 15. kulika. |
| 20. | śaulkika. ⁶ | 11. śaulkika. | 16. śaulmika. |
| 21. | gaulmika, inspector of police, patrol. ⁷ | 12. gaumika. | 17. gaulmika. |
| 22. | khaṇḍaraksha. | 13. khadagaraksha. | 18. khaṇḍaraksha. |
| 23. | tara patika, ? bridge- guard. | 14. tarapati. | 19. tarapati. |
| 24. | chhatrachchhāyika, um- brella-bearer. | | |
| 25. | vetākila, betel-carrier. | | |
| 26. | virajayātrika, ? those belonging to the expedi- tionary force. | 15. virayātrika. | 20. virajayātrika. |
| 27. | chauroddharnika, thief- catcher. | 16. chauroddharanika. | 21. chauroddharanika. |
| 28. | dāṇḍika, jailor. ⁸ | 17. dāṇḍika. | 22. dāṇḍika. |
| 29. | dāṇḍavāsika, executioner, | 18. dāṇḍavāsika. | 23. dāṇḍavāsika, 'and all others that constitute the eighteen elements of the State.' |
| 30. | bhogpati. ⁹ | | |
| 31. | viniyuktaka. | | |
| 32. | bhāgika, land-owners. ¹⁰ | | |
| 33. | bhogika, land-holders. | | |
| 34. | chāṭa (modern chāṛ), head- men of a pargana. | | |
| 35. | and sevakādūn their sub- ordinates and servants. | | |
| | | 19. brāhmaṇa. | |
| | | 20. kshatriya. | |
| | | 21. viṭ (vaiśya). | |
| | | 22. chūdr (śūdra) and all others that constitute the eighteen (sic) ele- ments of the State, and etc. | |

In Plate III (*Arch. Report*, 1903, pp. 257-258) are mentioned a *mahāmāṭya*, or chief councillor, and a *mahākshapatalika* or chief record-keeper, who do not appear in Plates II, IV, or V.

⁵ Lit., 'a messenger': cf. Hindi *dūt*, especially in *dūt-bhūt*, evil spirits, and also the messengers of Yāma, the god of death. Is P. *dawā*, 'runner' or 'messenger,' a doublet? For an interesting note on *dūtaka* (occasionally *dūta*, e. g., in Nirmand copper-plate), cf. Fleet in C. I. I., II, p. 100⁸.

⁶ Cf. śūlka, 'superintendent of tolls or customs': C. I. I., III, p. 52⁹.

⁷ But cf. *gulma*, 'superintendent of woods and forests': C. I. I., III, p. 52.

⁸ Dāṇḍika; lit., a punisher: fr. *dāṇḍa*, fine or rod: C. I. I., III, p. 21⁹. *Dāṇḍ* is still used for 'fine.'

⁹ Bhoga, -ika, 'one who enjoys or possesses': C. I. I., III, 100; *bhoga*, 'enjoyment of shares,' p. 120¹.

¹⁰ Cf. the modern Balochi *bhāgyā*, and Pasjābī *bhāgwāñd*, 'wealthy.' *Bhāga* is a territorial term, C. I. I., III, p. 248.

Of all the designations given in the above list, only one, *ris.*, *chār*, the Sanskrit *chāra*, survives, or can, at least, with any certainty be said to survive in the modern language of the State. Within quite recent times an entirely different set of names was in use, but these are now nearly obsolete in their turn and are being displaced even in popular use by designations borrowed from the British Revenue Codes.

But before describing the more modern or the present official titles it will be best to note the names of the old administrative divisions. The ancient administrative division or unit was the *mandala*,¹¹ which corresponds to the more modern *pargānd*. Popular belief holds that Chambā was once divided into or comprised 84¹² of these *mandalas*, when it was larger than it is now. Even at annexation it contained 72 *pargānds*, since reduced by amalgamating the smaller *pargānds* to 52. Till recently the Bhaṭṭiyāt or Bhaṭṭi *wizdrat* contained 12 *pargānds* and was accordingly known as the Bārah Bhaṭṭiān. These *pargānds* are now grouped into 4 *wizdrats*, corresponding to the *tahsils* or sub-collectorates of a British District. The *wizdrats* are, as the word itself indicates, of modern origin. It is perhaps worth noting that each *pargānd* contained a State granary (*kothī*) in which the revenue of the State, collected in kind, was stored, and in which the officials of the *pargānd* lived.¹³ As a rule there is only one *kothī* in each *pargānd*, but when the *pargānd* consists of two or more amalgamated smaller *pargānds* it possesses two or more *kothīs*, each with its *pahṛī*, *hālī*, and *jhotidī*.

The officials at the capital were as follows : —

- (1) *Wazīr*, chief minister.
- (2) *Thare*¹⁴ *dā mahtā*, chief financial minister.
- (3) *Bakhshī*, who used to keep the military accounts and was responsible for the internal administration of the State forces.¹⁵
- (4) *Hāzri dā kotwāl*, magistrate in attendance on the Rājā.
- (5) *Thare dā kotwāl*, magistrate who performed miscellaneous duties and disposed of petty cases arising in the town.

For the outlying tracts special officials were appointed — *wāris* for Pāngī and Barmaur *wizdrats*, and elsewhere a *mahtā* and a *kotwāl* for each *pargānd*. The two latter posts were held by men appointed in the capital, whence they transacted all the business of their charges. Not unnaturally these posts became all more or less sinecures.

The chief local officials varied in different parts of the State : —

In Chamba and Chaurāh *wizdrats* each *pargānd* was in charge of a *chār*, collector, a *likhnehdī*, clerk, and a *bhatwāl*, personal assistant called collectively *kārdārs* or *kāmdārs*. Of these —

¹¹ *Mandal*, s. m. disk, circle, ring regiam, country, district, province (extending 20, or, according to some, 40 *yojanas* in every direction); the country over which the 12 princes Chakravarti are supposed to have reigned.

¹² 84 is almost certainly a conventional or auspicious number: cf. *Panjab Notes and Queries*, I, 1884, § 465, for the Tribal Collocations of 12 (Bārah), 22 (Baiyā), 52 (Bāwani), 84 (Chaurāh) and 85 (Pachāsi) villages.

¹³ The *kothīs* varied in size and appearance, but most of them were built on one plan: a square structure, 20 or 30 yards long on each side, consisting of rooms surrounding an open court-yard. The buildings are usually two or three storeys high and divided into rooms and *addāns* or halls. There is a principal entrance, and in the court-yard a staircase leading to the upper storeys. Some of the *kothīs* are very ancient, several dating back even to the times of the Rānās whose rule preceded the foundation of the State itself.

¹⁴ *Thara*, high place, where justice was administered. Hence *thareh*, an attendant at the *thara*, an official whose functions are not more fully defined.

¹⁵ For the functions of the *Bakhshī*, see *Irvine's Army of the Moghuls* in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1898, p. 539.

(i) The *chāṛ* was the collector of revenue and the officer responsible for the internal management of the *parganās*.¹⁶

(ii) The *likhnāhāṛ* kept the revenue accounts and did clerical work.

(iii) The *bhatwāl*¹⁷ carried out their orders and held under them a position analogous to that of the *kāṛī dā kothāṛ* at the capital.

The other officials, who were all subordinate to the three *kāṛdārs*, were—

(iv) The *jhotiār* (from *jhotī*, 'an errand'), a messenger, who was under the immediate orders of the *bhatwāl* and carried out the *kāṛdār*'s orders conveyed through him.

(v) *Ugrākhd*,¹⁸ a tax-gatherer, who collected the revenue demand under the *chāṛ*.

(vi) *Jinsālī* (from *jīn*, 'grain' or goods, and *ālī*, a store), a store-keeper, who was in charge of the storehouse of the *parganā*.

(vii) *Pahri* (from *pahr*, watch), a record-keeper, who was in charge of the State's *kothīs*, records, and revenue, both in cash and kind.

(viii) *Bhānd* (? from *bhāṇḍ*, a vessel), a cook, who cooked the *kāṛdārs*' food and cleaned their utensils.

(ix) *Hālī*, a care-taker, who kept the *kothī* clean and looked after the storage and safe-keeping of the grain.

(x) *Kdgadidrū* (from Persian *kāgħaz* and *drū*, bringing), a letter-carrier.

(xi) *Lakkāṛhāṛ*, who supplied wood to the *kothī*.

(xii) *Ghiārū*, who collected *ghi* from those who paid their revenue in that commodity.

(xiii) *Dudhiārū*, who similarly collected milk.

In certain *parganās* there used to be a high official called *odhrū*, who was superior to the *kāṛdārs*, and had under him more than one *parganā*.

In Barmaur, the ancient Brahmapura, all the above officials are known, but the *ugrākhd* is called *durbīl* or *drubiyāl*, and although the *jhotiār* is not unknown, his duties are performed by a *kothēru*. There is also an official called *ahṛū*,¹⁹ below the *durbīl*, who collects milk. Neither the *kothēru* nor the *ahṛū* are paid servants of the State, but they are allowed certain concessions and privileges in their *wizārat*. Formerly an official called *patwāṛ*²⁰ had woollen blankets made for the Rājū out of the wool collected as revenue.

In the Bhātīyat *wizārat* certain *parganās* had an *odhrū* over them and others an *amīn*. Both were superior in rank to the *kāṛdārs*. There the *bhatwāl* was called *thareth*;²¹ the *ghotiār*, *bhatwāl*; the *ugrākhd*, *muqaddam*; and the *ahṛū*, *jhiwar* or *jhar*.

The remote *wizārat* of Pāngī used to be under a *wasīr* (who visited it every third year to collect the revenue), and under him was a *pālsārā*. Otherwise Pāngī had all the officials except No. xiii, above described, the only difference being that the *ugrākhd* was called *muqaddam*.

(To be continued.)

¹⁶ Hence his charge (the *parganā*) was also called *chāṛī*. Some *parganās* also have a *chhota chāṛī*, whose jurisdiction is separate from that of the *bāṛī chāṛī*.

¹⁷ It is possible, but hardly probable, that the *bhatwāl* is the *bhāṭa* of the copper-plates.

¹⁸ *Ugrākhd*, cf. *Pājābī ugrākhd*, a collector or gatherer of tax. The *ugrākhd* and *jhotiār* were appointed as occasion required.

¹⁹ Possibly from *ahṛī*, beatings, the first milk of a cow after calving. If so, the word is practically synonymous with *dudhiārū*.

²⁰ Probably from *patti*, blanket.

²¹ See ante, p. 350, note 14.

BOOK-NOTICE.

ACHYUTARĀYĀBHŪDAYAM OF ŚEŚI RĀJĀNĀTHA, with a commentary by PANDIT R. V. KEISHNAMACHABHĀR (ABHINAVA BHĀTTA BĀNA). Part I, Cantos 1—6. Srirangam : Sri Vani Vilas Press, 1907. Pp. 156.

THIS beautifully printed little volume contains the first half of a hitherto unpublished Sanskrit poem, accompanied by an excellent commentary in the same language. The hero is king Achyuta (A. D. 1530—40) of the second dynasty of Vijayanagara. On this prince a recent historian has justly pronounced the verdict that he "was a craven, and under him the Hindu empire began to fall to pieces."¹ The author of the panegyrical poem of course represents him as a mighty, pious, and warlike sovereign.

As in the Vijayanagara inscriptions, Achyuta is stated to have belonged to the family of the Tuluva kings (*sarga* III, verse 38), and his pedigree is traced from the Moon to the mythical king Turvasu (I, vv. 5—18). To this race belonged Timma I. (v. 23), whose son Isvara (v. 25) had by Bukkamā two sons: Nṛisimha (v. 27) or Narasa (v. 28) and Timma II. The latter is not mentioned in the Vijayanagara inscriptions. The former took Mānavadurga from a Saka (*i. e.*, Musalmān) chief (v. 29). As in the Vijayanagara inscriptions, he is reported to have dammed up the Kāverī and to have stormed Seringapatam (v. 30). He slew the Marava king and took Madhurā (v. 31 f.). He captured Kōṇēṭirāja (v. 33). Vidyāpuri (*i. e.*, Vijayanagara) became his capital (v. 39). His three favourite queens were Tippāmbikā, Nāgamāmbā, and Obamāmbā (v. 52). Tippāmbikā's son was Viranṛisimharāya, Nāgāmbikā's Krishnarāya (v. 53), and Obamāmbā's Achyuta (II, v. 32), whose chief queen was Varadāmbikā (III, v. 15), the daughter of the Salaga king (v. 48).

Viranṛisimha (v. 17) was succeeded by his brother Krishnarāya, who took Kondaviti and other forts from the Gajapati king and set up a pillar of victory at Putupetṭanāpura (?) (v. 18 f.). Then Achyuta, the third of the brothers, was anointed at Śeshādri (*i. e.*, Tirupati, v. 23) and entered Vidyānagarī (v. 24). The kings of

Kaliṅga, Magadha, Śaka, and Sinhala are represented as his servants (v. 46). His son Chinaveṅkaṭādri, who is mentioned as Veṅkaṭarāya in the Vijayanagara inscriptions, was appointed heir-apparent (v. 51 f.).

Once Achyuta's minister addressed his master in private in the Veṅkaṭa-vilāsa maṇḍapa (IV, v. 46). He submitted that the Chōla king had fled to the Chēra kingdom, and that those two kings deserved to be "punished" (v. 56), while the Pāṇḍya king, who had lost his throne, would have to be "protected" (v. 57). Thereupon the king gives the necessary instructions to the commander of his army (v. 58) and starts himself on horseback (V, v. 1). His movements are a little erratic. He enters Chandragiri (v. 22), ascends Śeshādri (v. 23), worships the god (v. 30), and makes presents to him (vv. 39—42). From Veṅkaṭagiri he proceeds to Kālahasti (v. 44). At Viṣhṇukāshī (v. 47) he performs the *tulāpurusha* ceremony in the Varadarāja temple (v. 49). Then he travels *viā* Arunāchala (*i. e.*, Tiruvannāmalai, v. 51) to the Kāverī (v. 55) and visits Srirāngam (v. 57), whence he sends (his brother-in-law) the Salaga prince to bring the Chōla king from the Chēra country (v. 64).

The Salaga prince marches *viā* Madhurā to the Tāmraparṇī (VI, v. 1). He encamps there and sends his general in advance to meet the enemy (v. 13). Then follows the description of a battle, which is opened by the Tiruvaṭi king (*i. e.*, the king of Travancore, v. 14), and in which the army of the Kērala (v. 25) or Chēra (v. 28) is defeated. The latter delivers the Chōla king Tiruvaṭi into the hands of the Salaga prince (v. 29 f.),² who pardons him, but places the Pāṇḍya king over him (v. 31).

The published portion of the poem closes in the middle of the description of a journey which the king undertakes in order to worship the god at Anantaśayana (Trivandrum, v. 32).

E. HULTZSCH.

Halle, 26th October, 1907.

¹ Mr. R. Sewell's *Forgotten Empire*, p. 165.

² These two verses shew that the author treated "the Chōla king" and "the Travancore king" as synonyms. On Tiruvaṭi see Mr. Venkayya's *Annual Report on Epigraphy for 1899-1900*, p. 28.

**A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE
LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.**

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLER.

(Concluded from p. 347.)

IV. — PHONOLOGY.

a. — Mode of Speech.

THE Nicobarese speak in a deep monotonous tone and with open lips, thus adding to the many difficulties presented by their language by giving it an exceedingly indistinct sound. The pronunciation is guttural, nasal, drawled, and indeterminate: i. e., the Nicobarese speak slowly from the throat with the flat of the tongue and open lips. Final consonants are habitually slurred, especially labials, palatals, and gutturals. All this is the result of the habit of betel-chewing till the lips are parted, the teeth greatly encrusted and the gums distended, rendering the articulation of speech most imperfect.

b. — Man's and de Röepstorff's Enquiries.

Mr. Man was at very great pains to catch the real sound of Nicobarese words, and his reproduction of them on Mr. A. J. Ellis's scheme may be taken as being as near to complete accuracy as one is likely to arrive at. Mr. de Roepstorff, who was a Dane, used in 1876 his national system of representation, which has been followed by Danish and German writers, but is entirely unsuited to English readers. E. g., he writes *j* for *y*, and the usual Danish and German complications to represent *ch* and *j* and so on. He had also the common Danish and German difficulty in distinguishing surds from sonants, which has made his transliterations puzzling.

c. — Reduction of the Speech to Writing.

There are a great number of vowel sounds in the language, which have been reproduced by Messrs. Man and Ellis as follows:—

The Vowels in the Central Dialect.

| ENGLISH. | CENTRAL. | ENGLISH. | CENTRAL. |
|---------------------|----------------------------------|----------------|------------------------|
| a idea, out | yūāng (fruit) | ō pot | ōmtōm (all) |
| ā cur ³⁶ | dāk (come) | ō awful | lōe (cloth) |
| à casa (Ital.) | kūkātōk (a month ³⁷) | ō konig (Ger.) | hōi (far) |
| â father | kān (wife) | u influence | puā (catch) |
| ā fathom | leāt (finished) | ū pool | dūēn (monkey) |
| ē bed, chaotic | heng (sun) | u über (Ger.) | düē (canoe) |
| ē pair | lōāng (name) | ai bite | tanai (five) |
| i id | kaling (foreigner) | au house | kareau (spirit-scarer) |
| ī police | wī (make) | āu hāus (Ger.) | oāu (vomit) |
| ō indolent | koāl (arm) | ōi boil | enlōin (wallow) |
| ɔ pole | enlōin (axe) | | |

Almost every vowel is nasalised and the following are reproduced in the written form adopted:—

Nasalised Vowels in the Central Dialect.

| | | | |
|-----|---------------------|-----|-------------------|
| āñ | holiāñ (spinster) | ōñ | kenhōñā (pocket) |
| āñ | mīñā (spear) | ōñ | ōñh (fuel) |
| āñ | āñ (two) | ōñ | mōñbuyā (albumen) |
| āñ | koyāñwa (guava) | ūñ | chyūñ (sweet) |
| ēñ | ēñ (near) | aiñ | mifainya (cloud) |
| īñ | amīñ (rain) | auñ | āñhauñ (parboil) |
| īñ | fīñha (hoghead) | ōñ | ombōñ (tobacco) |
| ouñ | haroñb (stalk game) | | |

³⁶ With unrolled *r*.

³⁷ The name of the first month of the North-East monsoon.

The consonants do not require much explanation, but the following may be noticed : —

| ENGLISH. | CENTRAL. | ENGLISH. | CENTRAL. |
|------------------|-------------------|-----------------|------------------------------|
| ch chain | chakū (face) | īg springiest | iīgol (nearly ripe) |
| hw what (Scotch) | bēnhwāvā (ashes) | r rest (Eng. r) | karū (large) |
| ñ gagner (Fr.) | enkōiñā (man) | sh she | shohōng (south-west monsoon) |
| ng singer | yangtare (follow) | | |

d. — Stress.

Stress is on the root or stem, or on what is now thought by the Nicobarese to be so. These can to a great extent be separated out from the affixes by the stress. In stems of two syllables the stress is on the second syllable, unless the first contains a long vowel.

V. — COMPARISON OF DIALECTS.

a. — Man's Enquiries.

Mr. Man gives a long list of words in the dialects, and when considering the currency of the people in Appendix A the comparative terms for the numerals and words connected with enumeration have also been given. From these last the deduction seemed to be clear, that the six dialects of the Nicobarese are variants of the same fundamental tongue. The same inference seems inevitable from the following examination of a selection of words from Mr. Man's *Dictionary*.

b. — Comparison of Words.

Roots will be separated out of the words by placing the affixes in italics. This separation of the roots is of course, at present, tentative, as roots can only be ascertained beyond doubt by a comparison with other connected languages in the Far East. The present attempt will, however, be useful to students.

The following abbreviations will be used in the accompanying tables : —

C. N. = Car Nicobar

Ch. = Chowra

T. = Teressa

C. = Central

S. = Southern

S. P. = Shom Peñ

Words in the Six Dialects Compared.

| ENGLISH. | C. N. | Ch. | T. | C. | S. | S. P. |
|----------|-------------------------|---------|----------|----------------------|--------------------|---------|
| bachelor | lāmōk | maiūl | mai yōh | īlū | īlū | hakñōit |
| maiden | dōla | lāmōk | lāmōk | { holian- (wihla) | penhōn- (wihla) | |
| child | nīa | ken-yūm | ken-yūm | ken-yūm | pin-iēn | akau |
| female | kikāna | en kāna | en kēāna | en kāna | oyüha | apāu* |
| male | kikōñā | mohēo | maioh | en kōiñā | otāha | akōit |
| man | { tūā tārik tābiñ | { pāch | pai | paiyūh | pōh | akōit |

| | | | | | | |
|------------|-------|-----------|-------|---------|---------|---------|
| back (the) | ok | ok | ok | ok | tomñōit | hōkōa |
| blood | mām | pāheōit | vā | wā | wā | dōb |
| breast | tūh | tōh | tōh | toah | toāh | tōa |
| ear | nāng | nāng | anang | nāng | nāng | nāng |
| finger | kuntī | kenūshnōi | mōhti | kanetai | kewēt | noai-tī |
| hair | kūya | hēök | hēök | yōk | yōk | jō, jōa |
| hand | eltī | ñōi | mōhti | kanetai | kewēt | noai-tī |

| ENGLISH. | C. N. | Cn. | T. | C. | S. | S. P. |
|--------------------------|--------------------|----------|------------|------------|------------|----------------------|
| head | küi | kōi | kōi | kōi | kōi | kōi |
| leg | kaldrūn | lāah | lāh | lāh | lāh | lān |
| nose | elmenh | mōinh | mōinh | noainh | moainh | maohūn |
| stomach | ellōan | wiang | wiang | wiang | wiang | kāu, kānal |
| bird | chechōn | shichūa | shichūa | shichūa | shichūa | sichūa |
| canee | âp | düe | rōe | düe | henhōat | dōai, hōa |
| cocoanut-tree | taôka | owēau | ovēau | oyāu | gāu | kalēal |
| dog | am | òm | òm | âm | âm | kab |
| fire | tōmoya | palō | heōe | heōe | hentōnha | yōp |
| fruit | rong | eang | äng | yūang | oag | |
| hut | pōtī | ñi | ñi | ñi | ēn, ñi | { ñi-yāng ñi-ngām |
| meat | alāhah | eñha | eñho | ññha | eñha | eñha |
| moon | chi-ngeät | manēana | ka-hai | kā-he | kā-he | haŵōp |
| name | mīnaiñā | lēang | lēang | lēang | lē | lēd |
| North | lđöla | lāöl | lđō | tangāle | luôl | |
| north-wind ³⁸ | kofat-kapā | föh-kapä | hāñsh-kapā | hāñsh-kapā | hāñsh-kapā | |
| paddle | paiyūah | kâhēal | kâhēa | pōwah | pâñah | kukal |
| pig | hāun | nōt | nōt | nōt | pakōit | mēn |
| pig (wild) | hāun-chōn | mīlāh | oū-ha | sharuđl | chūum | nōng |
| place | chiuk | chuk | chuk | chuk | chū | lōichau |
| village | púnōm | pánam | mattai | mattai | pattai | |
| sea | mai | shamarāu | enliang | kamalē | ô | heða |
| seed | kōlal | enshüng | enshüng | opēp | opēp | kēap |
| storm | rashat | fēh | kurâsha | kurâsha | oriasha | |
| tabu | tîkōya | käl | yeōich | chij | yîi | yüid |
| to-morrow | hurōch | tâha-kōi | horōich | hakī | hakī | yâbō |
| year | sōmyühu | samâiha | samennēoh | shomenyüh | shâü | añhöi |
| yes | hañ, hòn | añ | añ | añ | hañ | |
| all | rōkhare | chiöt | chiöt | òmtōm | hē | kāapōi |
| bad ³⁹ | at-läk | hat-lu | hat-lapä | hat-lapä | ngâ-kö | wu-ðuhu |
| good | läk | lu | lapä | lapä | kō | åukö |
| not | { ar, at dran } | hat | hat | hat | ngâ | wu |
| hear | haug | hēang | heäng | yāng | hüng | hāng |
| see | mâk | harra | ha | harra | haka | tüa |
| say | rō | kânyüa | ennēola | olyöla | háhal | tēit |
| steal | olâga | malânga | kalâhangä | kalâhangä | palait | |
| he | ngôa | än | än | an, na | an | nhô |
| I | { chyüa chian } | chiä | chiä | chuä | echiahañ | chiäu |

³⁸ The first of the conjoined words signifies "wind."³⁹ The first syllable of the word means "not"; "bad" = "not good."

| ENGLISH. | C. N. | Ch. | T. | C. | S. | S. P. |
|----------|----------|----------|---------|-----|-----|----------|
| we-two | hōl-chyū | chia-hān | haih-hā | heū | hān | ā-mō |
| we | iħā | ħē | ħē | ħē | ħē | fūħōe-mō |
| you-two | nāa | inā | inā | inā | ñāe | |
| you | yīa | ħē | ħē | ħē | ħē | |

c. — Comparison of Roots.

We can now compare the above words by roots, so far as these are at present apparent, which will sufficiently show the unity of origin of all the dialects, and should help to fix the identity of the general Nicobarese Language with that of the tongue of some definite group of speakers in the Far East.

Roots in the Six Dialects Compared.

| ENGLISH. | C. N. | Ch. | T. | C. | S. | S. P. |
|---------------|----------|--------|---------|---------|---------|---------------------|
| bachelor | mōk | ħl | yēħ | lū | lū | kā |
| maiden | dē | mōk | mōk | ħo | ħōn | |
| child | ī | keu-yū | ken-yū | ken-yū | piñ-i | ak |
| female | kān | kān | kēān | kān | yū | ap |
| male | kōñ | ħē | o | kōñ | tā | ak |
| man | tā | pā | pai | pai | pō | ak |
| back (the) | ok | ok | ok | ok | nō | kō |
| blood | mām | pāħ | vā | wā | wā | dōb |
| breast | tāħ | tōħ | tōħ | toħah | toħah | tō |
| ear | nāng | nāng | nāng | nāng | nāng | nāng |
| finger | tī | nōi | tī | tai | wēt | noai-tī |
| hair | kü | ħēðk | ħēðk | ōk | ōk | jū, jo |
| hand | tī | nōi | tī | tai | wet | noai-tī |
| head | kūi | kōi | kōi | kōi | kōi | kōi |
| leg | kal | läah | läh | läh | läh | läu |
| nose | meiħ | mōñħ | mōñħ | moaħħ | moaħħ | ħūħ |
| stomach | lōan | wiāng | wiāng | wiāng | wiāng | kāu, kā |
| bird | ħeħčō | shichū | shichū | shichū | shichū | sichū |
| canoe | āp | dū | rō | dū | ħō | dō, hō |
| cocoanut-tree | ō | wēlu | vēlu | yān | gān | lē |
| dog | am | ħōm | ħōm | ħām | ħām | kab |
| fire | tō | pō | ħeō | ħeō | tōn | yō |
| fruit | rong | eang | äng | yūang | eag | |
| hut | tī | ñī | ñī | ñī | en, ñi | { ñī-yang ñīngām |
| meat | lā | en | en | āñ | en | en |
| moon | chi-ngeā | nēa | ka-hai | kā-hē | kā-hē | ha |
| name | naiñ | lē | lē | lē | lē | lē |
| North | ō | ō | ō | ngā | ō | |
| N.-wind | fat-pā | fāħ-pā | ħāñħ-pā | ħāñħ-pā | ħāñħ-pā | |
| paddle | paiyū | kāħē | kāħē | pō | pāū | kāk |
| pig | ħāun | nōt | nōt | nōt | pak | mēn |
| pig (wild) | ħāun-chō | lī | eū | shu | ħū | nōng |
| place | ħiū | ħbu | ħbu | ħbu | ħū | ħau |
| village | pān | pān | mat | mat | pat | |
| sea | mai | ħāu | ħi | ħē | ħō | ħō |
| seed | kōl | ħūng | ħūng | ēp | ēp | ēap |
| storm | rash | fēħ | rāħ | rāħ | riash | |
| tabu | kō | kā | ye | chi | yī | yū |

| ENGLISH. | C. N. | CH. | T. | C. | S. | S. P. |
|-----------|--------------------|---------|----------|----------|--------|--------|
| to-morrow | rēch | tāh-kōi | rōich | kī | kī | yāb |
| year | syūh | saih | sēoh | shyūh | shāū | hō |
| yes | hañ, hōñ | suñ | suñ | suñ | hañ | |
| all | rōk | chiō | chiō | tōm | hō | pōi |
| bad | st-läk | bat-lu | hat-lapā | hat-lapā | ngā-kö | wu-hu |
| good | läk | lu | lapā | lapā | kö | kö |
| not | { ar, at } dran | hat | hat | hat | ngā | wu |
| hear | hang | hēang | heäng | yāng | hāng | hāng |
| see | māk | har | ha | har | ha | tā |
| say | rō | yu | eo | yo | hāh | tō |
| steal | lā | lā | lō | lō | la | |
| he | ngō | än | än | an, na | an | nhō |
| I | chyū, chi | chi | chi | chu | chī | chi |
| we-two | hōl-chyū | chi-hāñ | haiñ-hā | heiñ | hāñ | ā-mō |
| we | ih | hē | he | hē | hē | hoe-mō |
| you-two | nā | nā | nā | nā | ñā | |
| you | yī | hē | he | fē | hō | |

VI. — COMPARATIVE PHILOLOGY.

a. — Comparison with the Indo-Chinese Languages.

I am able to compare some of the Nicobarese roots with those of corresponding sense in the Indo-Chinese Languages, civilised and uncivilised, — of which Mon (Peguan) and Khmer (Cambodian) form the civilised group, — and in the aboriginal dialects of the Malay Peninsula as contained in Mr. Otto Blagden's paper on the *Early Indo-Chinese Influence in the Malay Peninsula*.

b. — Elements of Uncertainty in the Comparison.

In making the comparison, the elements of uncertainty are these. In Nicobarese a root is nowadays surrounded and obscured by a long growth of affixes (prefixes, infixes, and suffixes) attached by agglutination, phonic change of form, inflexion and duplication, the effect of the affixes being often to induce phonic change in the root itself. So patience and a knowledge of the affixes and their effect is necessary to separate the root correctly from its surroundings. In the Far Eastern words treated by Mr. Blagden there is the uncertain element of misapprehension in the original reporters. However, Mr. Blagden put his words together with great care and personal knowledge, and my specimens are based on the exceedingly accurate reporting of Mr. Man : so that results may be looked on to be as accurate as is possible in the present stage of the enquiry.

I.

Table of Comparative Roots and Words Relating to the Human Sexes.

| ENGLISH. | NICOBARESE. | MALAYAN ABORIGINES. | INDO-CHINESE. |
|----------|---------------------------------|---------------------|-----------------|
| father | tū (man), otā (male) | ita | ta (grandf.) |
| | pā, pō, pai, ap (woman) | | |
| | ak (man), ku, ika (man) | iku, ikun | kunh, kuñ, konh |
| | kāñ (woman), kōñ, kōñ (male) | | |
| | dōin | | |
| | chia | | |
| child | kōan, kūan, köat | k'non, kenod | kon |
| | ken-yū (yu, male and female) | | |
| son | kōñ, kāñ (daughter) | kon | ken |

The mixing of the sexes in the roots of the terms for describing human beings is common to all languages (*e. g.*, the modern English, "girl") and Mr. Man has supplied me with a valuable table of words denoting generically tribal and family connections and showing how they are differentiated sexually.

| ENGLISH. | C. N. | CH. | T. | C. | S. | S. P. |
|---------------------|---------------|-------------------------------|-----------------|-----------------|---------------------|-------|
| a Nicobarese parent | tārik yang | pāch yang | pai yia | paiyūh chia | pōh | |
| child | { nia kuan | ken-yūm ⁴⁰ kōan | ken-yūm kōan | ken-yūm kōan | pin-iēh } kōan } | kōit |

To these⁴¹, in order to differentiate the male and female of each kind must be added, the appropriate words for the sexes as given above in the Table of Roots in the Six Dialects Compared.

II.

Table of Comparative Roots and Words. General Terms.

| ENGLISH. | NICOBARESE. | MALAYAN ABORIGINES. | INDO-CHINESE. |
|--------------------|----------------------------|--|----------------------------------|
| back (the) | ok, kō (nō) | kiah, ki-ah | cha' |
| breasts | tō | | da |
| | tāh, tōh, toah | tuh | tah |
| ear | nāng | | na (Burmese) |
| eye | māt, mat | mat, mot | mat, mot |
| | mēāt, mēt | | |
| | main | | |
| foot | | jaung, cnung, chan | jung, jung, jong |
| | | | gióng |
| | | | chang, chong, |
| | | | cheun |
| | | | cho'n |
| | | | 'sang, sinh |
| | | | young |
| | | chau | |
| hair | lāh, drān hēök, yōk | so', sak, sok, sogk, suk | sak, sok, souk, shok tiok' |
| | | | |
| hand | kü, jü tī, tai | t'hi, the, tu tung, tong, tein (both ⁴² = hand and finger) nōi (h. and f.) | ti, tay, toa, day |
| | | ting (hand and finger) | |
| head | kōi | kōi, koi, koe | tuwi, toui |
| | küi | kui, kuya, kay | |
| mouth | fāng | pang, ban hain, hein | paing |
| | foû, wû | | |
| nose ⁴³ | mōnh, mein, moaîh mahūn | moh, muh, mah | mieng muh, mouh |
| | | mo, mu | mo, mui, mus |

⁴⁰ This word seems to combine in itself the roots *ken*, male, *yu*, female.

⁴¹ Except to nia, ken-yūm, and pin-iēh.

⁴² Both it and tai denote the hand and the finger.

⁴³ In Nicobarese, however, this word is, I think, *ah*, breath, soul, life, plus prefix, *ma*, *mo*.

| ENGLISH. | NICOBARESE. | * MALAYAN ABORIGINES. | INDO-CHINESE. |
|----------|---|--|--|
| tongue | letâk, litâk mâl * | letik, litig, letig lontak, lentak, rentak | lataik n'tak andat |
| bird | chechô, sichû, shichû | chim, chem, chep | chim, chiem, kiem, kachem |
| egg | pén kûtéab | k'poh, kepoh | pong |
| | hâ, huyâ | | |
| fish | kâa, kalô | ka, ka', kah | ka |
| mosquito | misôka, mihôya pishûinha, mōanh obñat | keinus | mus |
| | | | |
| wood | chiô, chôn höñö, höp, hôap (jungle) | chue, chuk (tree) jehu | chhu |
| | oñi, wî peh (jungle) | | |
| stone | mang, mwâma | t'mu, g'mu | t'ma, th'ma, t'mo taman, tamao |
| | | | |
| hut | küb, hong, patu pâtî | deh, derk, dug | tong, doung, dong |
| | | | |
| sun | ngjâ | tunkat | t'ngoa, th'ngay |
| | hëg, heng | | |
| | mû, wû | | |
| moon | kâhô, kahai chi-ngaä | chi, kachik, kichek, kachil, guchah, gechai, geche, giche, biche | khe, kato kachai, mechiai kaosai |
| | | | |
| | ma-nëana | | |
| | hawô | | |
| water | dâk, râk dûi (river), pûi | dak deu, daü, diau do, d'hu | daik, dak, tak, tuk, trak doi do |
| | | teu, bi-teu, ba-teau bi-teu (river) | |
| | | | |
| | tâhë (river) | | |
| | | | |
| rain | mak amîih kômrâ yàu, kâp | gema, kumeh gumar | koma, ma |
| | | | |
| male | enkdiñ, ikôñ enkân (female) | ongkon | angyuang |
| | | | |
| go | chûh, chau, shô chish (come) do, ëwa | cho' chap, chip, chiop, chiup chohok, jok | cho cheo, chea jib (come) |

| ENGLISH. | NICOBARESE. | MALAYAN ABORIGINES. | INDO-CHINESE. |
|----------|-------------------|--|----------------------------|
| eat | shâ | chi, cha, cha', chioh chacha, inchi, inchih nacha, nachi | cha, chha, si |
| | kâ, kô | | |
| | ñâ, ngâ, ngô | | |
| | pûah, hâm | | |
| sleep | teak, tiak | teik, tiok tag, taig jetek, jettik, ietek letik | theak, tep dek takla |
| | ngâ, ngoi | | |
| | harrôh | | |
| stand | shòk, shjâk, kôag | jög | chho |
| | chôl, ô | | |
| cry | chîm, chîam | j'm | jom |
| | puin, hêa | | |

c. — Nicobarese Radically an Indo-Chinese Language.

Now, the Nicobarese have been on the same ground for at least 2000 years, and they have a tradition of migration from the Pegu-Tenasserim Coast. They have been quite isolated from the coast people, except for trade, for all that period. Their language has been affected by outside influences almost entirely only in trade directions, and then not to a great degree. It has been subjected to internal change to a certain degree by the effects of tabu. Yet we find roots in the language, of the kind that remain unchanged in all speech, to be apparently beyond question identical with those that have remained unchanged in the dialects of the wild tribes of the Malay Peninsula; these very roots owe their existence among the wild tribes to the effect on them of the influence of the Indo-Chinese Languages, civilised and uncivilised.

Considering, then, the long isolation of the Nicobarese, it is a fair inference that these islanders probably preserve a form of the general Indo-Chinese speech that is truer to its original forms than that of any existing people on the Continent. We may, therefore, find in the Nicobarese speech the real foundation on which to build up the philology of the whole Indo-Chinese Group of Languages. In this view the Nicobarese dialects are of great scientific value and well worth a thorough investigation.

APPENDIX A.

Nicobarese Reckoning.

a. — System.

Like most half-civilised people the Nicobarese have evolved an elaborate and clumsy method of enumeration, in their case [as in that of the Kafirs of Kafiristan whose *hazar* (1,000) = 20×20 or 400] based on tallying by the score. And in order to project oneself into their minds and to grasp numbers as they present themselves to the Nicobarese, one has to set aside preconceived ideas on the subject dependent on the European decimal notation. The old English tally by the dozen and the gross (which still survives commercially mixed up in the higher figures with the general decimal system) for small articles made and sold in very large quantities, forms an almost exact parallel.

The Nicobarese have not much use for large numbers, except for their currency and export article of commerce, the cocoanut, and hence they have, except the Shom Peh, evolved two concurrent systems of enumeration, viz., one for ordinary objects, and one for cocoanuts.

In applying terms for numbers to objects and things they use special numeral co-efficients, as do all the Far Eastern races, the explanation of which will be found, *ante*, II (Grammar), o (Numeral co-efficients).

b.—The Numerals.

For ordinary objects the Nicobarese enumerate by a curiously isolated set of terms up to half a score (ten) by separate words — thus in all the dialects:—

Comparative Table of Numerals.

| CAR NICOBAR. | CHOWRA. | TERESSA AND BOMPORA. | CENTRAL GROUP. | SOUTHERN GROUP. | SHOM PEI. |
|--|---------|-------------------------|---------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| 1. kahōk (<i>heng</i> ⁴⁴) | hēang | hēang | hēang | heg | <i>heng</i> |
| 2. neüt | āñ | āñ | āñ | āñ | āñ |
| 3. lūo | lūe | lūe | lōe, lūo | lūe | luge |
| 4. fān | fōñ | fōñ | fōñ | fōat | fnat |
| 5. tani | tani | tani | tanai | tani | tain ⁴⁵ |
| 6. tafūal | tafūal | tafūa | tafūal | takōal | lagāu |
| 7. sāt | ishāt | isseät | issāt | ishāt | aiñ |
| 8. häo-hare | enfān | enfōñ | enfōñ ⁴⁶ | enfōan | towe |
| 9. maichūa-tare | kalafān | rōe-hata | hēang-hata | hāch-hata | lungi |
| 10. sam | shōm | shōm | shōm | shab | teva |

After the half score and up to nineteen the enumeration is ten — one and so on for all the dialects, except Car Nicobar where they count one — ten and so on, using then *sian* for *sam*. Among the Shom Pei, the inland tribe, who have no export commerce, there are no such special systems of enumeration as the other people have, but in addition to direct reckoning they count by pairs, a point of some interest as will be seen hereafter. Thus *āñ*, two, becomes *ta-āñ*, a pair. Then 2 = *heng ta-āñ*, one pair; 3 = *heng ta-āñ heng*, one pair one; 4 = *āñ ta-āñ*, two pair, and so on. For numerals beyond ten the Shom Pei have an expression for half-a-pair *mahdūkōd*, which again will be found later on to explain a point in the system of the other tribes, and count thus up to 19; *heng mahdūkōd teya*, one half-pair (and) ten = 11, and so on.

When approaching the first or any score, all the dialects use a plan, in common with many other people, of counting "more reach a score." E.g., in the Central dialect *lōe tare tangla hēang momchiamā*, 3 more reach one score = 17: *āñ tare tangla fōan momchiamā*, 2 more reach four score = 78. *

A score in all the dialects is named as follows:—

| CAR NICOBAR. | CHOWRA. | TERESSA AND BOMPORA. | CENTRAL GROUP. | SOUTHERN GROUP. | SHOM PEI. |
|-----------------------|---------|-------------------------|-------------------|--------------------|-----------|
| micħāmb ⁴⁷ | noñg | momchiamā | momchiamā | pomchiamā } | inai |
| anai ⁴⁸ | tom | tom | inai | inai | |

And after the score the Central and Southern Groups have a term for half-a-score (*dōktai*), just as the Shom Pei have, as we have seen, one for half-a-pair. Thus in these two dialects 30 is respectively *hēang momchiamā dōktai* and *heg-pomchiamā-dōktai* one score (and) half-a-score.

Between the scores the numerals otherwise run as above explained — "one score one" and so on.

⁴⁴ For cocoanuts and money.

⁴⁵ *āñ*, *tai*, hand: then with infix *an*, *t-an-āñ*, *t-an-ai* five; and with suffix *ñ*, *tai-ñ*, five.

⁴⁶ *āñ*, two; *fōan*, *fōñ*, four: then *en-fōan*, *en-fōñ*, eight.

⁴⁷ Of general objects.

⁴⁸ Of cocoanuts and money.

The large figures 100 and so on are merely 5, 10, 15, 19 scores up to 400, which is a score-of-scores in all the dialects, except Shom Pei which says *heng-tō*, i.e., one *tō*, or score-of-scores, another point of importance in reckoning, as will be presently seen. For expressing score-of-scores the other dialects use the alternative term for the first score, also a point of interest later on, e.g., in Central dialect *hēang inai momchiama*, one score (of) scores.

The numeral we call 500 all the Nicobarese dialects call "one score (of scores and) five scores," except Shom Pei which says "one-*tō* (score of scores) five (scores)." So 600 is in the Central and Southern dialects "one score (and a) half (score of) scores": in Shom Pei it is "one *tō* (and) ten score": in Teressa it is "a score (and) ten (of) scores": in Chowra and Car Nicobar it is "a score (and) five pairs (of) scores." So also 700 in the Central and Southern dialects is "one score (and) half (score and) five (of) scores": in all the rest it is one score (and) fifteen scores." Beyond 600 the Shom Pei and beyond 700 the other dialects, except Car Nicobar, do not ordinarily reckon. For 1,000 the Car Nicobarese say "two score (and) five pairs (of) scores": for 2,000 they say "five score scores." Beyond 2,000 they do not ordinarily have to reckon.

c. — Reckoning by Tally.

We are now in a position to reckon according to the Nicobarese fashion, supposing ourselves to tally as we go along.

Tally by the Score (1 to 20).

(All dialects) one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten.

(All dialects but Shom Pei and Car Nicobar) ten-one, ten-two, ten-three, ten-four, ten-five, ten-six, ten-seven, ten-eight, ten-nine, or, sometimes, for 17, three-more-one-score, for 18, two-more-one-score, for 19, one-more-one-score. Tally.

(All dialects but Central and Southern) (20 to 40) score-one, score-two one-more-two-score, two score. Tally.

Tally by Score of Scores (20 to 400).

(All dialects but Shom Pei) one-score, two-score, three-score one-more-one-score (of) scores, one-score (of) scores. Tally.

Further Tally by Score of Scores (500-700-2,000).

All dialects except Shom Pei by varying expressions, meaning, one-score (and) five (of) scores, one-score (and) ten (of) scores, one-score and fifteen (of) scores two score (and) five (of) scores five score scores.

The Shom Pei stop tallying altogether at 600: and the others, the Car Nicobarese excepted, at 700, and the Car Nicobarese themselves at 2,000, except for cocoanuts, for which there is a separate system.

Tally is usually kept by nicks with the thumb-nail on strips of cane or bamboo, and in Car Nicobar by notches cut in sets of five on a stick. Each nick or notch represents a score of whatever is being enumerated.

d. — Reckoning by the Score.

As regards the exceptions above noted. For tally up to a score, beyond ten, the Car Nicobarese say "one-ten" and so on, to nineteen. For even numbers the Shom Pei use besides direct numerals, "one-pair, two-pair," etc.: and for odd numbers "one-pair-one," and so on: and beyond ten to nineteen they say "one half-pair (and) ten" and so on.

For tally beyond a score the Central and Southern people use a term, *dōkta*, for "half-score" in the same way as the Shom Pei use "half-pair." This word is of great interest, as it is a lost stem, meaning "(waning to) half," which can be shown to be the case by the term for

5,000 pairs in Car Nicobarese, *dróngte ldk*, half *ldk*, i.e., half 10,000 pairs. Here *ldk* is borrowed from the Far Eastern *lak*, *lak*, 10,000 (one form of the Sanskrit *laksh*, just as *lakh* for 100,000 is another in modern India), and *dróngte* (*dòktai*) is not otherwise found in Car Nicobarese. This term *dróngte* is applied also to the "half (waned) moon" while *drónga* means "waning."

It will have been noticed that there are alternative terms for "score"; one old one, as shown by the Shom Pei form, and one newer: the newer term being now used for "score" and the old one to tell or multiply it by the score. In going into the cocoanut-counting system these alternative terms will be found put to yet another use. Again, the Shom Pei have a special term for score-of-scores, *tēo*: and can tally up to large figures by scores: one score, two scores, three scores, one more one *tēo*, one *tēo*. This idea, too, will be found to be of value when going into the system of counting cocoanuts.

Another subversion of inter-island custom is to be noticed in Car Nicobar, where one is ordinarily *kakök*, but for cocoanuts one is the universal *heng*.

Beyond the score-of-scores (400) the Nicobarese have so seldom to enumerate ordinary objects that their nomenclature for the numerals then becomes, though clear, uncertain, as will be seen from the different method by which the various islanders arrive at the same sum. At the same time the fact that the Shom Pei stop at 600, the others, except the Car Nicobarese, at 700, and the Car Nicobarese themselves at 2,000, is not due to want of intelligence, but to want of practical use: just as we stop practically at a million and most people are uncertain as to whether a billion is 10 or 100 or 1,000 or even a million millions, and as beyond the billion the terms become academic.

e. — The Small Numbers.

As regards the smaller simple numbers, the terms for them have got quite away from any idea now of connection with the hand or multiplication of each other, though both can be seen after examination to be present. The word for hand, *tai*, in Nicobarese is a "lost root" and now only exists for parts of the hand, thus — *ok-tai*, back (of the) hand; *oal-tai* (in-hand) palm; *kane-tai* (stick-hand) and even *tai*, finger. So *tanai* is certainly a derivative of *tai*, formed with the differentiating infix *an*, thus — *tai*, hand, fingers, *t-an-ai*, five. Next we find clear roots *du* (*an*, *dn*) two and *fū* (*kō*) pair: whence in various forms, *du*, two; *fōan*, four (two pair); *en-fōan*, eight (twice two-pair). So in Shom Pei three, six and nine (*luge*, *lagāu*, *lungi*) are clearly the inflected remains of some such connected multiples, and in the other dialects "six" is three pair; *lue*, three, (*ta*)-*fū-al*, six, a pair of three (*ta* is a common radical prefix in the language). *Tafūal* (*tayūal*, *takōal*, *tahōl*), which in that case is really a numerical coefficient, also means a pair in all the dialects except Shom Pei, and is built up etymologically in the same way as the homonym for six quite legitimately, thus — *ta-fū-a*, prefix-root-suffix; while we see the root again in Shom Pei in the (probably mixed) compound term for "half-a-pair" *ma-hau-kud* (?) two-pair. The term *heäng-hata* for nine is an elliptical phrase *heäng hata* (*shom*), one less (ten); as will be seen later on.

f. — Commercial Reckoning.

Turning now to the second system—the Nicobarese method of reckoning cocoanuts for commerce and currency, and from cocoanuts money, which they do not possess themselves, carries them into large figures. It is still a tally system, adopted for commercial purposes by all except the Shom Pei, from the system of tallying by the score.

Cocoanuts as currency are seldom used in small quantities and the Nicobarese get quickly to the score by counting the nuts in pairs—thus, one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine pairs, one score. Tally.

The term used for "score" in this case is *inai* (*tom*), the alternative already noted, and not *momchiamā* (*pomechiamā*, *michāma*, *nōng*) as in the case of ordinary articles, *momchiamā* being adopted, *qud* cocoanuts, for "score-of-scores."

It must be remembered that cocoanuts, except when stated in scores or multiples of scores, are always stated in pairs (*tafua*, *tafūal*, *takhal*), the term for which is omitted in reckoning, unless it is necessary to express it for very small quantities, or in the case of odd numbers, when 3 becomes "one-pair-one, *hēang-ta fūal-hēang*," and so on.

In tallying cocoanuts by the score, the various islands have set up different standards of tally, which are complicated and in many cases in alternative use. The number of standards in fact indicates the trade, where trade is briskest, the standards are most numerous. It may be noted that in counting cocoanuts "ten pair" may be substituted for "one score" in the lower tally everywhere, except in Chowra, where "one score" is used without an alternative.

g.—Commercial Tally by the Score.

It is now necessary to use some abbreviations—C.=Central, S.=Southern, T.=Teressa, C. N.=Car Nicobar, and Ch.=Chowra.

The least developed method of tallying by the score is in C. and S., where there are only two standards, *inai* score (20) and *momchiamā* score-of-scores (400). There the counting by the score is—*one, two, three score, one momchiamā* (score-of-scores); then *one, two, three up to any number of momchiamā*. This method is very awkward in the higher figures, thus—

| | | | | |
|---------|----|------------------|------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| 500 | 1 | <i>momchiamā</i> | 5 (score) | [400 + 5 (20)] |
| 600 | 1 | " | and-a-half (<i>dōktai</i>) | (400 + 200) |
| 700 | 1 | " | and-a-half 5 (score) | [400 + 200 + 5 (20)] |
| 1,000 | 2 | " | and-a-half [(2 × 400) + 200] | |
| 3,000 | 7 | " | and-a-half [(7 × 400) + 200] | |
| 10,000 | 1 | score | 5 <i>momchiamā</i> | [(20 + 5) × 400] |
| 20,000 | 2 | , | 5 pair <i>momchiamā</i> | [(40 + 5 [2] × 400)] |
| 100,000 | 10 | , | 5 <i>momchiamā</i> | [10 × (20 + 5) × 400] |
| 200,000 | 1 | , | 5 (of) score (of) <i>momchiamā</i> | [(20 + 5) × 20 × 400] |

Car Nicobar adopts the score and score-of-scores (*inai-momchiamā*) standard, but only alternatively and only as far as the higher of the two (400). T. and Ch. will talk about 11, etc., score, but as far as 15 score only.

h.—Standards of Ten and One Hundred Score.

All these three islands, Car Nicobar, Teressa, and Chowra, have a third standard of ten score (200), which is in these dialects called

| C. N. | T. | Ch. |
|--------------------|------|-----|
| 'ōng ⁴⁹ | nōng | lā |

Then alternatively Ch. and C. N. will reckon by the *lā* or *'ōng* up to 15 score, and C. N. alternatively up to 20 score. Beyond the *nōng*, T. always reckons by the *nōng* thus⁵⁰:

| | | |
|-----|---|--|
| 200 | 1 | <i>'ōng</i> (<i>nōng</i> , <i>lā</i>) |
| 400 | 2 | <i>'ōng</i> (<i>nōng</i> , <i>lā</i>) |
| 500 | 2 | <i>'ōng</i> (<i>nōng</i> , <i>lā</i>), 5 score (<i>tom</i>), |

The standard of ten score (200) is carried by all the three islands C. N., T., Ch., up to 2,000, i. e., 10 *'ōng* (*nōng*, *lā*), when alternatively a new standard of hundred scores commences in C. N. called *kaiñe*, in T. and Ch., *mamila*. Thus—

| | | |
|-------|---|--|
| 2,000 | 1 | <i>kaiñe</i> (<i>mamila</i>) |
| 3,000 | 1 | <i>kaiñe</i> (<i>mamila</i>), 5 <i>'ōng</i> (<i>nōng</i> , <i>lā</i>). |

⁴⁹ Inflectionally (1) *nōng*, (2) *tōng*, (3) *yōng*, (10) *mōng* according to the terminal of the previous numeral.

⁵⁰ Except in case of 300 which is 15 score.

I. — The Higher Numbers.

After this the islands break off on their own lines. Thus T. carries on the standard of ten score (*mamila*) for all the higher figures: 200,000 being in that dialect simply 5 score *mamila* ($5 \times 20 \times 2,000$). C. N. and Ch. do so also as far as 100,000, which is in all the three dialects 2 score 5 pairs *mamila* (*kaiñe*) or [$2 \times 20 + 5$ (2)] $\times 2,000$; but Ch. alternatively commences a new standard at two *mamila* or two hundred score (4,000) called *metñētchya* and carries that on to all figures. Thus for Ch. —

20,000 is alternatively 5 *metñētchya* ($5 \times 4,000$)

100,000 is 1 score 5 *metñētchya* [$(20 + 5) \times 4,000$]

200,000 is 2 score 10 *metñētchya* [$(40 + 10) \times 4,000$]

At 10 *kaiñe* ($10 \times 2,000 = 20,000$) C. N. commences a new alternative standard, *lák* (borrowed from the Malay and Far Eastern *laksa* 10,000⁵¹), meaning 10,000 pairs (= 20,000) cocoanuts. This is carried on to all the high figures. Thus —

20,000 is 1 *lák*

100,000 is 5 *lák*

200,000 is 10 *lák*

By an interesting expression C. N. says *drōngte lák*, half *lák*, for 10,000. This proves that *dòktai*, "and-a-half" (scores) of C. and S. really contains a lost root for "half." Also it is to be noticed that when C. and S. get into large figures they have borrowed the T. Ch. alternative term for score. Thus —

200,000 in C. and S. is *hēung inai tanai tom momchiama*, one score (and) five score (of) score-of-scores ($20 + 5 \times 20 \times 20 \times 20$).

J. — Cocoanut Reckoning Standards.

The following table will show briefly the standards for reckoning cocoanuts:—

| | | | | | | | | | |
|------|---------------------|-----|-----|----------------|---|---|-----|--------|-------|
| I. | pair | ... | ... | all islands | 1 | <i>taſūa</i> (<i>taſūal</i> , <i>takōal</i> , <i>tahōl</i>) | ... | ... | 2 |
| II. | 10 pairs or score | ... | ... | all islands | 1 | <i>inai</i> (<i>tom</i>) | ... | ... | 20 |
| III. | 10 score | ... | ... | Ch. T., C. N. | 1 | <i>lā</i> (<i>nōng</i> , <i>'ong</i>) | ... | ... | 200 |
| IV. | score of scores | ... | ... | C., S., C. N. | 1 | <i>momchiama</i> (<i>pomchiāma</i> , <i>michāma</i>) | 400 | | |
| V. | 10 ten-scores | ... | ... | Ch., T., C. N. | 1 | <i>mamila</i> (<i>kaiñe</i>) | ... | ... | 2,000 |
| VI. | score of ten-scores | ... | ... | Ch. | 1 | <i>metñētchya</i> | ... | ... | 4,000 |
| VII. | 10,000 pairs | ... | ... | C. N. | 1 | <i>lák</i> (borrowed trade term) | ... | 20,000 | |

C. N. and Ch. have thus six standards and Car Nicobar has the highest: T. has four standards: C. and S. have three. These standards exactly indicate the relative trading opportunity of the various islanders.

The Shom Peñ have no trade, but they can easily reckon up to 80,000, thus *teya inai tēo* 10 score (of) *tēo* [$(10 \times 20) \times 40 = 80,000$]. They have three standards — I, pair, 1 *ta-šu*, 2: II, score, 1 *inai*, 20: III, score of scores, 1 *tēo* 400. They do not, in fact, fall behind the other islanders in the capacity for grasping and reckoning in abstract figures.

⁵¹ Not from the Indian *lakh* 100,000. Both *laksa* (10,000) and *lakh* (100,000) are from the same root as the Sanskrit *laksha*.

k. — Scales for Reckoning Cocoanuts.

For European trade the table of scales would be as follows :—

I.

For all islands.

10 tafūa or takōal or tahōl (pair) make 1 inai or tom (score), (20)

II.

C., S., C. N.

10 tafūal or tahōl make 1 inai (20).

20 inai " 1 momchiama or michāma (400)

III.

Ch., T., C. N.

10 tafūal or takōal or tahōl (pair) make 1 inai or tom (score), (20)

10 inai or tom (score) " 1 lâ, nòng, or 'òng (200)

10 lâ, nòng, or 'òng " 1 mamila (kaiñe) (2,000)

IV.

Ch.

10 takōal make 1 tom (20)

10 tom " 1 lâ (200)

10 lâ " 1 mamila (2,000)

2 mamila " 1 metüetchya (4,000)

V.

C. N.

10 tahōl make 1 inai (20)

10 inai " 1 'òng (200)

10 'òng " 1 kaiñe (2,000)

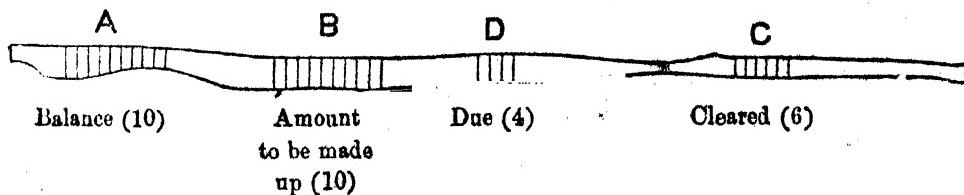
10 kaiñe " 1 lâk (20,000)

One can see, when put in this way, which is, of course, distinctly not Nicobarese, where trade has sharpened wits.

1. — Tallies.

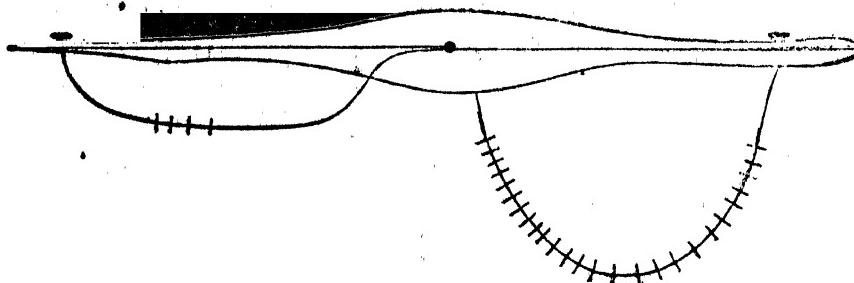
In a Car Nicobar tally stick, *kenrāta-kök*, in my possession, unfortunately already dry-rotted in the notches, which are thus lost for the future, a running account of cocoanuts with a trader, who has advanced rice for cocoanuts, is shown. The balance due on the rice was 2,000 cocoanuts, i. e., 10 'òng or 1 kaiñe denoted by the 10 notches at A. The 10 notches at B represent the total sum 10 'òng to be made up. The 6 notches at C denote that the owner has cleared 6 'òng (1,200), the 4 notches at D that 4 'òng (800) are still due.

Kenrāta-Kök.



I have another tally of beads on a string from Car Nicobar (*kenrāta-njījī*) which shows that 26 *michāma* ($400 \times 26 = 10,400$) of cocoanuts are due out of a sum and that 4 *michāma* (1,600) have been paid. The original debt was therefore 30 *michāma*, i.e., 12,000 cocoanuts, or as a Car Nicobarese would say, 6 *kaiñe* or *drōngtē ldk heng kaiñe* [half *ldk* (and) one *kaiñe*].

Kenrāta-njījī.



APPENDIX B.

a. — Reckoning of the Days of the Months.

Each "moon" is divided into phases and divisions in all the islands on the same system, except Car Nicobar, which has a differing one. There is for descriptive purposes a waxing and a waning moon; dividing the "moon" into halves. There are also a descriptive First Phase (*Hēang Lō*, one piece): Full Moon (whole or swollen moon); Last Phase (*Kanēl*, Boar's tusk). For reckoning, the month is divided into 30 days and four phases — I (*she*), 1st to 10th (10 days); II (*ydm*), 11th to 20th (10 days); III (*tatlāngā*) 21st to 25th (5 days); IV, 26th to 30th (5 days). In the fourth phase the days are not counted, but separately named.

In Car Nicobar the following descriptive phases are recognised: — (a) First Phase (*Kdnel-hdun*, Boar's tusk), 2nd day: Second Phase (*Tutlaal*), 8th day (First Quarter): Third Phase (*Chayi Chingeät*), 14th day (Full Moon): Fourth Phase (*Drōngtē Chingeät*), 22nd day (Last Quarter); and (b) Waxing moon, 1st to 10th (10 days): whole moon, 11th to 16th (6 days): waning moon, 17th to 26th (10 days): disappearing moon, 27th to 30th (4 days): total, 30 days. In Car Nicobar also the full moon, and the day before and the two days after, are all recognised by separate terms. For reckoning, the month is divided into 30 days and 3 phases: waxing moon, 1st to 16th (16 days): waning moon, 17th to 26th (10 days): disappearing moon, 27th to 30th (4 days): total, 30 days.

In reckoning the month the Car Nicobarese reckon straight through the waxing moon from 1 to 16 and simply say "*kahök chingedt*, one moon . . . *tafūal stan chingeät*, sixteen moon." They then go straight through the waning moon from 1 to 10 and say "*kahök drōngtē chingedt*, one waning moon," and so on. Lastly they run through the disappearing moon from 1 to 4, "*kahök sđlnōwa chingedt*, one disappearing moon," etc. If intercalary days then ensue, they are all called *aiya ay-chingedt*.

In the other islands the plan of counting the days is the same, but the method differs and is more complicated. They count 1 to 10 (*she* moon); thus "*hēang she kdhē*, one *she* moon . . . *shōm she kdhē*, ten *she* moon." Then 1 to 9 (*ydm*, whole); thus "*hēang ydm bāhē*, one *ydm* moon . . . *hēang hata ydm kdhē*, nine *ydm* moon." But the 20th is "*hēang*

momchîama yâm kâhê, one score *yâm* moon," to finish the reckoning, because it now takes on a new phase. The 21st to 25th are reckoned backwards thus—

| | | | | |
|------|--------|----------|---|-------------------|
| 21st | enfôan | tatlângâ | 8 | <i>tatlângâ</i> . |
| 22nd | issât | " | 7 | |
| 23rd | tafûal | " | 6 | |
| 24th | tanai | " | 5 | |
| 25th | fôan | " | 4 | |

After this they reckon by separate names :

| | |
|------|---------|
| 26th | ongâwa |
| 27th | hinai |
| 28th | hinlain |
| 29th | manût |
| 30th | kanat |

Any following intercalary days are all called *kanat*.

b. — Explanation of Terms for Numerals.

There is a term for the 19th in the Central Group, which explains the curious form *heâng-hata* for nine. The ordinary term for the 19th day is *heâng-hata yâm kâhê*, nine *yâm* moon : but *shòm heâng hata tom yâm*, which is obviously "ten one less score *yâm*," is also used, because the 20th is *heâng momchîama yâm kâhê*, one score *yâm* moon. *Hat* means "not" and *hata* here is clearly "less" and so *heâng-hata*, nine, is an elliptic phrase for *heâng hata shòm*, one less ten.

Another pair of expressions is *dróngâ chingeüt*, waning moon, and *dróngte chingeüt*, half moon, which explains *dróngte lâk*, half *lak* (20,000), and *dòktai* "and-a-half (score)." Here is a "lost root" *dróng*, *dòk*, "lesser," which when combined with (*te*, *ta*) *tai* "lost root" for "hand," means "the lessened hand" or "half."

The only other term which might be disputed is *chamângâ chingeüt*, ten moon, the word for ten in Car Nicobar being *sam*, but it is quite a legitimate extension for differentiation by infix and suffix, thus; *ch-am-âng-a* (for *s-am-âm-a*), or according to root forms, *chang* for *sam*.

c. — Calendar Tallies.

In a Car Nicobar Calendar (*kenrâta*) in my possession the days are notched as follows to indicate a monsoon. It is in the form of a sword-blade.

| | | | |
|-----------------|---------|----|------|
| The first month | notches | 31 | days |
| The second | " | 29 | " |
| The third | " | 26 | " |
| The fourth | " | 28 | " |
| The fifth | " | 26 | " |
| The sixth | " | 29 | " |
| The seventh | " | 28 | " |

197 days

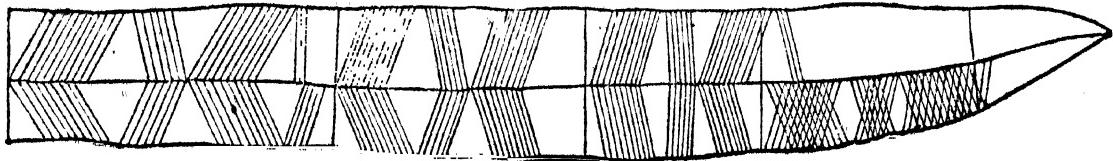
or well over half the year, which would require readjustment during the next monsoon.

It will be observed that the notches are meant to go 10, 6, 10, 4=30.

That is, in this *kenrāta* the Car Nicobarese four phase system is taken in calendaring the months, i. e., the months are divided into waxing, full, waning, and disappearing moon.

When the notches fill one side of the *kenrāta*, they commence on the other, and are thus able to keep tally of time for a short while.

Car Nicobar Calendar.
(*Kenrāta*.)



Note.

Mr. de Röepstorff's Calendar.

In Mr. de Röepstorff's posthumous *Dictionary of the Nancowry (Central) Dialect*, of 1884, is given a complete and most interesting Calendar, found among his papers, for the year 1883 day by day, but unfortunately there is something wrong about it. He has given Danäh-kapâ and Kabâ-chuij as two separate solar months, whereas they are duplicate names for the closing month of the N.-E. Monsoon, and thus gives 13 and not 12 solar months to the year. He has also got the months Channi and Hammua in the reverse order. Further, his months work out thus for the solar year, giving an intercalary day each to (7) Hammua (May-June) and (9) Manâkngapoah (August-September).

| | | | | | |
|-------|-----|---------------|----|---------------|----------|
| Month | 1. | 9th January | to | 7th February | 30 days. |
| | 2. | 8th February | to | 8th March | 29 " |
| | 3. | 9th March | to | 6th April | 29 " |
| | 4. | 7th April | to | 6th May | 30 " |
| | 5. | 7th May | to | 5th June | 29 " |
| | 6. | 6th June | to | 3rd July | 29 " |
| | 7. | 4th July | to | 3rd August | 31 " |
| | 8. | 4th August | to | 31st August | 28 " |
| | 9. | 1st September | to | 1st October | 31 " |
| | 10. | 2nd October | to | 30th October | 29 " |
| | 11. | 31st October | to | 29th November | 30 " |
| | 12. | 30th November | to | 28th December | 29 " |
| | 13. | 29th December | to | 8th January | 11 " |
| | | | | | 365 days |

This would have resulted in the Nicobarese full year of two monsoons being completed in 383 days, and this reckoning would have brought about a muddle in the ensuing year, 1884, which does not as matter of fact occur.

It is to be observed that the S.-W. Monsoon was taken in that year as commencing on 7th May and the N.-W. on 1st November, so that the S.-W. Monsoon half year lasted 177 days and the N.-W. about 188.

It is to be noted also that in Mr. de Röepstorff's calendar the *She* days are 10, the *Yam* days 10, and the *Tatlänga* days 5 in each month, while the odd dark nights run thus: for 1 month none, for 1 month 3, for 6 months 4, for 3 months 5, for 2 months 6 in the month.

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES.

From the Native point of view.

BY MIAN DUGGA SINGH.

(Communicated by H. A. Rose.)

(Concluded from page 315.)

LXXXVIII.—Social Customs.

263. Methods of salutation among different tribes are :—

(1) Brâhmans salute one another, as *pairi pônd*; *namaskâr*. They salute Râjpûts with *asirbd*, *srî bâchan*, *Râjâ kô srî Raghu Nâth sahâi* (God be with the Râja). Other tribes, except the low castes, with *kalyân* or *asirbd*. Low tribes with "May you long live or flourish."

(2) Râjpûts say to the Brâhmans, *matthâ teknd*, *pâlag*, *pairi pônd* (I fall at your feet); to others, except low castes, *Râm Râm*, and to low castes, "May you long live or flourish."

(3) Bôhrâs, Baniâs, Bhâbrâs, Sûds, Kshatriyâs, say *Râm Râm* to one another, or *bandagi* or *matthâ teknd* or *pairi pônd*; to Brâhmans, *pâlag*, *pâri pônd*, or *matthâ teknd*; to Râjpûts, *mahârâj jaidâd* or *jaidâd mahârâj* or *jaidâd*.

(4) Kanaits, goldsmiths, Jats, barbers, gardeners, milkmen, potters, masons, say *Râm Râm*, *dhâl*, *bandagi* and *jai Sítâ Râm*; to Bôhrâs, as above, *bandagi* or *Râm Râm*; to Râjpûts, *mahârâj jaidâd* or *jaidâd mahârâj* or *jaidâd*.

(5) Washermen, dye-sinkers, carpenters, smiths, Thathârâs, Dhagis, Chanâls, Kôlis, Rêhrs, sweepers, cobblers, boatmen, weavers, say to one another, *Râm Râm* or *dhâl*; *dhâl* or *pairi pônd* to Kanaits; *dhâl* or *pairi pônd* to Bôhrâs, etc.; *mahârâj jaidâd* or *jaidâd*, or *jai*, to Râjpûts; and *pairi pônd* or *matthâ teknd* to Brâhmans.

(6) The women of Brâhmans, Râjpûts and Bôhrâs, etc., say *matthâ teknd* or *pairi pônd* to one another. The women of Kanaits, etc., say *dhâl* or *sûi* to one another, and those of low castes say *dhâl* to one another.

(7) The above-mentioned tribes say *namô Nârdin* (reverence be to Gbd) to the Sanyâsi mendicants or make *dandâvat* (going round the person) to them, who in answer say *Nârdin*. Bairâgis are addressed with *jai mahârâj dandâut*, who reply *jai Râmji* or *jai Sítâ Râmji*. *Adâs* is said to a Jogi, who replies *Ad purush* (the First Cause). *Adasis* are made a *dandâut* and they reply *chiranjiv* (long live).

264. Modes of salutation by relatives :—

(1) Brâhmans. A son, son-in-law, nephew, etc., says *matthâ teknd* and *pairi bandan*, to a father, mother, maternal uncle and wife, maternal grandfather and grandmother, father-in-law and mother-in-law. Women say *pairi bandan* to their relatives. The elders in reply say *chiranjiv* to a man, and *suhâyan sanpati* (may your husband live long) to a woman.

(2) Râjpûts, Bhâbrâs, Baniâs, etc. To the above-mentioned relations, if males, they say *jaidâd* or *dhâl*, and if females, *pairi pônd* or *matthâ teknd*. The elders, in reply, say *chiranjiv* to a man, and *suhâyan sanpati* to a woman.

(3) Kanaits. Younger males say *dhâl*, *Râm Râm* or *bandagi* to an elder relation, who in reply says "long live" or "flourish" *charanjiv*. Women say *sûi*, and receive in reply *sadd*, *suhâyan*.

(4) Low castes. Both males and females, if the younger say *dhâl* to elders, who in reply say "be happy," or *dhâl*.

(5) Râjâs or Rânâs. Brâhmans say to a Râjâ or Rânâ *asirbd*, *srî Gopâl sahâi* or *srî Raghubandh sahâi* (may God help you). Other tribes say *jaidâd* to them. They reply *pâlag* to Brâhmans and *Râm Râm* to others, *jai* to Râjpûts and "be happy" to low persons.

(6) Miâns (Râjâ's younger sons). — Brâhmans say to a Miân *asirbâd* or *erî bâchan*; others say *jai*, *jaidâd*, or *dhâl*. They reply *pâlag* or *matthâ têkna* to a Brâhman; *Râm Râm*, *jai*, *jaidâd* or *dhâl* to the Râjpûts; *Râm Râm* to others, and "be happy" to low persons.

(7) Baniâs. — They say *bandagi* and *Râm Râm* to merchants. Brâhmans say *asirbâd* or *erî bâchan* to them. Low persons say to them *dhâl* or *pairi pônd*.

(8) Négis, Mehtâs, Wazirs, Mukhiâs, etc., say *bandagi* or *salâm* or *Râm Râm*.

(9) If a man belongs to any other tribe, then he is saluted with the words fixed for his tribe.

265. The methods of greeting among the members of a family, friends, relations, and strangers are given below : —

(1) **Members of a family.** — The younger places his head on the feet of the elder, and then says *jaidâd*, *dhâl*, *bandagi*, or *Râm Râm*, according to the fixed custom, with both the hands brought together. The elder places his hand on the back of the younger, accepts the salutation, asks after his health, and places him near himself with a great show of love.

(2) **Friends.** — Friends shake hands. The younger in age or rank says *bandagi*, *jaidâd*, *dhâl* or *Râm Râm*, after which the elder takes hold of the hand of the younger, accepts the salutation, asks after his health, and gives him a seat near himself.

(3) **Relations.** — The younger honours the elder, and puts his head on the feet of the latter. If the relation be that of an equal position, or if the introduction be effected through a near relative, then after *pairi bandâd* they embrace each other, or say *dhâl bandagi*, *jai*, *jaidâd*, etc., to each other. The younger leaves his seat and offers it to the elder, and himself sits lower on the floor.

(4) **Strangers.** — Men prepare good food for their guests according to their capacity. If a guest comes to the house of a Chief, Râjâ, or Nawâb, then in addition to the feast he gets presents, and even money, in proportion to the rank of the guest and host. Chiefs generally give presents to their neighbours and relations.

266. There are no special rules for salutation, greeting or address.

267. There is no particular rule about treatment of guests, women, old men, and invalids.

268. Relations and neighbours entertain one another mutually.

269. No special language is used. The guests are politely spoken to. The host, of whatever rank or capacity, will treat the guest respectfully. If the guest be one belonging to the family of the host's wife, then he is ridiculed. Brothers-in-law call each other names and mimic one another. Their servants also will behave in the same way.

270. The brothers-in-law or men of their respective families make jokes with each other, and also abuse each other through mother, or daughter, or sister. They call one another a thief, a rogue, a cobbler, a shoemaker, sweeper, etc. But no one may assail the religion of another.

LXXIX. — Social Intercourse.

271. Customs of social intercourse among Kanaits, goldsmiths, barber, potters, Jâts, gardeners, and masons : —

(a) The Brâhmans can eat flour, rice or fried grain from the hands of the above-named clans. They have no scruple to use *puri*, *kachori*, and everything fried in oil or *ghi* that has been touched by the latter.

(b) The high castes do not use the food cooked only in water (not fried in oil, etc.) by these sects, but low castes do not observe such restrictions.

(c) Water touched by them is drunk by everybody.

(d) The people do not smoke the same pipe with them.

The high castes do not eat food touched by low castes, such as Kôlis, shepherds, cobblers, etc., nor do the former drink water touched by the latter, nor do they smoke the same pipe with them. The low castes can eat food prepared by anybody. But every tribe, even among themselves, have some restrictions concerning diet.

272. Members of all tribes can eat the food, whether fried or unfried, prepared by a Brâhman, but they do not smoke pipes together. Every tribe — nay, even every sub-division — has its own pipe. The same rule holds in the case of fried food. The people do not take fried food with persons not of their own blood, and this custom holds particularly among Brâhmans, Râjpûts, and Baniâs.

LXXX. — Clothing and Ornaments.

273. (1) Garments generally differ in fashion, and a distinction between the Hindus and Muhammadans can be made so that the Hindus keep their buttons to the right, while the Muhammadans keep them to the left. Hindus do not use black cloth, except for trousers, but the Muhammadans use it freely. And the Hindus do not use blue cloth, while Muhammadans do. The Hindus do not shave their heads, while Muhammadans shave their heads clean. The Muhammadans cook big cakes and Hindus small ones.

The names of men's garments are : — *Chôbaghld, kurtd, kamiz* (shirt), *sadri* (vest), *pâjâmâ* (drawers or trousers), *suthan, saldr, gâchi, tâpî* (cap), *futûhi, kôt* (coat), *chôgâl, châdar* (blanket or sheet), *doshâld* (shawl), turban, *kamarband* (belt).⁹

The names of women's garments are : — *Dhâthu, gâchi, dôrâ, chôlti, tambâ, suthan, lôiyâ, lôotâ, ghôndi, chadar* (blanket), *kuriâ sadri* (vest), *kamiz* (shirt), *choliâ* (coat), *chabaghld* and *kamarband* (belt).

(2) The following are some of the ornaments for women : — *Kariâ* (arm-rings) of gold and silver, *kangan* (arm-rings) of gold and silver, *ponchi, marédru, chûri* (arm-rings), *môndi, ûrei, dôrâ, chandramân, chak, kanbâli, mongré, sêdû, kanphul, tanôrê*, chains for *sédus* or *kanphuls* or *tanôrês*, *jhômak, math* (nose-ring), *bulâk, bésar, pîpal pattâ, lóng, phûl* and *thâthi* (?), *kîch* and *châta, kanthi, jômâld, chandarmani har, dasri, dolri, chaup kâli, indarseni har, hónvárû dôdd, taviz, málâ, bázuband, tôrd, paizeb, pêchâti, chôkhuti, gânthré, hanst, jhanjâr.*

Ornaments for men are — *Ziga, chandarmân, gôkhrû, murki, drôtu, bâlli* or *kunbal*; *kantha*, gold and silver; *kara*, gold or silver; *môndi*, gold or silver; *taviz, málâ*, and *bázuband*.

LXXXI. — Dancing and Singing.

274. The women of all the tribes, except those of the Brâhmans and Râjpûts, can dance. They dance among men in their villages at night. The women of Brâhmans and Râjpûts do not dance, except at marriages, when they also sing. The *tûris* (minstrels) are, by profession, dancers and singers.

LXXXII. — Table of Occupation.

| No. | Name of Tribe. | Occupation. |
|-----|-------------------------------|---|
| 1 | Kshatriyas or Râjpûts | Military service. |
| 2 | Brâhmans | Teachers of the <i>Vâdas</i> and Scriptures; receivers of gifts and alms. |
| 3 | Sûds | Merchants and agriculturists. |
| 4 | Baniâs | Merchants. |
| 5 | Bôhrâs | Do. |
| 6 | Kanaits | Agriculturists; servants of Brâhmans and Râjpûts. |

⁹ [It is to be observed that one Portuguese word *kanus* and one English word *koj* occur in these lists. — Ed.]

| No | Name of Tribe. | Occupation. |
|----|--------------------------------|---|
| 7 | Khatris | Like Rājpūts ; merchants and servants. |
| 8 | Kayasths | Clerks and merchants. |
| 9 | Goldsmiths | Makers of gold or silver ornaments. |
| 10 | Barbers | Shaving. |
| 11 | Potters | Make earthenware vessels ; keep beasts of burden, such as mules, camels, etc. |
| 12 | Washermen | Washing of clothes. |
| 13 | Chhimbās | Dyeing and washing of clothes. |
| 14 | Carpenters | Build houses ; carve wood and sculpture ; and do all kinds of work in wood and stone. |
| 15 | Blacksmiths | Make instruments and vessels of iron. |
| 16 | Thathērā or Bharērā | Make instruments and vessels of brass, copper, and spelter. |
| 17 | Tūris, Dhākīs, and Dhādīs ... | Play upon instruments, sing and dance. |
| 18 | Kōlis or Dums | Agriculturists and menials to others. |
| 19 | Rēhrs or Nagālūs | Do. and graze the farmers' cattle ; shepherds. |
| 20 | Sweepers | Do. do. do. |
| 21 | Cobblers and shoemakers ... | Do. make shoes and other things of leather. |
| 22 | Chanāls | Do. and make bows and arrows. |
| 23 | Boatmen | Do. and help people in crossing rivers. |
| 24 | Weavers | Do. weave woollen cloth. |
| 25 | Bairāgīs | Beggars. |
| 26 | Sanyāsīs | Do. |
| 27 | Udāsīs | Do. |
| 28 | Jōgis | Do. |

LXXXIII. — Professions and Occupations.

275. The Brāhmans, Rājpūts, Kshatriyas, and Sūds have adopted the profession of commerce and agriculture in modern times. The Brāhmans and Rājpūts are also given to private service. No tribe, except in the case of individuals, sticks to its original occupation.

276. Different tribes have different occupations. No tribe sticks to one occupation as a whole. People earn their livelihood by different pursuits. The women of Brāhmans and Rājpūts do no work, but make silk embroidery, sew clothes, knit socks, and so on.

277. No particular profession deserves mention.

278. There is nothing particular to say as to instruments.

279. The Tūris, Dhākīs, and Dhādīs allow their women to practise prostitution, whether they be maids or married, and live upon their earnings.

280. The change of religion is necessarily accompanied with change of profession. The convert adopts the calling of his new religion.

281. Persons changing their profession do not necessarily change the name of their tribe, nor is their connection with it slackened, nor does it pervert their religion or sect. However, if a person adopts a profession forbidden by either the Hindu or Muhammadan religion, then his religion is degraded and he is excommunicated. For instance, a person whose food and water can be taken by Brâhmans and Râjpûts becomes, on adopting a low profession, degraded and is excommunicated.

LXXXIV. — Agriculture.

282. The conditions of land cultivation are:—

(1) Agriculturists are to be found in every tribe. However, the high castes of Brahman and Râjpûts do not cultivate the land themselves, but by their servants.

(2) The Kanaits and Kôlis are the best cultivators. Their men and women live by cultivation. Cultivators are generally Kanaits, Kôlis, Rêhys (shepherds), who are tenants-at-will. Generally the tenants are without rights of occupancy. Occupancy tenants are very few.

(3) (a) Some tenants serve the landlords and do not pay any rent. They serve him daily.

(b) Some tenants pay rent in cash, together with *malikând*. Some pay in kind as much as half the produce.

(c) They pay, in addition to the fixed rent, expenses of deaths and marriages to the landlord. Also they serve him now and then. No portion of the chaff is given to the landlord. At the time of division of produce, in some places, a quantity equal to the seed is deducted and the remainder is divided into halves, while in other places the whole of the produce is divided.

(d) There are no wandering tenants in the hills.

(e) Daily wages are seldom paid. But when well-to-do people engage poor men on wages at the harvest time, they give to the latter $2\frac{1}{2}$ seers of grain daily, i.e., cakes weighing one seer in the morning, as much in the evening, and half a seer of cakes at noon. Such labourers are called *budrâ*, and the wages are known as *chhdk*. If the wages are to be paid in cash, three annas a day is given.

283. There is no tradition regarding the cultivators.

LXXXV. — Rights in the Land and its Products.

284. Following is the detail of the rights of a tribe in the land:—

(a) No one has any right to have land on a rent less than that paid by his neighbours.

(b) Rêhys and Kôlis cultivate the common land of the village without paying any rent, and this is for their serving the *shdldt* (community). Sometimes they graze cattle as remuneration for this.

(c) Every one gives some grain (the quantity is not fixed) at the time of harvest to the Brâhmans, the goldsmith, the barber, the Tûri, the Kôli, the cobbler, the washerman, the smith, and the shepherd, who in return serve the landlords. The shepherd is also given some corn. Each of these can receive from each family not more than four maunds and not less than two seers. These people go from village to village at the time of harvest and collect corn from all the persons with whom they are connected.

285. There is no contract, but the customs are fixed. As the land is divided into portions, so is the *birt* (custom). If any person, who has been giving corn to one man for a long time does not give it to him but to another man, a severe quarrel arises.

286. This they do not receive by right of superiority, but by right of service. Six monthly grants are fixed as remuneration for their services.

287. This is only the reward of service.

288. The Brāhmans, barbers, Tūris, Kōlis, and Rēhrs have hereditary rights. Other menials can be dismissed or re-employed. This right is termed *shikhdh*.

LXXXVI. — Increase of Agriculture.

289. There is no reason to believe that the forefathers of the agriculturists were of the same caste or tribe as themselves. Neither can this be admitted nor denied. Only so much is certain that in ancient times agriculturists were very few.

290. No such marks are to be found in any tribe or caste as to show likeness between villages or villagers. Distinction between cultivators is necessary. It is not to be found among the followers of any other profession.

291. No tradition worthy of mention is available.

292. Agriculture is increasing day by day, and every tribe is taking to it. Even the Rājpūts, Brāhmans, goldsmiths and barbers, who shrank from cultivating land, have adopted agriculture and are trying hard to improve their lands.

293. Want is not the reason.

LXXXVII. — Pasture.

294. This is a general custom in the hills. The culturable land situated near the village is either divided and cultivated or is possessed separately. In villages where pasture grounds to graze cattle are scarce the *banjar* (barren land) is neither divided nor cultivated, for the want of pasture injures the increasing value of land. But this custom is going out of use nowadays, for the agriculturists have been declared the owners of culturable lands, while the Chief or the British Government owns the unculturable lands. However, the *shāmlāt* (common land) is in possession of the villagers.

295. All the pasture lands of the hills belong to the Chief of the place. But the inhabitants of villages are privileged to graze their cattle in pastures situated within the boundary of their respective villages. None have such a right except the natives of the villages. If the Chief thinks any area to be more than sufficient for the purposes of pasturage, and wants to improve it, then he can give it to any one of the natives of the village for improvement on a fixed rent. The farmers can sell or mortgage the land which they own as the *maliks*, but they cannot do so with the pasture lands, and can use them only for private purposes.

LXXXVIII. — Distribution of Land.

296. There is no arrangement for social communion of tribes. However, the subdivisions of a tribe have social intercourse with one another. No custom prevails as to the redistribution of a tribe or religion. The distribution already effected cannot be cancelled.

297. Portions of land are fixed for sowing particular grains for particular crops. For instance, wheat is sown for the *rabi* crops, and rice, etc., for the *kharif*; and a limited area of land is set aside for each crop.

LXXXIX. — Water.

298. Divisions of watering-places and habitations in a village are according to the tribes. High castes have their houses, watering-places, and cremation-grounds in one part of the village, and in the same manner every tribe or sub-division thereof has its separate places. Every tribe has also a fixed place in the village to be used at times of marriages and deaths. This partition of the villages by tribes is of long standing, but it has no concern with partition of land. The land is divided into fields.

299. The partition into fields affects all kinds of land, whether it be the individual property of any person or the common land of the village.

શીરસુ.

RUKMINI KALYANAM.

BY G. E. SUBRAMIAH PANTULU.

(An Episode in the Srimat Bhagavata from the text of Bammara Potanna.—The Telugu Poet.)

You have heard from me, O Parikshit, some time ago that under the commands of Brahmā, Rivata bestowed the hand of his daughter Rāvati on Balarāma. Afterwards, Kṛishṇa married the sweet-scented Rukmini, an incarnation of Lakshmi and the daughter of Bhishmaka, after gaining a victory over Salva and others who came to aid Siśupāla, as Garutmanta took possession of the nectar, overthrowing Indra in days of yore.

Then, Parikshit questioned Sūka, the narrator of the story, to furnish him with a satisfactory explanation of the state of affairs which lead Kṛishṇa, who came to Bhishmaka's court on account of a *swayamvara*, to carry off Rukmini and marry her in the *rākshasa* form, after overthrowing a host of powerful kings single-handed.¹

"Exalted Brāhmaṇa, Sūka, a person who hears the stories of Vishṇu, the hearing of which is the best road to salvation, would not be satisfied even after a certain stage is attained, as hearing them afresh imparts fresh pleasure to the hearer. As these stories appear fresh every time they are heard, kindly narrate to me the *Rukmini Kalyānam*, as my mind is at present bent upon hearing it. O sage, the words which narrate the characteristics of Vishṇu are ornaments to the ears of the hearers, are pleasure-giving to the *pandits*, are destroyers of sins committed in various lives² and contain soul-stirring words."

After hearing these words from the king, Sūka spoke thus:—"O Parikshit, there lived a king, Bhishmaka by name, ruler of Kundina in Vidarbha. He had five sons, of which the eldest, Rukmi by name, was a spotless person. The last and most beloved of the lot was a daughter Rukmini by name.

"The house of Bhishmaka glowed with the growth of his daughter Rukmini, as the western horizon glows with the rising of the moon. She, growing day by day, indulged herself in

¹ There are eight different sorts of marriage — (1) *brahmaṇya*, in which a girl of noble descent is married to one of the same order who is also a good Vedic scholar, after adorning the girl in the best jewels possible; (2) *daitram*, in which a girl adorned with the most fashionable and valuable jewels possible is married to a *ritvika* at the beginning of a *yajna*, or sacrifice, after worshipping him; (3) *arsham*, in which a girl is married to one after accepting from him the gift of a cow for the propagation of *dharma*; (4) *prajāpatyam*, in which a girl is given to a person after telling him that they should jointly propagate *dharma*; (5) *rākshasa*, where the girl is carried off by force without the consent of the girl's party; (6) *gaṇḍharvam*, where clandestine marriage is done by mutual consent; (7) *asuram*, where money is paid for the girl for marriage; and (8) *pisacha*, where a person marries a girl who is not able to maintain her virtue on account of administering to herself soporific drugs. There is yet another kind of marriage called *atra*, where the parents marry the two people after noticing strong signs of love in both.

² The five excrementitious products: (1) *Anavamala* — where *Satyaguna* preponderates, although at times the thought of "I am Brahmā" is presented to the mind to be soon forgotten. (2) *Karmikamala* — in which a person gives a deaf ear to the Vedantic teachings of his best *gurus*. (3) *Mayikamala* — in which the thought about Brahmā does not strike the mind at all. (4) *Mayayamala* — where the mind is led to the performance of sinful deeds of whatever kind. (5) *Trotanamala* — in which a person after knowing all about Parabrahma is led to the belief that there is something other than that Being and in consequence suffers eternal damnation and undergoes a series of rebirths.

performing make-belief marriages ; in serving sweet-flavoured food to other girls of her own age, which pleased them very much ; in the growth of creepers and flowers in the park adjacent ; in rocking herself in golden cradles, in houses set with diamonds and other precious stones ; in playing at ball very elegantly with other girls of her own age ; in teaching parrots ; in teaching methods of walking to peahens and slowness of pace to fresh-bloomed swans. The growth of Rukmini's body varied with the growth of Kṛishṇa's love towards her ; her lotus-face varied with the lotus of Kṛishṇa's mind ; her breasts with Cupid's finely-pointed darts varied with Kṛishṇa's growth ; her loins waved with the waving of Kṛishṇa's patience ; her braided tresses increased with the increase of Kṛishṇa's love-chord towards her, so that her growth might keep pace with Kṛishṇa's pleasures. Thus Rukmini, the sister of Rukmi, Rukmaratha, Rukmabāhu, Rukmakaśa and Rukmanētra, being in her teens, heard of the accomplishments of Sri-Kṛishṇa from the hosts who came to her house, and came to a resolution in her mind that Kṛishṇa would be the fittest man for her to take as her husband.

"Sri-Kṛishṇa, also after hearing of the beauty, intelligence, character, and general accomplishments of Rukmini, and being satisfied on every item, thought that she would be the fittest woman for him to take as his wife. While all his relatives were holding consultations with the wise about giving Rukmini in marriage to Kṛishṇa, the foolish Rukmi came to a different conclusion and wanted her to be given to Siśupāla. Rukmini, after having ascertained her brother's intentions, sighed in heart, called in a confidential Brāhmaṇa and told him that her hot-headed brother had come to a firm resolve to give her in marriage to Siśupāla somehow, and that she wanted him to go to Dvāraka and inform Kṛishṇa of the affair. 'Best of Brāhmaṇas, as my father, too, cannot set aside the firm resolve of my brother, kindly go on this mission to Dvāraka, inform Kṛishṇa of the whole affair, and fetch him hither as soon as possible and thus baffle the endeavours of my brother.'

"The Brāhmaṇa, after hearing these and some other secret words, proceeded to Dvāraka, informed Kṛishṇa of his coming through the guards stationed outside, received Kṛishṇa's orders, entered the palace, saw Kṛishṇa seated on a seat of gold, and blessed him to become a bridegroom. Wherenpon Kṛishṇa, ever bent upon observing Vedic ritual, vacated his seat smiling, requested the Brāhmaṇa to sit on the same seat and worshipped him, as he is himself worshipped by the angels, fed him sumptuously, approached him most heartily and slowly, and with his hands, which wield sway over the whole world, pressed his legs and addressed him thus : —

" ' Best of Brāhmaṇas, I see you are always contented. Such a state is attained very happily. This *dharma* is acceptable to the elders. A Brāhmaṇa, however wealthy he may be, should be contented and happy and should not be swayed by a feeling of pride. Whoever does not quit this *swarthaṁ*, would have all his desires satisfied. Whoever is not content with the little that he gets would always be crushed, even though he gets Indra's riches. Whoever is content with the little that he gets would be quite happy, even though he be a pauper. Therefore, I would prostrate before those who show signs of friendship to all beings, who are content with the little they get, who are patient, who are good and not proud. O intelligent and best of Brāhmaṇas, I like that king, under whose sway all the people live comfortably, in whose kingdom you are, and by whom you are protected. Kindly let me know what induced you to enter this impenetrable island-home at this unusual hour. I promise to satisfy your desire and you may depend upon it. '

"Having heard these words from Kṛishṇa, the divine being in human form, the Brāhmaṇa replied thus : — ' Lord, there lives a king in Vidarbha, Bhīshmaka by name. He has a daughter whose name is Rukmini. She, being intent on serving you, requests you to marry her, and has sent

some news to you through me which, if you be pleased to hear, I am ready to narrate in her own words :— O killer of Kamsa, punisher of the vicious, plunderer of the wealth of beauty, robber of women's hearts. Kṛishṇa, by hearing whose name all the *tapas* (*adhyatmika*, *adhibhautika*, *adhibhautika*) would vanish ; by seeing whose frame, the eye would derive the pleasure of seeing every thing in the Universe ; by alway serving whom a man can attain eminence ; by repeating whose name a man is freed from the trammels of *samsāra* — to such a man is my mind united. You are the best witness to all this. Although the members of my sex feel generally shy of expressing such secrets, I, quitting aside all sense of shame, speak my heart before you, as the feeling of *bhakti* preponderates in me, for which I beg to be excused. Kṛishṇa, to your enemies as a lion to fattened elephants, the pleasure of the whole world, illuminated by family, education, beauty, age, wealth, health, strength, charity, bravery, and mercy — is there anyone among women that does not love you ? Even Lakshmi, the best among women, has loved you. Say, has this love emanated from me alone ?

" Purushottama, you who have Lakshmi in your breast, the proud Sisupāla, king of Chedi, intends to carry me off soon, — me who always thinks of you and you alone, as the fox desires the food best adapted for the lion. The meanest of mortals knows not your wondrous valour. If, if my previous births, I had worshipped angels, Brāhmans, *gurūs*, *pandits*, and others, and if I had given gifts to the entire satisfaction of Vishnu, Krishṇa would now carry me off and marry me after slaying in battle Sisupāla and other such meanest of kings. Kṛishṇa, who have in your navel the lotus which is the birthplace of Brahmā, you who are the best of *purushas*, you have no reason to find a pretext. If, to-morrow, you come with your armies and slay Jarāsandha, Sisupāla, and others in battle and carry me off with your valour, I am ready to accompany you and marry you in the *rakshasa* form. Kṛishṇa, if you should think as to how best you can take me off from the palace, — for you will be labouring under the impression that in carrying me off you will be obliged to shed, unnecessarily, the blood of so many relatives, friends, and servants, who would offer resistance to you — I have devised a measure, which I shall carefully suggest to you if you be pleased to hear. My people are accustomed to send the bride, previous to the marriage proper, to worship the tutelary deities outside the town. I shall be sent on this occasion outside the town to worship Pārvati according to custom, and that will be the most opportune moment when you can come and carry me off. Kṛishṇa, my protector, if you think I am not fit to receive your mercy, the receiving of which is the goal of the learned and the old by dispelling their ignorance, and if in consequence you do not choose to take me to wife, I shall assume at the least one hundred rebirths, perform *vratas* in the meanwhile, always think about you and attain your mercy and then marry you. You may rest assured that this is truth and nothing but the truth. Do not, therefore, give a deaf ear to my entreaties but carry me off soon. My protector, the ears that do not hear your soothing words ; the beautiful frame which cannot enjoy with you — the best of beings ; the eyes that cannot see you that are beloved by the world at large ; the tongue that cannot drink the nectar which emanates from your lips ; the nose that cannot smell the fragrance of your beautiful bunch of flowers ; the life that cannot serve you, the best type of mankind — all these are next to useless, even though they live. They should be considered as dead rather than living. All the *jñānarthis* (seekers of wisdom), if they should live at all, should serve you and you alone and any other form of servitude is next to useless."

" The Brāhmaṇa, sent by Rukmini, having fulfilled his mission to her entire satisfaction, told Kṛishṇa of her exceeding beauty, and wanted him to do the best he could under the circumstances and told him that she was the best object for his love. ' O Kṛishṇa, Rukmini's feet are the best resorts for all tendrils ; her thighs laugh at golden plantain trees ; her hands are beautiful with a coating of redness ; her neck is exceedingly beautiful, being turned a little and being as white as a conch. There is a suspicion whether she possesses a waist or not. Her breasts give pleasure to

the eye ; her forehead laughs at the semi-circular moon ; her braided tresses laugh at black wild bees ; her sight resembles the finely-pointed darts of Cupid ; her eye-brows resemble the branches of Cupid arrows ; her words invigorate the mind ; her face resembles the moon. Krishna, you are the best person fitted for her and she for you. All others are useless to both. I tell you, on my *gurū*, you should be married. Why do you make unnecessary delays ? Take all people by whom you wish to be accompanied and come with me to fetch Rukmini. Slay your enemies, do good to the world and obtain fame.'

" When Krishna heard all that the Brâhman had said, he took hold of the Brâhman's hand, and, laughing, spoke to him thus :— ' O Brâhman, my thoughts are fully centred on Rukmini and that is why my nights are always sleepless. I knew already of Rukmini's hindrance to this marriage. Therefore as fire is taken out by the contact of wood with wood, so I shall bring Rukmini after slaying the armies of my enemies. I shall immediately go to Vidarbha, enter Bhishmaka's territory in a fitting manner and slay all my enemies who come across my path and tear open their bodies.'

" Krishna ascertained from the Brâhman the auspicious moment of Rukmini's marriage and ascended with him the chariot drawn by four of his best horses harnessed to it by the charioteer under his own instructions, and reached Vidarbha in a single night. There Bhishmaka, king of Kundina, who could not set his son aside, had resolved to marry his daughter to Sisupala and had made the necessary preparations for its performance. At this juncture the public streets, lanes, and thoroughfares of the city were swept and kept scrupulously clean, excellent sandalwood water was sprinkled in them, they were adorned with beautiful flowers of various kind ; all houses were repaired and kept in good order, incense and camphor were burnt ; all the men and women were in their best and appropriate attire, were adorned with beautiful flowers, the best jewels and excellent scents ; drums and instruments of all sorts were beaten and played. Thus the whole city presented a gay and lively appearance. Then Mahârâja Bhishmaka first propitiated the *pitrîs*, fed the Brâhmans, purified the city, had Rukmini bathed, adorned her with the best jewels and in the best attire possible, performed all observances in accordance with the strict injunctions of the *Vedas*, engaged Brâhmaus to chant the various *mantras*, and the *purohit* to perform *navagraha homa* and to give away gifts of sesamum seeds, cows, silver, gold, and cloths.

" At this juncture the proud Sisupala came to the city with the object of marrying Rukmini, accompanied by various armies under his command, his innumerable relatives, friends, and others. Jarâsandha, Dantavakra, Salva, Biduratha, Paundraka, Vasudeva, and other kings came to the firm resolution that they would defend Sisupala against Krishna and Balarâma and all their innumerable armies, relatives, and friends and drive them off the field, and overcome any objection to making Sisupala marry Rukmini. Very many other *râjâs* came to witness the marriage. Of these Sisupala was lodged by Bhishmaka in the best lodgings possible, and when Balarâma heard this, he went to the place with a host, all the while thinking that Krishna went there single-handed, and that very many kings were there to help Sisupala, and that when the girl was to be brought, a fight would necessarily ensue and that at that juncture Krishna would need assistance.

" At that time when the host of *râjâs* were approaching the town, Rukmini entertained grave doubts about Krishna's coming thither. ' To-morrow is the auspicious moment ; the marriage is fast approaching ; my mind is wavering as to why Krishna has not come as yet ; whether Krishna has given a deaf ear to my news ; why it is that the Brâhman resembling the fire has not come here as yet ; whether my attempts to marry Krishna are to be fulfilled or frustrated ; whether Brahmâ has thought otherwise ' — such were the thoughts passing in the mind of Rukmini at this moment.

'Whether the enlightened and best of Brâhmans did repair to Kriśṇa or no; whether he was fatigued on the way or reached the place safely; whether he found fault with me for having given unnecessary trouble to the Brâhman or accepted my entreaty; whether the Almighty will help me in my undertakings or baffle my endeavours; whether my tutelary deity, Pârvatî, will protect me or otherwise, and after all whether my fortune is favourable or the reverse. I am at a loss to know all this' — such were the thoughts that she entertained at this moment. 'The Brâhman may not have gone to Dvâraka and therefore Kriśṇa has not been able to come here. There is no confidential person whom I could hereafter send to fetch Kriśṇa thither. There is not an atom of justice to be got from my brother Rukmi. He intends to give me to Sîgupâla, the staunchest enemy of my lover, Kriśṇa. Even my Pârvatî has lost her pity for me.' The above were her thoughts at that time.

"She would not communicate her thoughts even to her mother. Her face had turned very pale. She would not even smile, nor would she try to remove the wild bees which used to sit on her face, thinking it to be a lotus. She would not unwind the twisted pearl necklaces on her breast. She would ever be bent on eagerly looking at Kriśṇa's arrival. She would weep, thinking she was not to be blessed by marrying Sri-Kriśṇa; she would not braid her tresses; would not talk even to her favourite maids; she would not take food, nor drink water. She would not teach her pet parrot a song. She would not play on the lyre and would shun society as much as possible. As sorrow was great at her heart on account of Kriśṇa not having come to marry her as yet, as he was in justice bound to do, Rukmini, — the lion-waisted, lotus-scented, mirror-faced, flower-bodied, lotus-eyed, swan-gaited, creeper-framed, the jewel of jewels, the flower of all women, with hands formed after the lotus, — would not daub her body with musk, would not bathe, would not see a looking-glass, nor wear flowers, nor resort to parks, nor tame swans, nor grow creepers, nor wear jewels, nor wear marks on the forehead, nor swim in water; she, being unable to bear the finely pointed darts of Cupid, would shiver at sweet soft winds, would be terrified at the noise of the wild bees, would be struck with horror at the song of nightingale, would be annoyed at the noise of parrots and run away from them, would not bear the heat of moonlight and would stand aloof from the shade of the sweet mango-tree. While thus eagerly waiting for the coming of Hari and looking carelessly at all other business, and being scorched by Cupid's arrows, there occurred a tremor of her left eye and left shoulder, which foreboded something good. Then the Brâhman, being sent by Sri-Kriśṇa, arrived, when Rukmini went and stood before him with a glowing face and smiling, then the Brâhman told her:— 'O Rukmini, Sri-Kriśṇa was exceedingly pleased at your good character, has given me immense wealth, has also himself arrived here. He is at present outside the town. He would marry you in the *râkshasa* form, even though the whole host of angels and *râkshasas* come and oppose him. You have this day reaped the fruit of your labours.' Afterwards Rukmini replied thus:— 'You have protected me by carrying my news to Kriśṇa and bringing him here. I live by your mercy. There is in the whole world none other like you. I cannot repay the good you have done me except by a prostration before you.' Thus saying, she prostrated before him and dismissed him.

"Afterwards Bhishmaka, having heard of the arrival of Balarâma and Kriśṇa at his daughter's marriage, went to meet them with beating of drums, received them kindly, presented them with cloths and ornaments, showed resting-places for their armies, friends, and relatives, showed hospitality to all the other kings as became each of them, and supplied them with all necessaries. Then the townsfolk having heard of the arrival of Sri-Kriśṇa at Rukmini's marriage, came and saw him and soliloquised thus:— 'This Kriśṇa must be the fittest man for that Rukmini and she for him. Brâhma can be called intelligent only when such a pair are brought into unison with each other. What matters it if only by the good deeds that we have done in our previous births Kriśṇa becomes the husband of Rukmini after slaying all those who offer resistance to him in battle.'

"At this juncture, while the soldiers fully armed were accompanying the dancing-women and were advancing with offerings for the god, the Brâhman women wearing flowers, fruits, sandalwood, cloths, and jewels, were proceeding singing, while there was a tremendous noise caused by the beating of drums, the playing of different kinds of music, and while damsels were following, Rukmini, with the utmost feminine modesty, with ringlets falling on her forehead, proceeded from the palace to worship Pârvatî. While a host of people of various sorts were accompanying her, she was all the while thinking of Kâshîna in her mind, and went to the temple of Gaurî, washed her hands and feet, sipped water thrice, and with a pure heart approached and stood before her. Then the Brâhman women bathed Gaurî and Sîva, applied sandalwood, worshipped them with flowers, offered various offerings which were brought for the purpose, and made Rukmini prostrate. Then Rukmini said :— 'I fully believe in my mind the everlasting, time-honoured couple of Pârvatî and Maheśvara. I pray you to bless me. You are the chiefest and oldest of all mothers. You are the ocean of mercy. Whoever conscientiously and firmly believes in you will not suffer. Kindly, therefore, have mercy on me and bless me that I may have Kâshîna as my husband.'

"Rukmini then worshipped the Brâhman couples with *pân-supâri*, salted cakes, fruits, and sugar-canies, upon which they were exceedingly delighted and blessed Rukmini when she again prostrated before Pârvatî, and quitted the temple and came out. As a spark of lightning in the wintry sky, as the animal in the orbit of the moon, as the *mohini* which appears on the scene when the curtain is drawn by Brahmâ, as Lakshmi who came out from the milky sky when it was churned by the angels and *râkshasas*, using Mount Manthara as the churning staff and Vasuki as the chord, glittering with the rays of the finest ornaments, Rukmini came out of the temple of Gaurî with the pace of the fattened swan that lives in the golden lotuses of Mânasarovara, with the waist which is troubled by the weight of her heavy breasts which resembled a pair of golden pots, with her diamond-ringed hands twisted round the hands of a maiden, with chins sparkling with the lustre of diamond ear-rings, with ringlets which cover the round forehead like fattened wild bees which encircle sweet-scented lotuses, with beautiful smiles which shed a lustre of moonlight at an unseasonable moment, with lips red as ruby which shed a ruddy lustre to the rows of teeth white as jasmine, with the upper garment resembling the flag of Cupid, with precious stones glittering in the gold belt as rainbow out of season, with sight resembling the glitter of arrows drawn by Cupid from his sheath which broke open the hearts of valorous kings, with measured step and slow eagerly waiting for the arrival of Kâshîna and attracting the hearts of all brave *râjâs*. With ringlets black as wild bees, with face resembling the full moon, with the eyes of the hare with coral lips, with the voice of the nightingale, with feet soft as tendrils, with breasts resembling the frontal lobes of the fattened elephants, with sand-heaped buttocks, with the best elephant gait, with red lotus hands, with rose-scented body, with lion's waist, Rukmini came and was seen by all the brave *râjâs*, who were troubled in their hearts very much.

"Rukmini passed by the post of kings who were confused when the smiling look, indicative of feminine bashfulness, fell upon them. They lost their valour, nobility, and honour, lost their senses, let slip the weapons from their hands. They were not able to mount their elephants, horses, or chariots. They were so much bewildered that they leaned towards the ground. Rukmini removed the ringlets from the forehead with the nails of her left hand, and, looking askance at this host, saw Sri-Kâshîna, with face resembling the rays of the full moon, with waist resembling that of the lion, with eyes broad as the lotus, with a beautiful chest, with body shining as a newly-formed cloud, with shoulders resembling the trunk of Airâvata, with cloths of gold and best ornaments, and with neck turned like a conch. Rukmini saw this world-enchanter and was delighted with the beauty, age, character, nobility, valour, and glitter of Kâshîna, and being enraptured with love she intended to climb his chariot when he saw her and with the face of fattened elephant approached and lifted her up and placed her in his chariot, not caring a straw for the host of kings who were

viewing, as the lion carries off the piece of flesh lying amidst foxes. He then blew his conch and proceeded towards Dvāraka, while Balarāma and others were following him with their armies. Jarāsandha and others of his host were not able to brook this and questioned each other as to why they were seeing all this, so much perplexed. A crew of shepherds are robbing us of our honour and are carrying off the girl as the low animals rob the honour of the lion. When else can we show our valour if we cannot show it on this occasion? Are our bows and arrows fit to be thrown away into fire if we cannot use them now? Would the people of the world fail to laugh if we let slip this opportunity and let go the girl? Jarāsandha and others having thus reasoned with one another, became exceedingly angry, put on mail armours, bore arrows and bows, and began bragging to one another, and being joined by the charioteers, infantry, and cavalry, went in pursuit of the Jādava forces, telling them to stop. This increased their valour and they showered a volley of arrows on them when these were returned by a similar shower from the Jādava leaders.

"While the troops of the enemy showered a volley of arrows and encircled Kṛishṇa and his armies, Rukmini, with a look, indicative of extreme terror and shame, saw the face of Kṛishṇa, when he told her: 'My dear girl,' you may in a moment witness Jādava warriors opposing the enemy and they will be very much troubled and would either run away or die.' Thus did Kṛishṇa console Rukmini when Balarāma and others of Jādava warriors showered a host of arrows, which resembled the heavy thunder and clouds that spread over the whole sky at the time of the deluge, over Jarāsandha and others, the enemy's camp presented an appearance of pieces of horses, chariots, and foot-soldiers, of head-severed *mahāwats*, charioteers and horsemen of powdered chests, hands, legs, of broken skulls, of extensive hair, of severed feet, knees, calves of the legs, of powdered teeth, of thrown-off ornaments and other similar ones worn by the brave at the battle-field, of the weepings of the valiant, of broken pieces of instruments of war, of umbrellas, of tattered armour, of dust raised to the skies caused by the trampling of horses, of motionless chariots, of the low cries of horses and elephants, of the sounds of battle-drums, of tattered host of kings, of rivers of flood, of the noises of devils, of foxes and other animals eating the flesh and drinking the blood of corpses, of she-devils feasting on skulls and flesh of carcases.

"Jarāsandha and others, the enemies of Kṛishṇa, being unable to bear his attack, turned their backs and fled, assembled at a certain spot, wept and soothed Sisupāla, who was before them pale-faced and as one who lost his wife, emitting hot breath by asking him whether he is alive after being relieved from the hands of the enemy. Jarāsandha and others said to Sisupāla: 'Man can live anywhere, provided there is life in the body. If a man lives, a wife will somehow come of her own accord. You are now alive and therefore a wife can be secured from somewhere. Do not, therefore, weep over this affair very often.' Jarāsandha again said to Sisupāla, 'Sisupala, hear me. Man is not the agent of any deed. He would do a deed being held tight by the Almighty, as the puppet plays being led by the leading strings of the man in a pantomime. I invaded Mathurā seventeen times, when my whole army was reduced to nothing by Kṛishṇa and I was captured by Balarāma, whereupon Kṛishṇa, out of mercy, released me. I again invaded Mathurā the eighteenth time with twenty-three *akshauhinis*, when I drove out my enemies, Kṛishṇa and Balarāma, and gained a complete victory. I neither felt sorrow over a defeat, nor joy over a victory. If we should enquire carefully into this day's proceedings we cannot vanquish Kṛishṇa, even though we join Siva and wage a war against him. Nor is this all. The whole world is pervaded by omnipotent time. As this was a good day for the Jādavas, they overcame us with the bravery of Kṛishṇa — us, whose valour is recognized in the three worlds. We, too, can gain victories over our enemy if fortune be in our favour. Weep not, therefore, for this trifle.'

" Jarāsandha and others thus consoled Sisupāla and went each his own way to his own country. Sisupāla, too, went home with his armies. Then Rukmi, the brother of Rukmini, not agreeing to the carrying off of his sister by Kṛishṇa and not reconciling himself with the state of affairs, pursued him with an *akshauhini* and spoke thus to his charioteer :— ' This shepherd boy has slighted me and carried off my sister Rukmini, as if he were a daring valiant soldier. He knows not my prowess and descent. I must chase him swiftly, drive on the chariot so as to overtake him. I will, with my glittering arrows, put him down and show my valour.' Having thus addressed the charioteers, Rukmi, not knowing Kṛishṇa's prowess, drove near him and said :— ' Stop a little, you butter-stealing shepherd boy. You shall very soon see your fate.' Having thus slighted him, he aimed three sharp arrows at him and spoke to him in a manner which irritated Kṛishṇa very much :— ' Thou shepherd, you are not our compeer to carry off our child. What *dharma* do you follow? What caste do you belong to? Of what family are you? Where were you born? Where brought up? What is your calling? What is your *gōtra*? Who knows you? You have no sense of shame or honour. Wherever you come you assume a disguise and do not appear at all in your true colours before your enemies. Moreover, you are no king. You are not tied to the world. Therefore leave our child and depart, otherwise I will put down your pride in battle by steel-pointed arrows which appear as flames of fire at the time of *pralaya*.'

" Sri-Kṛishṇa laughed at Rukmi, tore asunder his bow with one arrow, with six others his body, with eight others his chariot horses, with two more his charioteer, with three pointed ones his banner, he broke another of his bows and arrows and reduced to pieces all his other weapons. Rukmi not being pleased at this state of affairs, descended from his chariot, held a knife in his hand and came upon Kṛishṇa once more, when the latter powdered his knife and armour. Then Kṛishṇa grew exceedingly angry at the conduct of Rukmi and drew his knife from his sheath and was about to cut off his head, when Rukmini interfered and fell upon her knees before Kṛishṇa and said :— ' Enlightened and honourable being, seat of mercy incarnate, angelic god, my brother, not knowing your omniscience and omnipresence, has committed a grievous fault, for which I intercede on his behalf and request you to excuse him. My preserver, I am not come here to say that my brother has committed no fault. Whatever may be the heinous nature of the crime he has committed, if you should kill him, my parents would weep over the death of their son and pine away instead of feeling glad at their being able to secure Vishṇu as their son-in-law, and therefore you should excuse him.' Thus, with a shivering tone, in extreme terror, a convulsed frame, a great fallen countenance, dishevelled hair and ever-weeping eyes, Rukmini prayed to Kṛishṇa, when he desisted from murdering Rukmi and went back intent on punishing him differently. He then tied him to his chariot and shaved him in the most awkward way possible. Meanwhile, the Jadaiva leaders drove the enemy's troops off the field and came near Kṛishṇa. Then Balarāma, seeing the almost lifeless frame of Rukmi and being very much moved, untied the strings, liberated him, approached Kṛishṇa, and said :— ' O Kṛishṇa, it is not proper for you to shave the head and face of a relative like Rukmi. If a relative should come to battle knowingly or unknowingly, instead of telling him to go away, committing such a deed is more shameful than severing the head off the body. O Kṛishṇa, you make no difference between a friend and a foe. You neither show favour to one, nor disfavour to another. You treat all men equally. That you should now have thought otherwise and offered such a treatment to a relative is exceedingly bad in you.'

" He then turned round to Rukmini and said :— ' Blame not our Kṛishṇa for the deed he has committed. We should not think that one ought to protect another for the good he has done and punish him for the evil committed. This depends entirely on the *karma* of our previous existence.

Karmic law pervades through the whole universe. Therefore your brother has but suffered for the deed he has committed in a previous existence. We should not kill a relative, though he deserves death. To him a sense of shame should be more than death. When Brahmā created the four castes and defined the Varnārāma dharma of each, he said that it is but proper to kill any person in battle, be he a brother, father, or son. That is why kings in their thirst for dominion slay any person in battle, irrespective of the relationship they bear. Those kings who want to earn a reputation of being great, being desirous of dominion, wealth, sustenance, women or honour, and not for a moment thinking of the troubles they would endure in the other world, always drag other people to quarrel for one reason or another. O Rukmini, hear me. To the ignorant one that makes a difference between God and man, being surrounded by the mayā of Vishṇu; to those that draw a distinction between *sthūla*, *sukshma*, and *karana śarīras*, and between *jñanendriyas* and *karmendriyas*, there exists a difference between friend, foe, and acquaintance. As the sun, moon, and stars appear in mirrors, waters, and precious stones, as the horizon presents various shapes in the waters of pots, ponds, lakes, wells, and rivers, so the all-pervading Universal Soul (God) appears differently to different living beings. This *sthūla śarīra*, capable of undergoing life and death, assumes the form of the five elements and makes the *jīva* wander in this miserable *samsāra* and undergo life and death in utter ignorance. As the eye and the objects of vision appear bright when sun is shining, the *jñanendriyas* and *karmendriyas* follow their own calling when the soul is shining. As there is no relation between the sun and the objects of vision, so no relation exists between the soul and the body. As waxing and waning disturb only the fifteen phases of the moon and not the nectar-phased moon itself, so birth and death disturb the body and not the soul. As the sleeping person enjoys the appearances presented to him in a dream, so the person who has no knowledge of the soul thinks the transient pleasures of this world to be immortal. Therefore, think not that Kṛishṇa has put your brother to shame and that he has suffered from it. Put off, therefore, all sorrow from your heart. O Rukmini, put off all your sorrow which arises out of ignorance by your knowledge of self. It is not proper for you, who knows the self, to weep like the ignorant.'

"When Rukmini was thus taught by Balarāma, she learnt fully of the soul and left off weeping. Rukmi, who was put to shame by Kṛishṇa, suffered like one under the pangs of death, sobbed in his fulness of heart over his disfigured frame and resolved that he would not enter Kundinagara, without defeating Kṛishṇa. He therefore stayed outside the town. Thus did Kṛishṇa take Rukmini to his abode after slaying all his enemies. Preparations for marriage were being made throughout the town. There were dances, songs, and the beating of drums. Men and women put on their best attire. Public thoroughfares became damp from the perspirations of the elephants of the kings who came to witness the marriage. Plantain and areca trees were tied at the front of every house. Camphor and incense were burnt. The walls, terraces, doorways, doors, and pillars of every house were beautifully adorned. Festoons and cloths, flowers, and precious stones were tied, and standards were raised everywhere.

"On this occasion Sri-Kṛishṇa married Rukmini (Lakshmi), a woman best adapted to his tastes, possessing an extreme sense of honour, capable of making others exceedingly rich, honored by her relatives, and in turn honouring them, of good character, capable of removing immense poverty, and wearing the best jewels and putting on the best cloths. By such a marriage Kṛishṇa obtained an everlasting fame. Then the townsfolk, wishing for their welfare, came to see the newly-married pair and gave them valuable offerings. The kings of the various kingdoms of the world were delighted and wondered at hearing of the marriage of Rukmini and Kṛishṇa. O Parikshit, the people of the city were overjoyed to the happy union of Rukmini and Kṛishṇa."

INDEX.

- | | | |
|---|--|--------------------------|
| Abasses, Abasai, coin | ... ... | 127 and n. |
| Abdullah Khan, Asif; Nawâb; brother of | | |
| Sâ'dullah Khan | ... ... | 69 and n., 70 |
| Abd-us-samad Khan, a commander | ... ... | 48 f. |
| Aâshai Singh, Rajah of Jodhpur | ... ... | 11 n. |
| âfrî, red powder | ... ... | 316 |
| aborigines of India | ... ... | 269 f. |
| Âbu, Arbuda, mt. | ... ... | 162 n., 166 |
| Âbu'l-Fazl and the Gakkars | ... ... | 8 n. |
| 'Abu-us-samad Khan, a commander | ... ... | 61 |
| Achalgadh, fort on Mt. Abû | ... ... | 166 |
| Achâraj, one who officiates at a funeral, | | |
| | 283 f., 297, 305 | |
| Achyûta, k., of Vijayanagara | ... ... | 352 |
| Achyutarâyâbhuyayam of Sri Râjanâtha, with a commentary by Pandit R. V. | | |
| Krishnamachariar, book-notice | ... ... | 352 |
| Adam, among the Chuhras | ... ... | 114, 143 f. |
| Âdam, Sultân | ... ... | 8 n., 9 |
| adhîbhatika, natural | ... ... | 378 |
| adhîdaivika, spiritual | ... ... | 378 |
| Adhokshaya=Vishnu | ... ... | 164 |
| âdhyâtmika, relating to the soul or supreme spirit | ... ... | 378 |
| Âdikavi, the first poet; an epithet of Vâlmîki, | | |
| | 159 and n. | |
| adoption, among Pâjâb Hill Tribes | ... ... | 281 |
| Aetas of the Philippine Archipelago, congen- ers of the Andamanese | ... ... | 217, 246 |
| Afghânistân | ... ... | 3 |
| Afghâns in Indiâ | ... ... | 9, 14 f., 50, 61, 67, 70 |
| afîm, opium | ... ... | 20 |
| Afrâsîb, Beordâshâ, k., of Persia | ... ... | 1 n. |
| Afzal Khan, a commander | ... ... | 58 f. |
| Aggarâwâls, Baniâ section | ... ... | 268 |
| Aghâjî, Augugee, Governor of Larr... | ... ... | 104 |
| Aghâ Mirzâ Muhammed Sâdiq | ... ... | 68 |
| Aghâ Rizâ Khan, envoy to Ahmad Shâh | ... ... | 70 |
| Agnikulas, race or dynasty | ... ... | 162 n. |
| Agnikunda, sacred place on Mt. Abû | 162 n., 166 | |
| Agra, tn. | ... ... | 100 n., 101 n. |
| agriculture, among the Pâjâb Hill Tribes | ... ... | 374 |
| Ahmadâbâd in Gujarat | ... ... | 11 n. |
| Ahmad Khan, Bangash, ruler of Farrukhâbâd, or Nawâb, Ghâzanfar Jang | 11 ff., 50, 60 f., 64 ff. | |
| Ahmad Shâh, Abdâlî, and the Indian Wazir 'Imâd-ul-Mulk (1756-7). Contributed by | | |
| W. Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Ser- vice | ... ... | 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff. |
| ahrf, beastings | ... ... | 351 n. |
| âkru, jhiwar or jhar, milk collector | ... ... | 351 |
| Aibak Bâh, a chief | ... ... | 4 |
| Airâvata, elephant of Indra | ... ... | 381 |
| Ajâdhan, modern Pâkkattan | ... ... | 5 and n. |
| Akâlavârsha, Râshtrâkûta, K., 287; Krishna II. | ... ... | 287 f. |
| Akâlgâdhâ, tn. | ... ... | 4 |
| Akbar, emp., the Khôkhars of his time | 3 n., 8; the Gakkars, 9; in Chuhra legends, | |
| | | 73 f., 107 |
| Akbarâbâd and Ahmad Shâh | 51, 60, 63, 65 | |
| akshauhinis, army of 10 anikins | ... ... | 382 f. |
| Âlamgîr II., Azîz-ud-din Emp. | ... 11, 64, 68 n. | |
| Alamkâravimarbini, a work by Jayaratha | ... 153 | |
| Alchi, in W. Tibet, mchodrtse at, | 88 f.; | |
| monastery, 148; or Alchi-mkhar-gog. | ... 95 f. | |
| Aleppo, tn. | ... ... | 176 n. |
| Alexander the Great in Pâjâb | ... ... | 2 |
| Alexandretta, Scanderoon, port of Aleppo | 176 n. | |
| Algiers, Argeer | ... ... | 176 and n. |
| Alif Chela, Chuhra priest | ... ... | 29, 31 |
| Aligarh, Kol | ... ... | 70 |
| 'Alî Qulî Khan, Dâghistâni, nicknamed the 'Six-fingered,' 11; whose daughter was be- trothed to 'Imâd-ul-Mulk, 14, 18, 43 ff., 49, 125; or Hali-Kouli-Kaan | ... ... | 125 n. |
| Alî Shâh of Kâshmîr | ... ... | 7 n. |
| Allahâbâd and Capt. Jonathan Scott, 11; 67, 68 and n.; or Halloe, and Richard Bell, 99, 100 n.; ancient Prâg, capital of the Solar Dynasty | ... ... | 266 f. |
| Alleppo, tn., and Richard Bell, 108 n., 130, 133, 134 and n. | | |
| Al-lukandatu't-tujîr, an inn near Nazareth | 178 | |
| Alsopp, Mr., Alsop, the king's brewer, 174 and n. | | |
| Am (Toda) for Yama | ... ... | 84 |
| Amarasimha, and other forms | ... ... | 167 |
| amâvas, last day of the lunar month, | 255, | |
| | 289, 301, 303, 312 | |
| Ambâlâ, totemism in | ... ... | 52 |
| Ambikâ=Pârvati | ... ... | 164 f., 170 |
| amin, an official | ... ... | 351 |
| amîrash, ornaments | ... ... | 308 |
| Amîrpur, vil. in the Pâjâb | ... ... | 2 |
| Amitagati, author of the Subhâshitaratna- sâmdoha | ... ... | 170 |
| Amôghavarsha or Vakpatirâja II., Râshtra- kûta | ... ... | 165 ff., 287 |
| Anah or Hanna, tn., and Richard Bell | 130, 133 | |

| | | | | |
|---|--|--|--|--|
| Anahilapattana, the Chaulukya Dynasty of, 181 | | | | |
| Arandpal, resisted Mahmud's sixth invasion of India 4 | | | | |
| Ānandrāo, Maharāja 166 n. | | | | |
| anangalekha, a love-letter of Mālagavati ... 158 | | | | |
| Anangaviti, character in the <i>Navasāhasrika-</i> <i>charita</i> 154, 156 | | | | |
| Anant, g. 301 | | | | |
| Anantasāyana, tn., Trivandrum ... 352 | | | | |
| Anapāya—Chōla, k., identified with Kulöt- tunga I 228 and n. | | | | |
| Anavamala, an excrementitious product ... 376 n. | | | | |
| ancestor worship, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 305 | | | | |
| Andamanese languages, 181 f.; are aggluti- native, Grammar of, 183 ff.; the Theory of Universal Grammar applied to them, 217 ff., 317 ff., 353 ff. | | | | |
| Andherī, in the Pañjāb 3 | | | | |
| Angkor, in Siam, temples in 284 | | | | |
| Anglo-Indian commercial terms, old 252 | | | | |
| Anhilvād, Chaulukya territory ... 166, 167 n., 171 | | | | |
| animal worship, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 306 | | | | |
| Animism, among the Turanian races, 204; among the Chines, 211; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 303 | | | | |
| Antā Mānker, a Marhattah and Ahmad Shāh 48, 55, 58 f. | | | | |
| anujanman, a younger brother 150 | | | | |
| Anūpshahr, tn. on the Ganges 15 f., 69 | | | | |
| Anwalah, tn., and Ahmad Shāh 66, 69 | | | | |
| Aphyi-Tomo-rDorje, an image at Nyemo ... 88 | | | | |
| Apostates to Hinduism 297 | | | | |
| Arabs seized Dfu, 101 and n., 102; in Naza- reth 177 and n., 178, 179 and n. | | | | |
| Arakan, and Thos. Pratt 174 | | | | |
| Arbuda, mt., 187; or Ābu ... 182 and n., 186 | | | | |
| Archæological Société D'Angkor, The French, 284 | | | | |
| Archæology in W. Tibet, by the Rev. A. H. Francke, contd. from Vol. XXXV, p. 333 — III—Inscriptions at Basgo and Nyemo: (a) The Fortress of Basgo, 85; (b) Hymn in honour of Seiggernam-rgyal, 86; (c) Ancient ruined Monastery of Basgo, 87; (d) ruined Nunnery at Nyemo, 88; IV—Inscriptions at Daru (a) of King Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal, 89 ff.; (b) passage from a Votive Tablet of King bDeldan and Prince (or king) bDe-legs; (c) Sanskrit—Tibetan Votive Inscription by the Minister Thse-dbang-dongrub, c 1800 A.D., 92; V—The Rock Inscript- ions at Sheh, 93 ff.; Appendix—The Age of the Buddhist Stone Images at Ladakh, 97 f.; Supplementary Note 148 | | | | |
| Arjuna, the hero... 102 | | | | |
| Arrabia, wilderness of 130 f. | | | | |
| ārsham, a form of marriage 376 n. | | | | |
| arts, a ceremony 296 | | | | |
| artisans among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 274 | | | | |
| Arubar, Rupar, q. v. 41 | | | | |
| Arunāchala, Tiruvannāmalai, tn. 282 | | | | |
| Arundhati, the wife of Vasishtha 169 | | | | |
| Āryā stanza, suggested as appearing in the Piprahwa Vase inscription 194 | | | | |
| Āryas, home of 264 | | | | |
| ārṣ-beṛ, chamberlain 16 | | | | |
| āśān, sitting place 39 | | | | |
| ashuṇ, the king-crow, among the Chines ... 204 | | | | |
| Āsi, Abdullah Khan 69 and n., 70 | | | | |
| Asia, Central, home of the Āryas 264 | | | | |
| āśinego, messengers, young asses ... 183 and n. | | | | |
| a'so, Chin clans 206 | | | | |
| Asōka, and the Buddha stūpae ... 118, 121, 124 | | | | |
| assemblies, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 273 | | | | |
| āsthāpan, to place 43 | | | | |
| Āśugā or Saśiprabhā 155 | | | | |
| āsuram, a form of marriage 273 | | | | |
| Ātāipur, 'Ātāpar, tn. in the Pañjāb ... 16 and n. | | | | |
| Ātāwā, tn.... 109 | | | | |
| Ātharva Vēda, recited 264 | | | | |
| Ath-bhōjā, goddess of Dhārach 42 | | | | |
| āth-bhōjāvālā, eight-handed image of Devi. 86 | | | | |
| āthri, Chuhra labourer... 21 | | | | |
| ātra, a form of marriage 376 n. | | | | |
| Atri, a Maharshi 164 | | | | |
| Auchityālavātā, a work by Kshemendra, 149 n. | | | | |
| Audh, and Ahmad Khan 61, 64 | | | | |
| Auliapn, in Siālkot 3 | | | | |
| Avalokitesvara, Bodhisattwa sPyan-ras-ryigs, 86 | | | | |
| Avanti, co. 149 | | | | |
| Avantipati, K. Sindhurāja 150 | | | | |
| Avantiśvara, K. Sindhurāja 155 | | | | |
| avatār 262 | | | | |
| Aw, a Chin spirit 204 | | | | |
| Aydhāt, or Mārān, nicknames of Beordāshā, 1 | | | | |
| ayódaung, Chin cemetery 215 | | | | |
| dyushmat, a salutation 119 | | | | |
| Āzimābād, tn. 67 | | | | |
| Āzīz-ud-din, Emperor Alamgr II ... 11, 64 | | | | |
| Bābar, emp., during whose reign the Gak- khars are first mentioned 8 f. | | | | |
| Bābā Khan, a chief 3 | | | | |
| Babylon, visited by R. Bell 180 f. | | | | |
| Bādal, a Kohrāna Rājā 2 and n. | | | | |
| Bādalgarh, fort in the Pañjāb 2 | | | | |
| Bādi, caste 271, 274, 310 | | | | |
| Bādī, tn. 48, 49, 70 | | | | |
| Bādmūn, g., in Keñthal, or Biru dēota 42 | | | | |
| bad nār, evil-eyed 90 | | | | |
| Badri Kasharam, in the Himalayas 263 | | | | |
| Badri Nath, hills 26, 268 | | | | |

| | | |
|--|--------------------------|-------------------|
| Bagdad recaptured by Murad IV, 126 n.; Bag- | ... | ... |
| Baghdad (Tauris, Tabris) visited by R. Bell, 128 ff. | ... | ... |
| Bageer, sub-division of the Mair Sumār | ... | 51 |
| Bagganogare, Bhagnagay, q. v. | ... | 128 |
| Bāgh Subahdār, grove in Allahabad, 68 n. | ... | 68 n. |
| Bahāwalpur, home of the Kafai sept | ... | 51 |
| Bahol Khān, a chief | ... | 8 |
| Bahra (Bheat) in the Pājāb | ... | 8 f. |
| Bahrām, Rājā of Ghog | ... | 2 |
| Bairagi, caste originally fakir, 270 f., 279; bury their dead, 283; 290; 304; salutation | ... | 370; occupations |
| Bairagi, a festival | ... | 302 f. |
| Bakheis, state official | ... | 350 and n. |
| Bakhtiar Khilji, attacked Bengal | ... | 266 |
| Bāla, son of Sānda | ... | 2 |
| Bāla, the Chuhṛā priest, 19, 26, 71 ff., 83, 107 f., 111, 114 ff., 135 f., 138 ff., 145 ff. | ... | ... |
| Balala, Bankila, in the Pājāb | ... | 5 and n. |
| Balarāma, brother of Krishnā, 376, 379 f., 382 ff. | ... | ... |
| Balawa, S. Andamanese tribe | ... | 217, 221 |
| Bal Deo, a Kākā of Jungā | ... | 34 |
| Balkh, tn. | ... | 46, 49 |
| Bell (V.) on the Nicobarese language | ... | 317 |
| Ballamgadh, fort, and Ahmad Shāh, 48 f., 55 f., 58 ff. | ... | ... |
| Bālmīkī's Daughter, Chuhṛā legend, 28 ff., 115, 136 | ... | ... |
| Baloches in India | ... | ... |
| Balram, g. | ... | 298 |
| Balrami, Brāhmans, the Sārsut | ... | 266 |
| Balramji Balardāma massacred the Kshatriyas | 265 f. | ... |
| Balsan, Pājāb State | ... | 296 |
| Balti inscriptions | ... | 95 |
| Baltis in Ladākh | ... | 91, 93 |
| Balu-mkhar inscriptions | ... | 96 |
| Bammara Potanna, Telugu poet | ... | 376 |
| Bāna, poet | ... | 151 |
| Bānā Sur | ... | 235 |
| Bazar, g. | ... | 255 f., 261 f. |
| Bangālah and Ahmad Shāh | ... | 61, 64 |
| Bangkok, Piprahwa Vase relics at | ... | 124 |
| Banglāh, Faisābād | ... | 67 |
| Banūs, converted Kshatriyas, 265; sects, 268; 271 f.; marriage rules, 275 ff.; 279 ff.; 289; eating customs, 311; titles, 312; salutation, 370 f.; occupations | ... | 372 |
| Barār, barren land | ... | 375 |
| Banru, home of the Mandār Afghāns | ... | 3 |
| Baneshir spirits | ... | 308 |
| banyan tree worshipped | ... | 272 |
| Bānyānā, sub-section of the Ghirthas | ... | 52 |
| baṇḍa, brooks, springs | ... | 272, 303 |
| Barid, betrethal | ... | 282 |
| barīqār, ornaments | ... | 308 |
| Barān, or Uñchāh-gapw, or Baland-Skahr and Ahmad Shāh | ... | 15 and n. |
| Barpa, a general | ... | 151 |
| Bārapa dynasty of Lāta | ... | ... |
| Barbe, Father, and the Nicobarese language, | ... | 317 |
| Bārelī, tn., and Ahmad Shāh | ... | 66, 69 |
| Bāri of Kongo, temple of Deo Mata | ... | 255 |
| Barmaur, 350; ancient Brahmapura | ... | 351 |
| Barni, form of betrothal | ... | 282 |
| Basant Panchāmi, a festival | ... | 902 |
| Basgo, fort in Western Tibet, inscriptions, | ... | 85 ff., 92 |
| Bashāhir, in the Himalayas | ... | ... |
| Bashahr, valley, in the Himalayas | ... | 261 |
| Bāshuk, or Chāldā, g. | ... | 255 and n., 261 |
| Basi, home of the Muhammadans | ... | 270 |
| Basra, Bossara, Busara, port | ... | 103 and n., 130 |
| Batehrū, (Pakkā and Kachchhā) Brāhmaṇ | ... | 52 |
| Bates, Capt. Dyer or Dier Roles, 174 and n., | ... | 175 ff. |
| Bathsheba, Barsheba... | ... | ... |
| batri or kardī, music | ... | 302 |
| Battambang, in Siam, now French territory, has famous monuments | ... | 284 |
| Bāwar territory | ... | ... |
| Bay Wagers, see Oeiro | ... | 174 and n. |
| Bēa, S. Andaman tribe | ... | 217, 219 ff., 238 |
| Béber, French Ambassador at the Magull Court, 1667 | ... | 100 n. |
| Bēdā tribe and sacrifices | ... | 298 f. |
| bedhī, an ewe | ... | 52 |
| Bīd-lagan, matrimonial ceremony | ... | 282 |
| Bell, Richard, Travels of | 98 ff., 125 ff., 173 ff. | ... |
| Bel Pāshī, in the Himalayas | ... | 261 n. |
| Benares, tn. | ... | 67, 171 |
| Bengal and Ahmad Shāh, 61, 64, 67; Bengalla, 101 and n., 174; and the Rājpūts, 265, 267; attacked by Bakhtiar Khilji | ... | 266, 270 |
| Beorāshāhsā, Afrāsiāb, k. of Persia | 1 and n. | ... |
| Bernier, on Tibetan dates | ... | ...35 n. |
| betrothal, among the Pājāb Hill Tribes | ... | 282 |
| Bezhan, see Khawās Khān | ... | ... |
| Bhābṛās, caste | ... | 268, 312, 370 |
| bhadrōñjā, a feast | ... | ... |
| Bhāgāl, State in the Himalayas | ... | ... |
| Bhagavat Gītā and the Rājpūts | ... | 268 |
| bhagini, sister | ... | ... |
| Bhāgnagar, Bagganogare, in the Deccan, visited by R. Bell | ... | ... |
| bhāgyā (Balochi), wealthy | ... | 349 n. |
| Bhairōn, g. | ... | 298 |
| Bhajjī, in the Himalayas | ... | ... |
| bhakti, faith | ... | 378 |
| Bhalāwag, in Keōnthal, Jāt Fair at | ... | 37 f. |
| Bhalēr tribe | ... | ... |
| Bhalēr tribe | ... | 36 |

- Jhānd (?) a cook 351
 Bhāndārkar, Dr. R. G., on the Vikrama era 170 n.
 bhang, intoxicant, 20; bangg... 105 and n., 175 n., 315
 Bhāngwaria, Brāhmaṇa sept 52
 bhānwār, marriage service 282
 Bhao, a Mahratta defeated by Ahmad Shāh ... 12
 Bharad [v] ayasa, a word in the Dogra inscription 148
 Bharata, k., son of Duṣkhyanta 165
 Bhardwājīs, Brāhmaṇa caste 266
 Bharēras, 308; or Thathērā caste 314
 Bhārōwāl, c. in the Pāñjāb, 3 f.
 Bhārth, a Kohrānā 2 and n.
 bhāta or bhātwāl 351 and n.
 bhāti (Prākṛit), brother 119
 Bhātā, Brāhmaṇa caste 266, 297
 bhāttā, marriage fee 278
 Bhātī Rājput 3
 Bhātīprōlu relics 121
 Bhātīyyāt, wizarat 351
 bhātwāl, bhāta, 350 f.; or tharēth 351 n.
 Bhāvā, g. 263
 Bherā, tn. in the Pāñjāb, 2; or Bhira 9
 Bherū, Mahājan sub-section 52
 bhētīnit, scape-goat 39
 Bhikhās, sub-section of the Rihāns ... 3 and n.
 Bhīls, aborigines of India 269
 Bhīm Deo, Rājā of Jamānā 3
 Bhīma Kāli, goddess 298
 Bhīndrā, g. 261
 Bhīra for Bherā in the Pāñjāb 9
 Bhishmaka, k. of Kudina ... 376 f., 379 f.
 Bhiyār, in the Pāñjāb 37
 Bhōa, in the Hill States... 271, 284
 bhōg 41
 bhōga, one who enjoys, etc. 349 n.
 Bhogavati, snake-town in the under-world, 156 f., 158 and n.
 Bhoh, possibly Bhōwa, in the Pāñjāb ... 7 and n.
 Rhoja of Dhārā, son of Sindhurāja ... 150 n., 153; 159; legend, 163 n.; 165 and n.; 166 n., 167, 169 f.; date of 172 and n.
 Rhojadeva, author of the Sādāvatikāntībhāraṇa 153
 Bhōwa, Bhoh 7 and n.
 Bhākyāl (Bhūgīl), a tribe 8
 Bhundā, sacrifice 298 f.
 bhāts, ghost, 296, or bhāta 318 n.
 Biās, riv. 3 ff.
 Bibliography, Andamanese, 220; Nicobarese, 321
 Biduratha, k. 379
 Bijlēshwar Mahādēo, the Lightning God, Bijū 37
 Bijū, a tīkī of Jungā, 34; cult of 37
 Bilhana, author of the Vikramāñkadevachārita 171
 Bilo, in the Himalayas 261
 Bimlinuts, old Anglo-Indian term 252
 Bindrāban, on the Jumna, sacked by Ahmad Khān 60, 62
 Bir, a noble of Ghaznī 8 n.
 Bir Bhairōn, g. 311
 birt, custom 374
 Biru dēotā or Baqīmān, g. 42
 Bisaulī, tn. 15
 Bishan, g. 24
 Bishnū Nand Gopāl=Krishnā 254
 bishtī, adoption fee 281
 Bithūr, Brahmāvartha, in Cawnpur Dist., reputed find of prehistoric implements at, 53
 bkā blon, Tibetan ministers 89 f.
 Blagden, Mr. O., 108; on the Nicobarese language, 322; 357
 Blake, Mr. E. I. Co.'s Agent at Hugli ... 174
 Bōhrās, Vaiśya section, 268, 271; marriage rules of, 275; 277; 279 f.; death customs, 283; 289; 311; 314; 370; 372
 Bojigngīji, S. Andamanese, 217; identity of their language with that of the N. Group, 238, 245
 Bojigybā, S. Andamanese Tribe, 217, 221, 238
 Bombay ceded to Britain 103 n.
 Bompoka, Nicobarese Is., 318; numerals ... 361
 Bonig's, Mr. M., vocabulary of Önge-Jārawa, 239 f., 243, 246 ff., 249 ff.
 Bonnet, Father, on the Nicobarese language, 317
 Bossara, Basra, 103; or Bussera, 127 n., 130, 132
 Bothā, Māhāsū, g. 259 ff.
 Bouillaye Le Gouz, De la, French Ambassador in India 100 n.
 boulder, bearing sculptures, at Daru 89 f.
 Bradfield, near Sheffield, copper celts found at 55
 Brahmā, g. ... 53, 263, 267, 376 and n., 378 f., 381, 384
 Brāhmaṇa, a, in Chuhra legend, 23 ff., 139 ff.; and Rukmini 377 ff.
 Brāhmaṇa sections, 52; or Brammonists, in Muscat, 98; women, 102; sub-division by occupation, 264 f.; migrations, 266; 269; 271 f.; marriages, 273, 275; 277; tribal details, 279 ff.; propitiation of the dead, 283 f.; purification, 289 f.; sects, 297; ceremonies, 300 f., 303 f., 309; titles, etc., 312 f., 370, 372 ff.
 Brahmapura, tn., the modern Barmaur ... 351
 Brahmāvartha, Bithūr 53
 brahmcharj, celebacy 297
 Brahmī characters in Dogra inscription ... 148
 brahmaṇa, form of marriage 376 n.
 Brammonists, Brāhmaṇas 98, 102
 Brampoore, Burhāmpur 99 ff.
 brihatprayoga, renowned example ... 152 and n.

- bronze implements of India 53 f.
 dBu-can characters in W. Tibetan inscriptions 85 f., 89, 95
 Buddar (*read Ruddar*), Siva 257
 Buddha, his doctrines in Tibet, 86; relics and the Piprahwa Vase, 117 ff., 180; Sakya-muni 268 n.
 Buddhism, Kashmîr, in Ladâkh, 88; among the Chins 211, f.; introduced into the Pañjâb Hills 268; 290
 Buddhist stone images of Ladâkh, the age of, 97; in Gilgit 98
 Bühlér, the late Prof., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription 117 f., 122
 Bukkanâ, wife of Isvara 352
 Bumbay, Bombay and R. Bell 102 f.
 dBu-med characters, modern, in Tibetan inscriptions 85
 'aBuñlde, k. of Ladâkh 85
 Bandelkhand, and the Puars 166 n.
 Burgâ Hill, near the Pabar riv. ... 262 and n.
 Burhânpur, Brampoore and R. Bell, 99, 100 and n.
 Burial customs among the Chins 214
 Burma 204
 Burmans and the Chins ... 205, 210, 211 and n.
 Burmese language in the Nicobars 319
 Busée, Jesuit, in India 100 n.
 Bustâm Râjâ, Governor of the Pañjâb ... 1 f.
 Button-lac, shellac, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
buvârî, day-labourer 374
- Calendar tallics, Nicobarese 368 f.
 Calabria coast 175
 Camorta, isl., C. Nicobars 318
 Campbell, J. and R. Bell, Travels of, q. v. 98 ff., 125 ff., 173 ff.
 Cana in Galilee 177 f.
 Candia, 174; besieged by the Turks ... 175
 and n.; 176
Cannabis sativa, hemp plant 175 n.
 Cannary, for Kanarese 98
 Car Nicobar, dialect, 317 ff., 354 ff.; numerals, 361 ff.; cocoanut reckoning, 365 f.; calendar 369
 Cashmeer, Ismîr (Smyrna) 128 f.
 Caste, distinctions in the Pañjâb Hill Tribes, 265, 275 ff.; Right-hand, of Madras 348 n.
 Catania, Cattenia in Sicily 175 f.
 Catherine of Braganza 174 n.
 Cawnpore 279
 Ceremonies, propitiatory, among the Chins, 207; among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 289, 297
 Ceres, Pôk Klai, among the Chins 207
 Cesaria Phillippi 179
 Ceylon and Ram Chandar 41 f., 75, 136
 Chabord, Father, and the Nicobarese language 317
- Chadeî, a *tîkî* of Jungâ, 34; cult of 36
 chadrâds, spirits 296
 châgal, leather bottle 56
 Chairâr, N. Andamanese tribe ... 217; 238
 Chakravarti princes 350 n.
 Châldâ, g., Bâshuk 255 and n.; 257 ff.
 Châliâ Khoknarân, tract of forty village in the Pañjâb 4
 Chamba (a'Byamspa) Monastery in W. Tibet 85, 97
 Chambâ State copper-plate inscriptions and official titles 348 ff.
 Champânir, c. in N. Gujarat 166 n.
 Châmuñda, a Paramâra k. 167 n., 171
 Chanâls, a caste 914, 970
 Chânanâ, a *tîkî* of Jungâ, 34; or Chânanna ... 37
 Chandaladevi, Vidyâdhâri, a Silahâra princess, wife of Vikramâditya 172
 Chandar, a Khôkhar chief, 5; or Haidar ... 5 n.
 Chandar Bansî, Lunar Râjpût dynasty, 264, 267
 Chandniot, now Chiniot 3
 Chandragiri, tn. 352
 Chandrâvati 162 n., 166
 chandu, hemp drug 315
 Changar, a caste 21
 Chappal, Brâhman sept 52
châî, Sk. *chuta*, headman of a *pargani* ... 349 ff.
 charas, hemp drug 20, 315
 Chardin, traveller. 125 n., 126 n., 127 n., 128 n.
 chârî, district 351 n.
 charus and magic, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes 309 f.
 charnamrit, water in which an idol's feet have been washed 41
 Charôl, in the Himalayas 36
 chârpâi, a couch 253
 charvâ, food provided for a trade council in Tibet 274
châta, *châî*, q. v. 349 ff.
 Chauhâns, tribe 37
 Chaulukya inscription 170
 Chaulukyas of Anahilapattana ... 151, 166, 171
 Chaurâl, *wizîrat* 350
chaurî or *thârî*, tribal head-quarters 270
 Cheeacull, Chicacol 101
 Chedî, co. 378
chela, disciple 296
 Chenâb, riv. 5
chhdk, daily wages 374
chhatâ or *masdn*, burning place 52
 Chhatrî tribe, 265; Rajpûts, 271; marriages 275
 Chhimbâs of Mâler Kotla, and totemism, 52; 373
 Chicacull, Cheeacull, in the Ganjam district and R. Bell 101
 Chigtan Monastery in W. Tibet 88
 Child-birth customs among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes 280

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>billah</i> , bow-string 58 | Customs, among the Chins—marriage, 212 f.; burial, 214; among the Panjab Hill Tribes—marriage, 275; sumptuary and naming, 308; eating, 311, 314; social ... 370 |
| <i>Chittaveṇkataṭdri</i> , or <i>Venkataṛāya</i> , son of Achyuta 352 | Cyprus, Cyprisse... 176 and n. |
| Chindwin, riv. in Burma 205 | |
| Chinese language in the Nicobars 319 | |
| Chingiz Khan, the, and the Sultan Jalālu'd-Dīn 5 | |
| Chiniot, 2; or Chandniot 3 and n. | <i>dāt</i> , a chopper 210 |
| Chins of Burma, Notes on, q. v. 204 ff. | <i>dābāns</i> , halls 350 n. |
| čhīrab, turban 18 | Dacea, and Thos. Pratt... 173 f. |
| Chishtis, tribe 51 | Dachhāt, ancestor of the Sūraj Bansi ... 267 |
| Chobhāt quinchī, triangle for punishment ... 47 | <i>dachhūā, dakhna</i> , fee for spiritual service ... 41 |
| Chopard, Mr., and the Nicobarese language. 322 | <i>dād</i> , disciple 310 |
| Chowra, Nicobarese dialect, 317 ff.; words in, 354 ff.; numerals, 361 f., 364; cocoanut reckoning 365 f. | Daddā, sub-section of the Ghirths 52 |
| <i>chugās</i> , dresses 308 | Daddā, Chhimbā sub-section 52 |
| Chuhras, The, by the Revd. J. W. Youngson, Sialkot (continued from Vol. XXXV., p. 356). V.—Superstitions, 19; VI.—Occupation, 20; VII.—Relations to Land; VIII.—Legendary Lore (1) Legend of Rāmsar, 21 f.; (2) Legend of the Marriage of Balmik's Daughter, 23 ff.; IX.—Traditions (1) Bālā, The Priest of God, 26 ff.; (2) The One True God, 30 f.; (3) The Creation, 71 f.; (4) The Story of Dhagānā, 73 ff.; (5) The Story of Dānā, ... 80 ff.; 106 ff., 135 ff. | <i>dādhī</i> , word of summons 273 |
| <i>chungam</i> , custom, poll-tax 98 | Dagōn, vil. in Keonthal 36 |
| Chung-mkhar, ruins of a castle at Nyemo ... 88 | <i>dāigs</i> , demons 304 |
| Chūr, peak near Simla 261 | Dahák = Ten Calamities, title of Beordasahā. 1 |
| Chūṭishwar, Mahāsū, g. 261 | Daityas, Titans, fiends 162 and n. |
| Cissera, Bible character 178 | <i>daivam</i> , a form of marriage 376 n. |
| Clothing among the Panjab Hill Tribes ... 372 | Dakshmārag, faith of the Vaishanavas ... 272 |
| Cobblers, shoemaker caste 271, 274 | <i>dāl</i> , a word of summons 273 |
| Cocoanut reckoning among the Nicobarese, 360 ff. | Dal, doll, old Anglo-Indian term 252 |
| <i>cafilā</i> , caravan, 128; or <i>kāfila</i> , 129; <i>caffoṭo</i> , 130 f.; <i>caffeloe</i> 133 | Damaskus 178, f. |
| Coir, fibre, old Anglo-Indian term 252 | Dānā, The Priest of God, Chuhra ... 80, 83, |
| Colebrook, Jārawa Vocabulary, 217; 220; 230 ff.; recovery of... 242, 322 | 106 ff.; 137, 143 ff. |
| Commerroone or Gombroon, 102 and n.; Commaroon, 103 ff.; Cammeroon 127 | dancing, among the Panjab Hill Tribes ... 372 |
| Conge, Kung 101 f., 103 n., 105 | <i>dāndika</i> , a punisher 349 n. |
| Cooke, Sir Humphrey, Governor of Bombay, 1665-66... 103 and n., 128 and n. | <i>dingrā</i> , an axe 38 |
| Copher, 179; <i>Khafārah</i> , q. v.... 179 n. | Danish language in the Nicobars 319 |
| Copper-Age and Prehistoric Bronze Implements of India by V. A. Smith, (continued from Vol. XXXIV., p. 244); Supplement.... 53 f. | Dankaur, tn., S.-E. of Delhi 16 |
| Cornway, tn. visited by R. Bell 129 | Dantavakra, a Dānava k. 379 |
| Cows worshipped 304, 306 | <i>Darikhānah</i> , office tents in a camp 17, 58 |
| Cremation, among the Todas, 84; Panjab Hill Tribes 270, 272, 283 | Darius Hystaspes 2 |
| Cunningham, Sir Alex. 54 | Daru, in W. Tibet, inscriptions at, 89 f., 92; images, 97 f. |
| | <i>Daśarāpa</i> , a work by Dhanainjaya ... 169 and n. |
| | Dasēhra, festival... 301 f. |
| | Dashāls, Panjab Hill Tribe 272 |
| | <i>dusōthan</i> , a puberty custom 281 |
| | Datta Nagar, inscriptions 270. |
| | Dādā Khan, Dowd Qaune, probably Dādā Khan Qureshi, Governor of Allahabad in 1670... 100 and n. |
| | Dādā Khan Qureshi, 101 and n.; Governor of Dacea 174. |
| | Daulat Khan, Governor of the Panjab ... 8 |
| | David's Tower 179 and n. |
| | Davids, Rhys, Prof. and the Piprahwa Vase inscription 118 f., 122 f. |
| | Dawān, vil. in the Himalayas 34 |
| | Dāwar, tn. in the Panjab, founded by Zamin Dāwar of Ghor 2 |
| | days of the month, Nicobarese reckoning of, 367 |
| | dead, propitiation of, among the Panjab Hill Tribes 288; 305 |

- Debora, vil. in Palestine 178
 Deccan, home of the Sārsut Brāhmaṇas, 266 f., 270
 bDechen-bZodpa, Tibetan copyist 93
 Deities of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 273
 (n)Deks'an'put, spirit of the ground—Chin, 208
 bDeldan, k. of Leh, votive tablet to 92
 bDe-ldan-rnam-rgyal, prince of Ladakh, 87; k. 97
 bDe-legs, prince or k. of Leh 92
 Delhi and the Khōkhars, 5 f., 8, 37; or Dih-
 lī, and 'Imād-ul-mulk, 43, 44 and n., 45 f.,
 49, 66, 70, 73, 75, 107, 109; conquered
 by Shahā-bu'd-dīn Ghōrī, 266, 267, ... 270
 Delmerick's, Mr. J. G., *History of the*
 Gakkhars 1
 Deobalpur, modern Dipālpur, Debālpur ... 5 n.
 Dēo Chānd, a *tīkā* of Jungū, 34; cult of ... 36
 Dēo Lārī, mother, goddess 255 f.
 Dēo Mata temple=Bari of Kongo 256
 dēotī 33 ff., 43, 253 ff.
 dēta, mandala, q. v. 348 n.
 bDe-skyong-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladakh, hymn
 to 86
 Dēvālli, festival 108
 Dev Banār, Dev-ka-Khātal, in the Himalayas, 258
 Dēvī, goddess in Ratōsh, Kōonthal ... 35, 38;
 298; 300
 Dēvī Dhār 35
 dēt-dwāli, a temple 298
 Dēvī Tārā, of Tārab, family god of the Kēon-
 thal Rājās 33, 39 f.
 Dew, Den, for Dīn 101 and n., 102
 Dhādi tribe 271, 314, 373
 Dhagānā, Story of, 'Chuhra legend' ... 73 ff.
 Dhagī tribe 370
 dhāk tree 52
 Dhaki tribe 271, 273.
 Dhananjaya, author of the *Dāśarūpa*, patro-
 nised by Vākpatirāja II 169
 Dhanapāla, author of the *Puyalachchhi*, con-
 temporary of Padmagupta 150 n.; 169
 Dhandhuka, a Paramāra 166
 bDhanesar, tn. 137
 Dhanika, 152; mentions Vākpatirāja... 168 f.
 bDhankar, vil. in the Pañjāb 3
 Dhānūn, from *dhān*, rice, a *tīkā* of Jungū, 34; 37
 Dhar, vil. in the Himalayas 43
 bDhārā, tn., 155; *Kulargādhāni*, 155 and n.;
 159; 165, 166 and n., 169
 Dhārāvarsha, a Paramāra 166
 Dharech, a hill *pargān* 33
 dharma, ritual 376 n., 377, 383
 Dharto, g. 35
 dhaūlar (Pañjābī) = palace 3 and n.
 Dhaulā, g. 261
 Dhawār in the Himalayas 35
 Dheri Shāhān, ancient Taxila 2
 Dholkā, tn. in Gujarat 172
- dhorī = bride's value 278
 Dhūmarāja, a Paramāra 166
 dhānd, fire 39
 dhāp, incense 42, 296
 Dhūrū, a *tīkā* of Jungū, 34; cult of 36
 Dibālpur, the ancient Deobālpur and modern
 Dipālpur 5 and n., 7 f.
 Dīg, fort attacked by Ahmād Shāh 58
 dīvijayayādīra, march of conquest 171
 Dilipa, an ancestor of Rāma 164
 dingī, stick used at adoption ceremony ... 281
 Dinkot, tn. on the Indus 9
 Dipālpur, Dibālpur, q. v. 5 and n., 7 f.
 Diu, Dew, Dio, attacked by the Arabs 1668
 or 1669 101 and n., 102
 divorce among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes. 277 f.
 Diwālī, festival 43, 302
 Diwān Rāp Lāl Bōhrā, minister of Kāngra... 268
 Dōdra, vil. in the Himalayas 35 f.
 Dogras in Tibet, 85, 91, 93; fort of 148
 Dóll, dal, split peas, old Anglo-Indian term, 252
 Dollers, Dutch coin 178 f.
 Domkhar in W. Tibet, tablet at 92
 Donde Khān, founder of Bisaulf ... 15, 66 f.
 Dowd Caune, Dād Khān Qurēshī, q. v.
 100 and n., 174
 Dowie, dagger or sword 54
 Dragspa'bum, k. of Lādakh 85
 Drās, in W. Tibet, images at 97 f.
 dreams among the Chuhṛas, 20; the Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes 309
 Druvabhaṭa, a Paramāra k. 166
 dāb, turf 281
 Dudhiirā, milk collector 351
 Dulshyata, k., husband of Sakuntalā ... 165
 Dūm, a *tīkā* of Jungū, 34; cult of 37
 Dūm, g. 261
 Dūm or Khumāli, the panchāyat 273
 dūmbah, fat-tailed sheep 17
 durbiāl or drubiyāl, see ugrākā 351
 Durgā, goddess 40, 253
 durj, a casket 59
 Durlabha of Aṇhilvāḍ 167 n.
 Durrāni = the pearl-wearers, slaves of
 Ahmād Shāh 55
 Durr-i-Durrāni = Pearl of Pearls, title of
 Ahmād Shāh, 63 and n.; or Durrāni ... 70
 dūshnā, a cow's death 21
 dīt-bhāt, evil spirits 349 n.
 Dvāraka, in Gujarāt, home of Krishṇa, 377
 380, 382
 Dryāśrayakosha, a work by Hemachandra ... 172
 Dwāpar Yug 253
 East Indies, Travels of R. Bell in q. v.,
 98 ff., 125 ff., 173 ff.
 edolius, a bird venerated by the Chins ... 205

- | | |
|--|--------------------------------|
| ekdashi, eleventh day of the moon ... | 312 |
| Ekita Bay, in the Andamans ... | 246 |
| elephants worshipped ... | 304, 306 |
| Ellis, the late Mr. A. J., on the grammar of ‘savage’ languages, 183; on the Andama- nese, 220; 237; on the Nicobarese, 317; 322; 353 | |
| Ender, c. in Palestine ... | 178 |
| Endere and Ladakh inscriptions compared ... | 94 f. |
| English spoken in the Nicobars ... | 319 |
| enumeration, Nicobarese methods of ... | 360 ff. |
| fremtiga, forest-man ... | 219 |
| Esdraelon, plain of ... | 178 |
| Etna, mt., Monte Bella ... | 175 and n. |
| eugenia, a plant ... | 208, 210 |
| Euphrates, riv. ... | 130 |
| Europe, W. and the bronze cultivation ... | 54 |
| Evil Eye, among the Chuhras, 20; the Pañ- jab Hill Tribes ... | 309 |
| excommunication, among the Pañjab Hill Tribes ... | 297; 374 |
| exorcism, among the Pañjab Hill Tribes ... | 309 |
| | |
| Fágú, hill <i>pargand</i> ... | 33 |
| Fa hian and the Sákya relics ... | 118; 121 f. |
| Fairs, in Keónthal ... | 37 ff. |
| Fauzábád or Banglah ... | 67 |
| Faridábád and Ahmad Sháh ... | 16, 48 f., 55, 58, 70 |
| Farídún, k. of Persia ... | 1 |
| Farishta ... | 5 n. |
| Fariukhábád and Ahmad Sháh, 11 ff., 50, 65 f., 68, 69 and n., 70 | |
| Farrukh-ndmáh, a Persian work ... | 10 |
| farsakh, three miles ... | 67 |
| Fathgadh, tn. ... | 66 |
| Fath Khán, a chief ... | 66 |
| Faure, Father, on the Nicobarese language .. | 317 |
| Felucca, ffluke, a small vessel ... | 175 and n. |
| festivals of the Pañjab Hill Tribes, table of, 300 f.; details ... | 302 |
| fallodoes, 17 ^o , possibly the Spanish <i>foludos</i> , a kind of trousers, or the Turkish <i>seráje</i> , an outdoor cloak for women ... | 179 n. |
| Fleet, Dr. F., on the Piprahwa Vase inscrip- tion, 117, 119, 122, 123 and n., 124; on the Satára inscription ... | 165 n. |
| Flower, Stephen, and the storming of Diu, 101 n.; or John, 103 and n., 134 and n., 104 and n., 125, 127 and n., 128 and n., 131 n. | |
| Fontana, Surgeon, and the Nicobarese lan- guage ... | 317 |
| fortune-telling among the Pañjab Hill Tribes, | 310 |
| Frampton, Rob., Chaplain at Aleppo, 1665-70. | |
| | 134 and n. |
| François Xavier’s, St., shrine at Goa ... | 102 n. |
| | |
| Gabriel, angel, among the Chuhras ... | 337 |
| Gádár or Jhájrá, q. v. ... | 252 |
| Gádhí, father of Viśvámitra ... | 162 |
| Gadyachintámaṇi, a work by Nádibhasinhl deals with the life of Jívaka ... | 265 ff. |
| Gakkhars, and the Khóthars, q. v. ... | 122 |
| Gallile, Sea of ... | 172 |
| gambling at marriages, among the Pañjab Hill Tribes ... | 275 |
| gandharvam, a form of marriage ... | 270 |
| Ganésh, g., in Keónthal ... | 41, 282, 298, 304, 305 |
| Gangá, riv., the Trimárgaga ... | 148 |
| Gangaikondá-Chóla or Rájendrá-Chóla I | 202 |
| Gangaikondachólásvara temple ... | 202 n. |
| Ganges, riv. ... | 53, 67, 70, 254, 271, 282, 306 |
| ganja, hemp-drug ... | 315 |
| Ganná Begam, wife of Imád-ul-Mulk | 244 n. |
| gdo-talíyah, bolster ... | 18 |
| Garen in Keónthal, fair at ... | 287 f. |
| Garh Kohráná, modern Kadyáná ... | 2 n. |
| Garhwál, pass into Tibet ... | 273 |
| garnet, button lac, shellac, old Anglo-Indian term ... | 252 |
| garur, a large heron ... | 306 |
| Garur Purána, among the Pañjab Hill Tribes ... | 284 |
| Garutmanta = Garuda ... | 376 |
| Gary or Gayrey, Mr. H., acting Governor of Bombay, 1667 ... | 103 and n. |
| Gatty, Mr., on celts ... | 55 |
| Gáun, a fíki of Jungá, 84; cult of ... | 37 |
| gauntrádá, natal ceremonies ... | 281 |
| Gaur, original home of the Keónthal rajah ... | 42 |
| | 266 |
| Gaur Bráhmans ... | 266, 271 |
| Gaurí, goddess ... | 251 |
| Genazareth, lake ... | 177 |
| genital organs worshipped by the Vé- Márgis ... | 299 |
| German language in the Nicobars ... | 222 |
| Ghábrú, Bráhman sept ... | 222 |
| gháru, earthen jar ... | 222 |
| Gharéj, in the Simla Hill States ... | 222 |
| gháváil, a gong ... | 19 and 222 |
| Ghasítá, a Chuhra name ... | 222 |
| ghazals, Persian odes ... | 222 |
| Gházanfar Jang or Ahmad Khán, q. v. ... | 21 |
| | 50, 60 |
| Ghuárá, ghí collector ... | 222 |
| Ghirths, Kangra sept ... | 222 |

- Ghiyāṣud-Dīn Balban, Sultan, and the Khō-khars 5
Ghiyāṣud-dīn, or 'Imād-ul-Mulk, q. v., 10 ff.,
 48 ff., 55 ff.
- Ghordū, g. 261
 Ghori, Ghoriā, the descendants of Dahrak,
 inhabited the Ghor Hill 1
 ghosts, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes. 303; 309
 Ghulām 'Alī Āzad, author of the *Mā'asir-ul-kirdān fī tārikh-i-Bilgrām* 10
 Ghulām Hasan, Ḳāmin, author of the *Shārif-i-'uqūmāni* 10 f., 49 n.
 Ghurl, sub-section of the Ghirths 52
 Gibello, Monte Bello, for Mount Etna. 175 and n.
 Gidār-Khēl, Wazir sub-section 52
 Gilboa, mt. 178
 Gilgit, Buddhist images at 98
 gingerly, jinjeli, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Girdha Sadhu, The Seasons of, q. v. ... 315 f.
 Girisha, g. 263
 (n)Glet, a Chin spirit 209
 Goa, visited by R. Bell ... 101, 102 and n.
 Gōdāvāri, scene of *shrāddha* 305
 Gōdāwāri 271
 Gods of the Hill Tracts, 290 ff.; origin of ... 296
 golah, store-house, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Golconda, Gulcander, diamond mines ... 101
 Goldsmiths, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
 271, 275, 279, 311
 Gombroon or Commerroone, etc., E. I. Co.'s
 Factory 103 n., 104 n., 127, 128 n.
 Gonds, aborigines of India 269
 Gōpālīt, g. 298
 Gorakh, character in Chuhra legend... ... 24
 Goria, Kohrānā Rāja of Sharab 2
 Gotamiputra Sātakarṇi I., Andhra k. ... 172
 gram, chick peas, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Great Parent, The, Mother 'Li, worshipped
 by the Chins 204, 212, 216
 Greenwall, Canon, on prehistoric implements
 in India 54
 greetings, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 371
 Gujāt and Tailapa, 151; and Sindhurāja ... 171
 Gujars, a tribe 8
 Gujratwāl, tn. 82, 109
 Gujras 81
 guḍḍi used to paint the forehead 316
 guḍḍān, silken cloth 308
 gu'ma, superintendent of woods 349 n.
 Gonabhadrāchārya, disciple of Jinasēna-
 chārya, completed the *Mahāpurāṇa*. 287 f.
 Gunādhya, author of the *Bṛihatkathā* ... 151
 Gōnd, Hill State, feudatory of Keōnthal. ... 33
 Gundeswar, tn. near Bussera 127 n.
 Gunderia, copper implements from 54
 gunny, jute cloth, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Guru Nānak, Sikh reformer, 24; Bābā Nanak, 29 f.
- Guzzuratt visited by R. Bell 98 f.
 Gwalior, probably Kahler of the Hills 9
 Gyā and the Kshatriyas, 267, 270; scene of
 shrāddha 305
 rGyal-rabs, the, and Tibetan history ... 87,
 90 ff., 94, 96
 gyin-yè or yang-lai, bush 204
- Hadīqat-ul-aqīlīm*, a work by Shekh Murtaza
 Husain 10
 Hāfiẓ Rahmat Khān, a chief 66 f.
 hājib, door-keeper 18
 hāk-kyi, a vulture of vengeance 216
 Hāla, 164; or Sātavāhana 165 and n.
 Halabas, Halloe for Allahabad 99
 halan, a feast 318
 Halāyudha, writer, lived under Vākpa-
 tirāja II 169
 Hāli, a care-taker 350 f.
 Hali-Kouli-Kaan, 'Ali Qulī Khān 125 n.
 Hamilton, G., and the Nicobarese language,
 317, 322
 Hanna, tn. Anah 130, 133
 Hanol, in the Himalayas. 253, 255, 258 f., 262 f.
 Hanūmān, g., temple at Munda. 35; 41,
 163; 298; 304; 306; 311
 hag-i-sardārī, a tribute 265
 Har, g., 24; Shiv 262 n.
 hār, abduction 283
 haram, female quarters in camp 58
 Harasaila, Kailāsa, mts. 155
 Hardwār, scene of a Khōkhar defeat, 6; home
 of the Bairājī caste 270 f., 283 f., 305
 Harichandra's works and the story of Jīvaka. 285
 Hari Krishna 380
 Har Nashak, a priest 111
 harpoon-head, Indian 54
 Harsha, Harshadeva, a Paramāra k., and
 Siyaka 167 and n., 168
 Hasanpur, tn. and Ahmad Shah 60
 Hassan, son of Bhārth 2
 Hast, Malik, probably a chief of the Jan-
 jūas 3 and n.
 Hāt, inscription at 270
 Hātakēśvarakhyāḥ devo 158 n.
 Hātēshwari Durgā, with the eight hands 253, 261
 Hāti, a Gakkhar 270
 hātīyā, a profane act 39
 Hātkoṭi, mt. 254, 261
 Hāt-kotī Ishwari Mātā, goddess 253
 havan, 281; hawan, a sacrifice 298
 Hāzrī-da-kotwāl, magistrate 350 f.
 heang-hata (C. Nicobarese dialect) = nine ... 368
 Hellena, mother of Constantine 177 f.
 Hema, character in the *Navasāhasrāṅkacharita*. 155
 Hemachandra 171 n., 172

| | | | |
|---|-----------------------|---|--------------------------|
| Hermon, mt. | 178 | Ikshvāku, a warrior tribe | 150 |
| Hid̄yat, 'Ali Khān of Shukohābād...49 and n., 59 | | Ilāchigir, a Sanyāsi mendicant ... | 254 |
| Hid̄yat Bakhsh, son of Aziz-ud-din ... | 64, 68, 70 | illness, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 616 |
| Hill, Capt. and R. Bell ... | ... ... | 'Imād-ul-Mulk, Indian Wazīr and Ahmad | |
| Hill Tracts, gods of | 102 f. | Shāh Abdālī, q. v. ... | 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff. |
| Hill Tribes of the Pañjāb, see Pañjāb, | | images, Maitreya, in W. Tibet ... | 55, 59 |
| 264 ff., 289 ff., 370 ff. | | 'imāri, closed litters ... | 55 |
| Himāchala, mts.... | 155 | Imminābād, tn. ... | 80 ff., 131 |
| Himalayas, Hinduism in, q. v. ... | 33 ff., 253 ff. | Index of Prakrit words in Fischel's Grammatik der Prakrit Sprachen, Appendix, pp. | |
| Hindu, names, and Muhammadian used together, 2 n.; scriptures and caste subsections among the Panjab Hill Tribes, 264; marriages, 278; 290; 297; festivals, 303; 372, 374. | | 191-192 | |
| Hinduism in the Himalayas, by H. A. Rose, continued from Vol. XXXV, p. 252. III.—The Twenty-two Tikās of Jungā, Keōnthal, near Simla, 33 ff.; Fairs, 37 f.; Appendix I.—Dēvi Tārā of Tārab, 39 ff., II—The Goddess Ath-bhōjā of Dharēch, 42; IV.—The Legend of Mahāsū Dēotā | 253 ff. | India and the Khōkhars, 4 ff.; and the Afghans, 9, 70; and Ahmad Shāh Abdālī, 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff.; Copper Age and Prehistoric Bronze Implements of, 53 f.; the Paramāras in W. and S., 166 and n., 171; and the Nāga kings, 172; the Rājputs in Central | 285 ff. |
| Hindus, resist Mahmud Sultān, 4; and totemism, 51 f.; converts to Muhammādanism, 270; 306, 311; 314, 372; 374 | | Indo-Chinese and Nicobarose languages compared ... | 352 ff. |
| Hindūstān invaded ... | 14 f., 45; 49; 60; 64 | Indra, g. ... | 163 and n., 164, 376 ff. |
| Hindustāni, in the Nicobars ... | ... ... | Indra Boti-rnam-rgyal, prince of Lédākh ... | 87 |
| History of the Rājás of Jammu mentions the Khōkhār Tribe ... | 4 | Indus, riv. ... | 5, 266, 279 |
| Hien-tsüang and Sākyā relics ... | 118, 121 f. | infanticide, female, among the Khōkhars, 1; among the Todas ... | 84 |
| (n) Hoi, a Chin giant ... | ... ... | inheritance, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 278 ff. | |
| Hōlī festival ... | ... ... | initiation ceremonies, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 297 |
| Hoshiarpur District, in the Pañjāb, and the cult of Miān Bibī ... | ... ... | Inscriptions, at Basgo and Nyemo, W. Tibet, 85 ff.; at Daru, 89 ff.; at Sheh, 93 f.; and the Endere, 95 ff.; on the Piprahwa Vase, 117 ff.; at Sittāra, 165 n.; at Udayapūr, 167 and n., 169; Chālukya, 170; Nasik cave, 172; at Hāt, 270, 272; in Tyāgārāja temple, Tiruvārur, 288 n.; copperplate of the Chambā State, 348 f.; at Vijaya-nagara ... | 352 |
| Houghton's, Mr. B., Essay on the Languages of the Southern Chins ... | ... ... | Inshā'ī 'Abdullah, a Persian work ... | 10 |
| Household customs among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 280 f. | Inshā'ī Mirām, a Persian work ... | 10 |
| Hugli, and Thos. Pratt... ... | 173 and n., 174 | Intercourse, among Chuhras, 20; the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 271 |
| hullah, a robe ... | ... ... | Intermarriage, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 276 |
| human sacrifices among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 298 | Intizām-ud-Danlah, a noble of Ahmad Shāh's court, 45 ff.; Khān, Khānān... | 70 |
| Humāyūn, Sikandar Shāh I. ... | ... ... | Iraj Khān, envoy to Ahmad Shāh ... | 70 |
| Hūnā Rikki, a Brāhmaṇ, destroyed the demon Kirmar ... | 253 ff., 259, 261 | Irānts, a tribe ... | 47 |
| Hūnas, mentioned in the Navasāhasrākācharita, 157 n.; and the Huns, 168; and Sindhubrāja ... | ... ... | Ironsmiths, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 274 |
| Hunter, Sir W. W., and the writing of Indian languages ... | ... ... | Isā Nand, lands of ... | 28 |
| Hussain, son of Bharth... ... | 2 | Islam, 5 n.; upheld by Ahmad Shāh ... | 61, 66 |
| Ichhrā, near Lahore, founded by Ichhrā ... | 3 | Isma'il Khān Balōch, a chief ... | 2 |
| iddat, a period of time ... | ... ... | Ismīr, for Cashmeer ... | 126 |
| Ikhtiyārū'd-Din Altāma, consort of the Sultāna Razīyyat ... | ... ... | Ispahan, Spahawne, and R. Bell, 103 and n., 104 n., 125 and n.; and Stephen Flower | 127 ff. |
| | 5 | Ívara, a Tuluva k. ... | 252 |

INDEX.

| | | |
|---|-----------|---|
| Bahadur Khán | 70 | Jat tribe , 8 ; and totemism, 52 ; and Ahmad Sháh ... 12, 55, 58 ff., 68; 271; 314; 370 f. |
| Dáulah, Qamer-ud-din Khán ... 66 n. | | játherá , ancestor 34, 86 |
| Devi, Nicobarese spirits 318 and n. | | Játhiá Dévi , in Patiála 39 |
| Dievas or Yádavas, race 382 f. | | Játijs , Bráhman sept 36 |
| Dida, tribe 275, 279 | | Jatríya tribe 8 |
| Divá, ceremony 34; 36, 39 f. | | Jáh, g. 36 |
| Devra, a whole night's devotion ... 255 and n. | | Jaurá, sub-section of the Mair Sunárs 52 |
| Dugdi Kháj, place mentioned in a Chuhrá legend 74 | | Jawálá Mukhí temple 290, 298 |
| Dwád worship 34, 260, 313 | | Jayadeva 153 and n. |
| Jahánbád, John a Badd, and R. Bell ... 100 | | Jayaratha , author of the <i>Alamkádravimársins</i> 153 |
| Jahangír, k., mentioned in a Chuhrá legend, | | Jayasimha Siddharája, k. of Gujarat 172 |
| | 74 f., 80 | Jerusalem , visited by R. Bell ... 174, 177, 179 |
| Jahán Khán, commander under Ahmad Sháh 44 f., 51, 60, 62 f., 70 | | Jesuits in India 100 n., 102 n. |
| Jai, Hill pargánd 33 | | Jesvant Ráo Puar and the Fuars 166 n. |
| Jaina religious works in Sanskrit, 285. <i>purána</i> s as a basis of the Tamil Sanskrit poems which treat of the life of Jivaka ... 286 f. | | Jezraell, plain of 178 |
| Jainá, the Saráogus 268 | | jhájrá or gádar, form of marriage 282 |
| Jakho , hill near Simla, 33 ; or Jhako 37 | | Jhang , in the Pañjab 3 |
| Jal, son of Sánda 2 | | jhátlá, jhátú, illegitimate children 279 |
| Jal, tn. on the Eids 6 | | Jhaumprá, a Chuhra 26 ff., 71 |
| jalakridá, a love play 158 | | jhil, a swamp 53 |
| Jalálábád, near Oudh 67, 70 | | Jhilám, n.v. 5 |
| Jalalu'd-Dín, Sultán of Ghazni, and the Khókhars 5 | | jhuar, jhar, the aháú, q. v. 351 |
| Jalalu'd-Dín Khaggá, ancestor of the Khéggás 51 | | Jhonjan Deora , in Shámgún, inscription at ... 270 |
| Jálandhar , tn., attacked by Jasrath the Khókhár 6, 7, 8 and n. | | jhotiár, a messenger 350 f. |
| jal páris , water nymphs 303 | | Jhundá, a faqír's whip 19 |
| Jamadagni, hermit 162 | | 'a Jigsméd-(etc)-rnam-rgyal, example of a name of the second dynasty of Leh ... 91 |
| jdmah, full skirted coat 18 | | jymán, a disciple 312 |
| Jambudvípa 86 | | Jilwadáár, an attendant 15 |
| Jammú dynasty and the Khókhars 4 | | Jinasénáchárya , began the <i>Mahápurána</i> , and composed the <i>Harivámsa-Purána</i> 287 |
| Jannah, riv. Jaman 59, 62, 65, 315 | | junjeh, gingerly, sesamum or tilseed oil, old Anglo-Indian terms 252 |
| Jámsid, k. of Persia 1 | | jinsálí, store-keeper 351 |
| janamasktamí 313 | | Jipár, family-god of the Rájá of Kotléhr. 34, 36 |
| Jangbáz Khán, commander under Ahmad Sháh 14, 50, 56, 60 f., 64 ff | | Jivaka, the story of , 285 ; is based on the <i>Jaina purána</i> , 286, in the <i>Mahápurána</i> ... 287 |
| Jánháva, Chináb riv. 7 | | Jivakachintámaní , the Tamil, the age of, 285 ff. |
| Janjthás, a tribe 9 | | Jivandharachampú , by Harichandra 285 |
| Janjha tribe 8 | | Jivandharanátaka , by Harichandra 285 |
| Jantarándha, k. of Magadha 378 f., 382 f. | | jizya, poll-tax 6 |
| Járawa, Andamanese tribe , 217 ; 219 ; words, 239 f. | | jñánarthás, seekers of wisdom 378, 384 |
| Jer Gárus, Pañjab Hill Tribe 273 | | Joars, aborigines of India 269 |
| Jer or mardá, cure used by Hindus 19 | | jög, spiritual science 296 |
| Jér Katála, Pañjab Hill Tribe 273 | | jög, combination of stars 812 f. |
| Jasrath Shaikhá, son of Malik Shaikhá, | | Jögí caste, originally mendicants ... 270 f., 275, 279, 283, 290, 310, 370, 373 |
| 6 and n., 7 and n., 8 and n. | | John a Badd or Jahánbád 100 |
| Jastá, character in a Chuhrá legend 23 f., ... 138 ff. | | jokes, among the Pañjab Hill Tribes 371 |
| | | Jomoi-mgonpa, the Nunnery at Nyemo ... 88 |
| Jat Fair at Bhálawag, in Keónthal 37 f. | | Jones, Sir W. , 44 n.; and the writing of Indian languages 237 |
| | | Joppa, visited by R. Bell 179 |
| | | Jordan, sea of 178 |
| | | Joseph, St. 177 |
| | | jótishí, astrologer 310 |

| | | | |
|--|--------------------|--|---|
| Jubal, and the Kanaits ... | ... 273 | Kaluwāhan, Kāhnuwān, q. v. ... | ... 3 |
| Jubbal, Hill State ... | ... 37 | Kalyāna, Chālukya capital ... | ... 169 |
| Jhd hills ... | ... 4 ff. | Kāma, the blacksmith ... | ... 1 |
| Jungā (Keonthal) near Simla, the twenty-two Tikas of ... | ... 33 ff. | Kāmadhenu, cow of plenty ... | ... 162 n. |
| Junkann, custom house ... | ... 99 | Kamāl Khān, Gakkhar chief ... | ... 9 |
| Junkin, custom ... | ... 99 | kāmdārs, kārdārs, q. v. ... | ... 350 |
| Juwāhir Singh, a Jāt, and Ahmad Shāh, 49, | 55, 58 f. | kumkhāb, gold brocade ... | ... 14 |
| Jūwai, S. Andaman tribe ... | 217, 221 | Kamsa, enemy of Krishṇa ... | ... 378 |
| Kābul, feudatory to Persia, 1; and Ahmad Shāh ... | ... 70 | Kānā, in the Pāñjāb Hills, home of the Kanaujis ... | ... 279 |
| Kabūlpur ... | 7 and n. | Kanaits, aborigines of the Pāñjāb Hills, 265, | 268, 271 ff.; marriages ... 275 ff., 308, |
| Kachohh, E., subjected to Sindhrāja ... | 171 | 311 f., 314, 370, 372, 374 | |
| Kadu plant ... | 214 | Kanarese, Cannary ... | ... 99 |
| Kadu-water, that in which a corpse is washed ... | 207 | Kanāwar, 216; Buddhism in ... | ... 268 |
| Kadyāna, ancient Gāph Kohrānā, near Qandahar ... | 2 n. | Kanēts, a tribe ... | ... 34 ff. |
| kafan, a shroud ... | 20 | Kāngṛa, near Sri Hargobindpur, founded by Rājā Vir Khān, 3 and n., 7; and the Ath- bhōjā image, 42; totemism in, 52; home of the Bōhrās ... | ... 268 |
| Kafirs of Kafiristan and enumeration ... | 360 | Kān Kōbjās, Brāhmaṇ caste ... | ... 266, 279 |
| Kōgadiārā, a letter-carrier ... | 351 | Kannah, name given to prisoners by the Abdālis ... | ... 60 |
| Kahal, sept ... | 51 | kansharāt, a heron (?) ... | ... 314 |
| Kahārs, caste of litter-carriers ... | 58 | kārisi, spelter ... | ... 275 |
| kahī or kahil, a weed ... | 51 | Kanthī and the Kanaits ... | ... 273 |
| Kahlūr, possibly Gwalior ... | 9 n. | kapil kirya, burial custom ... | ... 283 |
| Kāhnuwān, the ancient Kāluwāhan, right of the Bias, formerly held by the Khōkhars ... | 3 | Kapila, a Mahārshi or ancient sage ... | ... 159 |
| Kaid Rāj, k. of Mārwār, overran the Pāñjāb ... | 2 | kapili, a kind of cow ... | ... 304 |
| Kailās, Himalayas, near which is the com- mon home of the Aryas ... | 264 | Kapilavastu and Buddha relics ... | 118, 121, 124 |
| Kailūsa, Harāssāla mts. ... | 155 | karāli, batrī, q. v. ... | ... 302 |
| Kais Abdur-Rashid, reputed ancestor of the Mandār Afghāns ... | 3 | Karāngla and the Kanaits ... | ... 273 |
| Kaithal, battle-field in the Pāñjāb ... | 5 | kirdārs, mēhtās or wazirs, temple overseers, 273 f.; or kīmīdārs ... | ... 350 f. |
| kājīwāh, panniers ... | 58 | Karēwā, irregular marriages ... | ... 276 f., 279 |
| Kākā, a Chuhṛā name ... | 19 | Karka III called Kakkala or Amoghavarsha. 169 | |
| Kakkala, Karka III ... | 169 | karma, consequences of previous acts ... | 383 |
| kalah, a hat ... | 18 | karmas, ceremonies ... | 284 |
| Kalāhasti, tn. ... | 352 | Karmikamala, an excrementitious product, 376 n. | |
| Kālak Dās, a Chuhṛā ... | 28 f., 31, 71 | Karōlli, hill pargānā ... | ... 33 |
| Kālānaur, c. ... | 7 | karrah-ndē, trumpets ... | ... 55 |
| Kālānj, hill pargānā ... | 33, 40 | Kārun, tribe, marriage rules ... | 275 f., 279 |
| kalipaka, its meaning ... | 154 and n. | Karvā Chauth, festival ... | ... 308 |
| Kalaur, a tīkā of Jungā ... | 34 f. | Kāsahrada, tn. in Gujarāt, identified with Kāsindra-Pālādī at Ahmedabad ... 170 and n. | |
| Kalāvatī, a character in the Navasdhāsin- kucharita ... | 154, 156 | Kashan, Paunuloe, q. v. ... | 128 n. |
| kalb, heart, centre ... | 58 | kashidau, drawn-thread work designs ... | 14 |
| Kali, Age, 164; Yug, 253, 258; goddess, 261, 264, 290, 298, 303 f., 311 | | Kashmīr, 7 n., 8; monks from, the probable builders of the Basgo Monastery ... | 87 f.; 98; 254; 257; 259; 348 |
| Kālidāsa, poet ... | 149, 151, 153, 287 | Kāsindra-Pālādī and Kāsahrada, q. v. ... | 170 and n. |
| Kalinga ... | 344, 352 | kastūrī, mask ... | ... 110 |
| Kālinjar, near Swābī ... | 8 and n. | Katchal, one of the Nicobars ... | ... 318 |
| Kālowāl, head-quarters of the Rihāns ... | 3 | Katchr, Rohelah tn. ... | ... 66 |
| Kālū, in the Himalayas ... | 261 | kathā, recitation ... | ... 302 |

- Katrāh Mahaldār Khān, tn. near Bādli ... 70
 Katrah Wazir Khān, tn. on the Jamnah ... 65
 Kauchananagar (Deccan) and the Kshatriyas ... 267
 'kaung, rice-beer used among the Chins. ... 206 ff., 212 ff.
 Kāvēri, riv. ... 352
 Kāverū ... 261 n.
 Kavibāndhava, 'friend of poets,' a title of Vākpati ... 150
 Kāwālāh, in the Himalayas, temple at ... 36
 Kawāli Deo, a tīkā of Jungā ... 34, 37
 Kayastha, Pañjāb Hill Tribe ... 271, 314, 373
 Kede, N. Andamān Tribe ... 217, 238
 kelimṛiga, an antelope ... 155
 kenrāta, Car Nicobar, a calendar ... 368 f.
 kenrāta-kōh, Nicobarese tally stick ... 366
 kenrāta ngiji, Nicobarese tally by beads ... 367
 kenyātā, a plant ... 347
 Keōnthal, near Simla, the Twenty-two Tīkās of Jungā in ... 33 ff.
 Keralas of Malabār, and the Muralas, said to have been conquered by Sindhurāja ... 171
 Kerosine oil, modern Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Kēshō, g. ... 24
 Kētu, evil star ... 297
 *Keu, a Chin spirit ... 204
 khād, valley ... 308
 Khad Ashni, in Keōnthal, scene of the Sār Fair ... 41 f.
 Khafirah, caphars, eopher, a tax ... 179 and n.
 Khaggāt, a sept ... 51
 Khajore Dogre, Brāhmaṇ sept ... 52
 Khālāshī, Hill pargānā ... 33
 Khalatse Bridge inscriptions ... 96; 148
 Khanār, Himalayan State ... 37
 Khanāra tribe ... 275; 279
 Khān Jahān Kokaltash, or Mir Ghulam Rasūl, foster-brother to 'Alamgir ... 68 n.
 Khān Khānān, Intizām-ud-daulah ... 70
 Kharar and the Muhammadians ... 270
 Khārgāh, royal quarters in a camp ... 17, 58
 Kharī tribe, possibly the Khattars ... 8
 kharif crops ... 265, 375
 Kharipur, early home of the Khōkhars ... 8
 Kharōlān, vil. in Siālkot ... 26
 Khāsh, and the Kanaitis ... 273, 275 f., 279
 Khatēshwar, a tīkā of Jungā ... 34, 36
 Khatris, tribe of mixed Brāhmaṇ and Kshatriya descent ... 265, 271, 275, 373
 Khattā, sub-section of the Ghirths ... 52
 Khattars, possibly the Kharī tribe ... 8 n.
 Khawās Khān, 9 and n.; an Afghan poet under Ahmad Shāh, also called Bezhan ... 63
 khēl, marriage rule ... 275
 Khēra, sub-section of the Ghirths ... 52
 Khildāt, set of robes ... 44 f.
 Khizr Khān, Timur's feudatory in Delhi ... 6
 Khmer (Mon) languages, and the Nicobareses ... 216; 318; 357
 Khokharain, in the Hoshiārpur District, 1; or Tāhlī ... 3, 4 n.
 Khokharān, vil. in the Pañjāb ... 2 n.
 Khōkhars, The, and the Gakkars in Pañjāb History, by H. A. Rose. I.—History of the Khōkhars — A.—An account of the traditional History of the Khōkhars, by a Khōkhār of Khokharain, in the Hoshiārpur District, Pañjāb, 1 ff.; B—The Khōkhars of the Muhammadan Historians of India, 4 ff.; II.—A History of the Gakkars ... 8 f.
 Khokrā Kot, mounds in the Pañjāb ... 2 n.
 Khudāganj, tn. near Farrukhābād ... 16 n.
 Khud Giri, riv. ... 270
 Khumāli, the Panchāyat ... 273
 Khunlā, sub-section of the Ghirths ... 52
 Khurpāt, Chhīmbā sub-section ... 52
 Khushālā pargānā, in the Himalayas ... 40
 Kīālū, g. ... 261 f.
 kimkkāb, silk cloth ... 308
 Kinārī Khaṇḍālī, Himalayan vil., 258; Khaṇḍālī 259
 King-Crow, ashun, among the Chins, 204 f., 208, 214
 Kirkuk, Kirkway, visited by R. Bell ... 129
 Kirmar, a demon ... 253 f., 256 ff.
 Kirtakā, a Brāhmaṇ woman ... 253
 Kirutītarāya (Krishuarāya) probably the Rāshtrakuta k. Akālavarsa-Krishna II ... 288
 kiryā karm, funeral ceremony or shrādh ... 305
 Kishan, g. ... 24
 Kishan, Brāhmaṇ sept ... 297
 Kiyālū, g. ... 255 f.
 (n) 'Klo' seung, a burial stick used among the Chins ... 214 f.
 'ko'-Chin tribal distinction ... 206
 Koban, in the Caucasus, copper arrow-head from ... 55
 kodū madam, gifts ... 288
 Kohāru, sub-section of the Mahājans ... 52
 Kohāt, totemism in ... 52
 Koh Damavind, well of ... 1
 Koh-i-Nandana, tribe conquered by Mandār. 3
 Kohistān-i-Namak, tribe conquered by Mandār ... 3
 Koh Kirānā, ancient Kohrānā ... 1 and n., 2 and n.
 Kokalla II., a Chedi k. ... 169
 Kokār Sankā, a Khōkhār, embraced Islām ... 5 n.
 Kokrā, Bustam Rājā ... 1
 Kokrā, Bustam Rājā ... 1
 Kol, for Aligārī ... 70
 Kol, S. Andaman tribe ... 217
 Kōlis, a tribe, 36; in the Pañjāb Hills, 271, 276, 278 ff., 308 ff., 314, 370 f., 373 ff.
 Kōls, aborigines of India ... 269

| | | | |
|---|----------------------|--|---------------------------|
| Kondaviti, captured by Krishnarāya ... | 352 | Kung, Conge ... | 101 f. |
| Kondul, S. Nicobar isl. ... | 318 | Kunit, from which is Kamait ... | 265 |
| Kōnētirāja, captured by Nr̄isimha ... | 352 | Kunjhāin pājā ... | 304 |
| Kōrā, N. Andaman tribe ... | 217, 238 | Kōpilu, in the Pāñjāb ... | 6 |
| Kosalas, in the Navasāhasrākacharita. 157 n., 171 | | Kurukshētra, home of the Bairāji caste, | |
| kōtherd, a messenger ... | 351 | 270 f.; 284 | |
| Kothī, hills of ... | 8 | Kuśa, son of Ramachandra ... | 53 |
| Kothī, state granary ... | 350 and n., 351 | Kuśa-grass ... | 162 |
| Kötī, Hill State, feudatory to Keōthal, 33, | | Kusheli Deo, a tīkā of Jungā ... | 34, 37 |
| | 37, 42 | Kusumāvachūla, a Vindhyā spur | 155 |
| Kötī, vil. in The Hill States ... | 34 ff. | Kutbu'd-din, viceroy of Delhi ... | 265 |
| Kot Khāi, Hill State, 37; 273; centre of the | | Kuthār, in the Himalayas ... | 37 |
| opium trade ... | 274 | Kuvalaya, meanings of ... | 163 n. |
| Kotlā, in the Himalayas ... | 261 | Kwārā, vil. near Gaṛhwāl ... | 35 f. |
| Kotlēhr, in the Hill States ... | 33, 42 f. | Kwātinyābōi, creek, in the Little Andaman. 246 | |
| Kououk, qāruq, a prohibition ... | 125 and n. | Kyālū, g. ... | 282 |
| bKrashis-mgon, k. of Leh ... | 91 | Kyen, a Chin spirit ... | 204 |
| Krishan, Brāhmaṇ section ... | 264, 266, 311 | | |
| Krishna, g., 253, 254 n., 298; and Rukmini, 376 ff. | | | |
| Krishnarāja, a Parānāra ... | 165, 166 and n., 167 | Labānā or Lobānā sept ... | 51 |
| Krishnarāya, Kiruttīparṣya, q. v. ... | 288 | Lachchhan Rājāon Ke; or Signs of Royalty | |
| Krishnarāya, son of Nr̄isimha ... | 352 | in Rājās, by H. A. Rose ... | 58 |
| Kritavīrya, father of Arjuna ... | 162 | Lacrampe, Father, and the Nicobarese langu- | |
| kritikāvi, 'a clever poet', title of Padma- | | age ... | 317 |
| gupta ... | 151 | Ladahā Khān's tomb, near Kāngā ... | 4 |
| Kshatriyas, in the Pāñjāb Hills, 246; became | | Ladākh, mani walls, 87; and Buddhism, 88; | |
| Brāhmaṇs, etc., 265, 267, 271 f., 275; natal | | and the Baltis, 91, 92; 95; Buddhist stone | |
| customs, 281; purification ... | 289; 306, 311; | image ... | 97 f.; 142 |
| | 314, 370; 372 f. | Ladākhi inscriptions and the Endere ... | 93; 95 |
| Kshuttrachādīmān, a work by Vādibhusintha | | Ladākhi Chronicles and the Basgo fort ... | 85 |
| deals with the life of Jivaka ... | 285 ff. | Ladākhis ... | 93 |
| Kshemendra, author of the <i>Auchityālāñchāra</i> , | | Ladhāriā, sub-section of the Ghirths ... | 52 |
| 119 and n.; 151 f.; mentions Vākpati- | | Lāhānl and Buddhism ... | 268 |
| rāja II. ... | 168, 169 and n. | Lahore, 3, ravaged by Muizzu'd-Din, 4; and | |
| Kulācha, a Governor of Sind ... | 5 | the Khōkhars, 5, 6 and n.; 7 f.; and 'Imād- | |
| Kūlī, in Rawāingarh, near the Burgā mts., | | ul Mulk ... | 43 and n., 70 |
| | 262 and n. | lai-lo, a Chin teacher ... | 208, 213 |
| Kūn, early inhabitants of the Pāñjāb ... | 265 | Lakh Dātā, Pāñjāb Hill Saint ... | 290 |
| Kulacburis and the Hūnas ... | 168 | Lakhnau (Lucknow) ... | 18, 67, 69 |
| kulakū ... | 154 | Lakkharhār, wood supplier ... | 351 |
| kullah, mortars ... | 59 | laksha, Sk. ... | 363, 365 and n. |
| Kullah-i-Khīnbārah, one of Ahmed Shāh's | | Lakshman, g. ... | 298 |
| cannon ... | 59 | Lakshmi, goddess ... | 164, 165 and n.; 376, 378 |
| Kullā, Himalayan vil. ... | 34 | Lāmas, a tribe ... | 275 |
| Kulottunga-Chōla I., identified with Anapāya, | | land, among the Chuhras, 21; rights among | |
| q. v. ... | 288 and n. | the Pāñjāb Hill Tribes ... | 874 f. |
| Kulthī, a tīkā of Jungā ... | 34, 36 | Languages of Savages, a plan for a uniform | |
| Kum or Kasvin, tn. near Tauris ... | 128 n. | scientific record of, see Savages ... | 181 ff., |
| Kumāranārātyana or Sindhurāja, k. ... | 154, | 217 ff., 317 ff., 353 ff. | |
| | 165, 171 | lankā, a stack of fuel ... | 41 n. |
| Kumbh-melā fair ... | 139 f. | Lankā, co. ... | 302 |
| Kumbhāsaṁ and the Kanaits ... | 273 f. | Lannoy, Benjamin De, Consul at Aleppo, | |
| Kumher, fort, attacked by Ahmad Shāh ... | 58 | 131 and n. | |
| 'Kun, Chin clan ancestry ... | 206 ff., 213 | Lar, in Persia ... | 104 f. |
| Kun-dgā-nām-rāyal, k. ... | 91 | Lata and Sindhurāja ... | 157 n., 171 |
| Kundina, tn. in Vidarbha ... | 376, 379 | Latrobe's Letters from the Nicobars ... | 322 |
| Kundinanagara, Krishna's capital ... | 384 | Laurā, Ohimbā sub-section ... | 52 |

| | | | | |
|--|-------------|--------------|--|------------------------|
| Lévi, vñ. in Sirmur | ... ... ... | 34 | Mahákála (<i>Mahákálaparvani</i>), feast | ... 156 |
| lawn-pig, pig sacrifice among the Chins | ... 214 | | mañáshapatalika, chick record-keeper | ... 349 |
| Lava, son of Ramachandra | ... ... | 53 | mañandtya, chief councilor | ... 349 |
| Lde-dpal-akhor-btsan, k. of W. Tibet | ... 96 | | Mahánadatú, g. | ... 263 |
| Jé, Chin paddy-fields | ... ... | 210 | Mahánphá, a <i>tikú</i> of Jungá, 34; cult of | ... 36 |
| Legends, Chuhra—of Rámsar 21 f.; of the | | | <i>Maháparinibbána-Sutta</i> , the and the Piprah- | |
| Marriage of Bálñik's Daughter, 23 ff. | | | wa Vase | ... 118 |
| The Creation, 71 f.; Story of Dhagáná, | | | Mahápráñána, the, and the story of Jívaka, | |
| 73 ff.; of Dáná, 80 ff.; 106 ff., 135 ff. | | | 235; date of | ... 287 |
| Leh, kings of | ... ... ... | 90 f., 97 f. | Mahú Siva, and Mahású, q. v. | ... 253 ff. |
| Leiah, in the Panjáb | ... ... | 52 | Mahású Déotá, the legend of | ... 253 ff. |
| Lha-chen, dynastic name of the first dynasty | | | <i>Maháyutputti</i> , a work | ... 118 |
| of Leh | ... ... | 91 | maháwats... | ... 382 |
| Lha-chen=great god | ... ... | 96 | Maheshn, g. | ... 263 |
| Lha-chen-jo-dpal, k. of Leh | ... ... | 91 | Mahesvara=Siva, g. | ... 381 |
| Lhachen-kun-dgá-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladakh, | | | Mahí Kaháshor=Mahistúra, g., 40 and n, or | |
| inscription of, 89; identification of, 90; date | 91 | | Mahi-Khashwa | ... 41 n. |
| Lha-rgyal, k. of Leh | ... ... | 91 | Mahlög, in the Himalayas | ... 36 |
| Lhayi-sras, dynastic name of Tibetan kings | 96 | | Mahmán (Mahában?) tn. near the Jumna, | |
| Lightning, g., Mahádéo, 37, among the Chins, 209 | | | and Ahmad Sháh | ... 61 |
| Líkar, a Chuhra name | ... ... | 19 | Mahmúd, son of Bharth | ... 2 |
| likhnehdá, a clerk | ... ... | 350 f. | Mahmúd Khán, heir-apparent of Ahmad | |
| Lipari, isles | ... ... | 175 | Khán | ... 65 f. |
| Lisbon, 102; Lexn, and R. Bell | ... ... | 174 | Mahmúd Sultan in the Panjáb, 2; his sixth | |
| Lobán or Labán, sept | ... ... | 51 | invasion of India | ... 4 |
| bLo-bzang-thar-rnyed, Tibetan copyist | ... 93 | | Mahmúd Sháh II, and the Khókhars | ... 5 |
| Lögú, prince of Kötíthr, became a dítá | ... 42 f. | | Mahná swamp, near Parnái | ... 53 |
| Köhri khichri, a kind of food | ... ... | 302 | Mahrattahs and Ahmad Sháh Abdali, 12, 13, | |
| Lónkra, g. | ... ... | 298 | 15, 18, or Mahrattahs... | 48 ff., 55, 58, 61, 66 |
| Lotsava Rinchen bZangpo, a monk | ... 148 | | mahtá, an official | ... 350 |
| Lucas, Sir Gervase, Governor of Bombay in | | | Maindarth, tn. on the Tons, 253; or Maimdá- | |
| 1668 | ... ... ... | 103 n | rath | ... 254 ff.; 259 |
| Lucknow museum contains some harpoon- | | | Mainpur and Ahmad Sháh | ... 65 f., 70 |
| heads | ... ... | 53 | Maitreya, Bodhisattwa, image in Chambá | |
| Ludhiána ravaged by Jasrath the Khókhár, 6 f. | | | monastery, Basgo | ... 85, 93 ff. |
| Lumbini, birthplace of Buddha | ... ... | 118 | Majhog, abode of the demon Singi | ... 257 |
| lún, salt | ... ... | 51 | Majorca islands | ... 174 |
| Máchhi, caste | ... ... | 21 | Makara, crocodile | ... 158, 165 and n. |
| Máchhi-khán, rājá of Chiniot | ... 3 and n | | Makkeru, sub-section of the Mahájans | ... 52 |
| Madapolam, piece goods, old Anglo-Indian | | | Málati, a character in the <i>Navasidhásáṅkacha-</i> | |
| term | ... ... | 252 | <i>rita</i> | ... 154, 157 |
| Madhán, Hill State, feudatory to Keónthal | ... 33 | | Málava, and the Paramáras | ... 150 |
| Madhurá taken by Nrisimha | ... ... | 352 | Málavamáñaketana, for Sindhurája | ... 150 |
| Madras, Maddera sleptan, visited by R. Bell, | | | Málavarájá=Sindhurája | ... 155 |
| 101; 344; the Right-hand Castes of | 348 n. | | Malay language in the Nicobars | ... 319 |
| Magadha and Achyuta | ... ... | 352 | Malaya, mts. | ... 155 |
| maghás entertainment | ... ... | 313 | Malayan aboriginal and Nicobarese langu- | |
| maghrib, evening prayer | ... ... | 65 | ages compared | ... 357 ff. |
| Magic, among the Chuhras, 19; the Panjáb | | | <i>Mulfuzat-i-Tímári</i> , the, and the Khókhars | ... 6 n. |
| Hill Tribes | ... ... | 309 | Malik Alláh-dád, governor of Lahore | ... 8 |
| Magulls mentioned by R. Bell | ... ... | 100 | Malik Ilast | ... 3 n., 9 and n. |
| Máhabhárata, war, 35; and the Rájputs | 265, 268 | | Malik Ikhtiyáru'd-Dín, Altunia, q. v. | ... 5 |
| Máhabdéo for Manáni, g., 35, Lightning, g. | | | Malik Jasrat, son of Shaikhá | ... 3 |
| | | 37 ff. | Malik Kad, a noble of Ghazní | ... 8 n. |
| Mahádev, g. | ... ... | 258 | Malik Kalán, a noble of Ghazní | ... 8 n. |
| Mahájans, Kángra sept | ... ... | 52 | Malik Khusrau, last of the Ghaznívides | ... 4 |
| | | | Malik Shaukh | ... 9, 6 |

- Malik Shaikhâ, governor of Lahore ... 3, 6 and n.
 Malik Tâtâr Khân, governor of the Pañjâb ... 5
 Malîkânâ dues 260, 263, 274
 Mâlvâ and the Paramâras ... 166 and n.;
 170 and n.; 171 f.
 Mâlvâ and the Kshatriyas 267, 270
 Mâlyavatî, character in the *Navasâhasâṅka-*
charita 154, 156
 Man, Mr. A. C., and the Nicobarese languages. 317
 Man, Mr. E. H., and the languages of the
 Andamanese and Nicobarese ... 181,
 183, 220, 317, 322, 353 f., 357 f.
 Man, Col. H., and the Nicobarese languages. 317
 Mânasasarovara, lake in Tibet 381
 Mânavadurga, taken by Nrisimha 352
 mâyâlâ or dêśa, 348 n.; modern *pargaya*,
 350; *mâyâl* 350 n.
 Mandalapurusha, compiler of the Tamil lexi-
 con 'Sâlumaiñinigandu' 288
 Mandâr, son of Sândâ 2 f.
 Mandâr Afghâns, descendants of Mandâr. 3
 Mândubâtri, k. of the Ikshwâku race 165
 Mandi, Hill State 35
 Mandi Rohr, in Kapûrthalâ 4
 Mânekir or Malkhed, home of the Rathors ... 169
 mânagalas, charms 121
 Mangla Devi, fort in Jammu 8
 mankrâs, spirits 296
 mânî, a measure. 21
 manî (Toda) buffalo-bells 83
 manî-walls in Tibet 86 ff.; 92, 97
 Mânik-Thâtrî, day when the mussels rise to
 the surface of the sea 164 n.
 Mañjughosha, Bodhisattva ('a Tam-dby-
 angs') 86; 90
 Mann, Dr. Oskar, on Ahîmad Shâh 10
 Mannd, Mu-in-ui-Mulk 70
 Manthara = Mândara, Mount 381
 Manu, progenitor of mankind 162
 Manucci 100 n.; 174
 Manûn, in the Hill State 35
 Manûn, a tîki of Jungâ 34 f.
 Mânyakheta, cap. of the Râthors of Manekir
 or Malkhed, plundered 169
 Mârân, a nickname of Beorâshusû 1
 Marîthas 166 n.
 Mardânâ, in Siâlkot 3
 Mahrattâhs, see Mahrattabs, 48 ff.; 55, 58, 61, 66
 Mârî Buchiân, vil. in the Pañjâb 3 n.
 mîrs, Pañjâbî, forts 3 and u.
 Mârî Tappa, in the Pañjâb 2, 3
 Marriage of Balnik's Daughter, Chuhra
 legend 23 ff.
 Marriage, customs, among the Chins, 212 f.;
 among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes, 272, 275 ff.;
 of Hindus, 278 f.; of widows, 280; kinds
 of, 282; eight forms of 376 n.
 Marsh, Mr. E. I. Co.'s servant, at Dacca ... 174
 Mârvâr, and the Kshatriyas 267; 270
 Mary, the Virgin 177
 masdn or jayî, a cure; also a burning-place,
 or demon, 19; called *chhatâ* 52
 mashrû, figured cloth 14
 Masulipatam, MasLepotan, visited by R. Bell 101
 Masûn, sub-section of the Mair Sunârs 52
 Mathurâ, sacked under Ahîmad Shâh. 51, 60,
 61 and n.; 62, 64, 70; and Jarâsandha, 382
 Matiâna, for Fâgû Hill *pargandâ* 38
 Mâtris, water nymphs 304
 Mau, tn. W. of Farrukhâbâd, 14 and n.; Mau
 Rashidâbâd 69 and n.
 Maund, a weight, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Maurer, and the Nicobarese languages. 317; 321
 Mayayamala, an excrementitious product. 376 n.
 Mayikamala, an excrementitious product 376 n.
 Mayûra, poet 151
 mchod-rten, in Tibet 87, 88, 97
 medallions, raised and painted, in the Basgo
 Monastery 87 ff.
 medicines among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 315
 Mîghâsatîdâsa, a work by Kâlidâsa 287
 mêtâs, wazirs or kirdârs, temple overseers. 273 f.
 Merchants of the Pañjâb Hill Tribes 274
 Merutunga's *Prabandhachintâmañi*, 159;
 163 n.; 167 and n.; 168 and n.; 169, 170
 and n.; 171 n.
 Messena, tn., seat of the silk manufacture. 174 ff.
 Metriétycha, Nicobarese standard of reckon-
 ing 365
 Miân Bibî, the Cult of, by H. A. Rose ... 32
 Miânwâli, totemism in 52
 Midnâpur 'celts' 53
 migrations of the Hill Brâhmans ... 266; 272
 Mîhrâb, a descendant of Dahâk 1
 Mîhrâbâd, near Audh 67
 Mihtar Mûsâ, Moses 21 n.
 Minâs, Minâs, 5; aborigines of India ... 269
 Minorca isles 174
 Mi-pham-mgon, Lama and viceroy of Leh ... 92
 Mirâsi, caste 21
 Mirath, tn., and Ahîmad Shâh 50, 60
 Mir Ghulâm Rasûl, alias Mir Manjhle ... 68 f.
 Mir Jundah, Sadr-u-sudûr, and Ahîmad
 Shâh, 47; and Thos. Pratt 174
 Mir Manûn or Mu'in-ul-Mulk-(Mannu)-whose
 daughter was betrothed to Ahîmad Shâh ...
 10; 43 and n.; 45 ff.; 70
 Mirowâl, near Siâlkot 3
 Mir Sâhib, for Sher Audâz Khân. 12, 14 ff.;
 50 f., 56 f.; 59; 61 ff.; 68 f.
 Mîrzâ Bâbâ, son-in-law to Aziz-ud-din. 64, 70
 Mîrzâ Tahmâsp, Miskim, a slave 10
 Missionaries, American Baptist, among the
 Chins 206 n.; 211

| | | | |
|---|----------------------------------|--|--------------|
| Miyān 'Abdullah Shāh who adopted Sher Andāz Khān ... | 12 | mugaiyash, decorated ... | 56 |
| Monastery ruins in W. Tibet ... | 85, 87 f. | Murād IV., recaptured Bagdad from the Persians ... | 126 n. |
| Mongesbēl, Monte Bello or Gibello, Etna, 175 and n. | | Muralas, in the <i>Navasāhasānkacharita</i> . 157 n.; 171 | |
| Mongol Monastery in Tibet, 'Sogpoi mGonpa, 87 | | musādbih, a courtier ... | 39 |
| Mongols in Tibet ... | 85, 87 | Musalman, as k. of Ladākh ... | 92 |
| Mong 'Wn, Chin, teacher ... | 209 | Musalmans, the Baltis ... | 91 |
| monkeys, worshipped ... | 304 | Muscatt, visited by R. Bell ... | 101 f. |
| Mon-Khmer languages, 180; and the Nicobarese ... | 216; 318; 357 | Mykenae blades ... | 54 |
| monuments, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 272 | Myrabolam, Bimlinuts, old Anglo-Indian term ... | 252 |
| Moorees, Mubāmadans, 101; in Tangier. 174 n. | | | |
| Morrisse, Capt. of the <i>Preadvence</i> ... | 177 | | |
| Moses, Mihtar Mūsā, among the Chuhras, 21 and n.; 107; 137 | | | |
| Mother 'Li, The Great Parent, worshipped by the Chins ... | 264 ff.; 208, 211, 213 f. | Nachchīṇārkkīṇīyar, commentator, on the <i>Jivakachintāmani</i> ... | 289 |
| movannis, Kannit leaders, 265; or thākurs ... | 268 | nād or ox, worshipped ... | 304 |
| Mriganda, a Muni ... | 159 | Nādaun, in Kotlēhr ... | 33, 34, 37 |
| Mṛigāṅgupta, father of Padmagupta ... | 150 | Nadinah, tn. and Ahmad Shāh ... | 60 |
| myāndlaśākī, a lotus-root ... | 155 | Nādir Shāh's invasion of Hindustan, 14; and Ahmad Shāh ... | 63 n. |
| Mubārak Shāh, Sultān ... | 7 | Nāga kings in Rājputānā ... | 172 |
| Mughals in the Pañjāb, 7, and Ahmad Shāh, 67; 264 | | nāgadāraka, snake-youth ... | 157 |
| Muhammad, Sultān of Ghor ... | 4, 5 n. | Nāga-Kshatriyas ... | 172 |
| Muhammad Ḥasan, probably Ghulām Hasan or Samīn ... | 10 f., 64 | Nāgamāmbā, queen to Nr̄siṁha ... | 352 |
| Muhammad Sadiq, Sukhanwar, brother of Ghulām Hasan ... | 10 | Nāgarī writing ... | 149 |
| Muhammad Sālih, Sher Andāz Khān Bahādur. 11 | | Nāgar Mall of Akbarābad, opposed Ahmad Shāh ... | 65 |
| Muhammad Shāh III. ... | 5 | Nag-bansi or Takshak, the descendants of Beorāshṣā ... | 1 |
| Muhammad Shāh, and the Khōkhars ... | 8 | Nāg Chauth, or Mahāsu, four gods ... | 255 |
| Muhammad Tughlaq Shāh, and the Khōkhars | 5 | nāg dīvtā, snake god ... | 304 |
| Muhammadan, and Hindu names used together, 2 n.; Scriptures, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 264; migrations, 270; marriages, 278; puberty customs 281; dead, disposal of ... | 283 f., 290 | Nāg Panchamī, festival ... | 302 |
| Muhammadans, and totemism, 51; Moores, 104; conquered Mālvā and Gujarat, 171, 264; dress of, etc. ... | 372, 374 | Nāgpur, home of the aborigines ... | 269 |
| Muhammad of Ghaznī ... | 8 | Nāgpur Praśasti, list of Paramāra kings, 165 and n.; 172 | |
| Mu'min-ul-Mulk, Mannā, 10, whose daughter married 'Imād-ul-Mulk ... | 43 and n., 70 | Nāhān, and the Kshatriyas ... | 267; 270 |
| Mu'min-dīn, ravaged Lahore ... | 4 | nāshāhrās ... | 304 |
| mutch dātti, a marriage custom ... | 276 | nāīk, Naagg ... | 98 |
| Mūl, a Star ... | 306 | Nain, near Simla ... | 84 |
| Mūlārāja, founder of the Chaulukyas of Anahilapattana ... | 151 | Najib Khān, commander under Ahmad Shāh, 12, 15 and n.; 16, 44 f.; 51, 60, 62 ff.; 66, 70 | |
| Mulā, in W. Tibet ... | 97 | nakskutar, evil star ... | 312 |
| Mūlā Sardār Khān, a chief ... | 66 f. | namīz-i-maghrib, sunset prayers ... | 59 |
| Mūlā, Hill State ... | 35 | Nambi-Āndār Nambi arranged the Tamil | |
| Mūlā or Vālpatirāja II. ... | 159; | Scriptures ... | 288 n. |
| Mūlā or Vālpatirāja II. ... | 165 ff.; 169 f.; 171 and n.; 172 | Nānak, Gurū ... | 81; 136; 142 |
| Mūqaddam or ugrākā, a tax gatherer ... | 361 | Nancowry, C. Nicobarese, 617 f.; de Roeps- | |
| | | torff's dictionary of ... | 369 |
| | | Nanda, traditional half-brother of Buddha. 119 n. | |
| | | nān-i-tanak, thin bread ... | 17 |
| | | Narain, g. ... | 256, 261 |
| | | Nārāṇī Bali Shrādh, a funeral ceremony ... | 284 |
| | | Narasa or Nr̄siṁha ... | 352 |
| | | Narasimha or Narī ... | 167 |
| | | Narelah, tn., and Ahmad Shāh ... | 70 |

- Narmadā (*Revā*), goddess in the *Navasāhā-*
sākharita 154 ff.
narol pūjā, secret ceremony 298
nāyu khulī, a marriage custom 283
 Narsingh, g. 298, 300
 Narwarköt 75
nasagchits, armed messengers ... 16 f.; 46 ff.; 50 f.
 Nashudī, on the Pabar riv. 258
 Nasik cave inscription 172
Nusket, a work 284
 Nat, a spirit among the Chins 207 ff.
 Nathū, a Chuhra name 19
 Naushera, tn., in Chuhra legend. 79 f., 82 f.;
 106, 109
navagraha homa, a ceremony connected with
 the planets 379
 Navasāhasrāka, Sindhurāja ... 150 and n.;
 151 and n.; 153 and n.; 154 ff.; 165, 169 ff.
Navasāhasrākacharita of Padmagupta or Pa-
 rimala, by the late Prof. G. Bübler and
 Dr. Th. Zachariae. I.—The Manuscript,
 149. II.—The Author, his time and work,
 150. III.—Quotations from, 151 f. IV.—
 The *Navasāhasrākacharita*, 153. V.—
 Analysis of the Poem, 154 ff. VI.—His-
 torical Events from it, 159 ff.; genealogical
 tree of the Paramara kings of Dhārā and
 Ujjain, 165; details concerning them ... 166 ff.
 Nazareth, visited by R. Bell ... 177 and n., 178
Názir or *Seer*, an official 125 and n.
 Néög, in the Himalayas 37
 New Year's Day, ceremony at Nyemo, 88;
 among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 302
 Ngag-dbang-rgya-mthso, a Lama, contem-
 porary of k. Sengge-rnam-rgyal 86
ngapī, pickled fish 210, 215
 mNgāris, ancient name of W. Tibet 94
 Niñzis, a tribe 9
 Nicobarese languages ... 181 ff.; 217 ff.;
 317 ff., 353 ff.
nidhána, a receptacle 119
 Nigalts, Pañjāb Hill sect 311
 Nigliva inscription 119
 Nikala, near Lahore 5
 Nilāb, home of the Gakkhars 8
 Ninduna, a *parganā* 9
 Nineveh, or Neneveigh, visited by R. Bell,
 129 f.
 Nirandar Chandar, Rājā of Kāngra 268
 Nirmand copper-plate inscription 349 n.
 Nissowānās, sub-division of the Rihāns. 3 and n.
 Nor-'adzin, a princess of Ladākh 87
 Nôratās, festivals 301
 Nôratrī, festival 302
 Norham harpoon 54
 Notāre, in Garhwāl 261
- Notes on the Chins of Burma, by the Revd.
 G. Whitehead.—Religion, 204 f.; Tribal
 System, 206; Propitiatory Ceremonies, 207;
 Spirits, 208; Cosmology, Witches, Law, 209;
 Manner of Life, Tattooing, 210; Burmese
 Influence, 211; Customs—Marriage, 212 f.;
 Burial... 214 f.
 Notes on Ancient Administrative Terms and
 Titles in the Pañjāb, by H. A. Rose. 348 ff.
 Nṛsiinha, Narasa, son of Iśvara 352
 Numeral co-efficients, Nicobarese, 333; nu-
 merals 361 ff.
 Nunnery ruins at Nyemo 88
 Nurālād, S. of Agra, contains the tomb of
 Gannā Begam... 44 n.
 Nur-ul-hasan Khān, Sayyid, of Bilgrām ... 68
 Nusrat, a Khōkhar chief, 3, defeated by Timūr;
 6 and n.
 Nya-khri-btsanpo, 'a Lord of the earth' ... 86
 Nyemo, in W. Tibet, inscriptions at ... 85 ff.; 97
 Nyima-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladākh ... 86, 92
 Nyurla (sNyungla) in W. Tibet, votive tablet
 at 92
- Oaths, among the Chuhras, 19; the Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes 303
 Obamambā, wife of Nṛsiinha 352
 Occupations, Chuhra, 20; of the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes 372 f.
 odhyā, high official 351
 Oeiro, bay of, probably Bay Waggers. 174 and n.
 ok-mi, skilled Chin teacher 208
 Oueus, among the Chuhras, 19; the Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes 306 f.
 Onge-Jārawa, Outer Andamanese Tribes, 217,
 220; languages, 239 ff.; 243 f.; vocabula-
 ries 246 ff.
 Ootacamund 83
 opium, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes. 274, 315
 Oram Zeb, Magull 125, 132 f.
 Orang-bukit, wild Malays 318
 Orang-utan, wild Malays 318
 Ormous, Ormuz 102 and n.; 103 and n.
 Ornaments, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 372.
 ox or nād, worshipped 304
 Oxinden, Sir George, Oxenall, President of
 Suratt, 1662-69 101 and n., 103 n.
- Pabar, riv. 262
 Pabāstī, g.... 255, 259 f.; 261 and n.
 Paço d'Arcos, Passe Darkas, tn. near Lisbon,
 174 and n.
 Padmagupta or Parimala, author of the *Na-*
 vasdhāsākacharita 149 ff.
 Padmasimha, other forms 167

- Pahrī, a record-keeper 350 f.
 Pākpatan, the ancient Ajūdhan 5 n.
 pālī, Toda, a milkman 83
 Palankwe, Andamanese Tribe 246
 Palārī, in the Hill States 35
 Palestine, the travels of R. Bell and J. Campbell in 98 ff.; 125 ff.; 173 ff.
 Pālī, Pājīb *pargānā*, 69
 Pallava, saint, ancestor of the Plaud sept 52
 palerū, an official 351
 Pālwī, vil. in Sirmur 34
panch gāvya, mixture used in purification ceremonies 289, 297
panch jūg 313
panchak shānti, propitiatory hymns 309
panchāyat, council 273
panch ratan, five gems 305
pandanus, paste 347
 Pāndavas, and the Cult of Kanēti ... 35; 253 f.
 Pāndavs 21 ff.
 Pāngi wizārat 350 f.
panilā, feast 313
 Pānpat, victory of 10
pāni-watrā, pimples 51
 Pājīb, home of the Khōkhars and Gakkars. 1
 Pājīb and Totemism 51 f.
 Pājīb, Notes on Ancient Administrative Terms and Titles in 348 ff.
 Pājīb Hill Tribes, A report on, from a Native point of view, by Mian Durga Singh.—Tribes, Tribal Designations, 264 f.; History of Migrations—Tables of Hill Sections—Brāhmans, 266; Rājputas, 267; Vaiśyas, 268; Sūdras, 269; Mendicants, Tribal Head-Quarters, 270; Genealogical Tables, 271; Monuments, Caste Marriages, Totemism, Tribal Names, 272; Public Assemblies, Deities, 273; Trade, Artizans, 274; Marriage Customs, 275 f.; Divorce, Polyandry, Prostitution, 277; Inheritance, 278; Tribal details, 279; Widows, Household customs, 280; Adoption, Puberty, 281; Betrothal, Marriage, 282; Death, 283; Purification, 289; Religion, Gods, 290 ff.; Worship, Ghosts and Spirits, 296; Initiation, Sect, Priests, 297; Places of worship, Sacrifices, 298 f.; Festivals, 300 ff.; Animism, Worship, of Spirits, 303; of Ancestors, 305; of Animals and Trees, Omens, 306 f.; Sumptuary and Naming Customs, 308; Magic, Charms, Possession, Exorcism, Dreams, Spirit propitiation, Evil Eye, 309; Fortune-telling, Illness, 310; Abstention from Foods, Tribal Descent, Customs on Eating, Restrictions as to Women, 311; Pronouncing Names and Words, Courtesy Titles, Agricultural Superstitions, 312; Food and Drink, 313; Dining Customs, 314; Stimulants and Medicines, 315; Social Customs and Intercourse, 370 f.; Clothing and Ornaments, Dancing and Singing, Occupations and Professions, 372 f.; Agriculture, Land Rights, etc. 374, f.
 Pannuloe, perhaps the modern Kashan. 128 and n.
 Panuān Jāts 3
 Parabrahmā, the supreme spirit 376 n.
 Parālī, Hill *pargānā* 33, 37
 Paramāras of Mālava. 150; 157, 159, 161 n., 162 and n., dynastic list, 165; 166 and n., 167 ff.
 Paramāramahībhṛit, a name of Sindhuṛāja ... 155
 Paramāravarāṁsaketu, a name of Sindhuṛāja ... 150
 Paras Rām, ancestor of the Kshatriya ... 267
pardā nishin, secluded women 41
pargānās, 33 ff.; 274; or *mandala*, 350 and n.; 351 and n.
 Parhālah, in the Pājīb 8 f.
 Pariar, in the Unāo District of Oudh, its prehistoric implements 53 f.
 Parikshit, k., successor of Yudhishthira 376, 384
 Parimala or Padmagupta, q. v. 149 ff.
pāris, fairies 296, 304
 Pārvatābhūdaya, a work by Jināśenāchārya. 287
 Pārvatā-Tīrthamkara 287
 Pārvatī, goddess 378, 380 f.
 Pasand Khān, Shāh, a commander under Ahmad Shāh 56
pa-san 'sayā, Chin teacher or priest 207 ff.
 Pashu-pati 263
 Passe Darkas, Paço d' Arcos, q. v. ... 174 and n.
 pasture, among the Pājīb Hill Tribes ... 375
 Pātāla, a character in the *Navasāhasrākacha-rita* 154 ff.
 Pathāns, a sect 264
 Pathrālfā, sub-section of the Ghirths 52
 Patna 100 n.
 Patnah 'Azīmābād 68 n.
 pattā, a leaf 52
 pattā, blanket 351
 Patwāl, riv. in the Himalayas 261
 patwāri, an official 351
 Paulinists, Pollistians, the Jesuits ... 102 and n.
 Paulomi, wife of Kasyapa 164
 Paundraka, an enemy of Krishna 379
 Pāvāgadī, Pāvakadurga, fort in C. Gujarāt. 166 n.
pawn-zēng, Chin burial offering 214, 216
 Payar, riv. 270
 Pegu-Tenasserim Coast, tradition of a Nicobarese migration from 360
 pehrā, feast 313
 penates, deceased fore-fathers, worshipped by the Chins 204, 206, 208
 Periyapurāṇam, Tamil work by Sēkkījūr 288 and n.

- Persia, S., copper implements, 54; and the travels of R. Bell and J. Campbell ... 98 ff.; 125 ff.; 173 ff.
- Persian characters in Shah inscription ... 93
- Pesans or Pisans ... 179 and n.
- Peshawar and Ahmad Shah ... 70
- Phagū, in the Himalayas ... 37, 42
- phases of the moon, among the Nicobarese ... 367
- Phe, on the Indus, votive tablet at ... 92
- Phyang, vil. in Tibet ... 88 f.; 92
- Pile Bheddi, Brāhmaṇ sept ... 52
- pilgrimage among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 270
- pīpal tree ... 255, 272, 306, 311
- Piprahwa Vase Inscription ... 117 ff.
- pindlī, an idol ... 43
- pīrāhan, a light wrapper ... 18
- pīr ghāzī, tomb of Ladahā Khān, in Kangra ... 4
- pīrs, saints ... 290
- pīsacha, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
- Pischel, Prof., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 119 f.
- pitri paksh, dark half of lunar month, 289; ancestor's fortnight ... 805
- pitris, manes ... 379
- Plaunt, Father, and the Nicobarese language ... 317
- Plaud, sub-section of the Mair Sunārs ... 52
- Plaung 'Saw, Chin, rain fairy ... 208
- Pōh Klai, Ceres, among the Chins ... 207
- Pōi 'Kleuk, Chin, Lord of the Under World, 206 f., 215 f.
- Pojarli, near Jungā ... 34
- Pollstians or Paulhnists ... 102 and n.
- polyandry, among the Khōkhars, 1; the Todas, 84, the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 277
- polygyny, among the Todas ... 84
- Poona and the Bōhrās ... 268, 270
- Port Blair, in the Andamans ... 217, 219, 246
- Portman, Mr M V—Comparative Grammar of the South Andaman Languages, 183; 220, 221 and n., on The Fire Legend, 222; 245 f.; on roots, 232, 236 f.; Onge-Jarawa words, 239 ff., Vocabulary ... 246 ff.
- Portugalls and Muscatt in 1650 ... 101 and n.; 102 n.; 103 and n.
- Portuguese language in the Nicobars ... 319
- Porvaroi for Paramāras ... 166 n.
- post, poppy-head or capsule ... 20, 105 n.
- potatoe trade among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes. 274
- Potter's Field, the ... 179 and n.
- Powar for Paramāras ... 166 n.
- Powargada, a fort ... 166 n.
- Prabandhas, Jaina, on the Chaulakyas and Paramāras ... 170 ff.
- Prāg, Allahabad ... 266
- Prahādāna, a Paramāra ... 166
- prajāpatyam, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
- Prakrit Words occurring in Pischel's "Grammatik der Prakrit Sprachen" Appendix, 121—182
- pralaya, distinction ... 388
- Pramāra, old form of Paramāras ... 166 n.
- Pratt, Thos. of Dacca ... 173 f.
- pregnancy, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 280
- Prester John, co. visited by R. Bell ... 101, 128, 132
- priests, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 278
- Prīthvivallabha, a name of Vākpatirāja II, 165, 168
- professions, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 378 f.
- prostitution, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 277, 278
- psallava, a leaf ... 52
- Ptolemaicus on the Paramāras ... 166 n., 172 n.
- Puars and Paramāras ... 166 n.
- puberty customs, among the Chins, 210; the, Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 281
- Pujārlī, Himalayan vil. ... 262
- Pulo Milo, Nicobar isl. ... 318
- Pulumāyi, Andhra k., Siri-Pulu. ... 172 and n.
- Punuar, Hill *pargand* ... 83
- Punwar, for Paramāra ... 166 n.
- Purānas ... 264
- pūrānmāshī, full moon ... 43, 301, 813
- Purification, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes. 289
- Purohita, priest ... 162 n., 271, 379
- Purushottama, a title of Vishnu ... 378
- Pūrvapurāna, that portion of the Mahā-purāna composed by Jinasēnāchārya ... 287
- pusemar samnit karam, a marriage custom ... 282
- Putupettanūpura (?) pillar of victory at ... 252
- Pwo-Karen alphabet, among the Chins. 206 n.
- sPyan-ras-yags; Avalokitesvara ... 86
- Qādirganj, in the Etah dist., and Ahmad Shah ... 15, 70
- Qalandar Khān, envoy to Ahmad Shah ... 70.
- Qumar-ud-din Khān, a noble, and Ahmad Shah 45, 47; or I'timād-ud-daulah ... 66 n.
- Qandahār, and the Ghori tribe 1, 2 and n.; and Ahmad Shah ... 65, 70.
- qarāwal, skirmishers ... 16
- Qasūr, S.-E. of Lāhor ... 17 and n.
- Qizzilbāsh clothes ... 59
- Qubbah-*r-shāh*, the Shāh's copula ... 58
- gūr, an armed retinue ... 58
- gūruq, Kourouk, a prohibition ... 125 and n.
- quwāchī bāshī, the ... 58
- Rab-britan lhartse, Basgo castle ... 86 f.
- rabī crops ... 265, 375
- Rabstan-lha-rtse, a royal palace in Basgo fort ... 85

- | | | | |
|---|-----------------|---|------------------------|
| Rādīc, (?) near Teheran), visited by R. Bell ... | 128 | Rāthīs, Rājpūt section ... | 268 |
| Rādūpāti = Rāṭapāti or the Rāshtrakūṭa king Kōṭṭiga ... | 164 | Rāthors of Mānekin or Malkhed ... | 169 |
| Rādūpāti, tn. or co., and k. Siyaka ... | 168 | Ratnachāḍa, character in the <i>Navasāhasrākācharita</i> ... | |
| Rae Sāl, ruler of the Salt Range ... | 4 | Ratnavati, tn. ... | 157 ff. |
| Rahīr tribe ... | 271 | Ratn Pāl, son of Sanda ... | 2 and n. |
| Rāhū, evil star ... | 266, 297 | Rāṇt (Marāṭhi) = horse-soldier ... | 348 u. |
| Rāhus, a tribe ... | 275 | Rāvati, daughter of Rīvata ... | 376 |
| Rai Bhīm or Bhalīn, a chief ... | 7 and n. | Rāverty, Major, on the Khōkhars and Gakkars ... | |
| Rai Ghālib, a chief ... | 7 | Rāvī, riv. ... | 1, 6 n., 7 n., 8 n. |
| rainbow, among the Chins ... | 209 | Rawīl Deo, a <i>tikā</i> of Jungā ... | 34, 37 |
| Rai Sārang, a Gakkhar ... | 9 | Rāwan ... | 75, 253 |
| Rāntā, a <i>tika</i> of Jungā 34, or Rāīhā ... | 37 | Rāwāt (Guzarāti) = horse-soldier ... | 348 n. |
| Rajāna, Hill <i>pargānā</i> ... | 33 | Rāwats, a Rājpūt section ... | 268 |
| Rājā Vir Khān, founder of Kāngra ... | 3 | Rāwin, Hill <i>pargānā</i> ... | 33 |
| Rājendra-Chōladēva, alias Kulottunga-Chōla I, or Sūngandaviritta-Chōla, names of Anapāya Chōla ... | 288 and n. | Ray, Mr. Sidney, on the application of the Theory of Universal Grammar ... | 181, 183; 221, 342 n. |
| Rājendra-Chōla I, or Gangaikondā-Chōla ... | 288 n. | Razīyyat Sūltāna assisted by the Khōkhars ... | 5 |
| Rajpur, prehistoric implements from ... | 53 | Reggio, Regium, in Italy ... | 175 |
| Rājputānā 98; and the Nāgā Kings ... | 172; 265 | Rēhrs, a caste ... | 370, 373 ff. |
| Rājpūts, 41; and totemism ... | 52 | Religion of the Chins, 204; of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | |
| Rājpūts, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, subdivisions decided by descent, 264; or Chhātris, 265, 271, table of sections of, etc., 267 ff.; marriage rules, 275 ff.; death customs, 283; food, 211; titles, 312; Saturation, 370 f.; occupations ... | 372, ff. | Rāwan ... | 290 ff.; 371; 374 |
| rākṣasa, a form of marriage ... | 376 and n., 378 | remarriage, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 277; of widows ... | 280 |
| Rām plundered Ceylon ... | 136 f., 142 | Revā, Narmada or 'Saśāṅkasūti riv., and goddess, in the <i>Navasāhasrākācharita</i> , 154 ff. | |
| Rāma, g. ... | 298 | Rice, modern Anglo-Indian term ... | 252 |
| Rām Lāndar, ancestor of the Rājpūts, conquered Ceylon ... | 41 f., 302 | rice-beer, <i>kaung</i> ... | 206 ff., 212 ff. |
| Ramachandra ... | 53 | Ridgeway, Prof., on Persian copper implements ... | 54 |
| Rāmadeva, a Paramāra k. ... | 166 | Rihān, a Pañjāb sept, probably the Rihāns, 2 and n. | |
| Rāmagrāma stūpa ... | 118 | Rink, Dr., and the Nicobarese languages ... | 317 |
| Ramah, visited by R. Bell ... | 179 | <i>ritvika</i> ... | 376 n. |
| Ramāṅgada or Yaśobhaṭa, minister of Sindurājā ... | 154 ff., 172 | Rivata or Raivata, k. of Ānarta ... | 376 |
| Rāmīyana ... | 265 | <i>rnam-rgyal</i> , dynastic name of the second dynasty of Lch ... | 91 |
| Rāmgangīt, riv. ... | 69 | Röepstorff, F. A. de, and the Nicobarese languages ... | 317, 321, f., 353, 369 |
| Rāmgārh-Hill inscriptions ... | 118 | Rohelah soldiers under Ahmad Shāh, 15, 60, 66, 67 | |
| Rām Līlā ceremony ... | 300 | Rohtās, fort, founded ... | 9 |
| Rāmpūr, Hill <i>pargānā</i> ... | 33 | <i>roti</i> , saffron ambergris ... | 316 |
| Rāmsar; Chuhṛa legend of ... | 21 f. | Rosen, Danish Missionary, and the Nicobarese languages ... | 317 |
| randhānī, a cookshop ... | 163 n. | <i>röt</i> , a loaf ... | 35, 42 |
| Rangoon ... | 106 | Rudar, Siva, 254, or Ruddar ... | 261 ff. |
| Ranjā Bhoj, in Chuhṛa legend ... | 75 | Rudrāditya, minister of Vākpatirāja II. | 169 f. |
| Ranvin Sairi and the Kanaits ... | 273 | Rukmabāhu=Rukmi ... | 377 |
| Rādī Chhabīṭā of Delhi, ancestor of the Baggu sept ... | 51 | Rukmakeśa=Rukmi ... | 377 |
| rāshīs, stars of fate ... | 307 | Rukmanēṭra=Rukmi ... | 377 |
| Rasin or Raisin, M., of Lyons, and R. Bell, 128 and n.; 129 | | Rukmaratha=Rukmi ... | 377 |
| Ratesh, Hill State, feudatory of Keōnthal ... | 83, 36, 42 | Rukmi, son of Bhīshmaka ... | 376 f.; 380, 383 |
| | | Rukmini Kalyanam, by G. R. Subramiah Pantulu ... | 376 ff. |

- Rummindēi and Buddha relics ... 118 and n.
... 119, 124
- Kūpar, (Arūbar), and the Khōkhars, 6 f.;
and the Muhammadans 268, 270
- Rūrā, a Chuhṛa name 19
- Sāñdat Khān, Afridi Afghan 12
- Sachī, wife of Indra 162 and n.
- sacrifices, among the Chins, 207; called
Bhundā, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes
298 f.; 305.
- saddāgatpravritta, meanings of ... 163 n.
- Sadpor, (Baltistan) inscriptions ... 95 ff.
- sadr-uṣ-sadūr, chief almoner 64
- Sādū, in Patiāla 39
- Sa'dullah Khān, a Rohelah Nawab ... 66, ff., 69
and n.
- Sāēr, fair at Khād Ashnī in Keōnthal, 41; or
Shērī 302
- Safdar Jang, Nawāb and Ahmad Shāh: 11,
14 f., 16 n., 17
- Sagāi or Sotā, form of betrothal ... 282
- Sāhasāṅka=Sindhurāja 156, 165
- sahemavetrah, golden staff 159
- Sāhityadarpana, a work 153
- Sahswān, parganā, in the United Provinces ... 69
- Safipur or Safipur, adopted home of Sher
Andāz Khān 12 and n.
- Saif-ud-daukh, Nawāb, chief almoner under
Azīz-ud-dīn 64, 68
- Sain dynasty, of which are the Keōnthal
Rājās 42
- Saivas, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
probably the Shukan Brahmanas 266
n.; 272, 290, 297, 314
- Saiva Tamil Scriptures, Tirumūrai ... 288 n.
- Saiyids 77
- Saka=Musalmān 352
- Saka era, 170; or year, 820=287 A. D. ... 287
- Sākī Singh, Rāja, a recollection of Sakyamuni,
introduced Buddhism into the Pañjāb
Hills 268
- Sāktaks, a caste 290, 297, 314
- Sākti, goddess 290
- Sāktis, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 272
- Sākyamuni=Buddha, a recollection of ... 268 n.
- Sākyas, "brethren of Buddha" in the Piprahwa
Vase inscription 117 ff.
- Sālār Jang, Nawāb, and Ahmad Shāh ... 67, 70
- sale, a measure 207
- Salim Khān, a chief 8 n.
- Salim Shāh, Sultān Islām and the Gakkars. 9
- Sallammiti, tn. visited by R. Bell 133
- Salnā Pattī, vil. in Rāwingarh 258
- Salt Range, home of the Gakkars 1
- Salutations among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 370
- Salva, k. 376, 379
- Sāmāna, in the Pañjāb 7
- Samangs of the Malay Peninsula, congeners
of the Andamanese 217, 246
- Sāndhan, vil. on the Ganges, near Farrukhā-
bād 10
- Sānding Monastery on the Yamdok Lake ... 88
- Sāmin, Ghulām Hasan, author of the Sharāif-
i-uṣmāni 10 f.
- Saminatha Aiyar, Pandit, on the Jivakachintā-
mani 285
- Samuthalla near Lahore, scene of a Khōkhār
defeat 5
- Sanctuary, in Keōnthal 41
- Sāndā, a Kohrānā Rājā founded Sāndar in
the Pañjāb 2 and n.
- Sandal Bār, in the Pañjāb 2 and n., 3 n.
- Sāndar, c. in the Pañjāb 2
- Sāndī, tn. in Oudh 67
- Sāni, evil star 286, 297
- Sanjauli, in Keōnthal 33
- Saikachūda 157
- sankalp, alms 40
- Sāñkhapāla, k. of the Nāgas, in the Navasāhā-
sāñkacharita 154 f., 158 f.
- Sānkrānt Sāwanī, festival 302
- sansār 378, 384
- Sanskrit, vehicle of the Jaina religious works,
285; poems, and the story of Jivaka ... 286
- Sanyāsi caste, originally mendicants, 270 f., 279
283, 290, 370, 373
- Sāoni, festival 303
- Saphet, Safhet, tn., in Palestine, visited by
R. Bell 178
- Śirada (Kashmir) characters in inscription ... 98
- Śāradā, writing 149
- Sāradā, g. 263
- Sarāc Nabi, near Mathurā 61
- Sārang Khān, general under Mahmud Shāh
II., defeated the Khōkhars 5 f.
- Sarāogis, section of the Baniās 268; 303.
- Sarasvatī, goddess 150 n., 164
- Saraswati, riv. and the Sārsuts 266, 279
- śarbandī, dresses 308
- Sardār Khān, a Mughal 67
- Sardinia, Sardna, and R. Bell 174.
- Sarīnbe, Brāhmaṇ sept 52
- śaropā, serpaw, a sash 127; dress of honour. 132
- śarshōbhā, ornaments 308
- Sārsut, or Balrāmī Brāhmaṇs 266, 273, 279
- Sartiras, Rājpāts of mixed descent 268
- sartorē, children born of customary marri-
ages 276, 278
- Sāśinakasūti, riv. the Narmadā or Revā ... 165
- Sāsikānda, k. of the Vidyādharas, in the
Navasāhāsāñkcharita 154, 157 f.
- Sāsikānta, mt. 157, 159

| | |
|--|---|
| Sasiprabhâ, princess of the Nâgas, in the <i>Navasâhasâṅkacharita</i> , 150, 154; called | Sêkkiyâr, Chôla minister, author of the Tamil |
| Âsugâ 155; 156 ff.; 172 | <i>Periyapurânam</i> 288 |
| Saspola, in Tibet, 85; inscription... 86, 88, 97; 148 | Seljang, probably <i>y</i> Ser-leang Monastery in |
| Sâtâra, inscription from, 165 n.; and the | Basgo Fort 85 |
| Bôhrâs 268; 270 | sép khullî, Chuhra labourer 21 |
| Satvâhana or Hâla 164 and n. | Senart, M., on the Piprahwa Vase inscrip- |
| Satyaguna = sattva-guna, quality of good- | tion 122, 124 |
| ness 376 n. | Sengge-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladâkh, 85; hymn in |
| Satyâ Nârâî, festival 303 | his honour 86 ff. |
| sauhrié, sauhrá, parents-in-law, etc.... 19 and n. | Serash, Shirâz tn. 105 |
| Savages, (The Languages of), A Plan For | Seringapatam, stormed by Iévara 352 |
| A Uniform Scientific Record of them. | Seshâdri, tn., Tirupati 352 |
| Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese by Sir Richard C. | Shâh 'Abbâs, captured Ormuz in 1662. 103 n.; |
| Temple, 181; I.—The Theory of Universal | 126 n. |
| Grammar (a) The Theory, 182 ff.; (b) The | Shahâbâ'd-dîn Ghôrî conquered Delhi ... 266 |
| Course of Grammatical Development, The | Shahâdat-i-Tarrukhsîyarwa Jâlus-i-Muham- |
| Sentence is the Unit of all Speech, 189 f.; | mad Shah, a work by Mirzâ Muhammad |
| (c) Skeleton of the Theory, 191 ff.; (d) A | Bakhsh, Ashob 10 |
| Brief Exposition of The Theory, 195 ff.; | Shâhan Shâh, Ahmâd Shâh 'Abdâlî 11 |
| Table of Comparative Grammatical Terms, | Shâhdarrah, tn. opposite Delhi 44 |
| Diagrams, explaining the lines upon which | Shâh Daulâ, shrine in Gujarât... 9 n. |
| the Theory is worked out, 198 f.; (e) | Shâh Doulâh, saint, in Chuhra legend ... 80 |
| Methods of Analysing the Sentence, 200 ff.; | Shâhî, birthplace of Sher Andâz Khân ... 12 |
| II.—The Theory of Universal Grammar | Shâhîs, a caste 71 f.; 82 |
| applied to the Audamanese Languages. | Shâjhâhânbâd and Ahmad Shâh ... 11, 13 ff.; |
| Prefatory Remarks. I.—General Description, 217 ff.; II.—Grammar, 220 ff.; III.— | 43 ff.; 48 ff.; 66 f.; 69 |
| Etymology, 229 ff.; IV.—Phonology | Shâh Mugîm or Mukîm, in Chuhra legend, |
| 236 f.; V.—The Northern and Outer | 77 and n. |
| Groups, 238 ff.; Appendices—A.—The Fire | Shâhpur, in the Pañjâb 3 |
| Legend in the Bojigngjî Group, 245; B.— | Shâh Sâfi, grandfather of Shâh Salaimân, 126 n. |
| Önge Vocabularies, 246; Portman's, 247 f.; | Shâh Salaimân, Shaw Sollyman, 105 or Sulai- |
| Bonig's, 249 f.; C.—Andamanese Tribal | mân 125 and n.; 126 n.; 127 n. |
| Names according to the Aka-Bâ Language, | Shâh Wali Khân, minister of Ahmad Shâh |
| • 251; III.—The Theory of Universal Gram- | 'Abdâlî 11, 14 |
| mar applied to the Nicobarese Language. | Shaikha, fort in the Pañjâb 3 |
| Prefatory Remarks, I.—General Description, | Shaikh Bayazid Kalkapûr Sawâni 9 |
| 317 ff.; II.—Grammar, 322 ff.; III.— | Shaikhs, Muhammadan sect 264 |
| Etymology, 336 ff.; IV.—Phonology, 353; | Shamanism, among the Turanian races, 204; |
| V.—Comparison of Dialects, 354 ff.; VI.— | the Chins 211 |
| Comparative Philology, 357 ff.; Appen- | Shambhu, g. 262 f. |
| dices—A.—Nicobarese Reckoning, 360 ff.; | shâmlât, community 374 f. |
| B.—Reckoning of the Days of the Month, | Shamscher Bahâdur, a Marhattâb and Ahmad |
| 367; Car Nicobar Calendar 369 | Shâh 48 and n., 55, 58 f. |
| Sayce, Prof. A. H., on Sumerian religion ... 201 | Shanéî and Jâû, a <i>tîkâ</i> of Jungâ 34, 36 |
| Sayyid Kings and the Khôkhars 8 n. | Shanéti, a <i>tîkâ</i> of Jungâ 34, 36 |
| Sayyid 'Abd-un-nabî, <i>faujdîr</i> of Mathurâ ... 61 | shankrânt... 313 |
| Sayyids, Muhammadan section 264 | Sharâb, tn. in the Pañjâb, founded by Bahram |
| Scanderoon or Alexandretta, the port of | of Ghor 2 |
| Aleppo 176 and n., 177 | sharâb, strong drink 20 |
| Scicillia, isl. visited by R. Bell 175 | Shâthi, in the Himalayas] 261 |
| Scinda, Scynda and J. Campbell 103 n. | shâlîre, a runner 18 |
| Scott, Capt. Jonathan, and Indian History ... | Sharva, g 263 |
| 10 f.; 68 n. | Shaw Sollyman, for Shâh Salaimân ... 104, 125, |
| | 128, 132 |
| | Sheh, in W. Tibet, rock inscriptions at ... 93 ff. |
| | Shekh Allahyâr, the Martyr 11 |

- Shek̄h Mutaz̄ū Husain, surnamed Allahyār
Sāfi, author of the *Hadīqat-ul-aglīm* ... 10,
68 n.
- Shellac, Garnet, Buttonlac, old Anglo-Indian
terms 252
- Shepherd Caste among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
271, 275 f.; 278 f.
- Sher Andāz Khān, Saiyad, called Muham-
mad Sālip and Mir Sālib ... 11 f.; 14, 49, 55,
56, 59, 61 f.; 68 f.
- Shēr Chānd, Rājā of Kāngārā 268
- Shergādh, tn. and Ahmad Shāh 60
- Shēri or Sāēr, festival 302
- Sher Khān and the Khōkhars 5, 8 n.
- Sher Shāh, Sultān and the Gākkhars ... 8 n.; 9
- Shibji, g. 298
- shikotā*, payment in grain 274 f.
- shikothi*, hereditary right 375
- Shili, Hill *pargānī* 33
- Shirāz, Serash, tn. 105
- shisham* tree 77
- Shivājī, g. 298
- shirilī* temple 298
- Shiv Rātri, festival 302
- Shiv Shankar, Sivā, g. 262
- Shoemakers and Cobblers among the Pañjāb
Hill Tribes 271, 274
- Shom Peñ, Nicobarese dialect, 317 ff., 354 ff.;
enumeration, 360 ff.; cocoanut reckoning, 365
- Shorāb, tn. in the Pañjāb, destroyed 2
- Shorābwāli Pahāri Hill 2
- shridh*, funeral ceremony, 284, 289; or *kiriyā*
kurm 305
- Shujā-ud-danlah and Ahmad Shāh ... 11 ff.,
45, 61, 66 ff., 69 f.
- Shukal, a Brāhmaṇ sect ... 264, 266, 297 f.
- Shukohābād 59
- Shu'lāhpūrī Begam and Ahmad Shāh ... 48
- Sīalkot and the Khōkhars 3, 4, 7 n.
- Sicily 175
- Sickness, among the Chuhras, 20; the Chins ... 208
- Siemreap, in Siam, has famous monuments ... 284
- Sigar, in the Himalayas 37
- Sikandar Shāh I., and the Khōkhars 5, 7
- Sikāndrah, tn. 15
- Sikes', Major, copper implements 54 f.
- Sikhāndaketu, a character in the *Navasāhasrā-
kācharita* 157
- Silahāra princess, wife of Vikramāditya ... 172
- Silavanti, wife of Kalak Das, the Chuhra ... 28
- Silena or Silenia in Cyprus 176 and n.
- Silla and Charibdis 179
- simantamāsi*, head jewel 157
- Sindhala or Sindhula for Sindhurāja. 167, 170
- Sinhabhaṭa, a Paramāra k. 167
- Sinhadeva, son of Siyaka 165 n.
- Sinhala 352
- Simla Hill States, religious cults of 33 ff.,
253 ff.
- Sindh-Sagar Doāb 2
- Sindhula or Sindhala for Sindhurāja 170
- Sindhurāja, alias Navasāhasrāka, k., patron
of Padmagupta; 150 and n., 154, 171; 151
and n., 153 and n., or Kumāranārāyaṇa 154,
171; other names ... 155; 156 and n., 157
and n., 158 f., 164 ff., 169 ff.
- Singing, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 372
- Sipāhdār Khān, Nawāb 68
- Sirhind, fort 7
- Siri-Pulu or Pułumāyi 172 n.
- Sirmūr 230
- Sisophon, in Siam, has famous monuments ... 284
- Sisupāla, k. of Chedi 376 ff.
- Sitā, and Rāwan among the Chuhras ... 75;
136; 142
- Sittā, poetess 163 and n., 167
- sitachāmuraladrāne niyukta*, a fan-bearer ... 155
- sitachchada*, a swan 155
- sitochchhvasitahetu*, meanings of 163 n.
- Siva, temple of, at Tārab, in Keōnthal, 40,
158 f., 164 n., 172, 254, 257 n., 262 n.,
290, 300, ff., 304, 311, 381
- Sivalinga 159
- Siyaka, k., 150 n., 158, 159, 164 and n., 165
and n., 167 and n., 168, 171
- bSkal-bzang, queen of Ladākh 87
- Skeat and the Nicobarese language 322
- Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon, k. of the C. Tibetan
dynasty 96
- Sman-bla, vil. in W. Tibet 93
- Smith, Mr. R. E. I. Co.'s minister at Surratt 101
- Smyrna, Cashmeer, Ismār, 128 f.
- Snakes worshipped 304, 306
- Social customs, etc., among the Chuhras, 20;
restrictions, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
311 f.; customs and intercourse 370 f.
- Sōdra, Chenāb riv. 4
- Sogpoi mGonpa, Mongol Monastery in Basgo. 87
- Sohānpur inscription 270
- Sōhgaurā inscription 118
- Solar dynasty 264, 267
- Somasimha, a Paramara k. 166
- Somāvati Amāvas, festival 303
- Someśvara, court poet of Viradhawala ... 172
- Someśvara Mahādēva, temple at Pariar, con-
tains a collection of metal implements 53
- Sōnāri inscription 121 n.
- (n) Sōng, a Chin giant 209
- Sonpat, tn. 70
- Sorcerers, among the Chuhras 20
- Sotā or Sagāi, form of betrothal 282
- Spahawne for Ispahan, 103; or Lar, 104, 105,
125, 128, 130 f., 134
- spindī karam, death ceremony 284

| | | | |
|---|--|--|------------|
| spirits, among the Chuhras, 20; worshipped by the Chins, 204, 208 f., 214; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 296, 303, 309 f. | Survival of Old Anglo-Indian Commercial Terms, by Sir Richard Temple ... | 252 |
| Sriharsha, author of a <i>Navaśāhasrīkharita</i> , 151 | | sītak, impurity ... | 19, 281 |
| Sri-Harshadeva, i. e., Siyaka ... | 159, 165, 169 | sātak pītak | 275 |
| Sri-Hātakeśvara, Siva temple ... | 158 | Sutlej, riv. | 270 |
| Sripurāṇa, a work which refers to the life of Jīvaka ... | 285, 287 | svakīya | 123 |
| Srirangam, tn. ... | 352 | Svoboda, Dr., and the Nicobarese language ... | 317 |
| Sivallabha or Vākpatirāja II. | 165, 168 | swatharma, mental condition ... | 377 |
| Sūl-Vardhamāna ... | 285 | swayamvara, selection of a husband by a princess | 376 |
| śrotāpannas, candidates for sanctity | 122 | Sylvain Lévi, Prof., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription | 120 ff. |
| St. g-thsang-ras-chen, a Lama | 86 | Symon, the Tanner | 179 |
| Stars, lucky and unlucky | 307 | | |
| Stimulants, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes | 315 | | |
| St. Jno. de Acra ... | 177 f. | | |
| St. John the Evangelist | 179 | | |
| Stromboli ... | 175 | | |
| stūpas, opened by Asūka, 118; in honour of the Śākyas ... | 120 ff. | | |
| Sūds of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes | 264 f., 269, 272; and polyandry, 277 f., 297; of Madras, | | |
| | 318 n. | | |
| Sūds, section of the Vāsiyas, 265, 268, 271; and marriage ... | 275; 277; 279 ff.; 283, 289, 311, 314, 370, 372 f. | | |
| Sugar, old Anglo-Indian term | 252 | | |
| Sugga, Brāhmaṇ sept | 52 | | |
| Sujaka for Siyaka, Sindhurāja ... | 158 | | |
| Sūka, a Brāhmaṇ | 376 | | |
| Suket, in the Hill States | 35 | | |
| sukirti, word in the Piprahwa Vase inscription, possible meanings, 117 and n., 118, 120 ff. | | | |
| sukhshma | 384 | | |
| Śūlimaninigandu, Tamil lexicon, compiled by | | | |
| Mandalepurusha, date of | 288 | takhts, platforms ... | 58 |
| sulka, superintendent of tolls | 349 n. | Takshail, Taxiles, founder of Takshala or Taxila ... | 2 |
| Sultān Islām or Salim Shāh Sur | 9 | Takshak, descendants of Beorāsāhsāt ... | 1 |
| Sultān Khān, brother of Najib Khān ... | 65 f. | Takshala, Taxila, modern Dheri Shāhān ... | 2 |
| Sultān Mahmud ... | 2 | talāka i-bdin, irreversible divorce | 278 |
| Sultān Muhammad of Ghor ... | 4 | tāli tree ... | 78 f. |
| Sultān Sārang ... | 8 n. | tallying, Nicobarese system ... | 360 ff. |
| Sultānpur in Kālā, pass into Tibet | 274 | Tamil works | 285 f. |
| Sungandavirtta Chōla or Rājēndra Chōladēva | 288 | Tāmraparnī, riv. ... | 352 |
| Sunārs, Mairs Sunārs, a sept ... | 51 | Tangier, Tangeere ... | 174 and n. |
| sāp, winnowing sieve | 20 | Tanjor, MSS. at ... | 149 |
| Superstitions, among the Chuhras, 19; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 306 f., 312 | tankah, a small coin | 60 |
| Sūraj or Solar Rājpūt dynasty | 264, 267 | tanzō, pig for sacrifice | 212 |
| Sūraj Mall, a Jāt, and Āḥmad Shāh ... | 46, 4, 51, 55, 58 | tapās, asceticism ... | 378 |
| Surat, Richard Bell at 101 and n., 102 n., 103 and n., 128 and n., and Thos. Pratt ... | 173 | taqfīyah, a white fillet | 18 |
| Surbulan Khān, Governor of Ahmadābād ... | 11 n. | Tārā, the white ... | 87 |
| sursat, fines in kind | 56, 59 | Tārāb, in Keōnthal | 38 ff. |
| | | Tārā Dēvi, of Tārab | 39 f. |
| | | tārahāra, a string of pearls | 155 |
| | | Tārā Mātī, goddess | 39 |
| | | Tārā Nath, a jogi | 93 f. |

- Tarikh-i-Ahmad Shâhi*, on the invasion of
Ahmad Shah Abdâli 70
- Tarikh-i-Alangîr Sâni* and the invasion of
Ahmad Shah Abdâli 70
- Tarikh-i-Mubârak-Shâhi*, mentions the Khô-
khars 5 f.
- Tartars in the Pañjâb 3
- Tâfâr, a Gakkhar 8 and n.
- Tattooing, among the Chins 210
- toung-yü*, Chin, cultivation 210
- Tauris, Tabriz, Towreys 128
- tarî*, an iron dish 19
- Tavernier, traveller ... 100 n., 125 n., 126 n.,
128 n.
- ta'wîz*, a charm 20
- Taxila, Takshala 2
- Tea, old Anglo-Indian term 252
- tek*, a word of summons 273
- Tekhar, Telhar fort in the Pañjâb, also
Thankar, Talhar, etc. 7 and n.
- Temples, a feature of every Pañjâb village ... 273
- Tenants, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 374
- Teressa, Nicobarese dialect, 217 ff., 354 ff.;
numerals, 361 f., 364; cocoanut reckoning,
365 f.
- tha'bî* or *Eugeniu*, plant 208, 210
- tha'lairî*, a time 38
- Thagwâ, in the Kôti State 33
- thâkur-dvârî*, a temple 298, 300, 303
- Thâkuri Lachlumî Nârâyan, temple in Keôn-
thal 41
- Thâkurs, 266; or *moavanâs* 268
- thâ'lî*, a platter 19, 41
- Thankar, Talhar, Tekhar Telhar, tn. ... 7 and n.
- Thare dî kotî'îl*, magistrate 350
- Thare dî mohîtâ*, chief financial minister ... 350
- harâth* 350 n., 351 n.
- hâvî*, or *chaurî*, tribal head-quarters 270
- Thathérâ or Bharérâs, a caste 314, 370
- The Age of the Tamil *Jivakachintâmani*, by
T. S. Kuppuswami Sastri 285 ff.
- The Seasons of Girdhar Sadhu, by the Poet-
ess Sanvri Sakhi 315 f.
- Theog, Hill State, feudatory to Keônthal, 33; 296
- Theory of Universal Grammar, published
ante, Vol. XXVIII, 1900, by Sir Richard
Temple, 181 ff.; applied to the Andamanese
Languages, 217 ff.; to the Nicobarese
Language 317 ff.; 353 ff.
- Thinds, a Jât subsection 52
- thoda*, an arrow 38 n.
- Thomas, Mr., and the Piprahwa Vase inscrip-
tion 124
- Thond, near Simla 34
- Thse-dbang-dongrub, Tibetan minister, in-
scription by him 92 f.
- Thuân, Chimbâ subsection 52
- Thugyi*, Chin, head-man 209
- tî*, Toda, a holy dairy 83
- Tiberias, Tyberious 177 f.
- Tibet, W., Archâoology in 85 ff., 148
- Tibet, and Buddhism, 268; trades with the
Pañjâb Hills 274
- Tibetan characters in Sheh inscriptions, 93;
- conquest 98
- Tibetan, Central, dynasty 96
- Tibetans 85
- tîkâ*, heir-apparent to a râjâ 33, 34, 39
- tilak* flowers 42
- tilaka*, brow ornament 154 and n.
- Tillah, hill 24
- Timma I., a Tuluva k. 352
- Timma II., a Tuluva k. 352
- Timûr invaded India, 3; and the Khôkhars, 6, 8 n.
- Tineal, old Anglo-Indian term 252
- Tippâmbikâ, queen of Nrisimha 352
- Tir Mahâsu, Hill *pargâni* 33
- Tirotanamala, an excrementitious product, 376 n.
- Tirû, a *tîkâ* of Jungâ 34, 36
- Tirumugai*, Saiva Tamil Scriptures 288 n.
- Tirupati or Sôshâdri, tn. 352
- Tiruttakkadêvar, author of the *Jivakachintâ-*
mani 287 f.
- Tiruttondarpurânavarâlaru*, a work by Umâ-
patîśivâchârya 288
- Tiruvannamalai, Arupâchala, tn. 352
- Tiruvârur in Tanjore dist., temple at ... 288 n.
- Tiruviśaippî*, a part of the Saiva Tamil
Scriptures 288 n.
- tithi*, date 312
- tithi shrâdh*, ceremony 303
- Titles, courtesy, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes 312
- Todas, The, by W. H. R. Rivers, book-notice, 83
- Tomaines, *tomâ* Persian coin, 104 f.; *tomâun*,
128 and n.
- Tonda, a spirit worshipped in Manûn 35
- Tons, riv. 253 f., 263
- Totemism, in the Pañjâb, further traces of,
by H. A. Rose 51 f.
- Totemism, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 272
- Towreys, Tauris, Tabriz 128
- Trade, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes 279
- Travels of Richard Bell and John Campbell
in the East Indies, Persia, and Palestine
1654—1670, by Sir Richard Temple, conti-
nued from Vol. XXXV., p. 210 98 ff.,
125 ff., 173 ff.
- Tribes of the Pañjâb Hills, see Pañjâb. ... 264 ff.,
289 ff., 370 ff.
- Trimârgagâ, the Gaṅgâ riv. 158
- Trinkut, Nicobarese isl. 318
- Tripoli, Trippiloe 177
- Tripura, cap. of the Haihayas, captured by
Vâkpatirâja II. 169

| | | | |
|---|------------------------|--|----------------------|
| Trivandrum, Anantaśayana ... | ... 352 | Vadajā, wife of Siyaka, the Paramāra k. ... | 164 |
| Trōch, and the Kanaits ... | ... 273 | and p., 168 | |
| Tsanpo, k. of Ladākh ... | ... 94, 97 | Vādiśhasimha's works and the story of Jivaka, ... | |
| tTsanpo, dynastic name of the Central Tibetan dynasty ... | ... 96 | 285 ff. | |
| Tsan-po-Lha chon, line of Central Tibet ... | 96 f. | Vāgad, Chaulukya province ... | ... 171 |
| Tsong-kapa, reformer ... | ... 90 | Vāgrada ... | ... 157n., 171 |
| tulā dān, alms in grain, etc. ... | 297 | Vāghbhāta, the younger, author of the <i>Alam-karatalilaka</i> ... | 154 n. |
| tulāpurusha, ceremony ... | ... 352 | Vairisimha, a Parāmara k. ... | 163, 165, 167 |
| tulasī plant ... | ... 811 | Vairowāl, c. in the Pañjāb ... | ... 3 f. |
| tulasī shrub ... | ... 306, 316 | Vaishanavas, in the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... | 272 |
| Tuluva kings ... | ... 352 | Vaishnavas, probably Krishan Brāhmans. 266 n. | |
| Tulṇas of the W. Coast and 'devil' legends. 33 n. | | 290, 314 | |
| Ungām manimandiram, a holy place ... | ... 158 | Vaiśyas, 264 f.; table of Hill Sections ... | 268 |
| Tūnwars, rulers of Delhi ... | ... 37 | 289 | |
| tūrah, a qualified claimant ... | ... 60 | Vajrāñkuśa, k. of the Asuras, in the <i>Navasāhasinikacharita</i> ... | 154, 156 ff., 172 |
| Turānis, the ... | ... 47 | Vajrapāni, Bodhisattva Phyag-r dor ... | 86, 89 f., |
| Tūris, a tribe, 36; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, . | | 97 f. | |
| 271, 275; countenance prostitution ... | 277; 279; | Vajravarāhanī, incarnated in the abbesses of | |
| | 302; 308; 314; 372 ff. | the Samding Monastery ... | ... 88 |
| Turks in Candia ... | ... 175 n. | Vākpatiraja I., Parāmara k. ... | 150 n., 163, 165 ff. |
| Turrah-hāc, tufts on hats ... | ... 56 | Vākpatirāja II., or Amoghavarsha, or Prithvīvallabha, or Śrīvallabha ... | 165 and n., 166, |
| Turvasu, mythical k. ... | ... 352 | 167 and n., 168 and n., 169, 170 and n. | |
| Tūzak-i-Babarī, and the Gakkars ... | ... 8 | Vākpatirājadeva, k. of Mālava ... | 150 and n. |
| Tvashtri ... | ... 159 | Vallabha, k. ... | ... 167 n. |
| Tyabe, Taiyibeh, Taiba, tn. ... | ... 133 | Vallabha, author ... | ... 168 |
| Tyāgarāja temple at Tiruvārur in Tanjore | | Vallabhadeva, author of the <i>Subhāshitivali</i> . 149 n. | |
| district contains an inscription ... | 288 n. | Vāmārag religion ... | ... 272 |
| Tygrisse, riv., 120; or Tygris ... | ... 132 | Vāmārgis, worship the genital organs ... | 293 |
| Uch, tn. in the Pañjāb ... | ... 5 | Vānkshu ... | ... 172 |
| Udāsi, caste, originally mendicants ... | 270 f., 279, | Vānku, a Muni, in the <i>Navasāhasinikacharita</i> , | |
| | 283, 290, 373 | 154, 157 f., 172 | |
| Udayapur inscription and Vākpatirāja I., | | Varadāmbikā, queen to Achyuta ... | ... 352 |
| 167 and n. | | Varadarāja temple ... | ... 352 |
| ugrākā, tax-collector, also called durbāl, dru- | | Varmaśrama dharma ... | ... 384 |
| bīyāl and muqaddam ... | ... 351 | Vasishṭha, a Vedic sage ... | ... 162 n., 166 |
| Ujhātī, N, the United Provinces ... | ... 69 | Sasubandhu, the three brothers ... | 117 n. |
| Ujjain, co., 164 n.; conquered by the Parā- | | Vasudeva, father of Krishṇa ... | ... 379 |
| māras, 165 f.; and the Kshatriyas ... | 267; 270 | Vasuki, king of the Nāgas ... | ... 381 |
| Ujjayinī, tn., mentioned in the <i>Navasāhasinik-</i> | | Vaux, Mr., murdered by the Jārawas, | |
| <i>charita</i> ... | 153 f., 156, 159, 165 | February, 1902 ... | ... 219 |
| Ujjvaladatta, author ... | ... 152 | Vēlas, the guide of the Aryas ... | ... 264 f. |
| ulash, table money? ... | ... 51 | Vedic religion among the P. H. Tribes ... | 290 |
| Umāpatiśivāchārya, a Saiva teacher ... | ... 288 | Vēdvās, begging tribe ... | ... 143 |
| Unchah-ganw, Baran ... | ... 15 | Venetians and Candia ... | ... 175 n. |
| uparīka, probably a tax ... | 348 and n. | Veṅkaṭagiri, c. ... | ... 352 |
| upāsak, devotees ... | ... 42 | Veṅkaṭarāya or Chinaveṅkaṭadri, son of | |
| Upendra, Parāmara k. ... | 163 and n., 165 ff. | Achyuta ... | ... 352 |
| Uṣmān Khan, a commander ... | ... 56, 62 | Veṅkāṭa-vilāsa mandapa ... | ... 352 |
| Utpalarāja or Vākpatirāja II ... | 164 and n., 165 | Vidarbha, co. = Berar ... | ... 376 f., 379 |
| | and n., 167 n., 168 | Vidh, goddess ... | ... 74 |
| Uttar, son of Brahmā, ancestor of the Chan- | | Vidyādharnas, in the <i>Navasāhasinikacharita</i> . 157 f. | |
| -dar Bansī caste ... | ... 267 | Vidyādhari, Chandaladevi, q. v. ... | ... 372 |
| Uttarā Khāṇḍa ... | ... 253 | Vidyāpurī, Vijayanagara ... | ... 352 |
| Uttarapuruṣa, that part of the <i>Mahāpuruṣa</i> | | Vijayā, daughter of Sītā, the poetess ... | 203 n. |
| composed by Gunabhadrāchārya ... | 287 | | |

| | | | | |
|--|--|-------------------------------|--------------------|-------------|
| Vijayanagara or Vidyapuri | ... | ... | ... | 352 |
| vikhad sharadh, death ceremony | ... | ... | 284 | |
| Vikrama era | ... | ... | 164 n., 170 and n. | |
| Vikrama Samvat | ... | ... | ... | 166 |
| Vikramāditya, k. | ... | ... | ... | 164 and n. |
| Vikramāditya-Tribhuvanamalla, k. | ... | ... | 172 | |
| Vikramānadevachanta, a work by Bilhana, | | | | |
| | 171 and n., 172 and n. | | | |
| Vinayasenāchārya, an author | ... | ... | 287 | |
| Vindhya, mts. | ... | ... | 155, 159 | |
| Viradhabala of Dholkā | ... | ... | ... | 172 |
| Viranrisimharāya, son of Nṛisiṁha | ... | ... | 352 | |
| Virasenāchārya, an author | ... | ... | 289 | |
| Virk, Jat tribe | ... | ... | ... | 2 n. |
| Virk Khōkhar, defeated Kuid Rāj of Mārwār. | 2 | | | |
| Virūḍhaka, massacred the Sākyas | ... | ... | 121 | |
| vishaya, probably subdivision of a dharma or manḍala | ... | ... | ... | 348 n. |
| Vishnu | ... | ... | ... | 169 |
| Vishnu, g. | ... | 164 n., 263, 376, 378, 383 f. | | |
| Vishṇukāñchi, tn. | ... | ... | ... | 352 |
| Viśvāmitra, son of Gādhi | ... | ... | 162, 166 | |
| Viśvāṅkuśa, a character in the Navasāhasrī- kacharita | ... | ... | 154, 158 | |
| vratas, rites, ceremonies | ... | ... | 378 | |
| Vulcano, Vulcanello, islands | ... | ... | 175 | |
| Vyāsa, arranger of the Vedas | ... | ... | 159 | |
| | | | | |
| Wāknā, Hill pargana | ... | ... | ... | 33 |
| Wālā Jāh Bahādur | ... | ... | ... | 68 |
| Walān, in the Simla Hill States | ... | ... | 35 | |
| Wali Khān, Shāh | ... | ... | ... | 45 |
| Wanla, castle in W. Tibet | ... | ... | 85 | |
| Wano, Pahāri, an image | ... | ... | 37 | |
| Wasirs of Kohāt and totemism | ... | ... | 52 | |
| Water distribution among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes | ... | ... | ... | 375 |
| Wazir, chief minister | ... | ... | ... | 350 |
| Wazirs, kārdārs or mēbtās, temple overseers | 273 f. | | | |
| White, Mr., and R. Bell | ... | ... | 100 | |
| Widows, re-marry among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes | ... | ... | ... | 280 |
| Wilāyat, tn., and Ahmad Shāh, | 12 f., 49, 65 | | | |
| Witches, among the Chubras, among the Chins | ... | ... | ... | 209 |
| wizārats, sub-divisions of a district | ... | ... | 350 | |
| | | | | |
| Women, restriction as to, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes | ... | ... | ... | 311 |
| Worship, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, forms of, 296; places of, 298; objects of; of spirits, 303 f.; of ancestors, 305; of animals, etc. | ... | ... | ... | 306 |
| Writing of the Piprahwa Vase inscription, and that of the Aśoka inscriptions | ... | ... | 118 | |
| | | | | |
| yabāe? | ... | ... | ... | 5f |
| Yādavas or Jādavas, a race | ... | ... | 882 f. | |
| Yāhyā Khān, Nawāb, and Ahmad Shāh | ... | ... | 66 | |
| yai-shen, a Chin teacher | ... | ... | 208 f., 213 | |
| yajna, sacrifice | ... | ... | ... | 376 n. |
| yakkah, gentlemen troopers | ... | ... | ... | 69 |
| Yama, g. called Am | ... | ... | 84; 303, 349 n. | |
| Yamdok, lake in Tibet | ... | ... | ... | 88 |
| yang-lai or gyinyè bush | ... | ... | ... | 304 |
| Ya'qub 'Alī Khān, an Afghan | ... | ... | 70 | |
| yas, Chin, vegetable patches | ... | ... | 207, 210 | |
| Yāsobhāta, alias, Ramāngada, minister to Sindhurāja | ... | ... | ... | 154 f., 172 |
| Yāsodhāvala, k. | ... | ... | ... | 166 |
| Yāt tribe | ... | ... | ... | 51 |
| yatīm, a servant? | ... | ... | ... | 18 |
| Yayāti, progenitor of the Yādavas | ... | ... | 165 | |
| Yērc, N. Andamanese tribe | ... | ... | 217, 238 | |
| Yērewa, N. Andamanese division, 217; langua- ges and those of the Southern group | 238, 244 | | | |
| Yin, a Chin spirit | ... | ... | ... | 204 |
| Yuvārāja of Chedi, and Vākpatirāja II. | ... | ... | 169 | |
| | | | | |
| Zachariae, Dr., and the Navasāhasrīkacharita, | 152 n., 154 n., 159 n., 161 n., 164 n., 167 n. | | | |
| Zafarnāma, work, mentions the Khōkkars, 6 and n. | | | | |
| Zainu'l-Abidin of Kashmir | ... | ... | 7 n., 8 n. | |
| Zakariyā Khān, governor of Lahor | ... | ... | 66 n. | |
| Zāt Fair, at Garēn, Keōnthal | ... | ... | 37 f. | |
| zi, Sumerian, spirit | ... | ... | ... | 204 |
| Zinat Mahal, a chief | ... | ... | ... | 49 |
| Zirah Khāq, amīr of Sāmāna, and the Khō- khars | ... | ... | ... | 6 f. |
| (n) sö-yai, Chin ancestry | ... | ... | ... | 206 |
| Zuhāk, for Dahāk | ... | ... | ... | 1 n. |
| Zulī, afternoon prayer | ... | ... | ... | 56, 60 |
| Zyon int. | ... | ... | ... | 179 |

